

PURGATORY

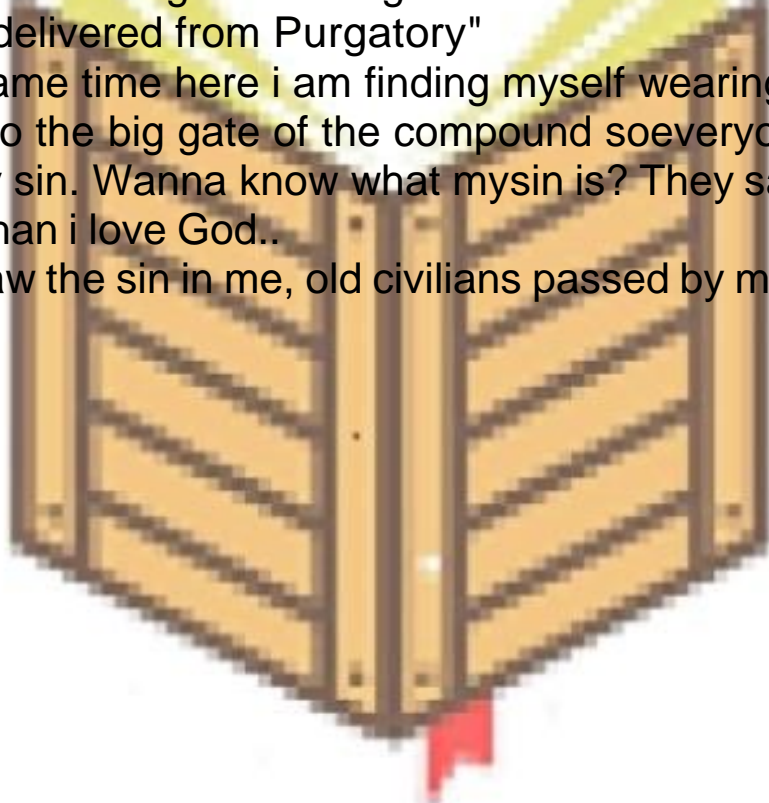
¥INTRODUCTION¥#PURGATORY:

A state after physical death in which those destined for

heaven undergo purification to be cleansed even of their most darkest sins, so as to achieve the holiness necessary to enter the joy of heaven. As long as the Angels innocence outweigh your sins you can be delivered from Purgatory"

But at the same time here i am finding myself wearing all black and sitting next to the big gate of the compound so everyone can be aware of my sin. Wanna know what my sin is? They said i love my child more than i love God..

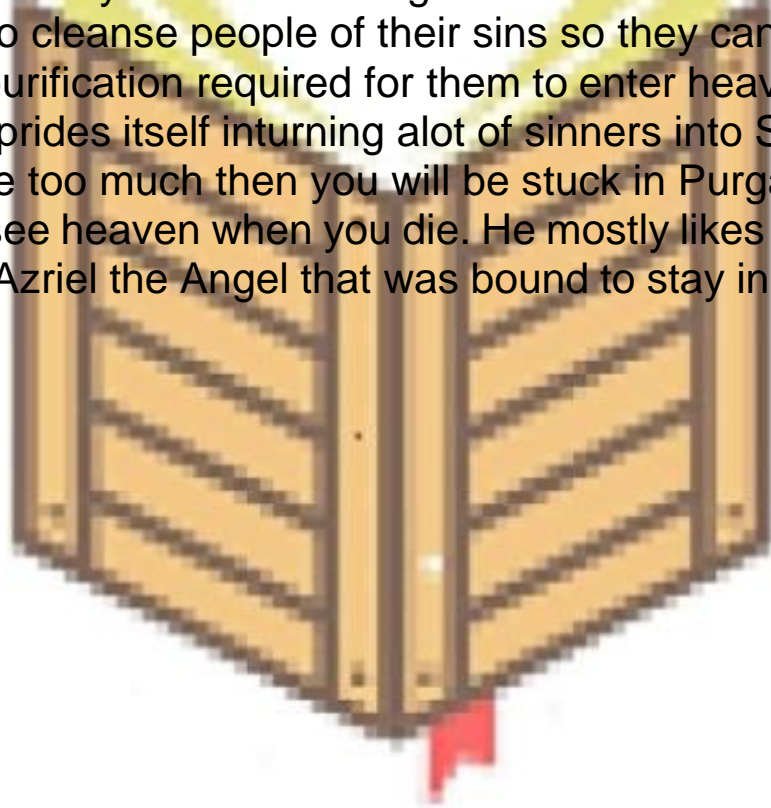
Everyone saw the sin in me, old civilians passed by me and



NOVELSGURU.COM

spat on me saying i disgust them, that is how Purgatory in this compound is. Everyday for the next few weeks i have to sit by the gate and endure eyes piercing through Me, i have to endure stones been thrown at me, i have to endure insults and spit. But my story doesn't start here, my story starts before the Purgatory learned about my sin.

My name is Bonolo Abdul and i am 17 years of age. I live in a church compound named "Purgatory" under Prophet Seko Abdul. Prophet Abdul says it was a calling for him to start "The Purgatory church" as to cleanse people of their sins so they can attain the necessary purification required for them to enter heaven one day. The church prides itself in turning a lot of sinners into Saints, but if your sins are too much then you will be stuck in Purgatory forever you will not see heaven when you die. He mostly likes to use the example of Azriel the Angel that was bound to stay in

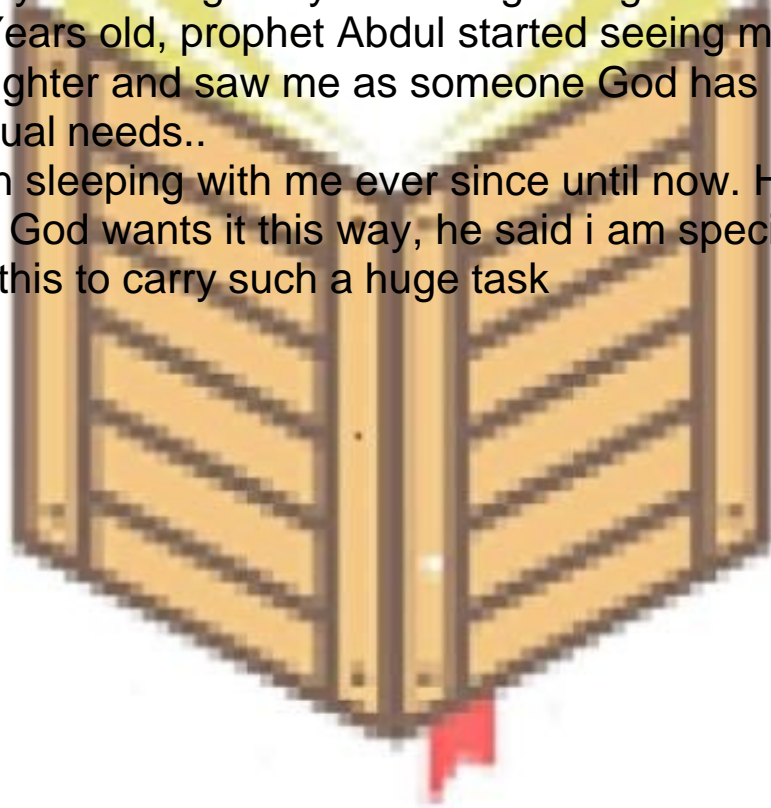


NOVELSGURU.COM

Purgatory forever because of his sins, but because the innocence of the Angels outweighed his sins he made it out of the Purgatory. Prophet Abdul had the Compound built to accommodate all his church members. We live in the compound with other 50 people. It's like our own little Town very far away from other people and disturbances of the world. There's a tall fence and the compound is very much guarded.

My mother is the second wife of Prophet Abdul, and we moved in here when I was very young. The first wife has a boy and girl by him, they're a bit older than me and my mother has a daughter by him and she is 6 years of age. My life changed a great deal when I was around 10 Years old, prophet Abdul started seeing me more than his step daughter and saw me as someone God has chosen to fulfill his sexual needs..

He has been sleeping with me ever since until now. He told me not to be afraid, God wants it this way, he said I am special to be chosen like this to carry such a huge task



NOVELSGURU.COM

out of every girl in the compound.

I did feel special to be chosen to serve such a God chosen servant, he told me that there's a great reward that awaits me in heaven, i will be rewarded for what im doing.

My mother is well aware of what's happening but she's turning a blind eye to it, she has to abide by the rules of the Purgatory because if you break even one rule or command there's great consequences.

Today i am 7 months pregnant with his baby but we keeping it a secret. Actually we keeping who impregnated me a secret from the whole church and Compound.

I was never allowed to go to school, girls here are not allowed to go to school because prophet Abdul says God intended for women to only serve their husbands which woman have we read about in the Bible that went to school..

They call it "Purgatory: Church of Purification" But i call it "Purgatory: Church of Shame"



NOVELSGURU.COM

I am Bonolo Abdul, and this is my story

..

Inspired by true life events.PURGATORY

¥01 #ZAINE

My name is Zaine Radebe and i am 24 years of age. I am a music producer and i also direct music videos for my Artists. I started my own studio right after completing my matric, back then it used to be at my parent's garage where the first artist i had was my childhood best friend Blake who is a rapper, we used to sell his mixtapes off on the streets. It was very difficult but we worked our way up and today we actually have our own studio in town and i have 3 talented Artists that make the stable alot of money. I have always wanted to be a music producer, ever since from a young age but coming from a Christian background that was very discouraged. My father is Reverend Radebe not only is he a Reverend but he was given the gift of being a seer and a healer. My father is very much known, he is respected and recognised even overseas. He actually has people traveling from other countries to his church to receive healing and Deliverance. Unlike most Pastors and Reverends who live off on church offerings, my father makes a living from selling his inspirational books, doing Seminars, and he has his own Channel on TV. Some other church members would volunteer to send him money as their way of showing gratitude and honour to him.

He went on to Marry a white woman and later on they had me and my brother, my brother being the first born...

Unlike me, my brother is the golden boy of the family he is well

behaved, married, he has a construction Company and very religious hoping to follow in our father's footsteps one day..

I consider myself the black sheep of the family, i party, i drink, i hate Religion i do not believe in the supernatural at all. I consider Religion a conspiracy that has brainwashed a lot of people and has caused war and division..

I don't even believe in my father i think all of this is just some bullshit kinda scheme trying to make people believe in what doesn't exist.. How i can describe my father is that he is very loving, kind, understanding and has a good heart. You will find Pastors forcing their Children to live right so that they don't embarrass them but Rev Radebe is very different from that. He has supported me in my music career, he still loves me the same way that he loves my big brother and he is very patient with me and hopeful that one day i will open up my heart into accepting and living the good christian way.

My mother on the other hand is totally different. She is strong-willed, always speaks her mind and she's the reason why i haven't been home in a very long time.

There's a lot of people who say my mother is very evil, behind that smile she hides an evil heart and i wouldn't disagree or agree with them, but sometimes my mother does look like she has evil traits..

There are a few reasons of my own on why i hate Religion. I've seen people going to church but still that doesn't change their evil hearts, i've seen people doing evil things to other people in the name of God, and why God hasn't strike back i don't know and that is why i do not believe in his existence...

It was a Friday night, we had booked the club to celebrate my boy Blake, his album went platinum and made us a lot of money. My Artists are very talented and making a lot of money..

As the party proceeded, Blake and i had stepped outside for a couple of minutes to smoke a joint. We like doing weed when we drunk.

I took that opportunity to call my number one biggest supporter to let him know about this..Him: Zaine
Me: Pops how are you?

Him: im blessed son and how are you?Me: Im Good can't complain
I put him on loud speaker...Blake: Rev Radebe
Him: Blake is that you?Blake: Yes sir Its me
Dad: Im happy to hear from you, from both of you

Blake: Its been a while Rev R. Me and your Son here webeen out
Grinding trying to get some paper
Me: and it has paid off, Blake's album went platinumDad: Praise the
Lord, that is good news
Me: Praise Blake, he worked hard on this albumDad: i am still
praying for the both of you
Blake: i have one request RevDad: What is it?
Blake: Pray for me to marry a fine ass beautiful womanlike your wife
Miss Jackson
We call my mom Miss Jackson..I pushed Blake a little.
Me: That's my mother you talking about nigga have somerespect!
He laughed...

Dad: speaking of your mother she's very upset that youhaven't been
home or called her
Me: You know how mom is

Him: Im just asking for you to call her SonMe: ill call her tomorrow
Him: Thank you

Blake: We have to go back (whispering)
Me: Pops we have to go

Him: alright celebrate safely in the clubBlake: How you know we in a
club?
Dad: i just know

Me: Okay Pops ill call you again
Him: Bye and i love you
Me: i love you too

Blake and i went back inside to our VIP section just having fun and looking at everyone having fun....

Blake: from trying to hustle in a garage to Going platinum, who would've thought?

Me: Who would've thought indeed My girl made her way to us. Melissa and i have been dating for quite a while now. She is 21 years old and an aspiring model, she also has a beautiful voice and could have a bright future in Rnb.

My mother doesn't like Melissa at all, she's always hinting that what she's doing is unGodly aint no woman posing half naked for the whole world to see, and that she is not awifing material..

Blake: Look who just walked in She hugged Blake..

Her: Congratulations on going Platinum

Blake: it happens alot niggas go platinum this days They laughed..

Her: still have a big head i seel waved my hand at them..

Me: Hello??

Her: See what you doing now Blake? Making me not to recognise my babe

Blake: Im platinum She smiled

Her: get out of my face boy!

She made her way to me.. Her: Hey baby how are you?

She sat down next to me and kissed me Her: Have you been smoking weed again? Me: Its Blake

Her: You know how i feel about you smoking weed? Me: i swear Its Blake's fault

Her: Don't do that, that's wrong! squeezed her cheek..

Me: Im sorry

She folded her arms.. Me: Im glad that you here Her: Im glad im here too

Me: want something to drink? Her: virgin mojito

Melissa doesn't drink alcohol at all.

Me: so are you crashing at my place tonight? Her: got an early photoshoot tomorrow

Me: later tomorrow? Her: Church

Me: Yeah church

Her: Please don't start, you know how much this conversation is gonna make us fight

Me: im not starting i just wanna know how your church is dealing with you and your choice of career. Are they accepting of the fact that you Pose around naked?

Her: Ohw Wow Zaine i think that's my queue to leave She stood and attempted to go but i held her...

Me: Okay im sorry i didn't mean it to come out like that She kept quiet..

Me: Please stay She still kept quiet.

Me: Come on Bubbly

She was trying so hard not to smile as i was gently squeezing her cheek, but eventually she ended up smiling

Me: so are you staying? She nodded..

I pulled her closer and kissed her.. Me: Thank you

We went back to sit down and the waitress came with her drink..

Her: Thank you

We sat there on the couch talking and laughing until something really weird started happening to me. I heard voices of people praying in my head, the Dominant one being my father.

"i send the blood of Jesus to protect my son wherever he is, especially his car cover it with the blood of Jesus and do away with the accident the devil worshiper who was

assigned to cause his accident i restrain her with the blood, the blood, the blood"

The voices kept on going and going that they were starting to make me dizzy and give me a headache. I saw my girlfriend talking but i couldn't make out what she was saying until she put her hand on my back then everything went back to being normal.

Her: Oh my word Zaine you sweating, are you alright? Me: Yeah i.. I think so

What the fuck just happened?

Her: baby i told you to stop smoking this thing look what its doing to you now?

I wasn't feeling good anymore.. Her: should i drive you home?

Me: ya straight away..

I stood up and gave her my car keys.. Me: i don't see Blake around

Her: You can just call him Me: yea ill do that

She held my hand and we walked out to the parking, then my car.

Just when i thought things couldn't get anymore weird, i got to my car and the shit i saw will make me question my Sanity everyday..

.

To be continued

..

Bonolo's Pov: Inspired by true life events Zaine's Pov: fiction
PURGATORY

NOVELSGURU.COM

.

.

.

¥02

#ZAINÉ

This blunt really got me messed up, messing with my brain like that. I've done been getting high a lot of times but I have never experienced something so unreal.

I stopped and blinked a few times, hoping the scene playing right in front of me is not real..

Melissa looked at me. Her: Zaine are you okay?

I looked at her then looked at my car again and my car was covered in blood. I wonder where this so much blood came from, and who would pour it on my car like this..

I then saw a girl, jumping like a frog all around my car trying to open the back door. But each time she touched, she will get electricuted and tossed at a far distance. She wasn't giving up at all she kept on trying, but she was still getting the same results..

Me: Hey! (shouting)

I went closer and she looked at me still crouched on the floor. She didn't look normal at all, if you have watched the Exorcism of Emily Rose then you would know what I'm talking about..

It was more like she was possessed, she had bruises here and there, some of her finger nails had chipped off..

I have never had an encounter with such a human being before.

She looked at me and hissed like a cat.. Melissa: Babe?

I turned and looked at Melissa as she made her way to me, I then looked at my car and it was fine there wasn't blood or any girl.

Melissa: You really starting to scare me Zaine
Me: I'm fine, just get me home

We unlocked and then went in, then we hit the road..

I kept on thinking about what I saw, I couldn't get the girl out of my mind. Melissa kept stealing looks at me.

Her: Zaine..

Me: Bubbly just drive

This is why i call her bubbly because she will never let this matter go ,she is always prying and nosey.

We got to my place and she parked close to the main gate.It is always safe for someone with high status like me to live in a gated community. There's always gonna be someone aiming at you so you need that extra protection, and a gated community is highly protected.

Her: You gonna be alright if i leave you here?

Me: There's security patrolling so ill make it to my house

Her: Its all good then ill have your car dropped off tomorrow

Me: take care of it Her: Don't i always do?

I leaned over and kissed her..

I ran my hand on her thigh then i got in under her dress..Me: better come back tomorrow and give me that pussy She removed my hand..

Her: if you don't quit hitting that blunt you ain't getting none

Me: is that slang im hearing? You know i don't like my girl stalking like that it makes me think that im talking to one of my home boys

Her: Ohhh how many girls do you have? Me: alot that give me pussy

Her: Keep talking like that.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yeah Yeah whatever i love you

I kissed her again and then got out of my car.

I Enjoy being in a relationship with Melissa because she's different from the girls ive met before. She has a very unique personality..

I walked to the gate and signed, they let me in and i

Walked to my house. I saw alot of Securities wonderingaround patrolling and all that..

I got to my place and opened the gate, it Automaticallyclosed on its own as i made my way to the door.

Surprisingly enough i saw the girl again in my yard..Me: Are you kidding me?

She looked at me..

How: How did you get here?

I looked at the gate and Fence, i have an electric Fence allaround..

Me: did you go over the Fence?

She didn't say anything.. All she could do is just hiss.

I then saw her moving backwards as if like she's seeingsomething scary.

I heard what sounded like wings flapping around..

I slowly turned around and i think an Angel or whatevercreature was standing behind me..

The wings made it look like an Angel, but it looked scary tobe an Angel..

It was gigantic and holding a sword..Me: You got to be shitting me!

I was scared i won't lie, i was more scared that this weed was fucking with me on a serious note it was fucking withmy brain..

When it lifted Its sword the girl made a run for it, i seriouslydidn't know what was going on..

I unlocked and went inside then closed my door, i neededto lie down for a while i was fucked up..

.

. #BONOLO

It was a Saturday morning and i was putting on my clothes.Last night i slept here to fullfil The Prophet's sexual needs. We don't do it at the house, he has another house not far

away from ours where we carry out such..

I am 7 months pregnant with his baby but we keeping it a secret from the whole church and Compound, he got my friend Simon to lie that he is the one who impregnated me. Simon and i have been friends from ever since i moved here, so it was very easy for prophet Abdul to pin this on him. I have a ring on my finger, everyone thinks that me and Simon are engaged to be married and now im pregnant with his baby, because Apparently the prophet doesn't want shame attached to him.. Simon had no choice but to Obey..

I finished clothing and he looked at me.

Him: Don't have that green on your face, a great reward is kept in heaven for you

I looked down while buttoning my dress...

Him: i told you that this came as a vision to me while i was sleeping, that you are the chosen one you are the Precious daughter that had been chosen for this special kind of work..

He came and hugged me.. Him: bless you my child Why wasn't Lucy chosen? Lucy is his biological daughter from his first wife. Why is it me who is chosen?

There was a knock at the door... Him: must be Simon He walked over to open..

Him: Simon you made it just in time Simon: glad i can always help

Abdul: Bonolo

Me: Im coming

I wiped my tears..

I then went to them.

Simon: Are you ready to go? I nodded..
I always walk out with Simon so no one can notice anything..
We walked out while holding hands and I couldn't hold back the tears..
Simon: Hey what's wrong?

I couldn't say anything all I could do was just to cry and shake my head..
He hugged me..

Him: You have to stop, you know it's against the rules what you're doing. If someone sees you they will think that you no longer want to perform your duties as a wife..
At first this was okay but now it doesn't feel okay anymore, it feels very wrong.

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥03 #ZAINÉ

I woke up that morning with a terrible headache, not only a headache but i was fucked up also.. I slowly got out of bed and i could feel that i was still a bit drunk.

I slowly walked to the bathroom and washed my face then i made my way to the kitchen, and found Belina humming while tidying up..

Belina was my nanny, she has been with my family for a long time now and when i finally got my own place i asked her to be my maid. She's Spanish so when she came here she changed her name to Belina.

I went and sat down.. Me: Belina

Her: Good morning Señor.. Cómo estás? (Good morning Sir how are you)

Me: i wish to say im good Her: Late night?

I nodded..

She started washing dishes, making a hella noise. Me: Belina

She stopped and looked at me. Her: Señor?

Me: Can you please make less noise? She exhaled..

Her: do you want my help or not? Me: i do

Her: Then let me help, let me wash dishes Me: Can't you use the dishwasher?

Her: You want help i asked or not?

Although she's been here in South Africa for a long time now, but her English was still off..

Me: Im sorry Belina

She went back to washing dishes.. Me: did Melissa drop off my car?

Her: she did not come here, no one came Me: i wonder where she is

Her: Your parents call the house phone, they coming now Me: What?

Her: on the way

Me: Why didn't they call me? Her: They call the house phone

Me: Thank you Belina for giving me the house phone to talk to them

Her: i help to clean here, i am not your assistant

Me: make sure those dishes and the house is very clean
you know how Ms Jackson is
Her: i know how to do my job
I walked to the bathroom to take a shower..

I thought showering was gonna help, but it didn't help that much i
was still messed up. I drank Aspirin and then went to the kitchen
again..

Melissa was standing there drinking juice.

Me: don't you have a photoshoot or something?
She looked at me..
Her: cancelled

I walked over to her...

Her: brought your car back
I took the keys..

Me: Thank you

Her: So how about giving you that pussy?

She came closer and put her hands around my waist..

Me: my parents are on their way
Her eyes widened...

Her: What? Ms Jackson is coming?
Me: Yes

Her: Thank you for calling me and telling me, look how impressed
She was wearing a very short jumpsuit..
The door bell rang, i took a
deep breath..
Me: Its them

I went to open, and it was them...

Me: Mom, Dad.. What are you doing here?
I acted surprised to see
them..

Mom: Are you gonna let us in?

I stepped back and they came in
My Dad hugged me..

Him: How have you been?

Me: Been good

I tried hugging my mother but she was pissed which i don't know why she was pissed, that she slapped me. I hate it when she does that..

.

. #BONOLO

I got to the main house and house chores were waiting for me. Lucy and i we have a very good sisterhood bond, she's very helpful we get along very well but her mother is not very comfortable with our relationship..

I looked all around and the house was very untidy.

Lucy showed up from upstairs, she was wearing Red. When a woman Wears red around the compound it alerts everyone that she is on her periods. Prophet Abdul is very strict on that, when you on your periods you not allowed to cook, clean, or do anything because you considered very unclean. Her: Hey Me: hey She sat on the couch...

Her: i won't be able to help you with anything today as you can see i am unclean

Me: That's very bad, all the dishes i'm gonna have to do alone and everything else this is just bad..

Her: I'm very sorry Me: It's okay

I went and sat next to her.. Her: Everything alright?

I looked down..

NOVELSGURU.COM

Everyone in the house excluding my little sister knows that i am sleeping with Prophet Abdul, but the compound doesn't know..

Me: i'm fine

Her: Then why do you look sad? I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Let me go and bath so i can start with the house chores..

I walked upstairs to the bedroom i share with my mother and my little sister. I found my mother folding clothes. She looked at me and

i looked at her then tears fell from me..

Her: No.. No.. No.. Nolo! shook my head no..

Me: i can't do it anymore mom She came up to me..

Her: Don't do that, don't cry.. She wiped my tears..

Her: You know how Lucia hates us she will use this against us
Lucia being the first wife..

Her: Remember why you doing this?

We went and sat down on the bed...

Me: i am pregnant with your husband's baby mom how is that normal? How is all of this normal?

She gently shook me..

Her: Please don't do this, don't do this to us

Me: Mom all of this is wrong, it feels very wrong. God is wrong

Mom: Nolo!

The door opened and Lucia walked in. This woman is very disrespectful she doesn't even knock..

Her: is Nolo back? She looked at me..

Mom: She just got back, she wants to bath so she can start with the house chores

Lucia: bath?

Mom: She has to bath

Lucia: Then that means she's ashamed of giving herself to prophet Abdul knowing very well she was chosen for this
Mom: That's not true Nolo is just very hygienic

Lucia: hygienic? She is sinning, she needs to go to the Purgatory

Mom: Purgatory, no that's unnecessary

Although our church is called The Purgatory, but there's a specific room inside the church where they lock you up for a few weeks so

you can be purified if you have sinned. The room is very dark you all alone with your thoughts. That's what they call the real Purgatory..

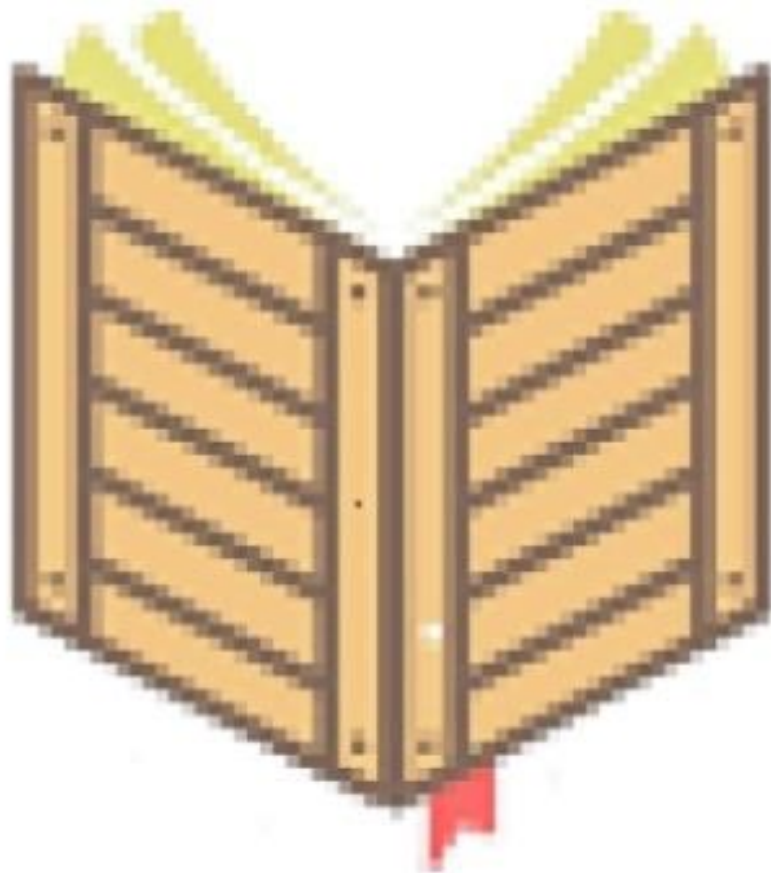
.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥04

#BONOLO

We were in the living room, Lucia had told on me and my mother to Prophet Abdul, and now we were awaiting our fate.

Abdul: it was made clear to me that you failed to discipline your daughter when she came crying to you portraying sinister feelings of hate, disgust, and regrets.

He said that referring to my mother.

Him: You know those type of feelings go against the Nature of our Religion and our God. Such feelings are demonic in Nature and you allowed your Daughter to bring about sin in this house....

In the compound feelings of hate, sadness, hurt, Anger, pain, disappointment are greatly discouraged. They contribute those type of feelings as being demonic. At all times you are forced to portray feelings of happiness, peace, love, and joy.

Abdul: You know what that means

He looked at Lucia..

Him: help her get dressed in black she is going to the Purgatory for 30 days. You will only be afforded one meal a day. I don't wanna lie, you have brought shame into our family my own wife sinning..

He stood up and spat on her..

I saw my mother breaking inside, i saw how much she wanted to break down and cry but she can't, because that would be another sin on top of this one.

The Purgatory is very strict on Discipline, if your child misbehaves you supposed to discipline them by beating them..

Lucia and my mother stood up and walked upstairs. The Prophet looked at me.

Him: You can go and lie down a bit, im sure you tired. You need all the rest since you are closer to giving birth. Pray for God to cast away those feelings of the devil, you lucky this time around next time you won't be so lucky you will

be locked in the Purgatory with your mother...He stood up and left.. I got up and made my way upstairs, i got to the bedroom and my mother was done being dressed up in black, she looked at me and i looked at her....

Lucia: We should go, you know you have to sit by the gate for a couple of hours so everyone can see that you have sinned, then later you go to the Purgatory..

They walked out. At that moment i did have the feelings of the devil since its what they think. I felt hate, anger, and pain at the same time..

I looked through the window as my mother was walked down that street which led to the main gate. Other people had started throwing stones at her, some were spitting on her, some even went up to her and slapped her. They were cursing, they treated her like filth.

I closed the curtain and went to lie on the bed while crying...

I couldn't help how i felt, i couldn't stop the pain and tears. Why is God this hard on us? Why does he give out soo difficult rules? Our Bible at the Purgatory is filled with laws and commands on what we should do and what we shouldn't do. This life is slowly leading me to an early grave, the only tears i know are tears of sorrow.

I know its wrong to wish upon death but now my only prayer is for God to take my life.

. #ZAINE

My mother had asked to talk me in private. We went to my bedroom, the door was half opened.

Her: i don't know what to say to you anymore Zaine. Its like you enjoy Dragging the Radebe surname into the mud.

Zaine we are not just any typical family we are a well known and respected family. We are servants of God we

always have to lead by example. Look at your big brother he is about to marry a God fearing girl, he is well behaved. He doesn't drink, he doesn't smoke why can't you be more like him? It's not good carrying a United front while we are not United..

I usually don't say anything when she gives one of her lectures..

Her: and how many times did I tell you to leave that girl alone?

What is she even doing here? Is she the reason why you don't come home anymore or call?

I hate that when a nigga's behaviour changes they always blame the girl.

Her: Look at how she's dressed? She's sent by the Devil to distract you!

She paused and took a deep breath calming herself down...

Her: There's a lot of beautiful and well mannered girls at church that you can marry, why do you want to marry a loose cannon I don't know..

I saw a shadow moving only to realise that Melissa was standing by the door listening to everything all along...

Me: Are we done Ms Jackson?

Her: I hope I made myself perfectly clear! I walked out to the kitchen..

Me: Belina, did Melissa leave? Her: Yes she just went out

I walked out hoping to catch up with her but I couldn't see her outside..

This is the reason why I don't want my mother coming to my house because of her big mouth..

I went back in and she was now in the kitchen preparing food, I passed her and went to my bedroom. I was very pissed so I decided to lie down for a while..

As I was taking a nap I had a very strange dream. In my dream I saw a girl who looked like she was being sexually violated. I couldn't clearly see her face but I could hear her

cry cutting deep within my soul and my heart. I saw this man on top of her pleasuring himself. She was begging him to stop and that its painful, but he would press his hand against her mouth trying to shut her up... It wasn't a pleasant sight to witness it was very painful. I looked around and i couldn't recognise this place and this people..

When this man was done, he got off from her. I now had a clear picture of how she looked like. She looked very young, probably 11...

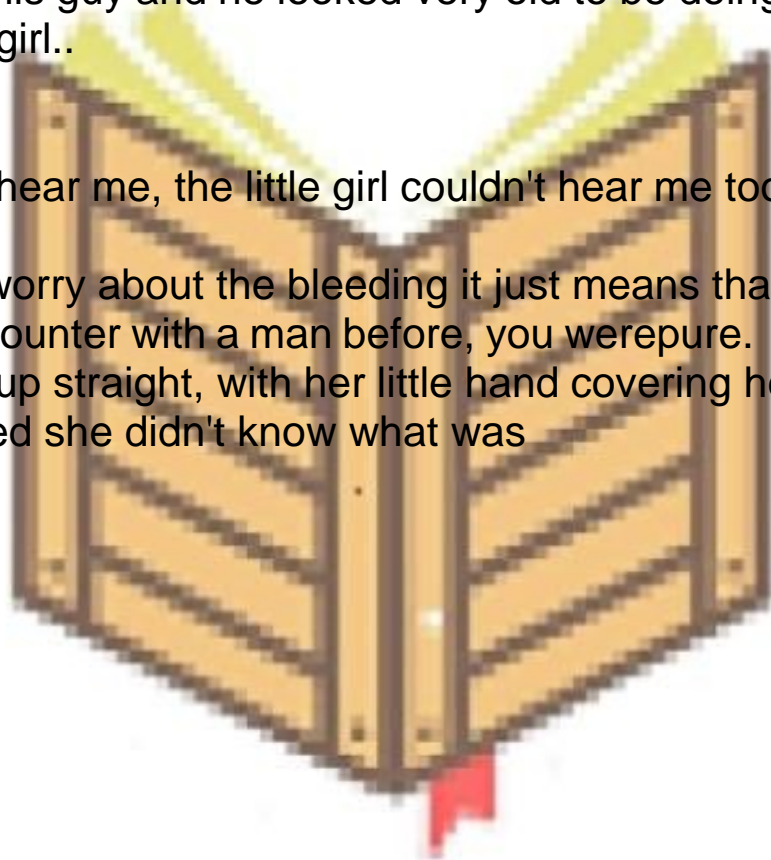
I looked at this guy and he looked very old to be doing this to this poor young girl..

Me: Hey!

He couldn't hear me, the little girl couldn't hear me too..

Man: don't worry about the bleeding it just means that you had never had any encounter with a man before, you were pure.

The girl sat up straight, with her little hand covering her breasts..she was confused she didn't know what was



NOVELSGURU.COM

going on at that time..

Him: God chose you for this, this will be your life until another chosen girl comes along.

The little girl started crying..

Him: Don't cry you know crying is a sin, your mother is gonna come and help you bath..

He dressed up and left. I walked closer and she looked like she was in pain the sheets were bloody. It was very painful to see all of this...

The door opened again and a woman walked in she was holding a basin with water and a towel hanging over her shoulder..

She put everything down and walked to the child, she hugged her..

Woman: Its okay, you are okay

..

I opened my eyes and realised that i had been dreaming.



NOVELSGURU.COM

The dream felt so real though that my heart was even beating fast..

I sat up straight and wiped my face with my hands...

I then stood up and went to the bathroom to wash my face..

I don't know what was happening to me..

.

. #BONOLO

I had been laying on the bed for a while now. Tears were streaming down as i was going down memory lane recalling how this man violated me the first time. I recall that day as if like it was yesterday. I was very young and he took my innocence away from me. I remember how he told the whole family about how i was chosen for this work and no one dared to say anything. If this is truly my calling then why does it feel so wrong?

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

Bonolo's Pov: Inspired by true life events
Zaine's Pov: 100% fiction
PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥05 #ZAINE

My mother had cooked a delicious meal as always, and we had gathered around the table eating. We were not communicating only the forks and knives made noise.

I didn't care anyway because my mind was very far away. I kept on thinking about the dream I had of that little girl, it was as if like she was haunting me. I don't take much consideration into dreams because I take them as subconscious thoughts making it into your conscious



NOVELSGURU.COM

mind when you are asleep, that's why you are able to experience everything so vivid and so real. But this dream in particular was different, it kept on playing in my mind like a movie. I felt that little girl's pain, her hurt, she was confused and it was very sad..

Dad: Zaine?

My name echoed in my ears..I looked at him.

Him: Are you okay son?

I looked at my mom who was also looking at me...Me: Yes im fine
We continued eating..

Mom: Your brother is getting married soonMe: Good for him

Her: are you gonna come?

Me: he is my brother, i have to comeMom: mind how you talk to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sorry

Dad: How about we take a walk when we finish eating? I nodded..
We continued eating but i didn't finish my food, i didn't feel like eating at all..

My Dad and i took a walk around the neighbourhood leaving my mother to be on Belina's throat..

It was a sunny day and also a bit windy, Nevertheless it was a beautiful weather though..

Dad: so what's happening son?

I didn't even know where to start.

Him: Remember you are talking to me and not Ms Jackson

Me: alot is happening Pops that i am not even sure if i'm sane anymore

Him: I'm listening Me: i see visions Him: in your dreams?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: sometimes they happen when im conscious this othertime i saw what looked like an Angel.. Crazy i know

Him: Its not crazy

Me: Dad you know i don't believe in such

Him: Why don't you wanna believe in "such" if i may ask

Me: because Its a bunch of bullshit! Religion is bull at Itscore. Everyone thinks that their religion is better than another Religion.

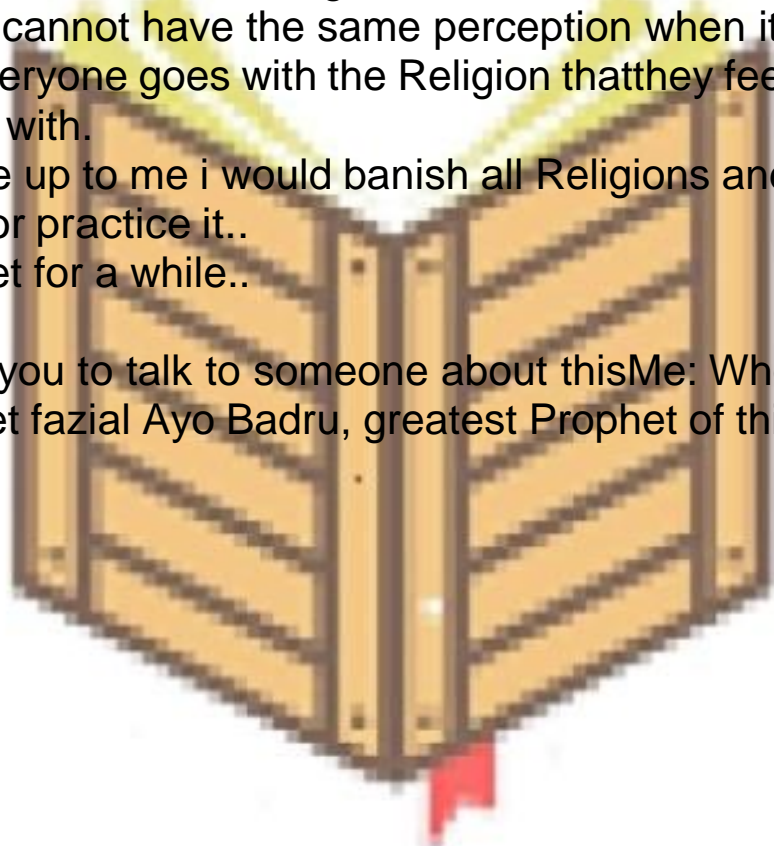
Him: We all cannot have the same perception when it comes to Religion. Everyone goes with the Religion thatthey feel very much comfortable with.

Me: if it were up to me i would banish all Religions andanyone who supports it or practice it..

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: i want you to talk to someone about thisMe: Who?

Him: Prophet fazial Ayo Badru, greatest Prophet of this



NOVELSGURU.COM

lifetime have you heard of him?

Me: i have heard of him but why should i talk to him?

Him: i think you will understand him better than me ill giveyou his contacts before i go

.

. #BONOLO

With the little strength that i had left in me i got out of bed and went to prepare myself for church. I bathe again because everytime when i sleep with Abdul i feel very dirty. Another reason why i bath alot is because when im in the bathroom i get time to cry alot without anyone seeing me..

Broken doesn't even begin to explain what i was going through. I looked down at my big tummy as i was sitting inthat bathtub, i haven't felt my baby playing or moving in a long time. I am just 17 years old i am a baby myself how can i take care of another baby? I laid my head back with my eyes closed, i wish i was my little sister or Lucia's first



NOVELSGURU.COM

born. My little sister was sent to a boarding school and Lucia's son is studying overseas. Only me and Lucy are left, even though Lucy wasn't sent to go study somewhere but she is treated better than me. I have noticed that I am the only bastard child to Abdul and maybe this is why he treats me this way because I have seen him treating Lucy better, treating my little sister better and treating his son Lucy's Brother better than I..

I opened my eyes and realised that I was sinning, I shouldn't be having such feelings and thoughts they are sinister. Prophet Abdul is perfect in every way that is why he was chosen by God..

I slowly got out of the bathtub and drained the water, then I moved closer to the mirror..

The bathroom was steamy making the mirror a bit misty. I took a towel and attempted to wipe it when all of a sudden I saw words being written. Although I haven't set foot at any school but I know how to read. Simon has been teaching me privately. Only boys are allowed to go to



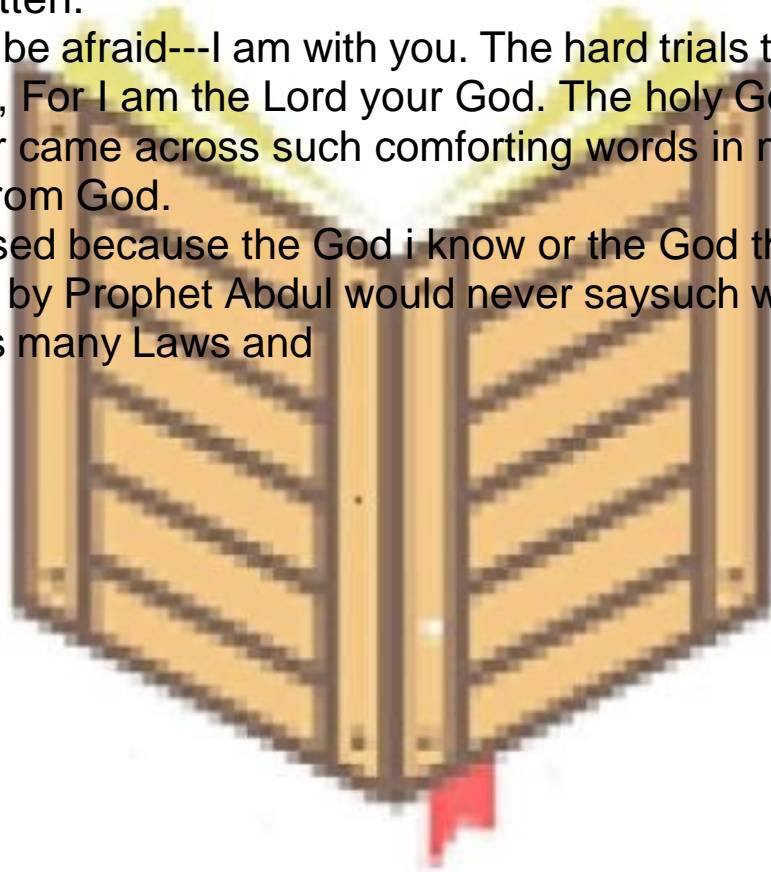
NOVELSGURU.COM

school, the compound has a school. The compound has everything that's why we not allowed to go outside because we have everything here. Girls are not allowed to go to school they are groomed from an early age to be wives, Prophet Abdul said we were made to serve our husbands and do household chores and to be baby incubators that's what we were created for..

As the words started being written on the mirror i started reading, although some other words i couldn't really make out how they sounded or what they meant i forced myself to read them as how they are written.

Me: "Do not be afraid---I am with you. The hard trials that come will not hurt you, For I am the Lord your God. The holy God of Israel" I have never come across such comforting words in my whole entire life From God.

I was confused because the God i know or the God that was made known to us by Prophet Abdul would never say such words. The God of Abdul has many Laws and



NOVELSGURU.COM

commands, he is a very strict one and would punish you if you don't do what is required of you..

Yes the words were comforting and everything, reading them gave me a sense of peace at that moment but who wrote them? Because definitely not the God of Abdul. He said "For I am the Lord, your God"
Me: "Lord"

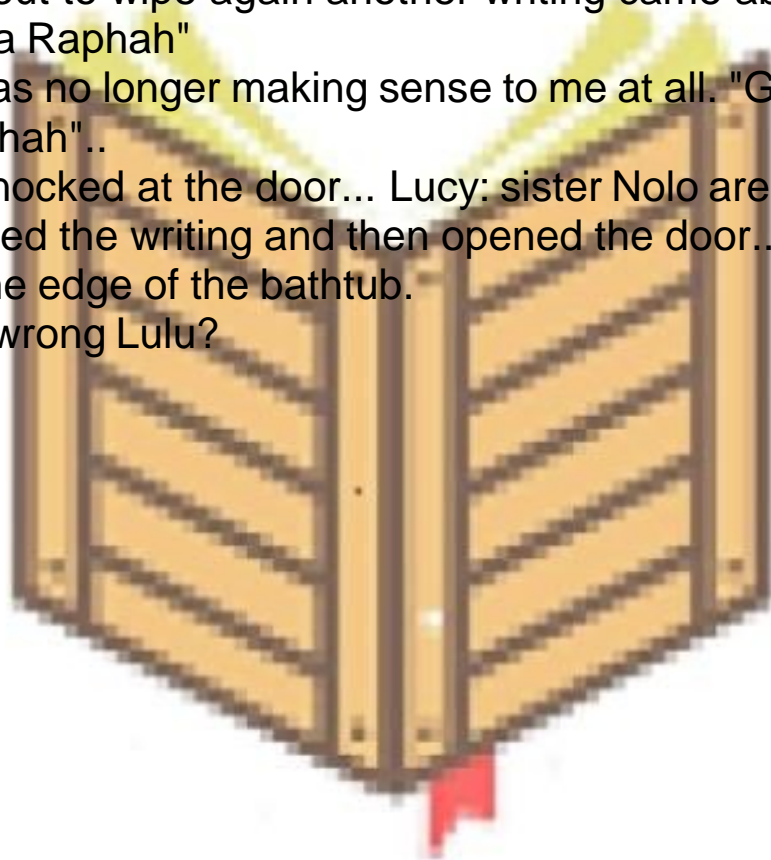
I have never heard that name before..

As i was about to wipe again another writing came about and it read "I am Jehova Raphah"

Okay this was no longer making sense to me at all. "God, Lord, Jehova Raphah"..

Someone knocked at the door... Lucy: sister Nolo are you in here?
I quickly wiped the writing and then opened the door..She came in and sat at the edge of the bathtub.

Me: What's wrong Lulu?



NOVELSGURU.COM

We mostly call her Lulu..

Her: Can't believe im gonna miss the whole night prayertonight
So sad that Lulu cannot do anything since she's on her periods she is considered unclean. She cannot even setfoot at church.

Her: i have read the Teachings of Abdul and its written in black and red i am Forbidden to enter the holy place whileim unclean.

Our Bible is titled "The Teachings of Abdul" those teachings were sent to Abdul from God so he says..

I sat next to her.. Me: im sorry sister

We kept quiet for a while..Me: Lulu

Her: Yes?

Me: Can i ask you something?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Yes

Me: do you know the Lord?Her: No who is that?

Me: do you at least know Jehova Raphah?Her: Who are those people?

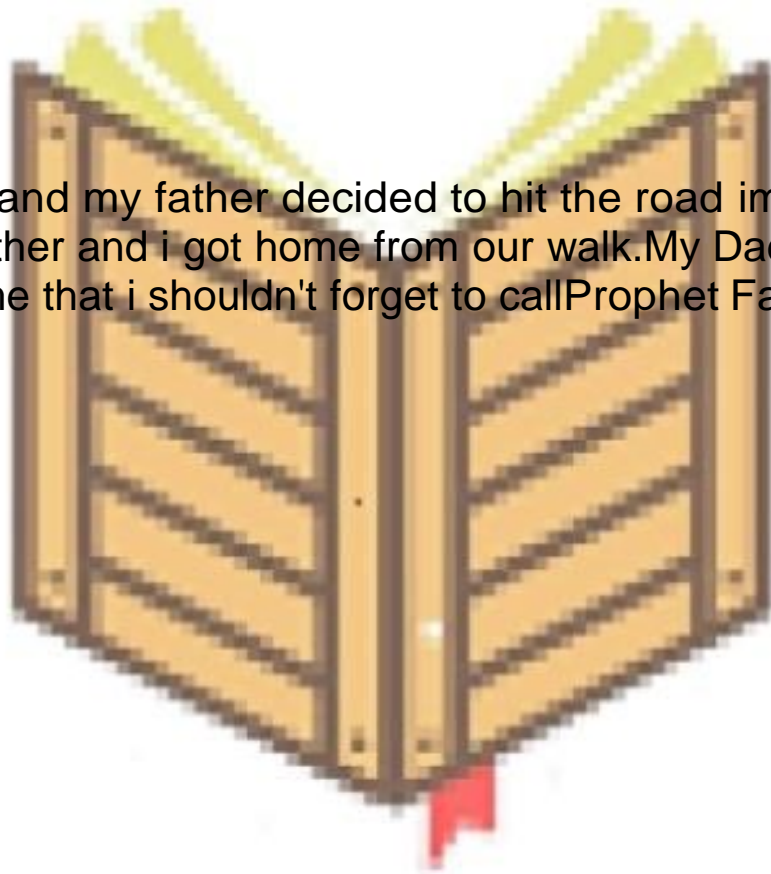
Me: i also don't know

I laid my head on her shoulder.. Me: but i hope i know them soon Lulu and i talk about anything and everything, we all thatwe have as sisters..

.

. #ZAINE

My mother and my father decided to hit the road immediately when my father and i got home from our walk.My Dad kept on reminding me that i shouldn't forget to callProphet Fazial Ayo Badru.



NOVELSGURU.COM

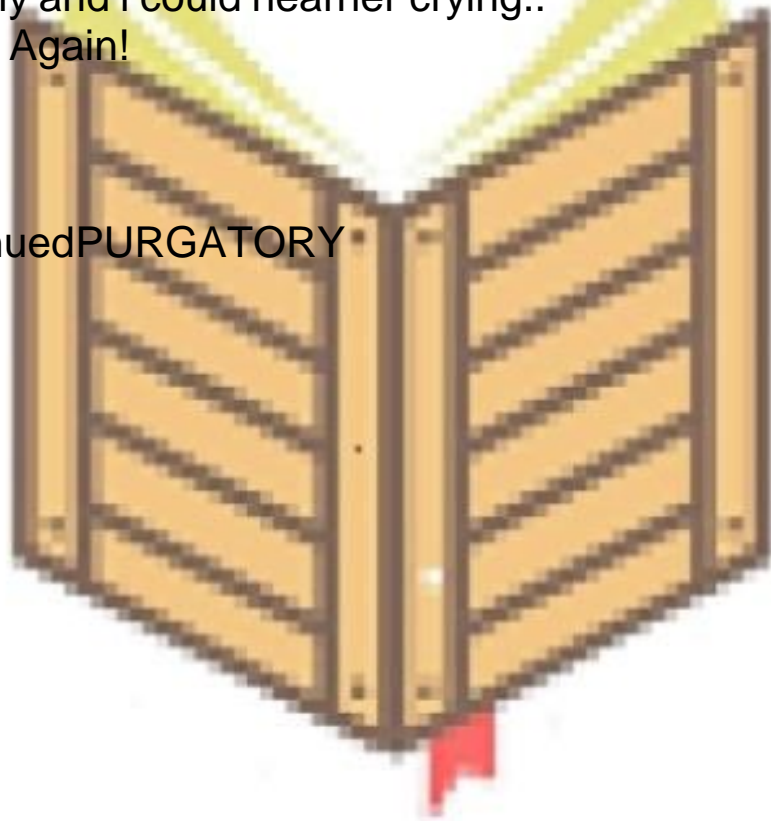
I walked them to their car and watched them as they took off, then I went back inside the house. I was feeling like turning up tonight so I sent Blake a message that we should meet up later. I also sent Melissa a text to join us I really wanted us to talk..

I walked to the closet to check the sneakers I'm gonna wear tonight I always must look my best when I'm going out..

When I was done I went to the bathroom to check if I needed a haircut or not. I looked myself in the mirror and something unexpected happened. I saw a girl in a bathtub, she was pregnant. Her face was blurry I couldn't see who she was. She had one hand on her tummy and I could hear her crying..

Me: Not this Again!

To be continued PURGATORY



NOVELSGURU.COM

·
·
·
¥06 #ZAINÉ

When Blake and i hit the club we always make everyone jealous, niggas Ofcause. Bitches would wanna roll with usor be noticed by us, but then even a nigga like me with such status can be faithful and i am very faithful to my girl,i see myself marrying that girl some day and i see us having kids..

The waitress got us a private table, the bouncers makesure to keep the groupies away as always..

Blake: i am looking around and i ain't seeing hottiesanywhere as yet

Me: i hit up Melissa and she's coming with that friend others

Mathapelo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: That curvy girl?Me: the one and only
Him: You just made a nigga happyThe waitress came to us...
Her: can i get you anything gentleman?

Blake: start us off with grey goose sweetnessHe then looked at me..

Him: What are the ladies gonna drink?Me: they'll order when they get here
Blake: that will be all for now Waitress: grey goose coming right upShe went..

Blake: Your girl is always late

Me: tell me about it, her make up take hours manHim: no wonder why she always look perfect
Me: Let me go get a cigar at the counter



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Ayt man

I stood up and made my way there..

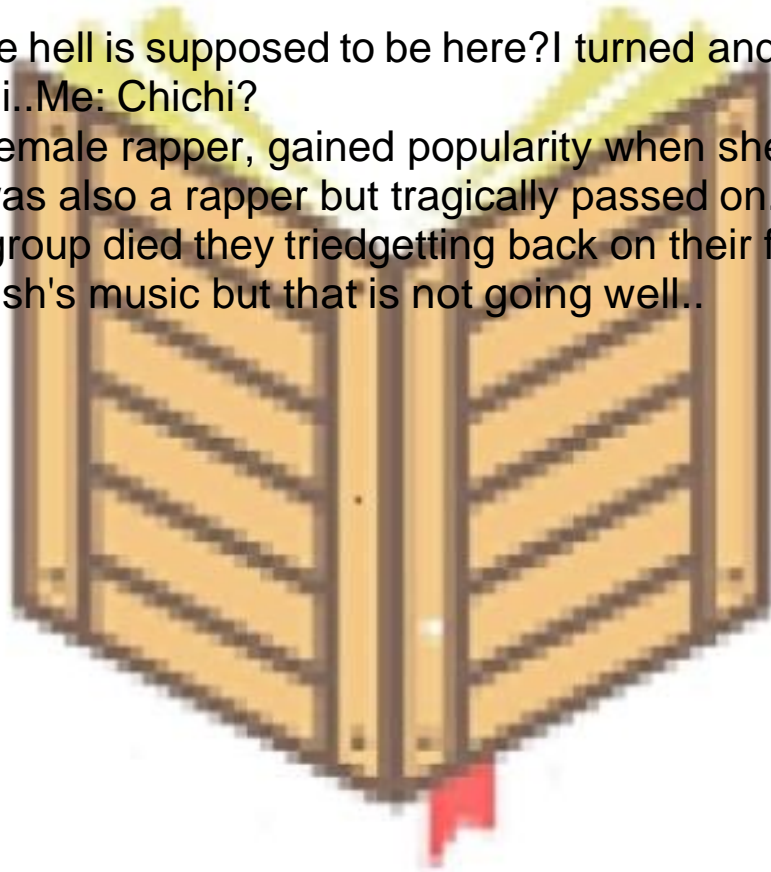
There was no one behind that counter when i got there so iwaited..

Me: "Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wamiHaven't seen you in a while
Girl... "

I then heard a female voice talking next to me interruptingmy
singing....

Her: Who the hell is supposed to be here?I turned and looked at her,
it was Chichi..Me: Chichi?

Chichi is a female rapper, gained popularity when she signed with
Kush who was also a rapper but tragically passed on. Since kush's
death their group died they triedgetting back on their feet by
releasing kush's music but that is not going well..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Zaine? Omg look at you, you look handsome as always
Me: and you look beautiful as always
Her: i can't believe Its really you

Me: Stop tripping and give me a hug She stood up and then gave me a hug...

Me: How have you been and what are you doing currently? She exhaled showing signs of defeat.

Her: things have been very difficult for me since kush died

Me: That's crazy with such a talent you should be selling albums

Her: i know hey We kept quiet.. Me: i have an idea She looked at me..

Me: How about you come to the studio and we work



NOVELSGURU.COM

something out?

Her: are you for real?

Me: Yes we'll take everything from there
She was soo excited that she hugged me again..

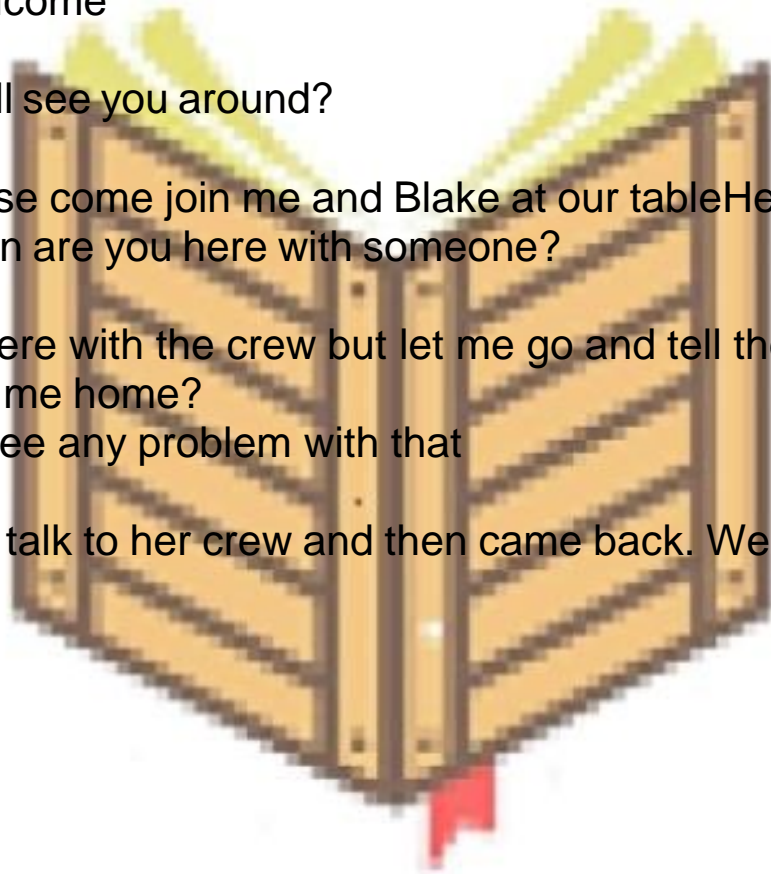
Her: Thank you very much you don't know how much it means to me
Me: You welcome

Her: guess ill see you around?

Me: nonsense come join me and Blake at our table
Her: uhm..
Me: Come on are you here with someone?

Her: i was here with the crew but let me go and tell them..Are you gonna drive me home?
Me: i don't see any problem with that

She went to talk to her crew and then came back. We went



NOVELSGURU.COM

to my table..

Blake wasn't alone anymore Melissa and Mathapelo werethere.
Blake: that took long nigga where were you?Melissa gave me a weird look..

Me: uhm.. Look who i bumped into at the counter, Chichi..Blake:
Thee one and only Chi?

Me: Yeap

Chichi: Wow Blake im a big FanBlake: Im a Fan too

Me: She's gonna be joining us hope you don't mind?Blake: Ofcause not the more the marrier

Chichi sat down next to Blake and i sat down next toMelissa..

I looked at Melissa..Me: hey



NOVELSGURU.COM

I tried kissing her on her cheek but she brushed me off..She looked at her friend..

Melissa: i think that's our queue to leave TapsTaps: but..

Melissa: now! Taps: uhm okay

They stood up, i stood up too and went after them..Me: Mel...

I grabbed her by her arm and she slapped me..Her: from now on play far from me!

She clicked her tongue and went..

.

. #BONOLO

Before the night prayer started I had a word with Abdulabout a few things, wait make that he had a few words



NOVELSGURU.COM

with me. He told me that since i was 8 months pregnant this Month we will have to stop seeing each other because he wants this baby delivered safely and healthy. He also told me that i shouldn't work myself hard..

It was my first time seeing him actually this caring because he has never been like this to me..

He even let me leave early to go and rest because the night prayer was gonna be long. When i got home i had a fruit salad and fruit juice prepared for me he had asked Lucia to be fully hands on in helping me. Lucia wasn't happy with the idea, but she had no choice..

After eating i went straight to bed. I was with Lucy in the house since she wasn't allowed anywhere near the church because of her being unclean we both had an early night.....

As i was sleeping i had this weird dream..

I was standing at the door of this beautiful bedroom starring at this guy who was standing in front of the mirror with his back facing me. He was putting on his tie while singing..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: "Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wami Haven't seen you in a while
Girl I thought you're better off without me ain't gotta stress about it
no more.. "

I glanced down and i had my hand on my big tummy, it was my left
hand and it had this big diamond ring. What was happening? Am i
married and pregnant again..

He finally noticed me and then turned to look at me. Goodness me
he was very handsome, i have never seen such perfection of God in
a human being when it came to how he looked..

Him: i swear that's the last time i seeing that song

I was very confused i looked at him and he could see that
something was wrong. He looked perfect in that black and white
suit..

Him: cutesy pie, are you alright? Me: cutesy pie?



NOVELSGURU.COM

He made his way to me and stared deep in my eyes..Him: if you don't feel good i can always stay at homeMe: i.. I am alright
Him: Could've fooled me Me: Im serious... I am fine
He put his hand under my chin and came closer to kissme...
I then woke up breathing heavily..

I looked around and i was in my room. I put my hand onmy chest..
Me: Its just a dream Nolo, Its just a dream..

I laid my head on the pillow again trying to recall the guy inmy dream but i couldn't remember his face anymore, couldn't remember how he looked like..

To be continuedPURGATORY



NOVELSGURU.COM

·
·
·
¥07 #ZAINÉ

Mel wanted to act crazy and childish so i let her be. I continued enjoying my night with Blake and Chichi.

Chi: i didn't know that you guys can be this fun
Blake: You haven't had this fun?

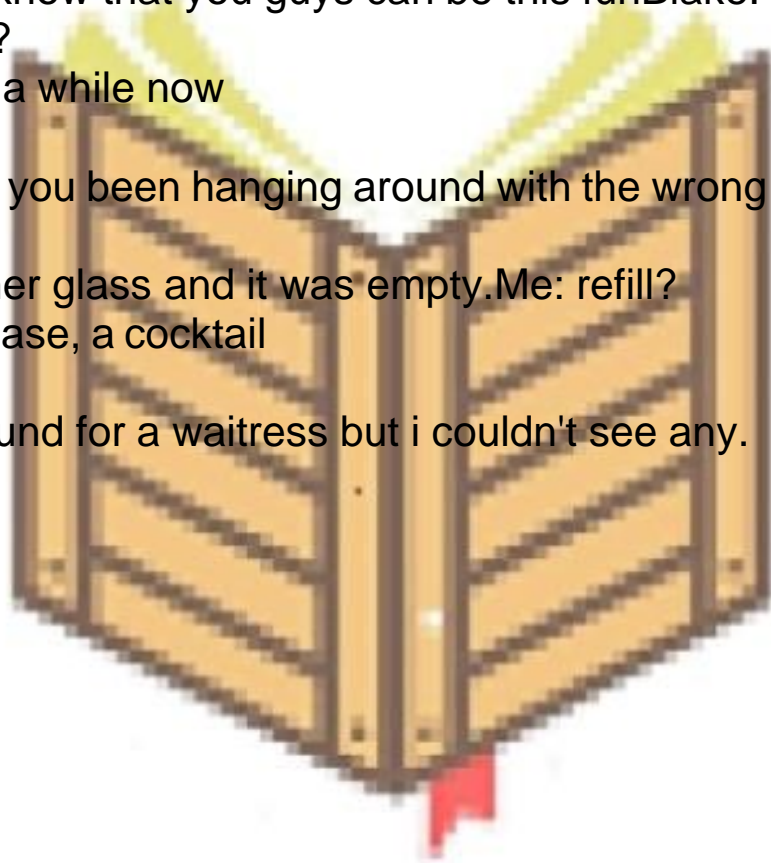
Her: Not for a while now

Blake: Then you been hanging around with the wrong crew
She laughed..

I looked at her glass and it was empty.
Me: refill?

Her: Yes please, a cocktail

I looked around for a waitress but i couldn't see any.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: ill get it for you
Her: Thank you
I stood up and made my way to the bar when all of a sudden some random guy bumped into me.
Me: Eyy watch where you going!
Him: askies bro?
Me: I said watch where you going
He chuckled..
Him: no ak'na stress sorry bro

I clicked my tongue as i made my way to the bar..
Me: Ghetto thugs
Him: Sorry i didn't get that last part?
I stopped and turned around..
Me: i said ghetto thugs

His two friends came closer..

Him: be careful on who you pick fights with



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yeah whatever

Him: ndaba lama cheese boy avele ahlphe (this cheeseboys are trouble)

Me: be careful on who you call a cheese boyHim: or what?

Everytime when i drink alcohol it gives me that confidencethat i can do anything, it gives me soo much courage to even face my demons without any fear..

I threw a punch at him and those around us noticed then started making noise attracting security to come our way. He didn't fight back he just looked at me and laughed for aminute or so..

Security: is there a problem here?He looked at the security..

Him: no security there's no problemSecurity: i hope not

I made my way to the bar, my knuckles hurt alot and they



NOVELSGURU.COM

were bruised..

I got Chichi the cocktail and went back to our table...

We continued having a good time until it was time to go home..

Blake said he will drive Chichi home, i think they starting to be exclusive so i let them be while i walked up to my car...

The parking was a bit quiet, there's no security around here everyone was still inside having fun but i was tired i needed to home and rest...

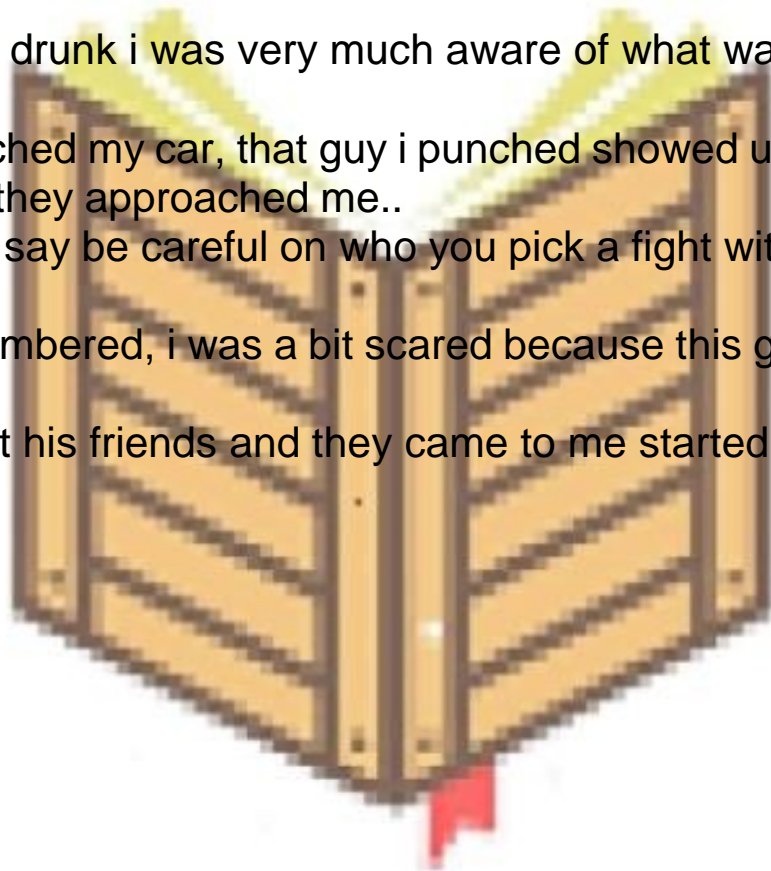
I wasn't that drunk i was very much aware of what was going on around me..

As i approached my car, that guy i punched showed up with his two friends and they approached me..

Him: didn't i say be careful on who you pick a fight with?

I was out numbered, i was a bit scared because this guys do look very thug.

He looked at his friends and they came to me started



NOVELSGURU.COM

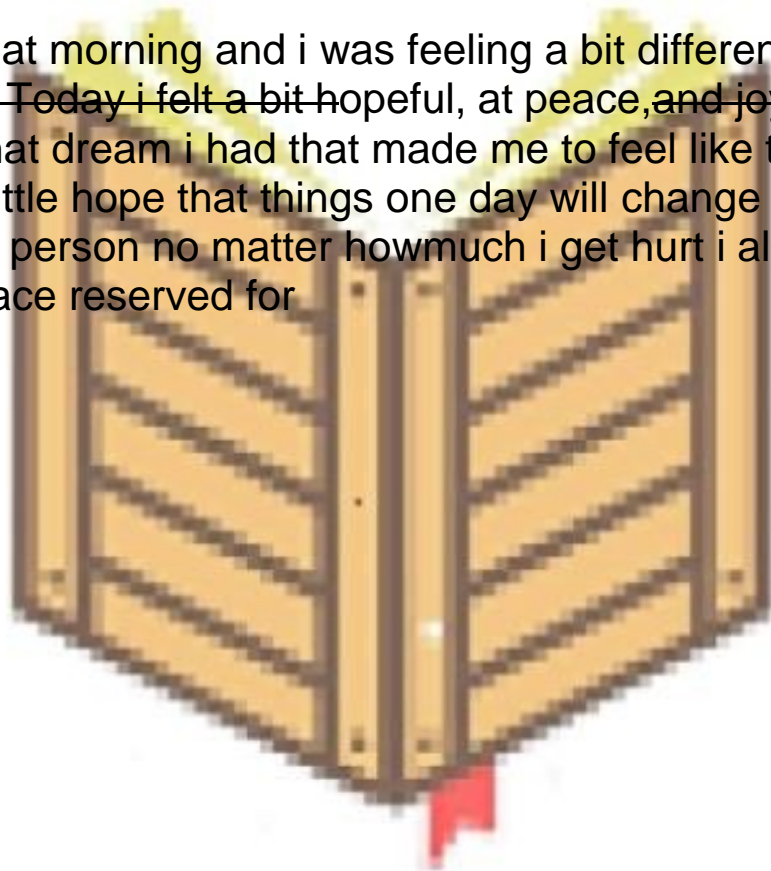
beating me up senseless..

No one was gonna come my way, this was a very isolated place i should've just known better than to walk alone to the parking lot.. After that brutal beating of being kicked while i was laying on the ground, he took out a knife and stabbed me repeatedly. It was an intense pain, i did feel like i was gonna die..

. #BONOLO

I woke up that morning and i was feeling a bit different than ~~how i usually feel~~. Today i felt a bit hopeful, at peace, and joyful..—

Maybe Its that dream i had that made me to feel like this, i mean it gave me a little hope that things one day will change for the better. I am that one person no matter how much i get hurt i always have that little space reserved for



NOVELSGURU.COM

hope...

I bathe and then went to the kitchen to have breakfast before Simon comes to take me out for my morning walk. Lucia had finished cleaning the house and now she was preparing breakfast. I know this is very difficult for her because she hardly does anything around the house im always hands on, but since im closer to giving birth she had to relieve me from my duties..
I sat at the table..

Me: Good morning mama Lucia

Her: Good morning, im almost done with the soft porridge Lulu came down too still wearing Red...

Her: Good morning We greeted her back..
She took a towel and sat down.. Me: Shame when are you finishing? Her: still have 3 days to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's sad

Lucia dished up for us...

Lucia: Lucy your brother called last night
Lulu: How are things going at school?

Lucia: he is saying things are going good
Lulu: i wish i was him right now

Lucia dropped the plate she was holding..She looked at her Daughter..

Her: What did you say?Lulu kept quiet..

Lucia: i will smack those feelings of envy right out of you!(shouting)
Go upstairs and pray ask for forgiveness!!!

Lulu stood up and walked upstairs.. Feelings of envy are also discouraged..

What Lucia did is what's required at the compoud, to



NOVELSGURU.COM

discipline your kids like this..

There was a knock at the door Lucia opened and Simon walked in..

Simon: Good morning We greeted...

Lucia: You early, Nolo hasn't even had breakfast

Simon: That's why im early, i would like her to have breakfast with me at my place

Lucia: ohh blessed are you Nolo stood up..

Me: ill see you later mama Lucia Her: Enjoy

Simon and i held hands then we walked out.. Him: thought i should get you out of there Me: Thank you

We walked and passed the compound where Prophet



NOVELSGURU.COM

Abdul and i usually do our business at, and i saw this young girl walking out of there...

After a while i saw Abdul walking out of there too..Me: Shameful!

Simon put his hand over my mouth..Him: Shhhhh

The anger inside of me was burning me..

.

. #ZAINÉ

I woke up at the hospital, i don't even know how i made it here. All i remember was me laying on the ground bleeding to death..

I was very much in pain i won't lie, my whole body was aching...

I looked around and i saw my dad sitting next to me reading a Bible..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Dad

He looked at me..Him: Son

He put the Bible away.. Him: How are you feeling?Me: still in pain

I tried moving but i felt an excruciating pain..Him: Take it easy

Me: Where is mom?

Him: She's still handling a few things she will be here laterIm glad she's not here right now..

Dad: There's someone who would like to meet youMe: Who?

He stood up and went out, then Came back with ProphetBadru, a lecture is not what i need right now..

Dad: Son meet the greatest Prophet of this lifetime,



NOVELSGURU.COM

Prophet Badru

He looked at the Prophet..

Him: Prophet meet my son, Zaine

Badru: i would give you a handshake but looks like you in pain..
I looked at this guy and i was surprised at the fact that he is a prophet but has a few tattoos, isn't that against Religion? This is why i don't believe in such all this Prophets be fake.

.

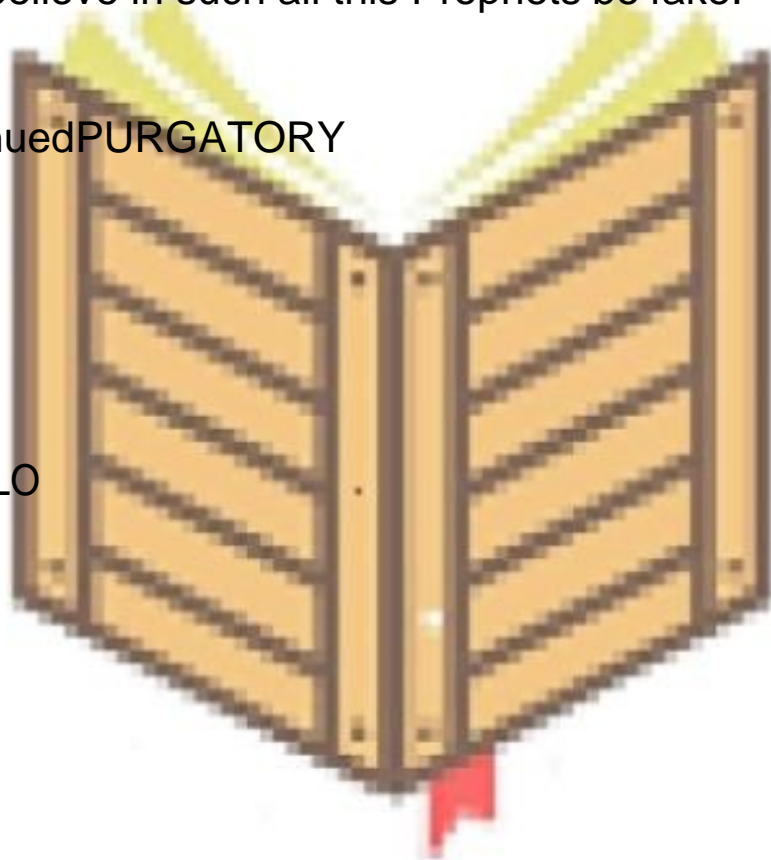
To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥08 #BONOLO

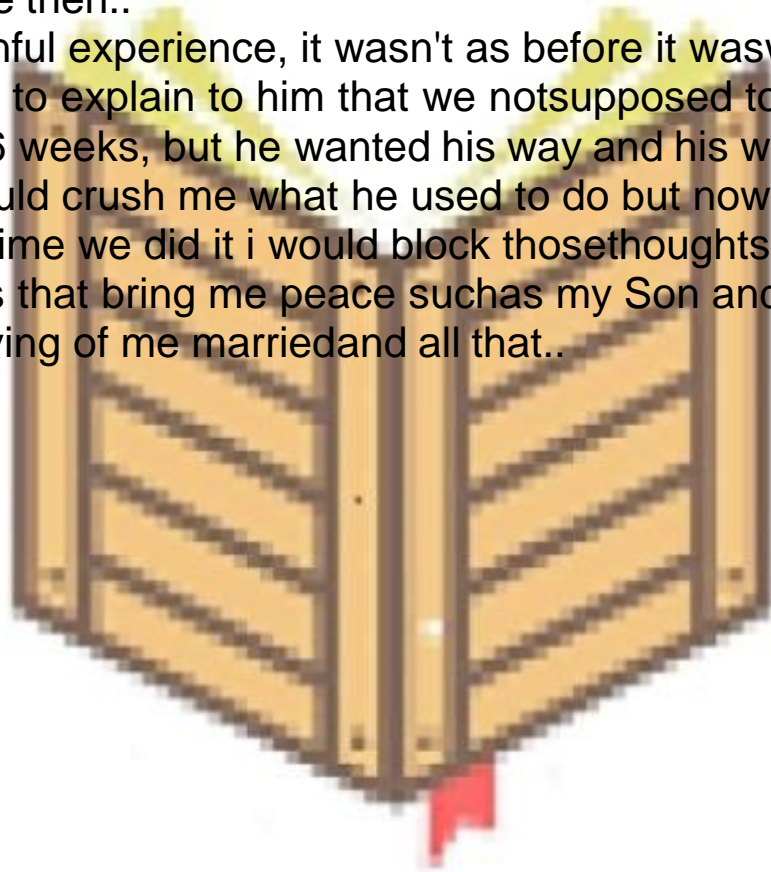


NOVELSGURU.COM

- A MONTH LATER

I had given birth to a baby boy, i named him Blessing. Despite how he was conceived but he is my blessing and he completes my world. Blessing decided to come earlier than expected, he was born 2 weeks before my birth date but he was a healthy baby boy. I thought that maybe since Blessing was born Prophet Abdul would change but he didn't change instead he forced me to be intimate with him a week after giving birth, and we have been very much regular since then..

It was a painful experience, it wasn't as before it was worse. My mother tried to explain to him that we not supposed to be intimate for at least 6 weeks, but he wanted his way and his way he got.. At first it would crush me what he used to do but now i was numb to pain. Everytime we did it i would block those thoughts and think about things that bring me peace such as my Son and the dream i keep on having of me married and all that..



NOVELSGURU.COM

One morning i decided to wake up and do my baby's laundry. I had put his stroller just right next to the washing line. Blessing spends most of his time sleeping, he is not a problematic child he mostly cries when he wants to eat or sleep.. Abdul hasn't taken Blessing seriously or even bothered to spend time with him. Simon is stepping up to that, being a father figure to Blessing. Simon now works in the city, but he doesn't stay there he just lives in the morning with his truck and comes back later. He is working at some company and making a pretty good money, he is very helpful financially he takes care of me and Blessing. He buys me nice things at the city and also buys Blessing things too... Next week Blessing and i we need to move in with Simon the church Council has agreed to that since we have a baby we supposed to be living together raising our baby. Even Though Abdul has the last word but his decision can be over turned by the council if they don't support it. He is not happy with the idea of me and Simon living together,



NOVELSGURU.COM

he is very much against it...

On my side i cannot wait, Simon and myself we have grown to have feelings for each other and i know that we gonna make a good couple. He cares deeply for me and my son and only wants the best for us. When i move in with Simon Abdul will never touch me ever, i will no longer belong to him..

I carried on hanging the clothes while humming a nice tune when some girl walked into the yard and approached me..

As she got closer, i noticed that it was that girl who was sleeping with Abdul when i was pregnant..

Her: Hello

I stopped what i was doing and looked at her..Me: hi

Her: My name is OlunjeMe: Im Bonolo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Nice meeting you Me: Same here
She couldn't face me, she was mostly avoiding eyecontact with me..
Her: Sorry to just bother you like this Me: Its okay what can i help
you with?Her: i..
I could see she wanted to break down but she was tryingvery hard
to hold back her tears..
Me: We can sit down on the bench

We went and sat down on the bench, she looked atBlessing..
Her: is that your baby?I nodded..
Me: His name is BlessingHer: he is adorable



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

I looked at her hoping she will tell me why she's here...

I looked at her closely and noticed that she has a black eye, although the swelling was fading but you can definitely

see that something happened there with her left eye..Her: i..

I held her hand.. Me: What's wrong?Her: Im pregnant

Me: How old are you?Her: 14

Tears started falling from her..Her: Its Prophet Abdul.. He..

Me: Sexual violated you

I could feel her pain, her tears were mine i could also feel myself close to crying but i restrained one of us had to be strong incase someone comes through..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: When did it start? Her: When i was 12 Me: Im truly sorry
Her: everytime when it happened he would compare me to this
"Bonolo" he used to say "you not emotionally strong like Bonolo"
that's how i came to learn about you..
Me: Its alright

Her: lately he had been violent Me: violent?
Her: he is bringing out a monster inside of him

I wanted to hug her, but i couldn't if someone catches us we will be
in trouble..
She stood up..

Her: Im sorry i shouldn't.. Me: Olunje Its okay
Her: i should go



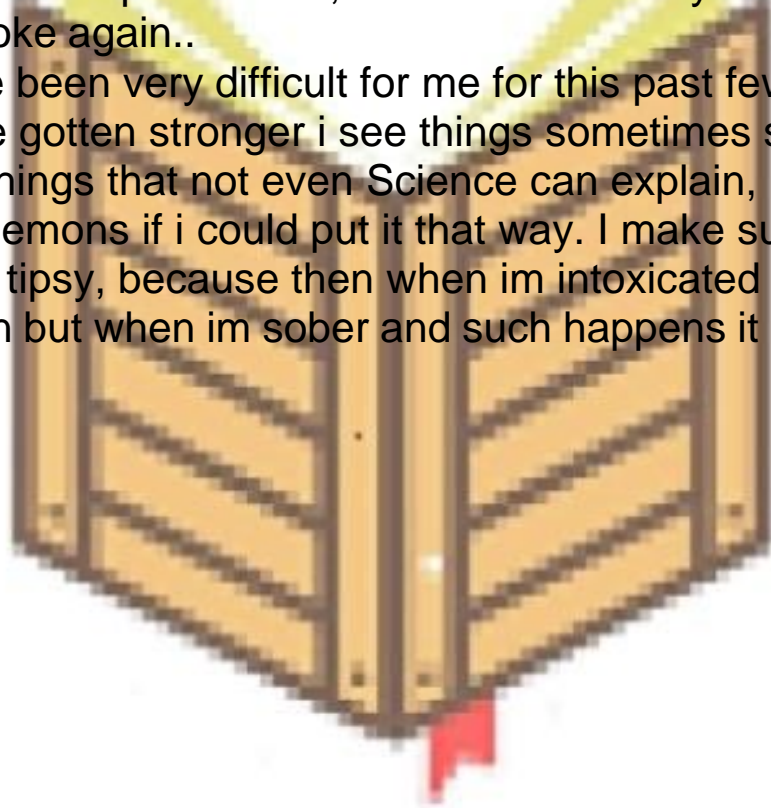
NOVELSGURU.COM

She quickly made her way out..

. #ZAINÉ

I was at the studio listening to some beats since Chichi has signed with us tomorrow she must start Recording working on a mix tape to bring back her fans. The incidenti had at the club a month ago made me to go out less and work more. Blake was working on his 3rd album too so thewas no more time to fool around. I haven't kept in contact with Prophet Badru, ever since that day at the Hospital wenever spoke again..

Things have been very difficult for me for this past few weeks, my visions have gotten stronger i see things sometimes scary things. I am seeing things that not even Science can explain, i see Angels as well as Demons if i could put it that way. I make sure that i am always a bit tipsy, because then when im intoxicated i can take everything in but when im sober and such happens it really



NOVELSGURU.COM

makes me question my Sanity. I tried going to a Shrink but she also had no clear explanation other than that i am hallucinating.. I stopped seeing my Shrink because i didn't wanna get locked up in a mental institution because i see where this is going now. At times i would hear a very faint voice calling my name every now and then and i wouldn't even see where the voice is coming from.. Melissa walked in as i was listening to a few beats, we fixed things and now we were fine although she doesn't like my close relationship with Chichi..

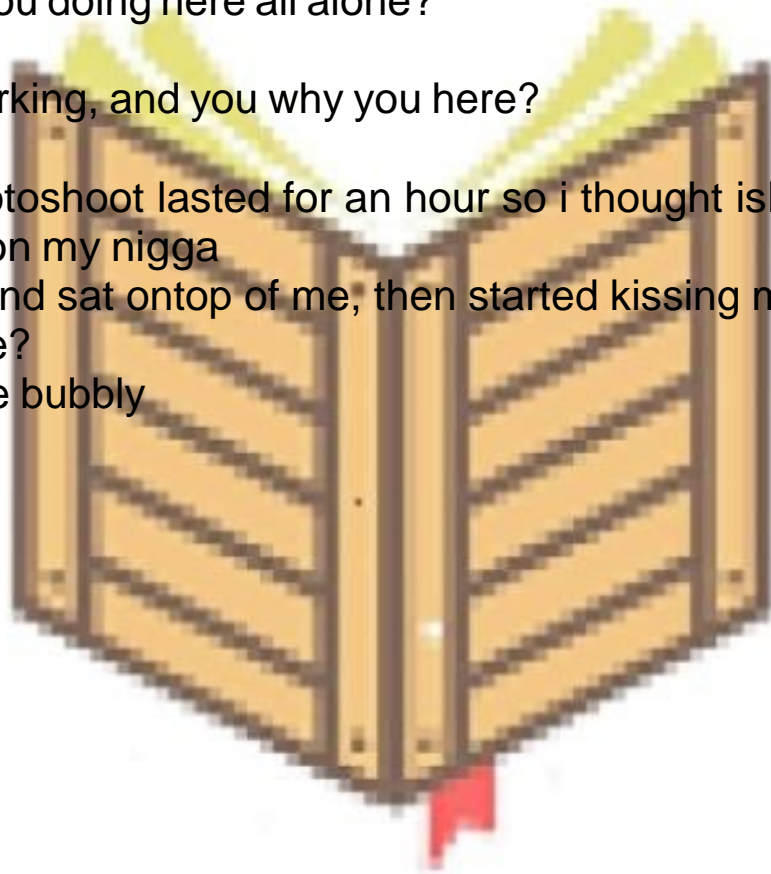
Her: What you doing here all alone?

Me: Just working, and you why you here?

Her: My photoshoot lasted for an hour so i thought i should come and check on my nigga

She came and sat on top of me, then started kissing me.. Her: are you all alone?

Me: all alone bubbly



NOVELSGURU.COM

She ran her hands under my tshirt,slowly turning me on...Me: ive missed you

Her: ive missed you too

We continued kissing until i felt like my jeans were gettingwet, i tried ignoring but they were getting wet and sticky inmy thigh area where Melissa was sitting. I pulled out..

Her: What's wrong?Me: uhm nothing

I looked down and noticed it was blood, Melissa wasbleeding..

I got her off me and i stood up..Her: What's wrong?

I looked at my jeans again and they were clean therewasn't any blood and Melissa wasn't bleeding either..

Her: Zaine what's going?Me: ill be right back

I kissed her on her forehead,then i walked out to call my



NOVELSGURU.COM

dad.. Him: Son

I have been talking to my dad about this visions that imhaving..

Him: Don't forget your brother's wedding on SaturdayMe: i won't

Him: You sound distress what's wrong? Me: i looked at Melissa through the windowDad: Zaine

Me: it happened again Pops, im seeing things againHim: What did you see again?

Me: i.. I saw Melissa bleeding and then she..

Something disturbed me as i was speaking, i saw a tail it was as if like something had made it to the other room but i didn't see all of it other than the tail that was disappearing into the other room where we keep a few records and play games..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: Zaine?

I lowered my phone and slowly made my way to see what was it.. I slowly approached the door and i saw a creature. It looked like a goat with a snake tail, a snake tongue and eyes also had horns.. It was walking not like a goat but like a human being...I freaked out i won't lie..

I stepped back as it made its way to me..

I stepped back until i was in contact with the wall and i sank down while covering my face waiting to be attacked by whatever it was.. I heard someone calling my name..

I lifted my head up and Melissa was standing right in front of me looking a bit worried..

Her: Zaine what's going on?

I looked around and the creature was gone, it had



NOVELSGURU.COM

disappeared..

I stood up, she came and touched me..Her: Omg baby you shaking
I couldn't even speak it was that terrible..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

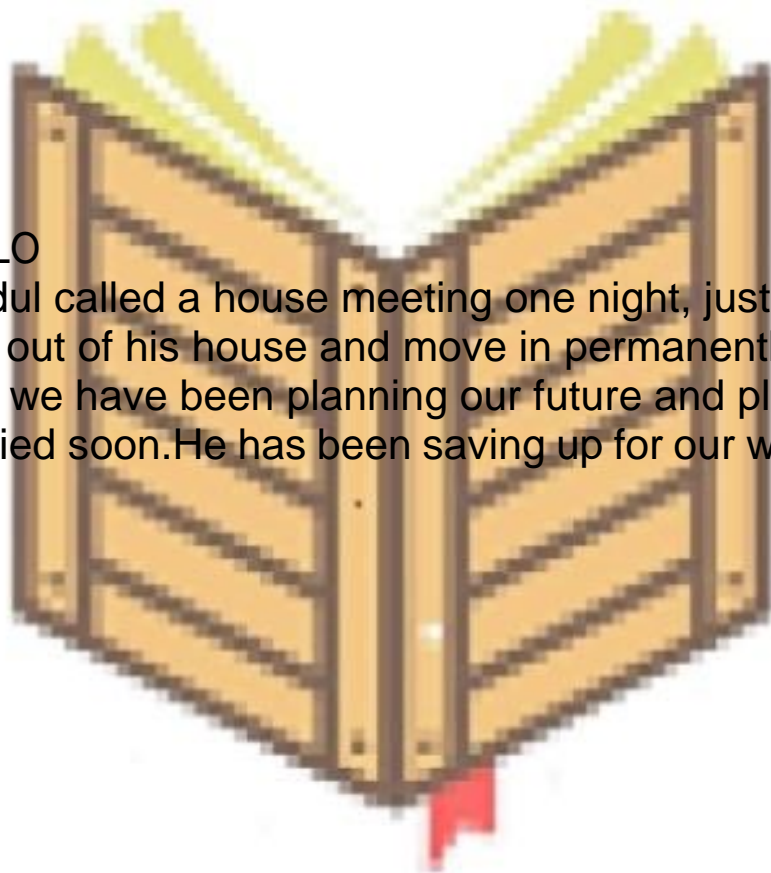
.

.

.

¥09 #BONOLO

Prophet Abdul called a house meeting one night, just 3 days left for me to move out of his house and move in permanently with Simon. Simon and i we have been planning our future and planning on getting married soon.He has been saving up for our wedding, we were not



NOVELSGURU.COM

gonna have a big wedding just a beautiful small ceremony. I didn't care if it was small or not, I only cared about the fact that my life was gonna change for the better..

My dream might have been coming true, Simon is probably the guy I have been dreaming about although I always don't recall the face when I wake up, but my dream was coming true indeed..

When Abdul called the family meeting I really thought that he was gonna talk about my wedding, maybe bless it or pray that it becomes a success without anything standing our way as a barrier, but he had other plans..

Him: I am glad that everyone showed up for this important meeting. It's not like we had a choice..

Him: as we all know that I am a gifted Prophet, I was called by God and I keep a sincere healthy and honest relationship with him. He guides me in all that I do..

We continued listening to him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Bonolo is supposed to be married off to Simon and within 3 days they gonna be moving in together
I was sensing a contradicting statement coming..

Him: but unfortunately that won't be happening anymore That was very unexpected. We all looked at each other..

Him: it came to me as a vision last night that it is God's will for me to marry Bonolo, take her as my last and youngest wife

No one said a word, i think we were just taken by what he was saying..

Him: i have already spoken with the church council, they really didn't have much to contribute as this request comes from the one above, you cannot go against what God has intended unless you wanna spend all eternity in hell. However they don't know that i have an illegitimate child with her and that's not important for them to know. This was soo wrong in soo many ways. I didn't care what the Teachings of Abdul say, i didn't care what his God says



NOVELSGURU.COM

right now but deep down i felt that this wasn't right anymore.

Him: i will let the church know in tonight's service He then looked at me..

Him: is Simon back from work?

I didn't know what to say to him my mind was still stuck at what he said..

Him: Bonolo

Mom: He is not back yet

Him: ill talk to him when he gets back. In the meantime i will go and prepare for tonight's service

He walked away and at that moment i gathered a lot of strength and courage to stand my ground.

I stood up..

Me: i am not going to marry you He stopped..

Mom: Nolo (whispering)



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at my mom and she looked very scared for me..He turned around and looked at me..

Him: Pardon?I swallowed..

Me: i am not going to marry you

He couldn't believe it too that i defied him..

Him: Are you hearing yourself? Are you clearly hearing what you saying?

Me: i am not going to marry you

He kept quiet for a while and just looked at me, i didn't know what he was thinking or how he was gonna react to what i have just said..

Him: Why don't you wanna marry me?Me: because i don't love you

Him: Who do you love?Me: my Son



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wanted to say Simon too, but i didn't wanna put him in trouble..
Him: so you love your son more than you love God too? Me: Yes
Abdul: Blasphemy!

It was very quiet, no one dared to say anything.. Abdul was greatly surprised at how i was standing up to him..

Him: The Devil has snuck his way into you child

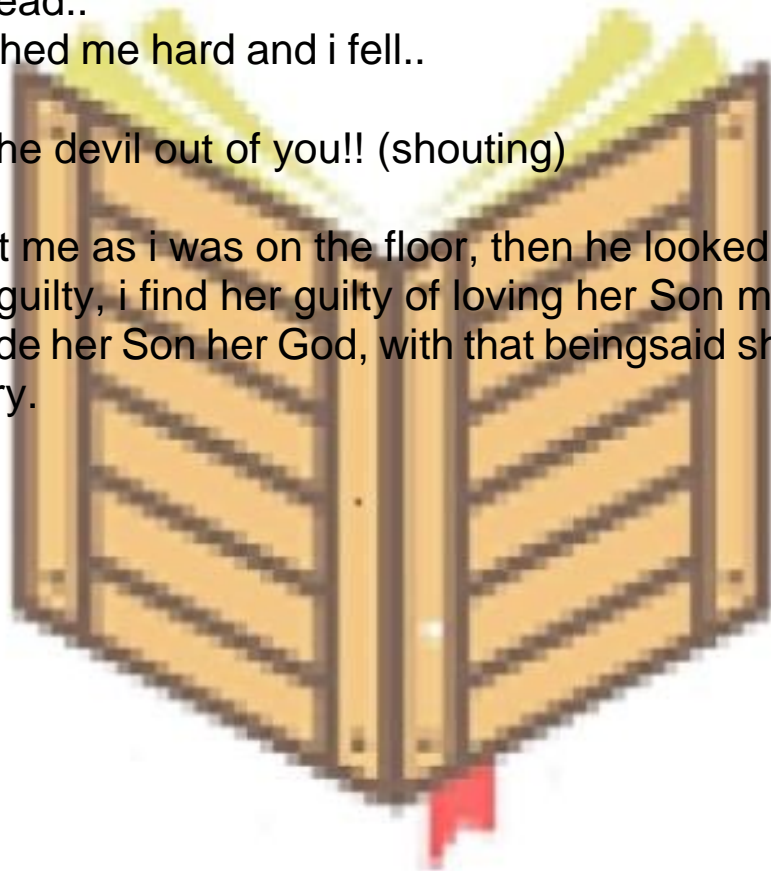
He came closer to me and i started getting scared.. He put his hand on my forehead..

He then pushed me hard and i fell..

Him: i cast the devil out of you!! (shouting)

He looked at me as i was on the floor, then he looked at my mother..

Him: she is guilty, i find her guilty of loving her Son more than God. She has made her Son her God, with that being said she must go to the Purgatory.



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked down..

Him: but first, she must go to the main gate so everyone can be aware of her sin

He spat on me and then left. Lucia Came to get me up..

I was broken but i had no tears anymore, i wasn't gonnagive into that..

My mom Came to us.. Mom: ill get her dressed up

She held my hand and we made our way upstairs..She looked at me..

Me: i am not Scared anymore

Her: taking on Abdul like this will lead into deadlyconsequences

Me: Then so be it mother

She walked over to the dresser and wrote something in a piece of paper..

She then came to me and handed me the piece of paper..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: This is an address of my mother's house your grandmother, her name is Jane
I was confused, what am I to do with an address?

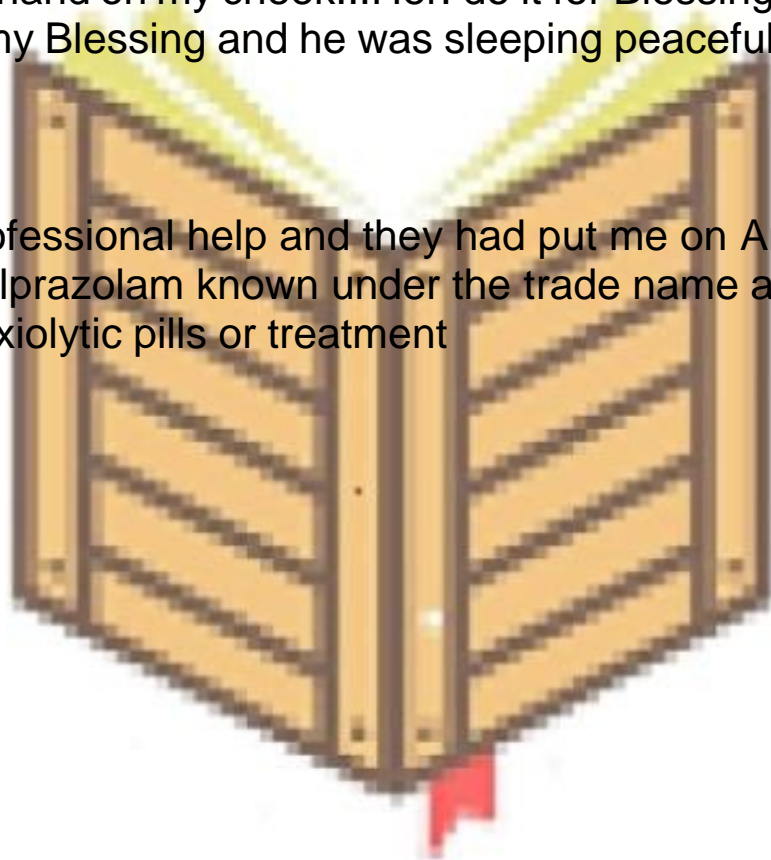
Her: ill.. ill talk to Simon later, we gonna break you out from the Purgatory. When you are out run as far as you can, away from this compound

Me: Mom.. No..

She put her hand on my cheek... Her: do it for Blessing
I looked at my Blessing and he was sleeping peacefully on the bed..

. #ZAINÉ

I sought professional help and they had put me on antidepressants as well as Alprazolam known under the trade name as Xanax. Xanax is anxiolytic pills or treatment



NOVELSGURU.COM

for people with severe anxiety attacks that cannot be controlled. The medication was working it was doing away with my visions, Yes i still had them but only in form of dreams now not vivid ones anymore...

I was out with my big brother checking out suits since his wedding was close, he had asked me to be his best man and i couldn't say no. I am planning on bringing Melissa with me i hope that my mom won't make a big deal out of it..

The theme was silver and white, we were gonna be wearing black, silver, and white tuxedos specially made for us...

We had just got back from the fittings and we were having drinks now and just catching up..

Me: You have done pretty well for yourself, and now you getting married

He chuckled..

Him: Its all God i couldn't have achieved all of this on my



NOVELSGURU.COM

own

Me: Yeah

Him: still a non-believer? Me: 100%

Him: Good thing i decided to be the Religious brother and now what's left is for me to have Dad's gift

Me: Good luck with being a prophet

Him: Im gonna enjoy it, this is what i have been hoping for all my life

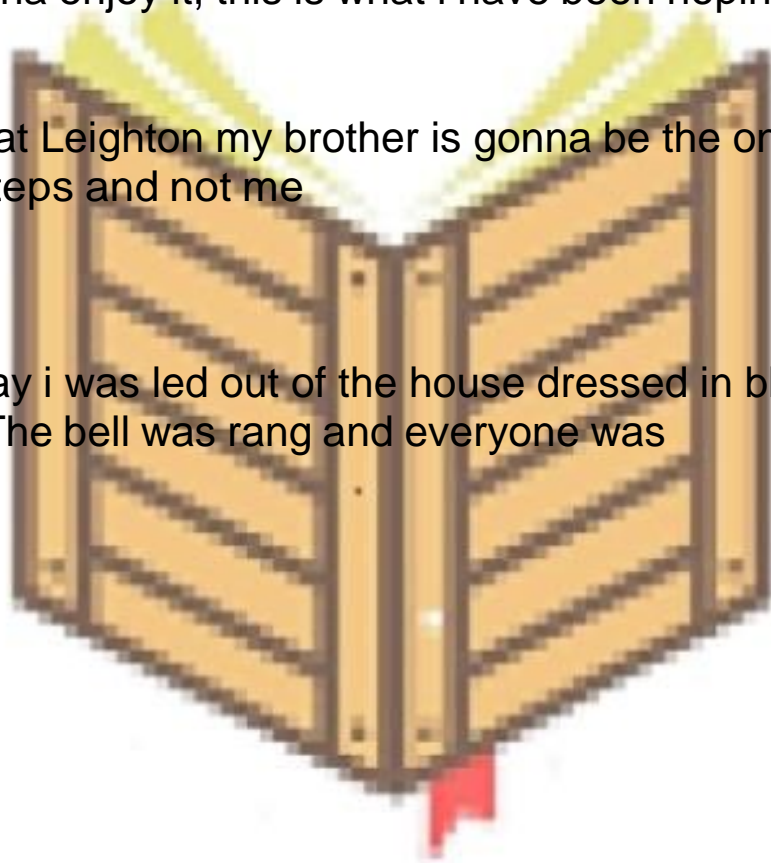
Me: i see

I am glad that Leighton my brother is gonna be the one to follow in Pop's footsteps and not me

.

. #BONOLO

Later that day i was led out of the house dressed in black to the main gate. The bell was rang and everyone was



NOVELSGURU.COM

outside waiting for me to make an appearance.

The guards led me down that cold street with people cussing me out, spitting on me, pushing me, i even felt a stone making it to my left eye and i stumbled around then fell..

The excruciating pain i felt at that moment was unbearable i even think that my eye was bleeding but i can't give up now, i have to carry out this journey till the end i have to do it for my son..

.

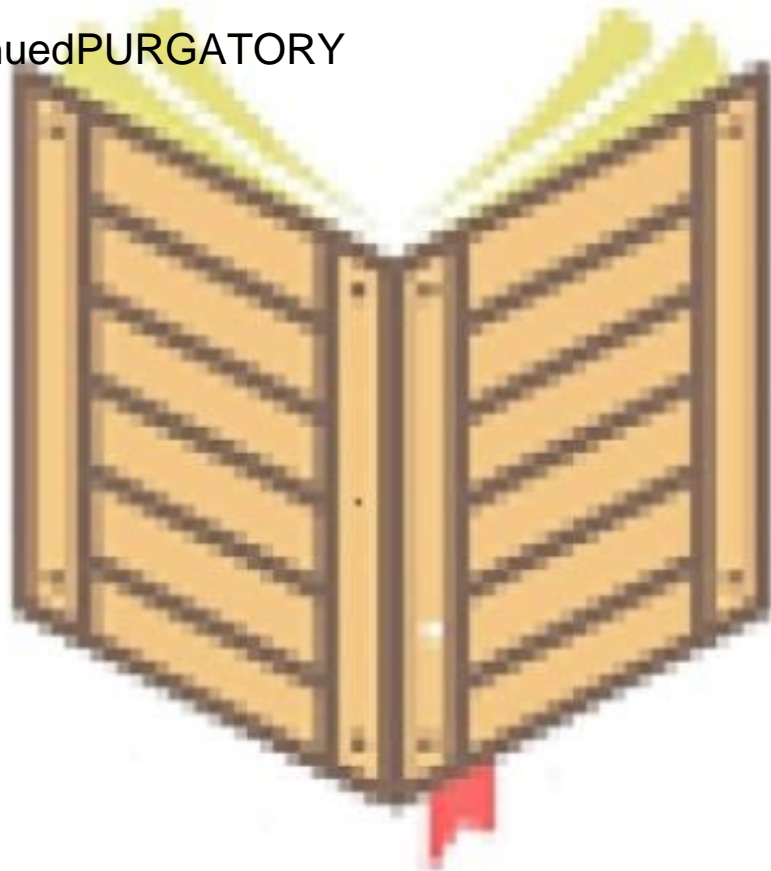
To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥10 #ZAINÉ



NOVELSGURU.COM

I thought i was gonna spend the whole day with my Brother, but unfortunately i got a call from Belina talking about she is in the Police station. I was a bit stunned because Belina doesn't look like the type that can break the law in Anyway..

I drove straight to the Police station to see what's going on and indeed Belina was in trouble. Immigration officers came for her she had not renewed her Visa..

We were at the interrogation room it was me, her, and one of the immigration officers.

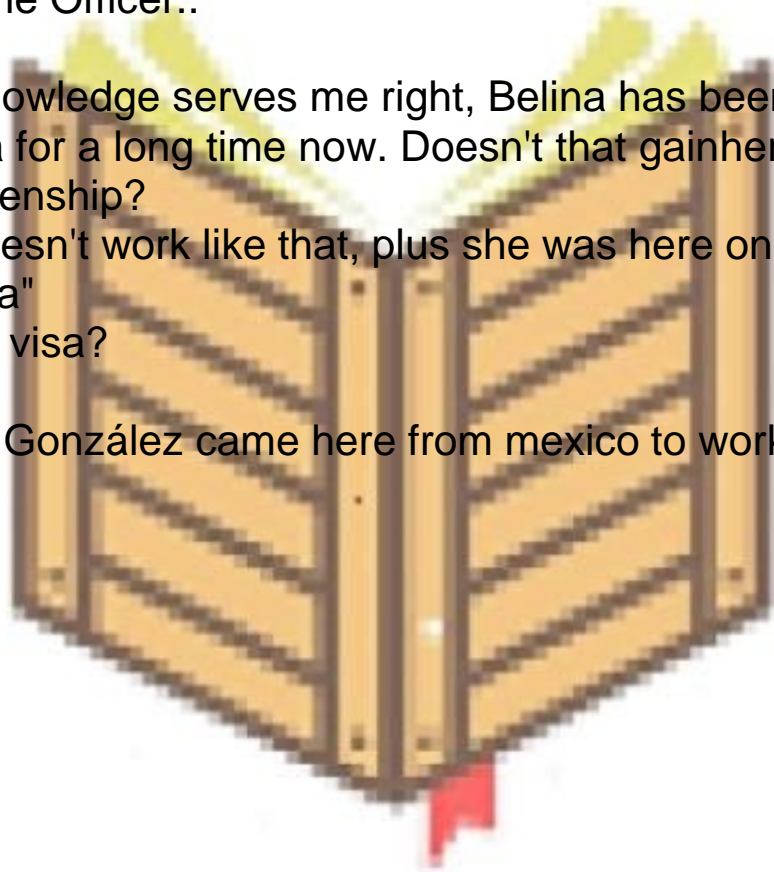
I looked at the Officer..

Me: if my knowledge serves me right, Belina has been living in South Africa for a long time now. Doesn't that gain her a South African Citizenship?

Officer: it doesn't work like that, plus she was here on a supposedly "working visa"

Me: working visa?

Officer: Mrs González came here from Mexico to work, so



NOVELSGURU.COM

she was granted a working visa which allowed her to stay in the country only if she is employed.

Me: she has been employed ever since she got here

Officer: i am not denying that. She had to Renew the Visa every now and then

I looked at Belina..Her: i have

Officer: but this time you didn't

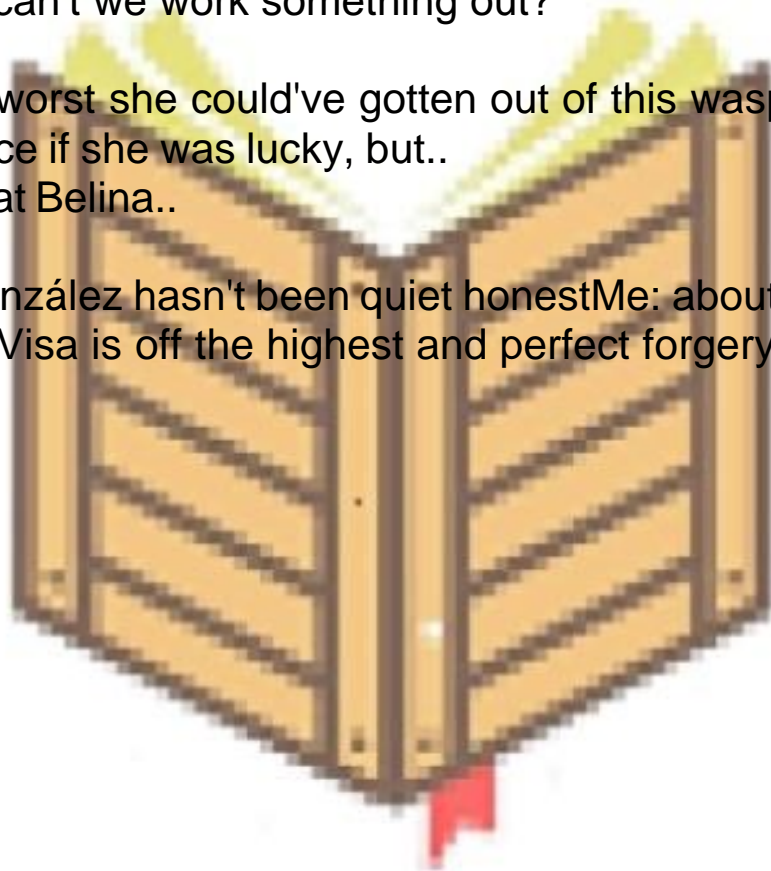
Me: Officer can't we work something out?

Officer: the worst she could've gotten out of this was probably a 5 year sentence if she was lucky, but..

She looked at Belina..

Her: Mrs González hasn't been quiet honestMe: about?

Officer: her Visa is off the highest and perfect forgeryMe: What?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Officer: basically she came here illegally so tonight she will be on the first plane to the US that's where she's gonna make a connecting flight to Mexico

I sighed..

Officer: unfortunately there's nothing i can do

I looked at Belina, and she didn't know what to say for herself..

Officer: Her flight will be taking off in 3 hours time so...I stood up..

I was disappointed at Belina, i really didn't expect that she could do something like this she looked like a Genuine person but i guess an innocent look can fool you...

I don't know what my next step was going to be because i really trusted her, getting a new trustworthy maid is gonna be hard.

I am very vigilant on who i bring into my place, all this bitches be on some thug and stealing shit can't trust nobody this days..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After the whole Police Station saga, i drove by to get something to eat at McDonalds then drove straight home. It was a take away, what i needed now was my couch and Tv to eat while watching basket ball..

It was raining as i made my way to the garage, then from the garage to the door..

I was surprised to see Melissa sitting at my door step crying, she had her luggage bags surrounding her..

Me: Mel?

She lifted up her head and looked at me.. Her: Zaine

She stood up and came to hug me, she was dripping wet she got rained upon. The rain was coming down hard now so i opened the door and we made our way inside. I put my food on the table then helped her to get her bags inside..

Me: What's going on? She was still crying..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Im homelessMe: huh?
Her: i have nothing Zaine

Me: What do you mean by that? Weren't your parentstaking care of you?

Her: They found out the truthMe: What truth?

Her: i forged a university acceptance letter. My parentsthought i was here studying Bcom but instead i was persuing my modelling career

Me: You did what?

Her: Zaine my parents are extremely strict and very religious. They were against my modelling career so i liedand they found out

Me: and?

Her: They froze all my accounts, they disowned me, theyeven stopped paying my rent. Worse they repossessed my



NOVELSGURU.COM

car

I didn't know what to say..

Her: So here i am, i have nowhere to go you basically mylast hope
This is some husband and wife situation that i didn't wanna find
myself in. I enjoy living alone, i Enjoy my ownspace..
I exhaled while rubbing my eyes..

Me: What's happening with my life today?

.

. #BONOLO

It was night time now and i had been sitting at this gate the whole
day. People had their fair share of torturing me. The most affected
areas was my left eye off which i couldn't see through it anymore
it was shut, and my leg that endured burning hot water..



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was raining and i was wet, but the rain was very soothing to my burnt leg.. The guards came to get me, they were gonna take me to the Purgatory where ill have to spend 30days being purified from my sin as Abdul would put it..

They threw me in and locked the door, it was very dark. Crying wouldn't help so i didn't waste my tears..

The room had no light, no bed, no nothing. Even if it did have a bed i wouldn't get to it because all i saw was darkness. I was Scared i mean i am alone in this dark room all im gonna see for the next 30 days is total darkness..

I cuddled up against the wall and all i thought about, was my son..

I must've passed out because after sometime i heard the door opening and light shining through..

A familiar voice called out my name.. Me: Simon?

Him: Come we don't have much time



NOVELSGURU.COM

So my mom did it, she did what she said she would do..

I crawled my way to the door and he helped me to get up...I saw the guards laying on the floor..

Me: What did you do to them?

Him: That's not important, can you walk?Me: i think so
I tried walking but it was very difficult..

He picked me up and i exclaimed in pain, my body was aching from being stoned and whooped..

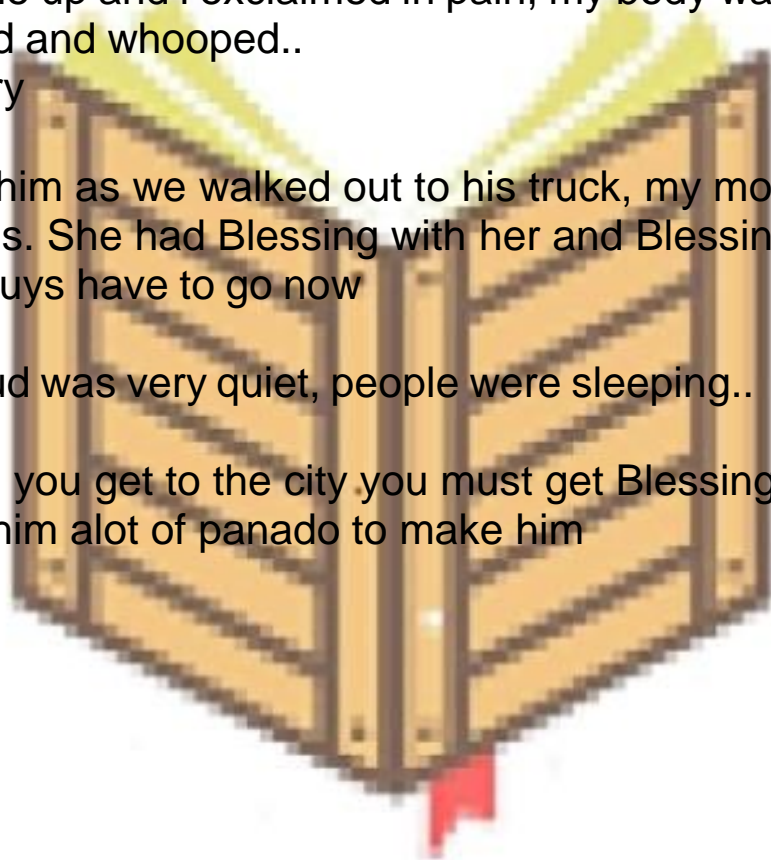
Him: Im sorry

I held on to him as we walked out to his truck, my mother was waiting for us. She had Blessing with her and Blessing's bag..

Mom: You guys have to go now

The compound was very quiet, people were sleeping..

Mom: When you get to the city you must get Blessing medical help i have given him alot of panado to make him



NOVELSGURU.COM

sleep so you can make it out safely from the guards at the gate...
My mom put a blanket at the front seat covering him with a blanket.
Her: Here is the address again

I took the paper and stuffed it in my bra...She hugged me..
Her: Your grandmother is Jane, Jane Thabethel nodded...
Simon took out a body bag, and I had to be in it. He zipped it then put
me at the back of the truck...
He put heavy things on top of me, it was painful but I had to be
strong..
He drove off and then came to a stop after a few minutes. I heard
him talking I think he was talking with the guards. I was suffocating
and I was becoming dizzy..
The talking took a while, I then felt things being moved at



NOVELSGURU.COM

the back..

Simon: see i told you Its nothing but woods There was silence for a while..

Guard: His clear

Simon got into the truck and drove away..

He was flying i could sense and the woods were nothaving any mercy on me..

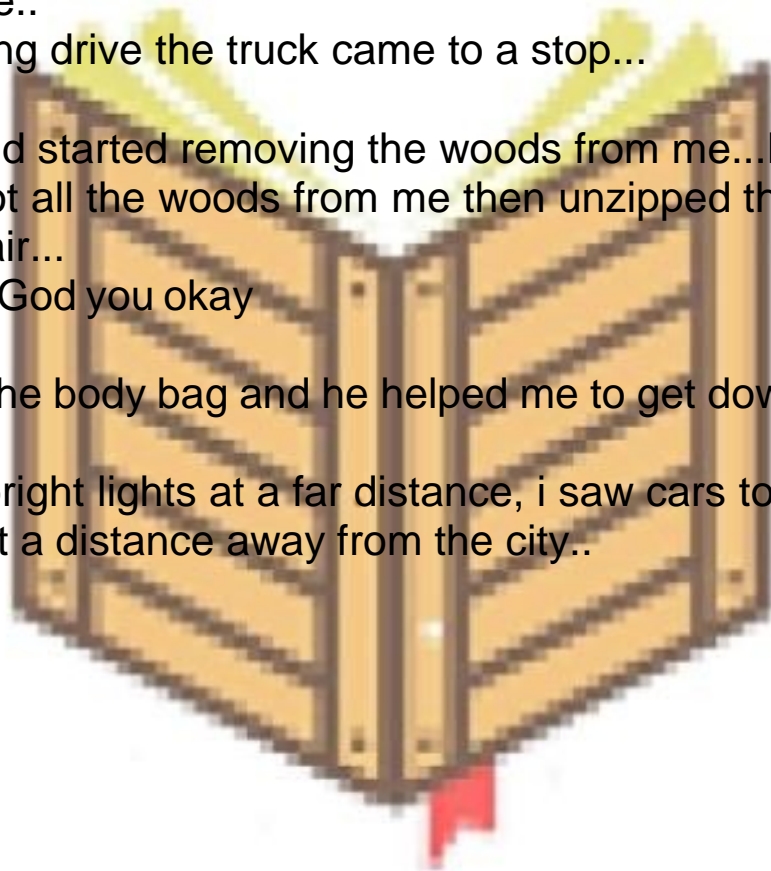
After that long drive the truck came to a stop...

He came and started removing the woods from me... Him: Nolo
He finally got all the woods from me then unzipped the body bag, i gasped for air...

Him: Thank God you okay

I got out of the body bag and he helped me to get down..

I then saw bright lights at a far distance, i saw cars too passing by we were just a distance away from the city..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We made itHe hugged me...
Him: We almost there

He helped me get in the passenger's seat and i heldBlessing Thank
Goodness he was still breathing...
Simon started the truck and we approached the bright lights, now
this moment deserved tears. My first time having tears of relief. I
held Simon's hand as he drove me to my freedom, what i admired
most was his courage in allof this..

.

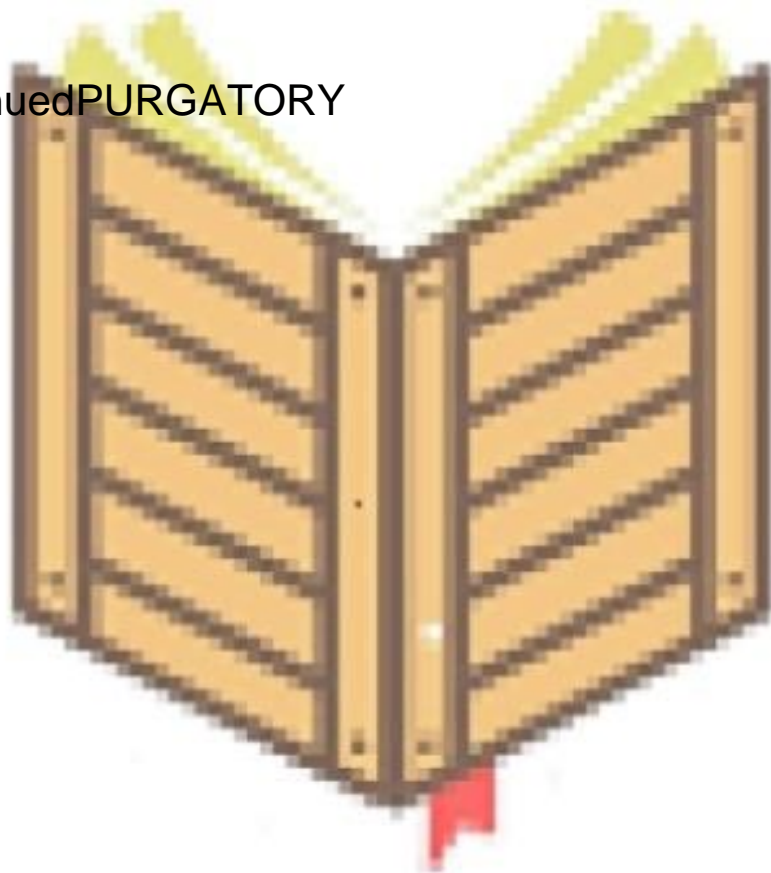
To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥11



NOVELSGURU.COM

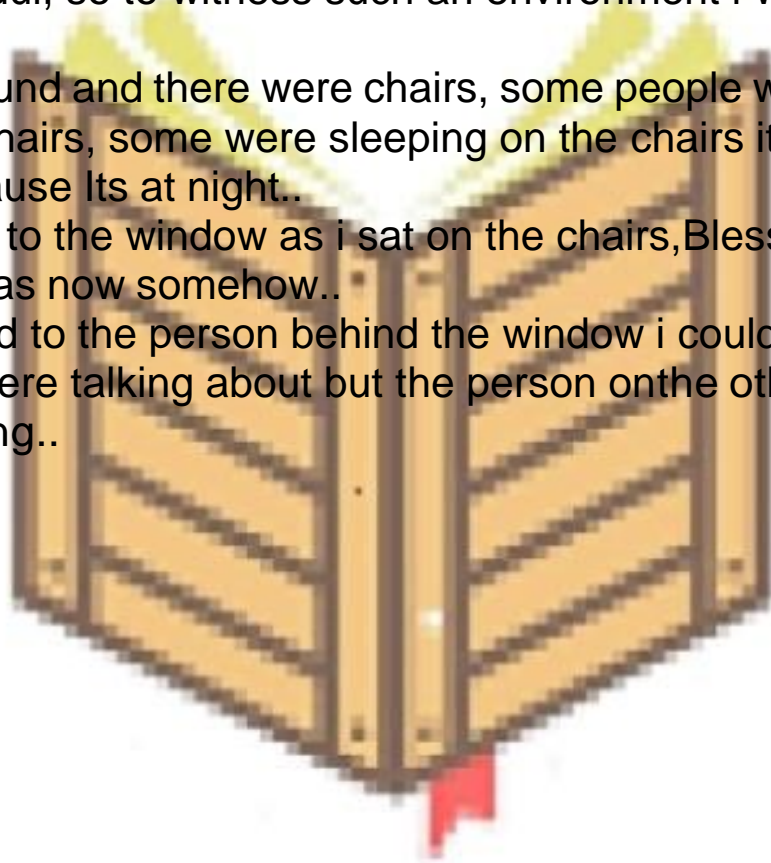
#BONOLO

Simon didn't drop me off at my Grandmother's place, but instead he dropped me off at a Hospital and literally walked in with me. The hospital was big i didn't quiet get the name because it was dark. It Amazed me to see how acity looked like. All those lights, the noise, people gathered in one place dancing and drinking it was an experience that i wasn't used too at all. The compound is very quiet everything is done accordingly to the laws passed on to us by Prophet Abdul, so to witness such an environment i was very Amazed..

I looked around and there were chairs, some people were brought in with wheelchairs, some were sleeping on the chairs it wasn't full or maybe because its at night..

Simon went to the window as i sat on the chairs, Blessing's breathing was now somehow..

Simon talked to the person behind the window i couldn't make out what they were talking about but the person on the other end was busy nodding..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When they had finished talking Simon came to me.

Him: They gonna get a Doctor who is gonna attend to you.Me:

Thank you

Him: unfortunately i have to goMe: go? Go where?

Him: i have to go back to the Compound as to not make Abdul suspicious

I looked around again..

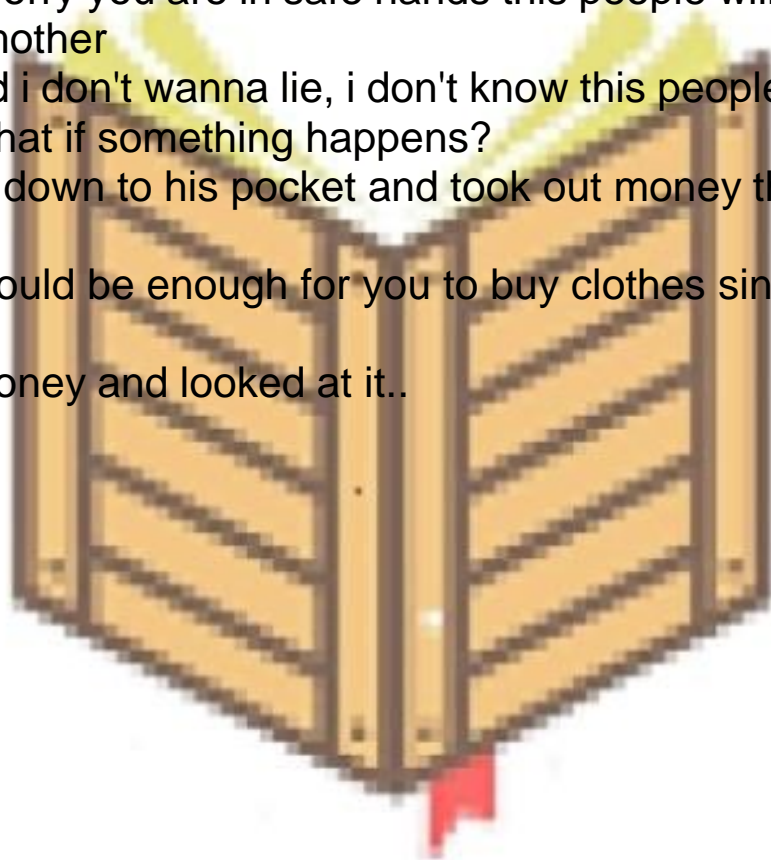
Her: Don't worry you are in safe hands this people will take you to your grandmother

I was scared i don't wanna lie, i don't know this people idon't know this place what if something happens?

He reached down to his pocket and took out money then gave it to me...

Him: this should be enough for you to buy clothes since you didn't bring any

I took the money and looked at it..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: and Ohw my phone numbers, call me everydayHe handed me a piece of paper..

I couldn't put everything in my bra because sometimes mymilk would leak from my breasts so i didn't wanna wet the money, i put it inside Blessing's bag..

I saw a Doctor approaching us, but he wore different fromthe Doctors at the compoud..

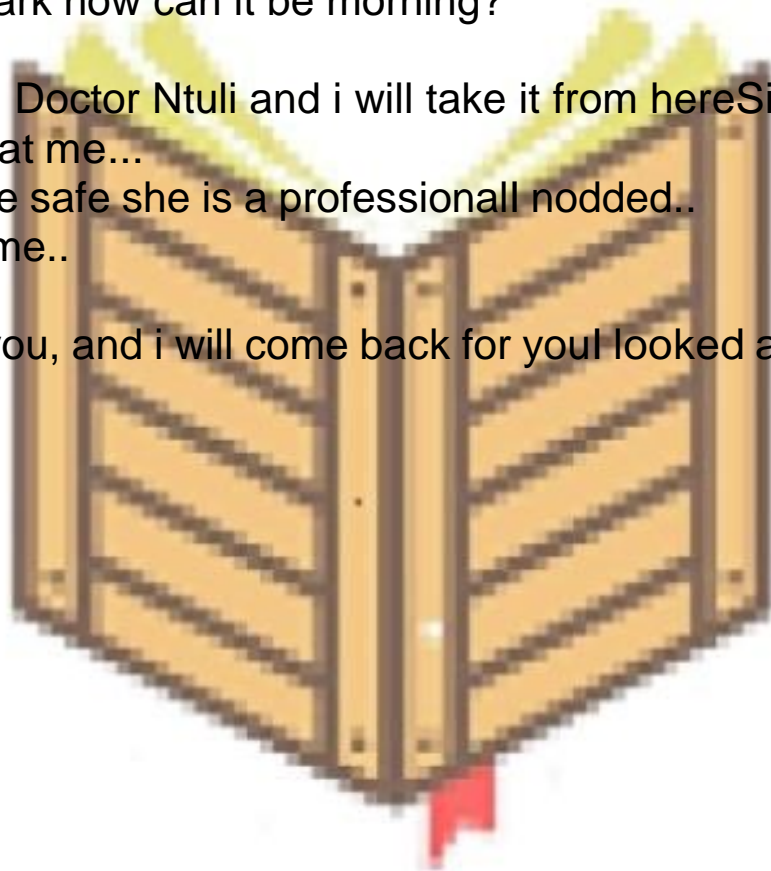
Him: Good morning

It was still dark how can it be morning?

Doctor: i am Doctor Ntuli and i will take it from hereSimon turned and looked at me...

Him: You are safe she is a professionall nodded..
He hugged me..

Him: i love you, and i will come back for youI looked at the doctor..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can i have a pen and paper? Doctor: ofcause
He went to get them and handed them to me, while taking Blessing
from my hands..

I took out my Grandmother's address and handed it to Simon.

Me: Copy this, this is where you will come back for me He took the
paper and looked at it for a long time..

Him: i won't copy it, i don't wanna be frisked then the security
guards finding this it will alert them on where you are

I took the paper and put it in the bag, he hugged me again.. Dr: Let's
go

I took the bag and followed him while still looking at Simon. I was
heart broken that i won't see him anymore, i was scared that he
won't be here to protect me..

We got into this room where i saw patients being attended



NOVELSGURU.COM

too, i looked up and tried reading out the words..Me: Cas.. C-A-S-U-L-T-Y

We got to a bed and he put Blessing while examining him..Him: What happened he is not breathing normally

Me: Overdosed on Panado

His eyes widened as he looked at me.. He called out aNurse who rushed our way..

Dr: i have an Acetaminophen overdose, I need a suspension of Acetylcysteine now!

The Nurse rushed.. I stood there a bit scared and concerned, what was happening to my baby?

He looked at me..

Him: You can find a place to sitMe: No i wanna see

Dr: i cannot do my work when you next to me looking scared like that

Me: This is my son



NOVELSGURU.COM

The Nurse came back with a Syringe and a little bottle..Dr: Please attend to the mother's bruises

The Nurse came to me..Her: Let's go

Me: No i wanna be next to my sonHer: We will just be next door

I looked at Blessing.. Her: he is in good hands

I walked with the Nurse to the other bed, she closed the curtain so i don't see what's happening next door..

The Nurse attended to my leg, then my eye. She then put an ointment, bandages and everything else in a package and handed it to me...

Her: You will use this at home, make sure you change the bandage on your leg after 2 days, do exactly what i did if you cannot come back here and we will change it for you. I had covered your eye with a Gauze too..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you, can i now see my son?She smiled..

Her: Yes

I got down from the bed and we went to Blessing's bed..

Dr: i would like to keep him overnight to see how heresponds to the Acetylcysteine

Me: No i have to take him with me

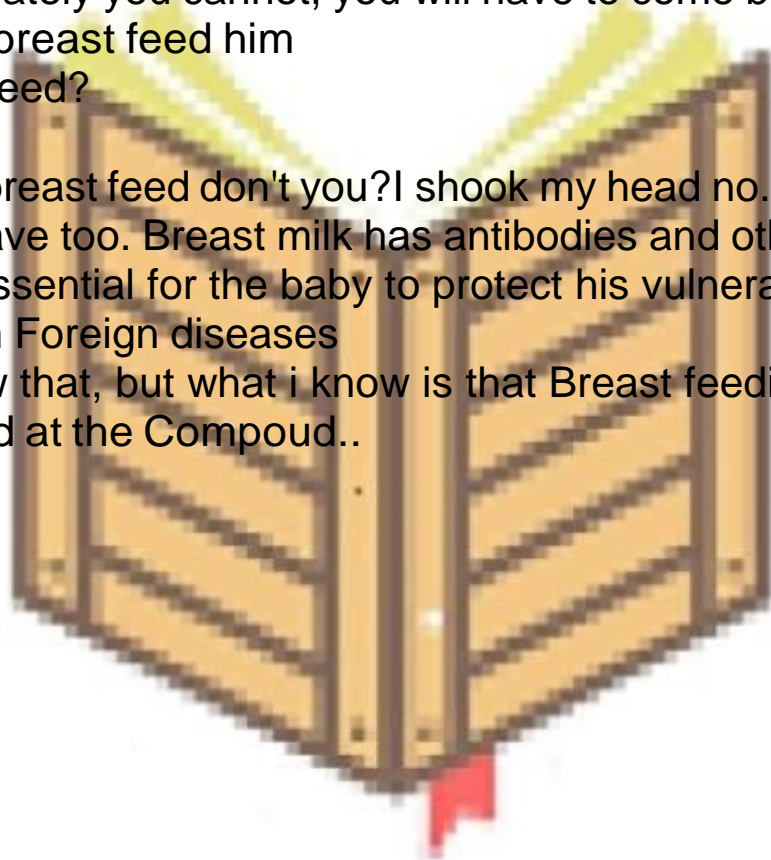
Dr: Unfortunately you cannot, you will have to come backtomorrow morning to breast feed him

Me: Breast feed?

Dr: You do breast feed don't you?I shook my head no..

Him: You have too. Breast milk has antibodies and otherminerals which are essential for the baby to protect his vulnerable immune system from Foreign diseases

I didn't know that, but what i know is that Breast feedingwas highly discouraged at the Compoud..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can i sleep here too? I can't leave my baby

The Doctor looked at me then looked at the Nurse...Nurse: ill show you to the baby ward

I took the bag and followed the Nurse as she pushed thatsmall bed to our destination..

The hospital looked bigger than i intially anticipated..

We got to the ward and i saw other babies too. It was a beautiful ward, there were drawings on the wall and everything else..

The Nurse left me there and i sat next to Blessing's smallbed,while playing with his small hand and fingers...

I was woken up by babies crying, i looked around and noticed that i had passed out on the chair,the sun was sinning through the blinds making it clear that it was in themorning..

I wasn't the only mother there anymore, the was othermothers too attending to their babies..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Blessing was crying, it was my first time seeing him crying so terribly like this. I stood up then got him, i started rocking him but he wasn't stopping..

Some Nurse made her way to me..

Her: Thixo munyisa umntwana (breast feed the baby)

I didn't understand the language she was speaking and idon't know why she was rude, the Nurse from last night wasn't rude..

I looked at her..

Me: Sorry i didn't get thatShe clapped her hands..

Her: Safa yilama Foreigner, Breastfeed!! (yelling)

The other mothers looked at me and laughed, why is sheacting like this?

After saying that she walked away.. Breastfeed? I didn't know were to start.Some woman made her way to me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: hi Me: Hello

Her: need some help?Me: Im fine thanks Her: i don't think so
I kept quiet.. Her: Im PinkyMe: Bonolo

Her: You don't know how to breast feed?I shook my head no..

Her: ill show you

She showed me how to do it and it wasn't that difficult..Her: Then
put the shit over to cover up

Me: Wow Its fascinating

Her: it comes off Natural, you must do it very often Blessing
seemed to be enjoying the breast milk, he was



NOVELSGURU.COM

sucking and making cute sounds and he was calm..Me: Thank you
Pinky
Her: You welcome

While i was breast feeding the Doctor came with somewoman..
Dr: How are you today?

Me: Im fine thank you, can i go home?

Dr: Yes you can but you must first talk to this woman sheis a
Detective

Me: Talk about what?

Dr: You came to our hospital in a state that spelt outAbuse, such
cases should be reported
Ohhh God what did i get myself into?

.

To be continuedPURGATORY .



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥12 #BONOLO

My bruises were not caused by Prophet Abdul. Even if i could tell the Detective what happened, i doubt Abdul wasgonna get arrested probably his God is protecting him andsince i made it out i don't wanna trash talk the most giftedand God chosen Prophet like Abdul, at the same time i don't wanna put my mother and Simon in trouble after all the measures they went through into helping me escape from the Compoud.

Me: Detective i am very exhausted, my son has been through alot all we want is to just go home that's all please

The detective looked at me then looked at me doctor. Detective:

You can get the discharge forms



NOVELSGURU.COM

The Doctor went..

The detective Crouched next to me...

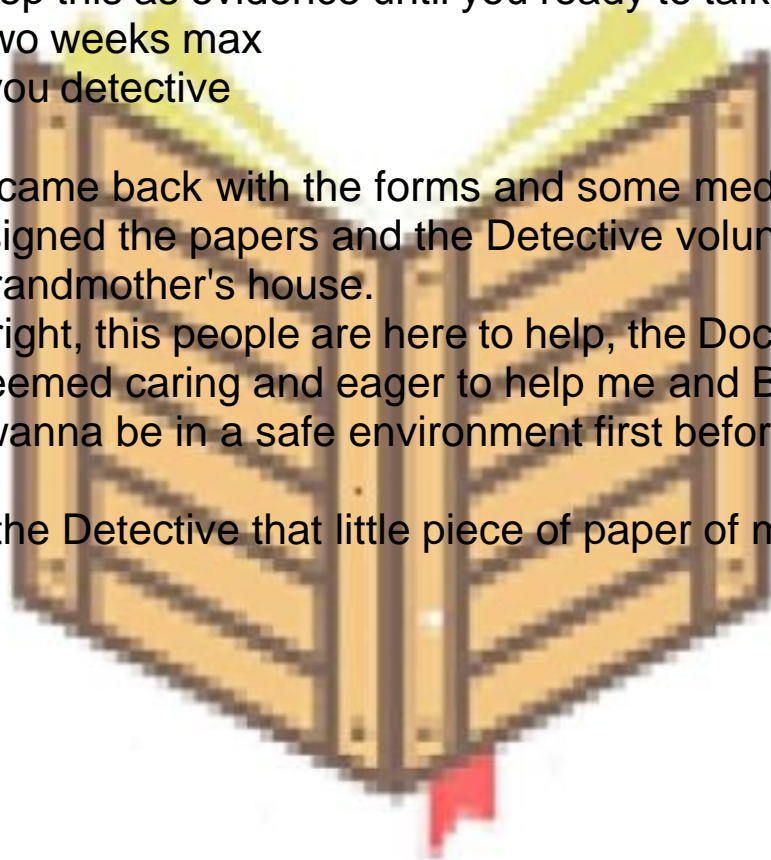
Her: i have worked on such cases all my detective years and know that i will be patient with you until you come forward, if you don't mind i would like to take pictures of your bruises?
I agreed and she did just that..

Her: i will keep this as evidence until you ready to talk, i am only giving you two weeks max
Me: Thank you detective

The Doctor came back with the forms and some medicine for Blessing. I signed the papers and the Detective volunteered to drive me to my Grandmother's house.

Simon was right, this people are here to help, the Doctor and the Detective seemed caring and eager to help me and Blessing but right now i wanna be in a safe environment first before saying anything..

I had given the Detective that little piece of paper of my



NOVELSGURU.COM

Grandmother's address and the drive to her house i didn't see much of it because i was busy Dozing all the way through, i didn't get much rest last night i was very tired....

...

After a while the car came to a stop and i heard the Detective saying "we here"

I opened my eyes and looked around. It was an environment that i wasn't used too, the houses were in a straight line. I saw a Taxi rank opposite the houses and a beautiful building not far ahead. I saw girls wearing tight pants and short Tshirts, some even had doeks on. They were standing by and talking while laughing it seemed normal for them to be dressed like that in public. It was very Noisy, i wasn't used to this at all. The house we stopped at looked big and beautiful, i saw an old woman holding a broom and looking at us. I looked around and most people were looking at us.. I looked at the Detective.

Me: Why is everyone looking at us?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Its the hood, Nosey people we call them the ghettopaparazzi
I didn't know what that is and i didn't dwell on it..Her: Wait here im coming

She got out of the car and approached the woman then they started talking.. I was nervous what if my grandmother doesn't accept me??

After that lengthy talk i saw her putting her hands on her head, then the Detective came to get me..

I got out of the car and approached her. She looked at me..Her: Bonolo?

Me: Grandma

She came closer and hugged me, we both shared tears..Her: Ohh Nkosi yami! (my God)

I was still holding Blessing she looked at him..Me: This is Blessing, my son

She took her from me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: umthole nini? (when did you give birth to him)Me: i only speak English Grandma

Her: He is soo small, im guessing you had him recently?I nodded..

Detective: Can we go inside? All this eyes are not doingjustice I got the bag and we went inside..

My Grandmother's house was big and beautiful i wonderwhat she does or where she gets the money from..

Her: ill put him down

She disappeared in one of the rooms then after came back.We were seated in the living room..

Detective: As i have said to you, your Granddaughter showed up at the hospital in the middle of the night. MissThabethe i know a woman or girl who was abused when i see one and your Granddaughter is a victim.

My Grandmother looked at me then looked at the



NOVELSGURU.COM

Detective..

Her: My Granddaughter has obviously been through alot, she even looks tired. Detective can you come back another time?

The Detective stood up and gave my grandmother a card.. Her: i will be intouch

She then walked out.. There was silence for a while.

Her: Why don't you go and bath then ill prepare something to eat for you?

Its like she knew that i didn't wanna talk about anything.. Me: id like that alot

Her: ill prepare the bath for you

She went to the bathroom and i went to check up on Blessing..

He was sleeping so peacefully while sucking his thumb God he doesn't even know what's going on..

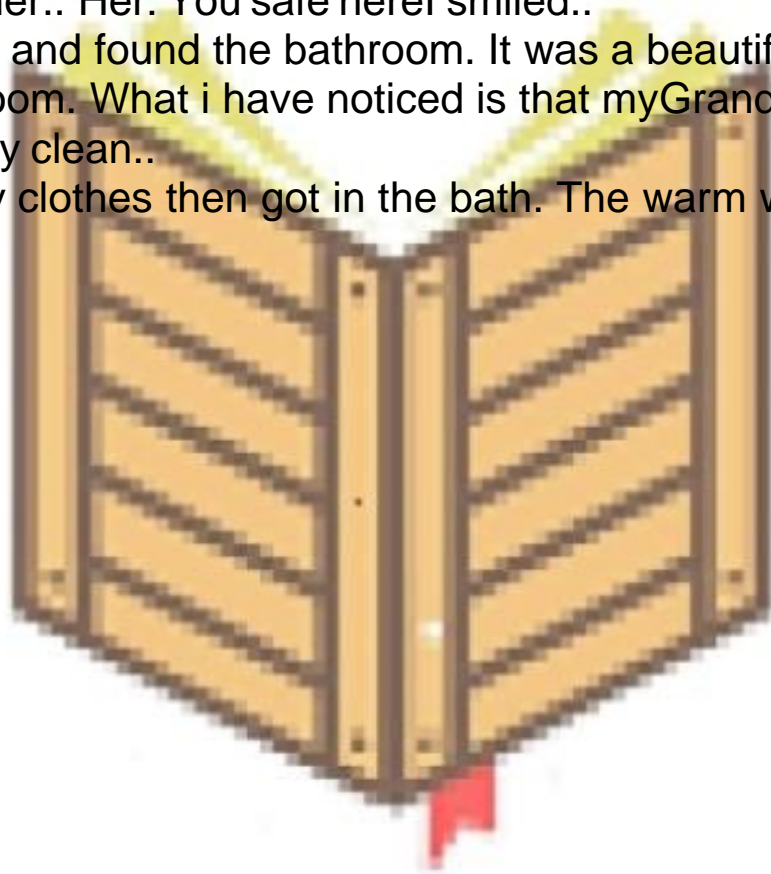
Grandma: he is very Adorable



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't realise she was standing at the doorway
Her: Your water is filling up
She gave me a towel and a soap.. Me: i don't have clothes to change
She smiled..
Her: i found one of your mom's old dresses im sure it canfit you
I took the towel and soap from her then walked to find myway to the bathroom...
Her: Bonolo

I looked at her.. Her: You safe here!
I smiled..
I walked out and found the bathroom. It was a beautiful small and clean bathroom. What i have noticed is that myGrandmother's house is very clean..
I took off my clothes then got in the bath. The warm water



NOVELSGURU.COM

were soothing to my bruises. I closed my eyes and just relaxed..

.

. #ZAINÉ

I couldn't help but think that there's much to the story than what Melissa had initially told me. So I contacted my PI James. I mostly contact James when a new Artist comes my way, so he can do a background check on the artist,

but now I was seeking help from him on a personal matter.. Him: ill get you everything that you wanna know about her Me: Thank you Yes, I had asked James to do a background check on Melissa because I had this bad feeling about her..

When I'm not at the studio my days are spent with me just lazing around watching basket ball while wearing my Calvin Klein boxer briefs and a vest. I had just finished eating and now I was watching basket ball in the lounge..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Melissa showed up wearing nothing but my tshirt..

I don't know what makes her thinks that Its okay to wear my Expensive Tshirts and even sleep on them..

Her: Morning

She looked good i won't lie showing off her typical modelbody..

Me: Morning

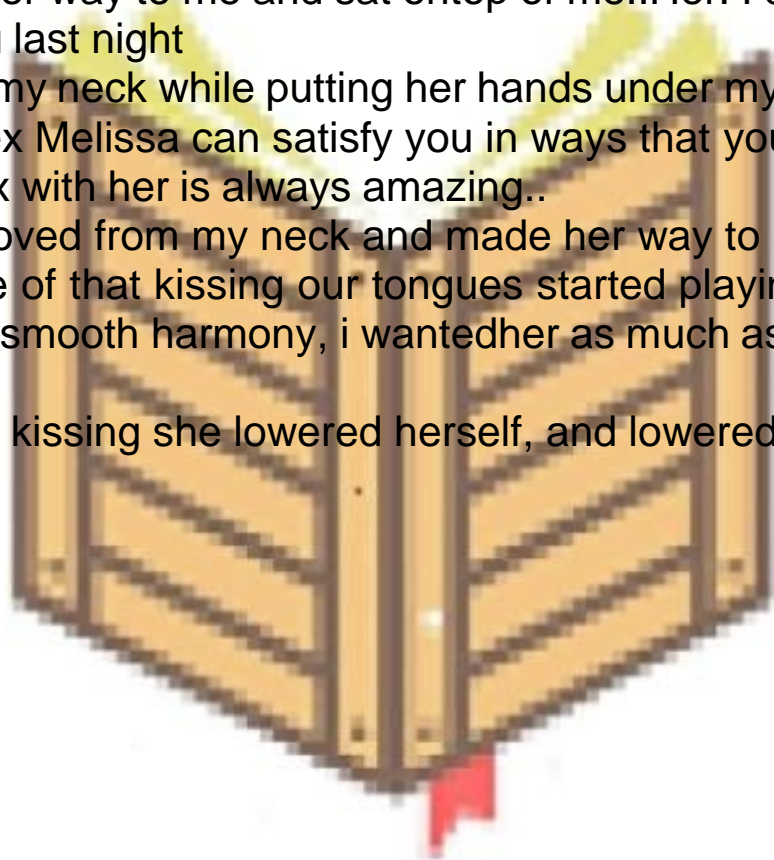
She made her way to me and sat ontop of me..Her: I don't think i thanked you last night

She kissed my neck while putting her hands under my vest. When it comes to sex Melissa can satisfy you in ways that you cannot imagine, sex with her is always amazing..

She then moved from my neck and made her way to my mouth.

After a while of that kissing our tongues started playing around or moving in a smooth harmony, i wanted her as much as she wanted me..

After all that kissing she lowered herself, and lowered my



NOVELSGURU.COM

Briefs. She was gifted in giving the best BJ i can't complain..Her mouth found a way to my hard shaft, and what made the situation so tense was that she had a Tongue ring..

Do you know what that department does to a man? I couldn't help it but moan she was really working me..

My hand made its way to the back of her head, i grabbed her weave and i made her deep throat on that until she gagged as if like she was gonna vomit.. She stopped for awhile gasping for air with her eyes filled with tears...

Her: You almost suffocated me there

After fighting for oxygen she went again.. This girl can really take you to other places.

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥13 #BONOLO

I woke up late, i looked out through the window and it was dark i didn't know that i had slept for that long, i needed this rest i guess.. I looked next to me and Blessing wasn't around i freaked out...

Me: Blessing!

I quickly got out of bed and went to the living room, he was laying on the couch next to my Grandmother.

Grandma: Hey you are awake

A sense of relief came over me, not that i don't trust my grandmother but i am very protective when it comes to my son..

Grandma: he was awake and making noise, so i took him because i didn't want him to wake you up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i understand

Her: go rinse your mouth ill dish up for you

I went to rinse my mouth as she made her way to the kitchen.

When i was done i went and sat next to Blessing..

My Grandmother came with a plate of food and gave it tome.

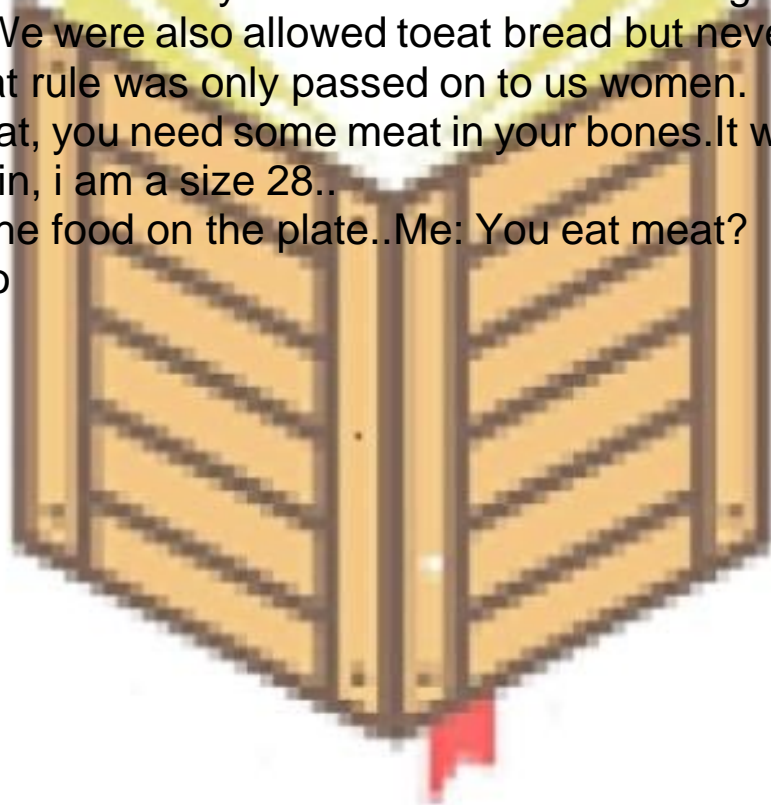
Her: Its pap, chicken curry, and a Potato salad

We were not allowed to eat meat at the Compoud, it wasdeclared unhealthy. We were only allowed to eat Soft Porridge, vegetables, and Fruits. We were also allowed to eat bread but never meat, although that rule was only passed on to us women.

Grandma: eat, you need some meat in your bones.It was no secret that i was thin, i am a size 28..

I looked at the food on the plate..Me: You eat meat?

Her: Yes i do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: isn't that a sin?She chuckled..

Her: Who told you that it is a sin?I kept quiet..

Her: Bonolo what really happened?

Not that i wasn't gonna tell her what happened at the compoud, i will tell her just not now i don't really wannatalk about it..

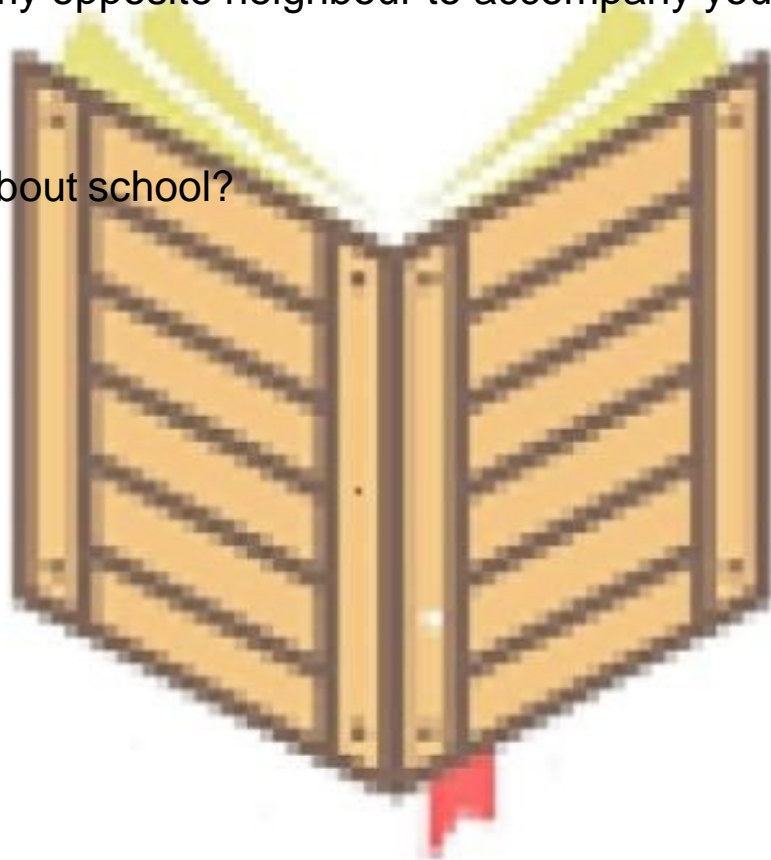
Her: Okay then we can talk about it some other timel started eating and the food was very delicious...

Her: You didn't come with clothesMe: i have money you buy

Her: ill ask my opposite neighbour to accompany you tothe mall tomorrow

I nodded..

Her: What about school?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i.. At the compoud we were not allowed to go to school
She was shocked..

Her: So you never went to school?Me: No Grandma

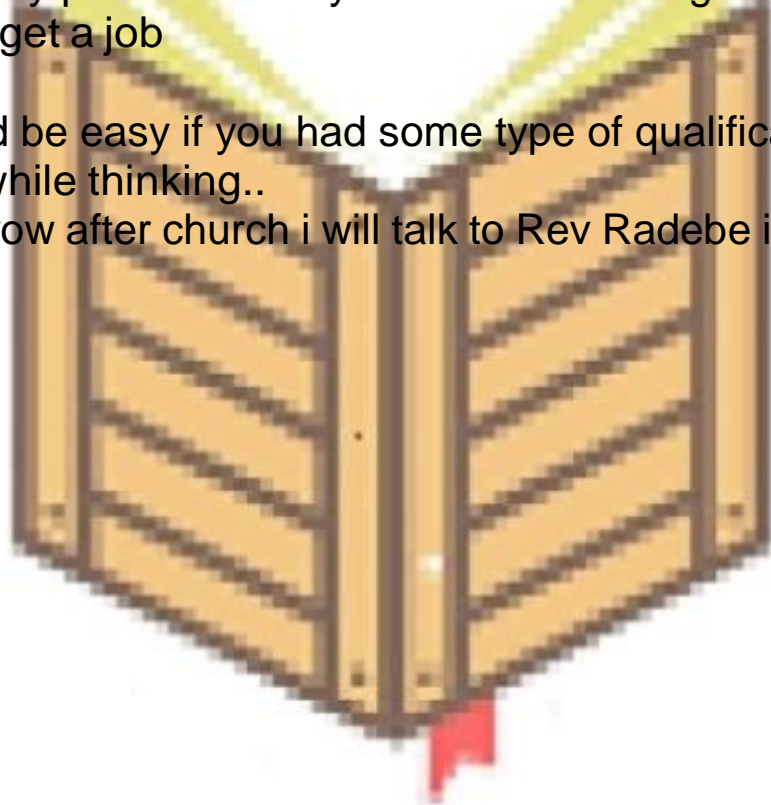
Her: What else weren't you allowed to do there?Me: ill tell you some other time

Her: Since you never went to school it will be useless sending you to school here they won't take you. You don't have any documents and starting grade one at your age will not be allowed. The best you can do is to try and look for a job plus i am not working i depend on my monthly pension money which is not enough for the 3 of us

Me: ill try to get a job

Her: it would be easy if you had some type of qualificationShe kept quiet for a while thinking..

Her: Tomorrow after church i will talk to Rev Radebe i am



NOVELSGURU.COM

sure he can let you clean around the church and compensate you
I didn't care what type of work i was gonna do, what i cared about
was just to help my Grandma financially after all she did a lot on her
side by taking us in

Me: Grandma are there any phones around? Her: Why?

Me: i wanna call my friend who brought me here to tell him that i
have arrived safely

Her: ill get you my cellphone, finish eating first.

I continued eating till i finished, i can't front that was very delicious..
She went to the bedroom then came back with her cellphone and
handed it to me..

Me: Thank you

I went to the bedroom and got Simon's number from the bag and
started punching it in, i put the phone next to my



NOVELSGURU.COM

ear but nothing happened. I went back to my Grandmother.Me: i don't think its working
Her: Let me see

I handed it to her..

Her: You must press this green buttonMe: Thank you
I did as i was told and then went to the bedroom. Simonanswered after the second ring..
Him: Hello

Me: hey Simon Its me.. Its Nolo Him: Hey sweetheart how are you?
Me: i am okay i guess
Him: How are things going at Grandma's?

Me: They going good so far.. And the Compound?Him: he knows that you escaped
Me: does he know that you and mother are behind it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: No your escape caught him off guard and you have opened a gateway for others to escape too

Me: so people are escaping?

Him: Pretty much, but now security is tight

Me: i am just glad he doesn't suspect you and mother
Him: he doesn't know who to suspect as yet

Me: That's good..

I started hearing a beeping sound..
Him: You running out of airtime

Me: then i have to go

Him: i love you and take care
Me: i love you too

I lowered the cellphone while smiling, i turned around and my Grandmother was standing at the doorway..

Her: i think its time i impliment some rules
Am i introuble already?



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINÉ

My Dad had come to check up on me. We were in the lounge sitting and just talking, i was drinking flying fish and he was on that Guava juice..

Him: i still cannot believe Belina did that

Me: What i am worried about is where will i get another maid

Him: i can check for you the women at church who are looking for a job

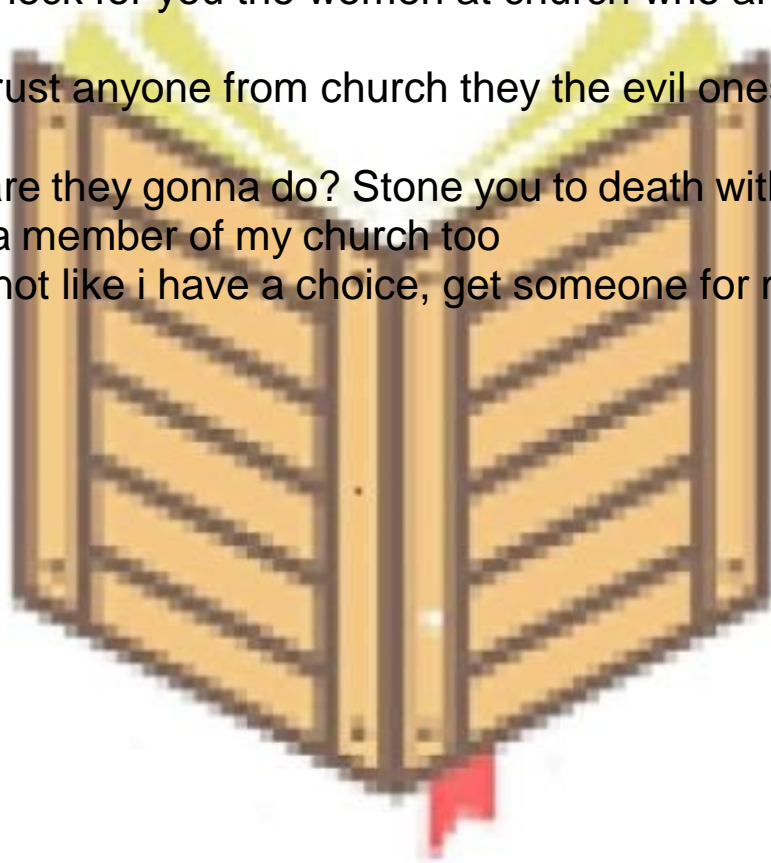
Me: i don't trust anyone from church they the evil ones

Him: What are they gonna do? Stone you to death with a Bible?

Belina was a member of my church too

Me: fine Its not like i have a choice, get someone for me as quickly as possible

Him: ill try



NOVELSGURU.COM

As we were sitting there and talking, i felt the hairs at the back of my neck standing up as if like there was someone standing at the back of me you know that feeling, i turned around to look and the wasn't anyone..

Dad: Are you okay?

Me: Just need to take my meds, im coming

I walked out to the bedroom to get my meds, then Cameback to drink.

Dad: Alcohol and pills?Me: Dad don't start

Him: Zaine have you probably wondered that maybethere's nothing wrong with you?

Me: i see things that don't exist Ofcause there's somethingwrong with me

Melissa made her way to us..

Her: Sorry to interrupt but i was wondering if i can getuBaba Anything



NOVELSGURU.COM

My Dad smiled at her..

Him: No thank you i am fineHer: Okay

She walked away,my father looked at me..Me: long story

Him: is she living here?I nodded..

Him: Zaine you cannot live with a girl that we don't evenknow where she is from. Have you even met her familybefore?

Me: No

Him: If something happens to her what are we gonna do?Me: Dad you really starting to sound like mom now
He stood up..

Him: Speaking of your Mom i have to get going beforeyour she sends a Search party



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood up and walked him to the door..

He looked at me and put his hand over my shoulder..Him: Take care
Son

Me: i will

I still had a bottle of flying fish on my hand..

He walked out and i closed the door after him.. I turned around and
what i saw even made the bottle slip from myhand and fell on the
floor..

.

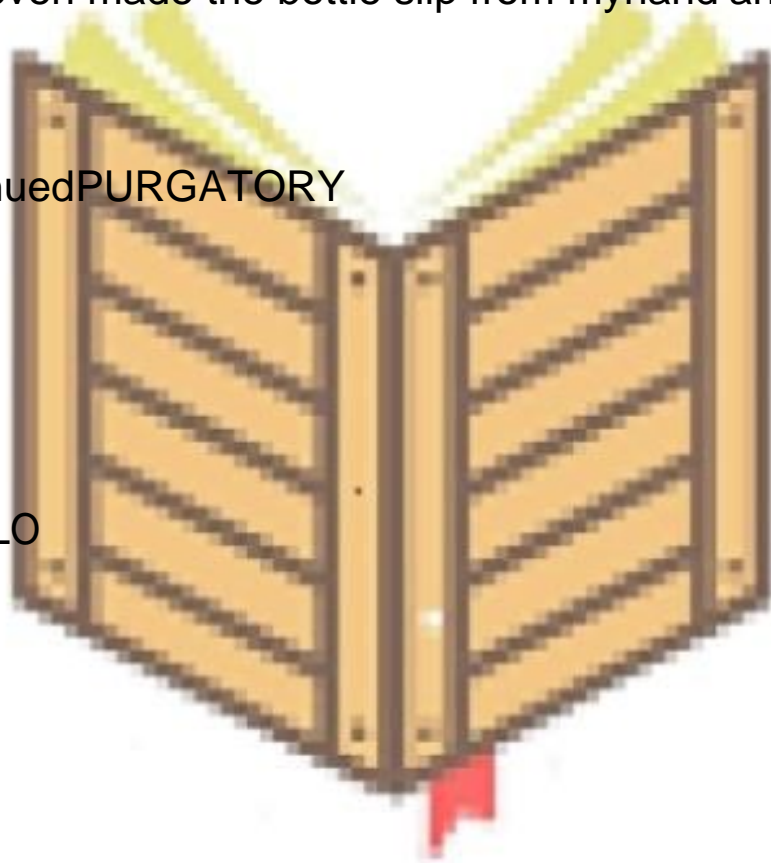
To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥14 #BONOLO



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went and sat down, my Grandmother sat down too on the couch next to mine. Blessing was still laying on that couch with a pacifier in his mouth and just starring at the ceiling.

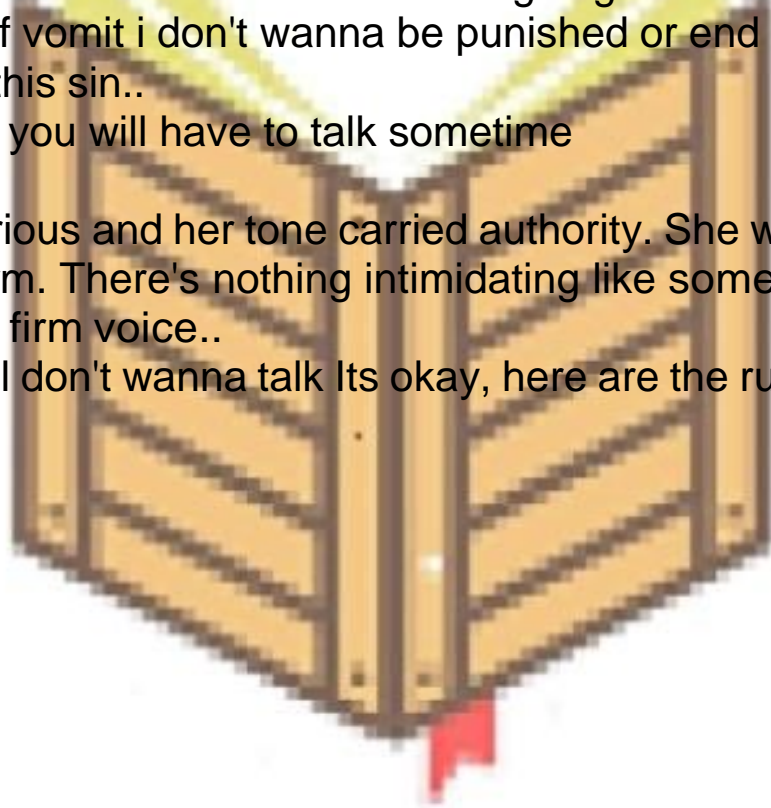
Grandma: Bonolo who is your baby daddy? Where is he? Is he gonna help out?

So many questions from her that i cannot really answer. How do i tell her that her Daughter's husband was very frequent with me sexually without making it sound so disgusting, and that he is Blessing's father? What i have noticed is that my Grandmother doesn't know Prophet Abdul's God because here she is making me eat meat which is a sin. I even feel like going to the bathroom and make myself vomit i don't wanna be punished or end up in hell because of this sin..

Her: Bonolo you will have to talk sometime

She was serious and her tone carried authority. She wasn't yelling but it was firm. There's nothing intimidating like someone talking to you in a low firm voice..

Her: You still don't wanna talk Its okay, here are the rules.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I listened attentively..

Her: i don't wanna see you or hear that you were seen with boys.

How old are you?

Me: 17

Her: and already you a mother. You see how young you are? May this be your first and last child while you still living under my roof do we understand each other?

Me: Yes grandmother

Her: You will never miss church unless Blessing is sick or if you sick I nodded..

Her: This is a new environment for you, girls around here are wild. I don't wanna see you hanging around with the wrong crowd of friends and end up drinking and partying are we clear?

Me: Yes Grandmother

Her: Good. Tomorrow there's a service at church from



NOVELSGURU.COM

18:00-20:00 the bus leaves at 17:00. We will wake up do all the house chores then later prepare for church

Me: Yes grandmother

Her: We pray and read the Bible before we sleep at night, and we pray again in the morning when we wake up

Me: Yes Grandmother

Her: Matter of fact i have an extra Bible Good news Its in English ill give it to you

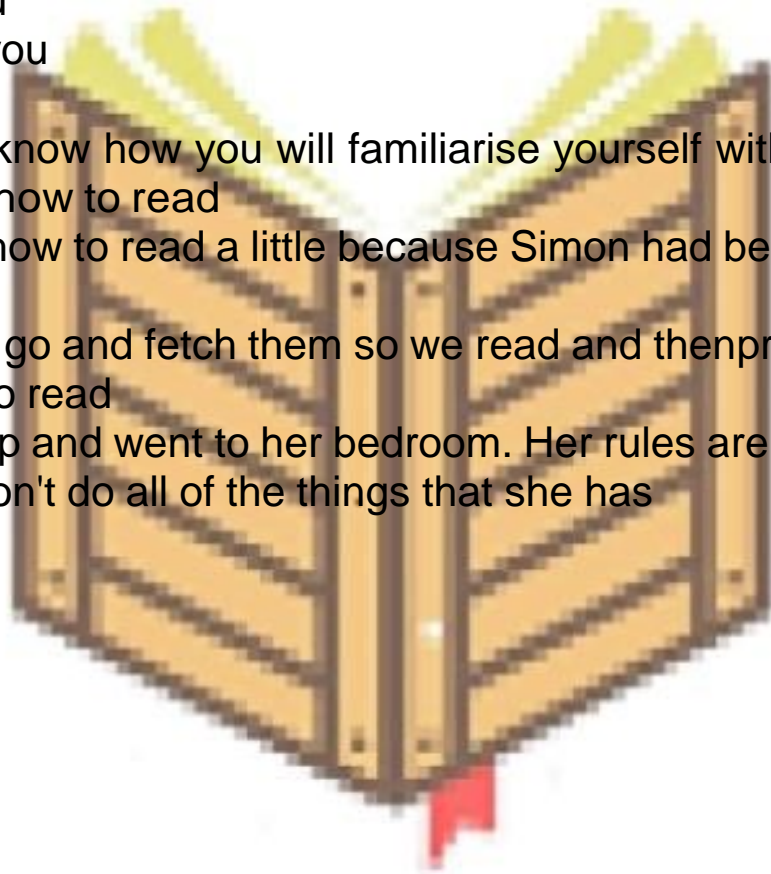
Me: Thank you

Her: i don't know how you will familiarise yourself with it since you don't know how to read

Me: i know how to read a little because Simon had been teaching me

Her: Let me go and fetch them so we read and then prepare for bed, ill help you to read

She stood up and went to her bedroom. Her rules are not bad because i don't do all of the things that she has



NOVELSGURU.COM

mentioned so i am safe..

.

. #ZAINE

I saw this beautiful white woman standing in the middle of my kitchen. She was wearing a long white dress, she had wings but they were small. I couldn't call her an Angel because she wasn't glowing and all that she looked 100% Human..

Me: Who are you and how did you get inside my house?

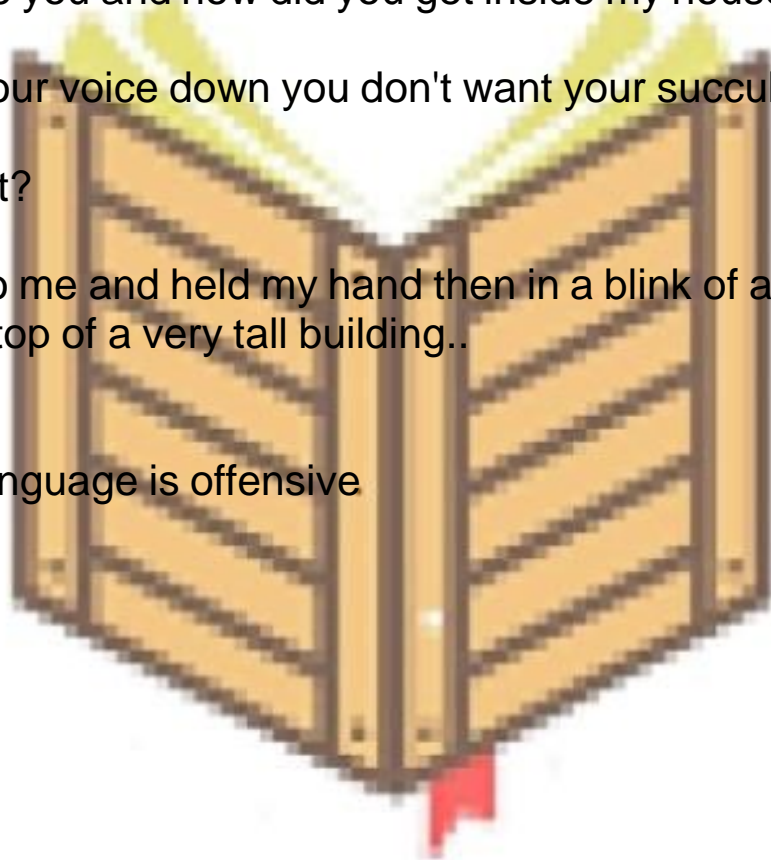
Her: keep your voice down you don't want your succubus thinking you crazy

Me: my what?

She came to me and held my hand then in a blink of an eye we were standing on top of a very tall building..

Me: Wtf?

Her: Your language is offensive



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How did we?

I walked around, then I stopped and looked at her..

Me: This must be a cruel joke, I drank my meds so what the hell be happening to a nigga?

She folded her arms and rolled her eyes.. Her: You were always stubborn

Me: Who are you again?

Her: Helena your Guardian Angel

I looked at her from head to toe then laughed.. Me: Yeah that's a good one

She didn't laugh or flinch at all she remained like that and looked at me..

Me: Wait a minute.... Are you seriously an Angel? Her: Yes

Me: but your wings they.. Her: small?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She exhaled..

Her: They were clipped because of youMe: Because of me?

Her: Zaine everytime when i had to stand infront of the Throne and account for your sins on your behalf it was hard. When other Angels talked good things about theircharges i had nothing good to say about you. I always reported bad about you and my wings were clipped andhere i am

Me: chill girl! Time out, all of what you saying ain't makingsense at all!

Her: You need to start changing so i can get my wingsback and be reinstated to my position

Me: Take me back homeHer: No

Me: What?

Her: You gonna stay here for a while and get into your



NOVELSGURU.COM

thoughts

Me: Don't fuck with meHer: or what?

Me: ill go military on youHer: Bye Zaine

Me: Helena wai..

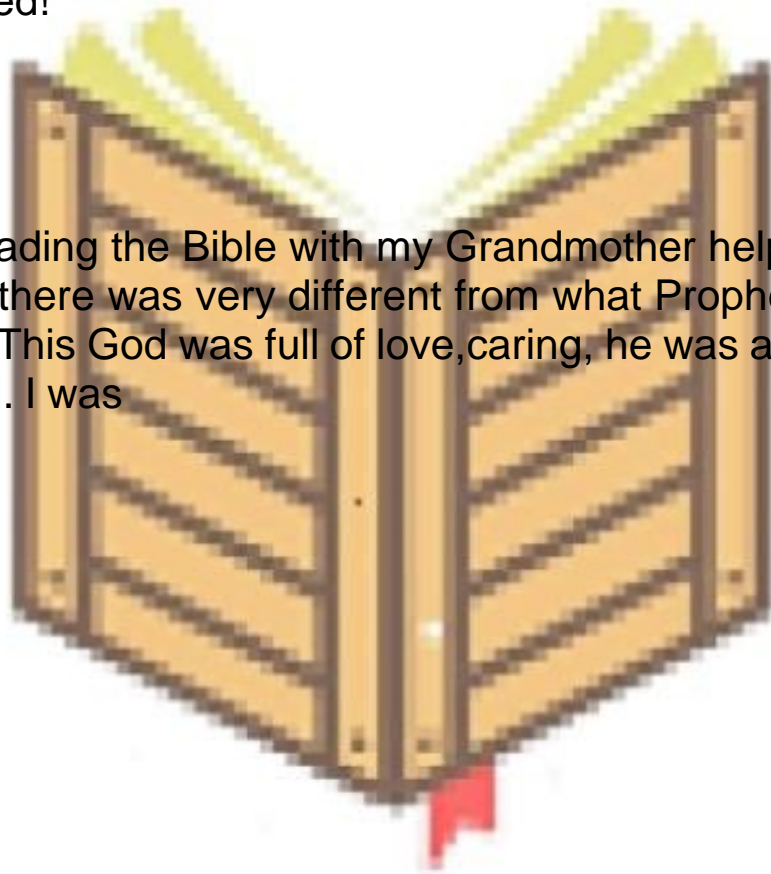
Before i could finish my sentence she orbbed,and i wasleft there standing alone. I went to the edge of the roof and looked down, it was a very long way down..

Me: Im fucked!

.

. #BONOLO

I enjoyed reading the Bible with my Grandmother helping me, what was written there was very different from what Prophet Abdul's God is all about. This God was full of love,caring, he was a forgiving God, and merciful. I was



NOVELSGURU.COM

confused and caught up inbetween my Grandmother's God and Abdul's God i didn't know who is right and who is evil, even the prayer is way different..

I was laying on the bed while starring at the ceiling, Blessing was laying next to me busy making noise talking alone..

I turned and looked at him...

Me: You can't sleep too? I know we slept alot in the afternoon..

.

. #ZAINÉ

This Helena Of an Angel person was serious, she didn't come back. It was dark, and windy. I was starting to shiver and the sky was dark.. I was sitting there hoping that this is one big illusion but unfortunately it wasn't..

In the mist of my cold night i remembered my Dad. I searched for my phone and lucky me it was in my pocket..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took it out and looked at the time it was 00:00am, i called my Dad Anyway and my mother answered..

Her: Rev Radebe's phone Hello Me: Ms Jackson

Her: Zaine? Why are you calling at this unGodly hour? Are you alright?

Me: Can i talk to Pops?

Her: he is in the study praying Me: i really need his help

Her: Zaine i cannot disturb him when he is praying.. Talk to Ms Jackson what's wrong?

I sighed..

Me: What do you know about Angels?

Her: Zaine you called us at this time to ask that? Me: Mom please She kept quiet for a while..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Fine what do you wanna know?

Me: Anything but mostly their relation to HumansShe exhaled in defeat..

Her: They were created to serve you, Its God, you andAngels

Me: They under humans? Her: Yes, what's happening

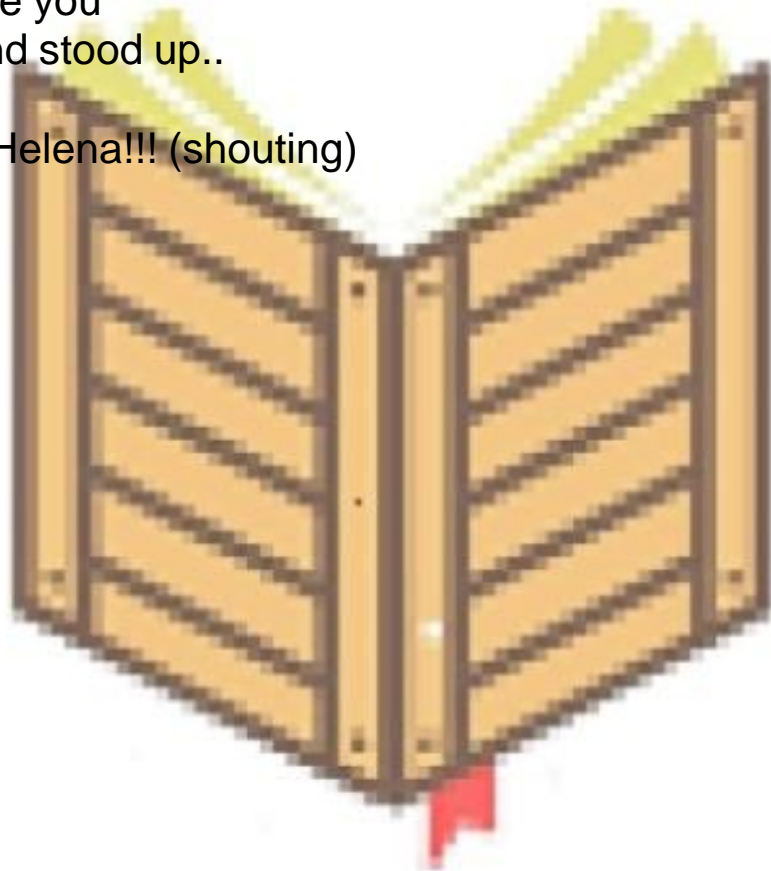
Me: so i am superior to an Angel?Her: Yes baby

Me: Thank youHer: Zaine..

Me: ill call you tomorrow i Promise Her: Don't you dare hang up on me!Me: i love you

I hung up and stood up..

Me: Owww Helena!!! (shouting)



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was quiet.. Me: Helena!!!!

I didn't even know if this was gonna work..She showed up..

Her: Yes?

Me: i like your grand entrance all the shimmering Its dopeHer: What can i do for you Zaine?

Me: Take me homeShe looked at me..Her: No

Me: i command you to take me homeShe Chuckled and folded her arms....

Her: Phone call to MommyMe: Mommy knows best Her: Fine ill take you home

She held my hand and again in a blink of an eye we were



NOVELSGURU.COM

standing at my door step..Her: Here we go
Me: Thank you

She had a smirk on her face..Her: You might need a helmetMe: for?
Her: You might need it

She pat me on my shoulder.Me: Whatever
She disappeared and i opened the door. I was met by a potbeing
thrown my way as i made my way in, i ducked just intime..
I looked at Melissa she was furious..Me: Are you insane?
Her: Where you coming from Zaine? (shouting)Me: Calm the fuck
down!



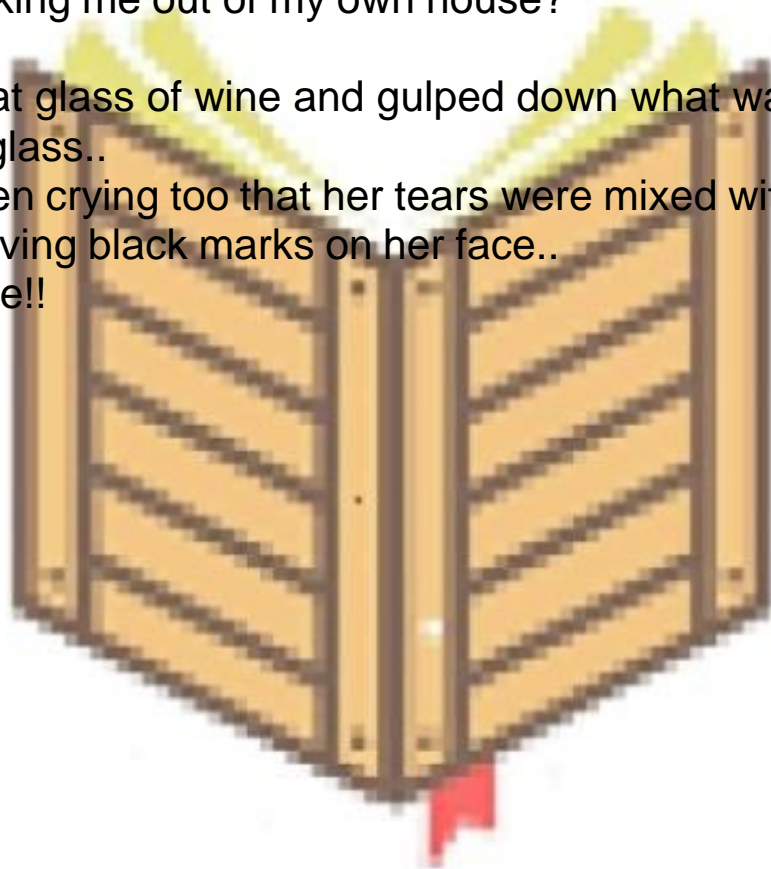
NOVELSGURU.COM

She threw a female underwear at me..Her: does it ring a bell?
I looked at it and i didn't recognise it..Me: You think i?
She threw dishes at me..Me: Mel wait!
Her: This time you've gone too far Zaine!!

She threw dishes at me, cups, glasses, pots, it was crazy..She then
threw me with my car keys..
Her: Get the fuck out!

Me: You kicking me out of my own house?

She took that glass of wine and gulped down what was left of the
wine in the glass..
She had been crying too that her tears were mixed with her black
eye liner leaving black marks on her face..
Her: go Zaine!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at the car keys..

Her: i heard you talking to a female voice in this verykitchen!!!! The disrespect Zaine!!!!

I took the car keys and didn't say anything, i walked outand went to my car before i do something i was gonna regret..

Me: Great!

Now i have to go home with my mother who is going toask me 21 questions..

I started playing A-Reece_Mngani

As i drove home thinking about how a female underwearmagically appeared in my house.. I put the volume on fullblust:

"Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wamiHaven't seen you in a while

Girl I thought you're better off without mel ain't gotta stress about it no more"



NOVELSGURU.COM

... #BONOLO

I had fallen asleep after a while of struggling to fall asleep..

I was hoping for a peaceful sleep but some song kept on playing making serious noise next to my ear..

"Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wami Haven't seen you in a while

Girl I thought you're better off without me ain't gotta stress about it no more"

Then i also heard a sound of a car it was very awkward what was happening.. After a while it was quiet. When i thought i was finally gonna have my peaceful sleep i heard a soft voice whispering next to my ear..

Voice: Take caution before you loose control of the wheel. Steady Zaine, steady.

I repeated the same words..

All of this was happening while i was fast asleep..



NOVELSGURU.COM

.. #ZAINÉ

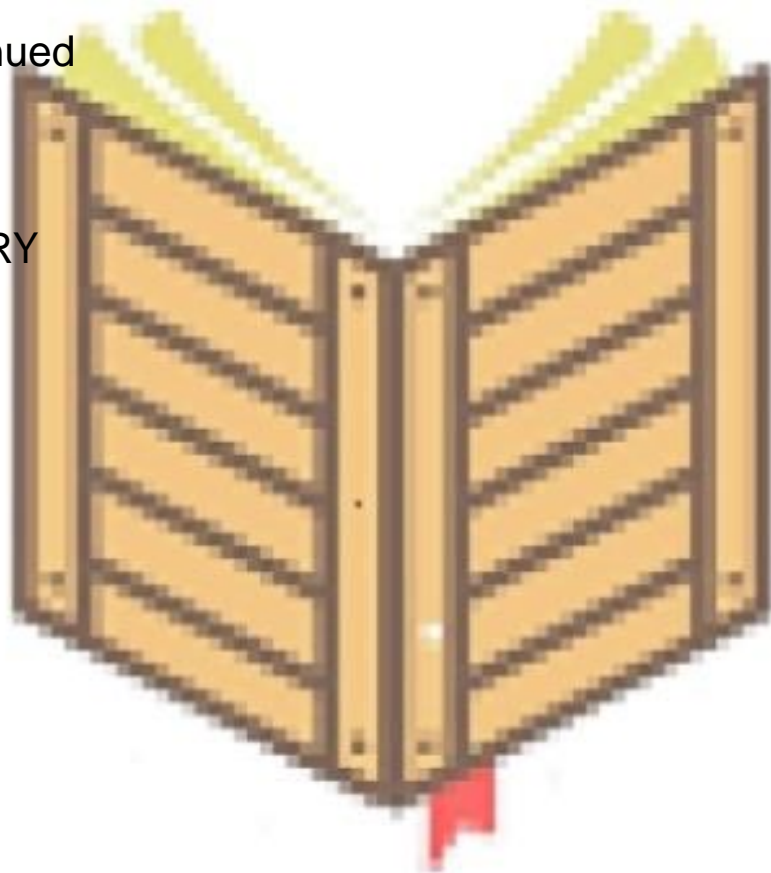
My song had stopped playing, i stretched my hand to play it again when i heard this sweet soft voice whispering nextto my ear..

Voice: Take caution before you loose control of the wheel.Steady Zaine, steady.

I looked at the back and i was alone in the car..Me: Weird I was shaken a bit.

To be continued

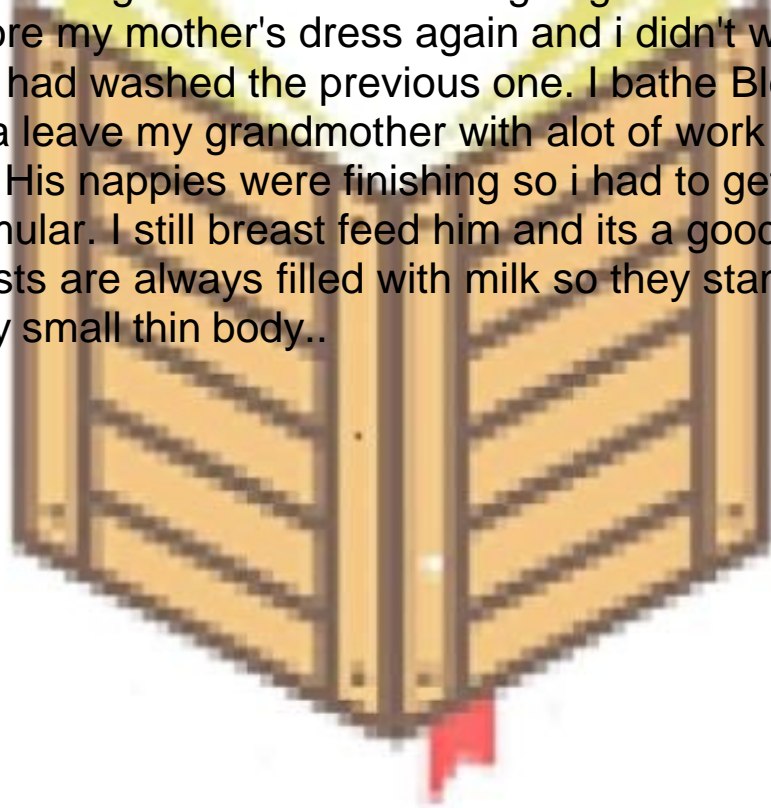
. PURGATORY



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥15 #BONOLO

In the morning my Grandmother and i woke up very early and cleaned the house, we also cleaned outside too. It was better when we cleaned together we got everything done in a short period of time. At the compoud i was usedto cleaning that house alone with no help, so having my Grandmother helping me clean was very nice. After cleaning i bathe since i was going to the mall to get clothes, i wore my mother's dress again and i didn't wear any underwear i had washed the previous one. I bathe Blessing too i didn't wanna leave my grandmother with alot of work when it comes to Blessing. His nappies were finishing so i had to get him that too and milk fomular. I still breast feed him and its a good feeling i won't lie, my breasts are always filled with milk so they stand out whenit comes to my small thin body..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When everything was done, my Grandmother went to fetch the opposite neighbour. I was surprised that she got me a boy i mean after her little speech last night that she doesn't want me anywhere near boys..

Grandma: Bonolo meet Siya he is our opposite neighbour, and Siya this is my Granddaughter Bonolo

Him: Nice to meet you Bonolo Me: Nice to meet you too

Grandma: Okay girls go on now, don't take too long though I took the money and we went..

Siya was rather a strange boy, he was dressed like a boy but his actions weren't much like a boy he was very Faminine like..

Him: Mmata whuuu i can see that awudlalanga nje i underwear (i can see that you not wearing an underwear)

Me: Excuse me?

Him: What language do you speak kanti?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: English

Him: Where are you from?

I just know that i am from the Compoud, i don't know atwhich town it was situated..

We passed a group of girls and Siya started greeting them..Siya: Zifebe (bitches)

They greeted him back..Girl1: uAunty nje!

Siya: uGogo nie! Girl2: iqenge nje!

Then they all started laughing..

Girl3: Mmata manje ubani umchakisani wakho? (who isthis girl you with)

Siya: ohh this is Bonolo

I waved my hand at them..

Siya: sisaya eMall (we going to the mall)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Girl2: Wait a minute Bonolo, yizinywele zakho lezizangempela? (is that your real hair)
I looked at Siya..

Siya: Mmata uphuma emakhishini (she's from the suburbs) Girl3:
whuuuuuu wasilethela bo!

Siya: ill see you Zifebe (bitches)

We left them and continued walking to the mall. Siya was familiar with everyone even guys and i was just a fool busy looking around and all that..

Some of the boys looked at me and they whistled it was very uncomfortable for me and i needed to abide by my Grandmother's rules "i don't wanna see you with boys"

.

. #ZAINE

I didn't go straight home last night after the Melissa Saga. I hated waking my parents at night but most of all i wasn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

ready for all the 21 questions from my mother...

I spent a night at a friend's house then went home in the morning... When I arrived, everyone was up and down preparing for my Brother's wedding which was in 2 days time. Everyone was excited about it except for me. I am not saying that I wasn't happy for him, believe me I was but how everyone is rubbing it in my face especially my mother now that I wasn't happy about..

I had a hangover, my friend and I were drinking last night..

The reception of my Brother's wedding is gonna be at our house so maids were up and down cleaning everywhere..

Mom: Zaine what are you doing here? She came and hugged me..

Me: I need a reason to visit home? She looked at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can we not talk about this now Ms Jackson? She still looked at me..

Her: Fine, would you like something to eat? Me: Not really.. Where is Pops?

Her: he went out for breakfast with Leighton Me: Ohw

Her: im happy that you here

Me: Im happy that i am here too.. Can i go to my room and lie down for a second?

Her: Ofcause baby

I walked up to my room to rest..

.

. #BONOLO

Siya made me buy nice clothes. He said that he is studying fashion design so he knows his way with different clothes



NOVELSGURU.COM

and i respected his opinion. Living here is surely gonna be different, now i am made to wear jeans which i have never worn before. Not only that, but he also made me buy a phone it was a Vodacom smart kikka phone and it was pretty affordable. After buying everything including Blessing's Nappies and milk formula i was left with R350, i took R50 and bought Airtime so i can call Simon later. I took R100 and bought my grandmother a cake and cool drink then also Siya suggested we buy Hot wings at KFC. I couldn't wait to get home and try all the clothes that i have bought, we didn't walk home this time around we took a taxi which cost R10 each..

We got home and my Grandmother was playing with Blessing. We put everything on the couch. The clothes we bought weren't expensive, he took me to an Indian/Chinese shop and we bought there but Nevertheless their clothes were beautiful..
Grandma: it looks like you girls had fun



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't know why my grandmother keeps on referring to us as "Girls"
Can't she see that Siya is a boy? Siya: let me go and clean at home
Grandma: Thank you for accompanying my Granddaughter to the
mall

Siya: Its okay Me: Thank you

Grandma: Are you coming to church with us later?

Siya: i have to pass today my mother is not feeling well she has flu
so i have to be full hands on

Grandma: Okay then i wish her a speedy recovery Siya: Thank you
Gam Gam, now i have to go

He said goodbye and then went..



NOVELSGURU.COM

#ZAINÉ

I had been doing nothing but sleeping the whole day, i needed the rest especially after last night. My mother woke me up at around 17:00 telling me i need to bath so we can go to church. Even if i refused she was gonna keep on being a mosquito in my ear and annoy me.

I got out of bed, i was feeling better now better than i was earlier today..

Lucky for me i had extra clothes at home so i bathe then dressed up and made my way downstairs..

The whole family was gathered downstairs at the dinning table eating before we leave for church.

Leigh: Zaine i didn't know that you was here

Me: i got here in the morning, you and Dad were out
Him: is everything okay?

Me: Why wouldn't everything be okay?
Mom: Zaine..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mel has been calling and sending me messages trying to apologise but i ignored..

Dad: Good to see you all dressed up and ready for church Zaine

Me: Its not like i have a choice Mom: Zaine drop the attitude Me:

Sorry

Dad: lets just eat so we can go We continued eating in silence..

.

. #BONOLO

My Grandmother's church was big, bigger than i expected. Not only was it big but also beautiful. I enjoyed the singing, i could feel something taking over my Grandmother said that's the holy spirit. We sang and prayed alot until the Reverend took the pulpit..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When he was preaching everyone was very quiet. Those who were sitting at the back they could see him through the big screens. The church was very sophisticated, the Technology was very much advance..

He was preaching about God's love to human beings and how he portrayed that love was very amazing, their God is very much different from the one we were introduced too at the Purgatory..

The preaching didn't take long, even if it took long i wasn't gonna mind because i was really enjoying myself.. When everyone was making their way out, my Grandmother and i went to the front to talk to the Reverend. There was a long Queue so we waited our turn...

Me: at what time will the buses leave?

Grandma: after an hour, by then we would've spoken to Rev Radebe I nodded..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: That's his wife and his eldest son standing there

His wife was white and she was beautiful, his son washandsome too

Her: he also has another Son but i don't see him i don'tknow if he came

Me: Okay

Her: Blessing is heavy now, can you get me a chair to sitdown?

Me: Yes Grandmother

I made my way to get her a chair..

As i was on my way to get her a chair i took my phone out and started playing around with it. I was very fascinated byit, i need to teach and familiarise myself with it...

All of a sudden someone bumped me that i tripped and almost fell but miraculously they caught me before i metthe floor..

They helped me to stand on my two feet again..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Sorry Me: Its okay
I looked at him and Goodness me..

He still had his one hand around my waist. We didn't say anything we just stared deep in each other's eyes. Things were really strange between us and at the same time i felt this strong connection between us. no one and nothing existed at that moment other than us. As if like things couldn't get more weird that song started playing in my head..

"Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wami "

He tightened his grip around my waist a little making us to come very close to each other. All i could feel was our warm breaths hitting our faces, and he was smelling good too..
I truly don't know how to explain the moment or what was happening..

"Girl I thought you're better off without me



NOVELSGURU.COM

I ain't gotta stress about it no more"Everything fit into place perfectly.

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥16 #BONOLO

I didn't know how to process everything that happened a few minutes ago. I felt deep down that me and that guy we have some sort of bond and connection, it was pretty weird if you ask me because i have never seen him before although the song that kept on playing in my head i was very familiar with it. When i was starring deep in his eyes, something deep inside of me moved. My heart was even



NOVELSGURU.COM

beating fast and slow at the same time.

The only man i have been with all my life was Prophet Abdul and by that i mean there was never love involved well at least not from my side, and the man i can say i have feelings for is Simon. But what was weird is that what i felt with this guy was not how i feel about Simon, itwas way too different that even i cannot explain it or wrap my head around it..

I had gone back to my Grandmother and she was sitting down now, we were waiting for our turn to speak to the Reverend but my mind and Focus was on that gentleman i had bumped into earlier. He was standing with the Reverend's wife and son..

Grandma: That is the Reverend's second Son his last born

I was in a world of my own when my grandmother shookmy hand. I glanced down and looked at her..

Her: That's the Reverend's Son tooMe: Ohw



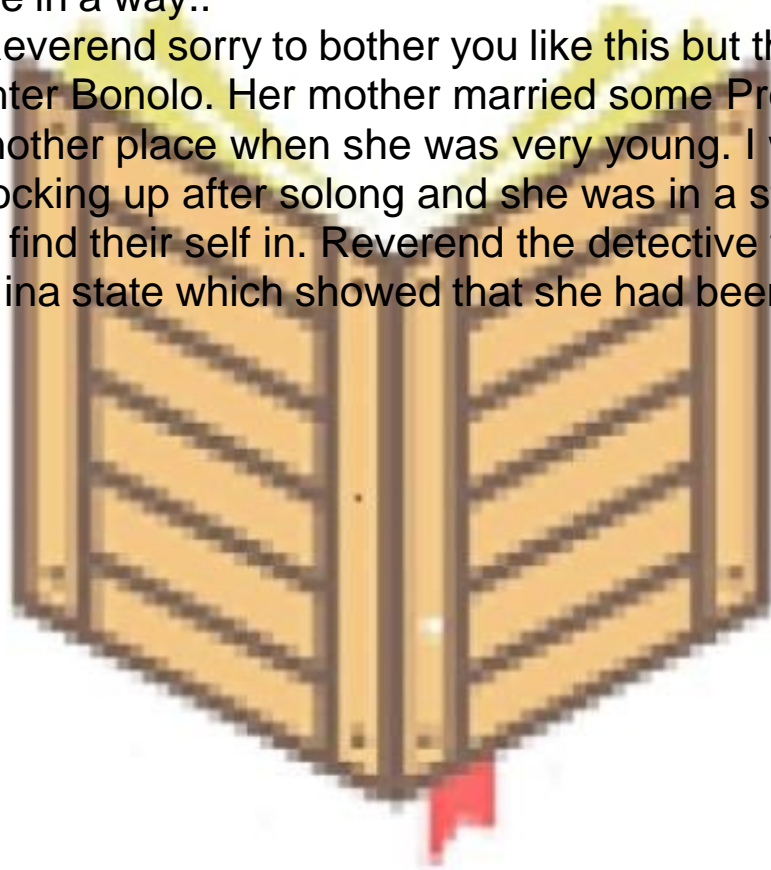
NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Yes the one i was telling you about
Me: now i know
Our turn finally came to speak to the Reverend and we moved closer to him..

Grandma: Reverend

He looked at us, and his focus at that present moment was on me. I was shaken by his look because the last time that Prophet Abdul looked at me the same way i ended up becoming his sex slave.. It wasn't a sexual look but his look somehow indicated that he was expecting me in a way..

Grandma: Reverend sorry to bother you like this but this is my Granddaughter Bonolo. Her mother married some Prophet and they moved to another place when she was very young. I was surprised to see her rocking up after so long and she was in a state that no child should find their self in. Reverend the detective testified that Bonolo was in a state which showed that she had been abused



NOVELSGURU.COM

The Reverend was listening attentively to my Grandmother telling him the story..

Grandma: I am old and i retired long time ago. I have been living off on my monthly pension money and it was enough for me but since Bonolo came back and now she has a baby i don't think i can be able to take care of all of us. Some of my money i have to use it to see a Doctor because my Asthma sometimes acts up

The Reverend kept nodding every now and then implying that he was hearing what my grandmother was saying to him..

Grandma: if its not much trouble i would really appreciate it if you could help us by giving Bonolo a job even if its cleaning in the church just so she gets a bit of money to take care of her and her Son please Man of God

The Reverend looked at me.. Him: How old are you child? Me: 17 sir



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Why aren't you at school?Me: i..

Grandma: for some reason she never attended schoolRev: Ever?
I nodded while looking down. It was an embarrassing thing to talk about..

We were all quiet for a while..

He exhaled and ran his hand across his face, i think he was exhausted from all that walkin up and down preaching..

Him: forgive me Miss...?Grandma: Thabethe

Rev: Miss Thabethe.. Your Granddaughter is supposed to be at school having her work that is against the law, it will be contributed to Child labour

Grandma: i hear and understand you Reverend but there's nothing i can do because she doesn't even have any



NOVELSGURU.COM

papers and no school will take her, she will have to start over in Grade 1 and her age doesn't allow

He thought about everything, then after looking at his family and came back to us..

Him: Okay I am not promising anything but I'll see what I can do

Grandma: Thank you so much man of God, God bless She looked at me..

Her: Let's go Bonolo

I looked at the Reverend. Me: Thank you

Rev: before you go, please write your details here in this piece of paper so I can contact you..

My Grandmother asked the Reverend to write for us and he had no problem.

Grandma: Thank you again Reverend

I took Blessing from her and we made our way out. I was



NOVELSGURU.COM

very concerned that the bus would've left but fortunetly it was still parked there, looked like they were waiting for us..
We climbed in and it drove off..

. #ZAINÉ

The following morning i was up very early. I was standing at the kitchen counter with a mug on my hand busy starring through the cup while thinking. I was thinking about the events of last night at church, that girl i bumped too heaven help me she was a Goddess. She was more beautiful with her long hair, perfect small pinkish lips, the thin perfectly constructed facial structure, Dammit! It will take the whole day for me to describe her and how perfectshe is.. My Dad's voice disturbed my thoughts.

Dad: if that mug doesn't break then the coffee might looselts taste



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at him..Me: Huh?

Him: Drink your coffee SonI looked at my mug..

Me: ohh Yeah sure

He limped his way to lean over the table that was in the middle of the room..

Me: Are you alright?

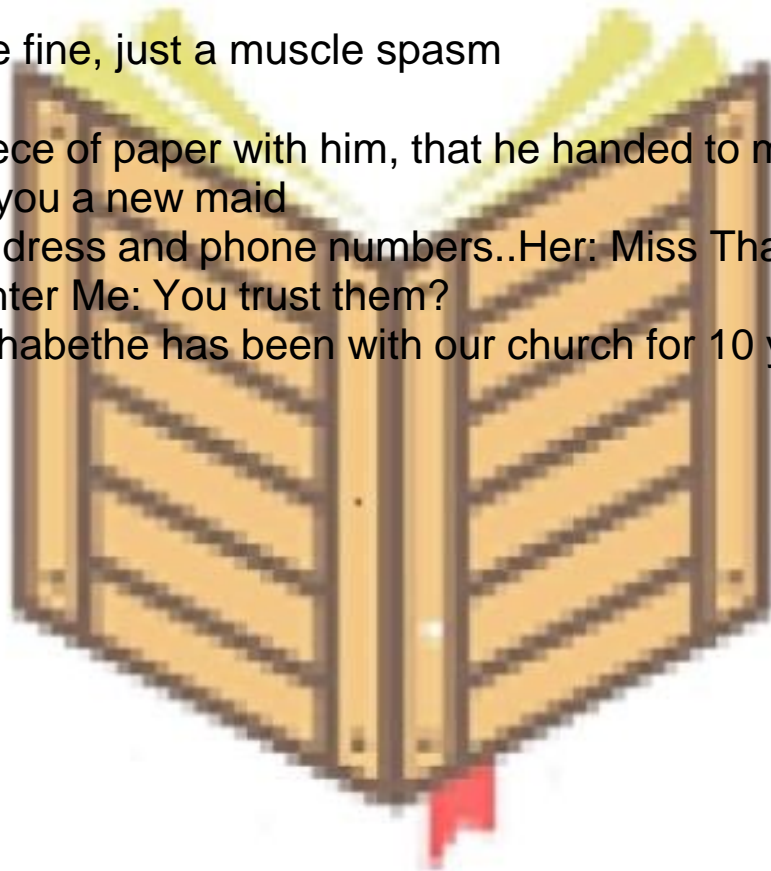
He looked like he was in pain.

Him: i will be fine, just a muscle spasm

He had a piece of paper with him, that he handed to me.Him: think i have found you a new maid

It was an Address and phone numbers..Her: Miss Thabethe's Granddaughter Me: You trust them?

Him: Miss Thabethe has been with our church for 10 years



NOVELSGURU.COM

now. She used to help with cleaning at the church before we moved to a bigger place

Me: That's interesting

Him: tell me what happened at your house?

My mom walked in the kitchen with her heels making noise..

Her: i would like to know too

I looked at them, lying won't help now..Me: i fought with Melissa

Mom: What's that got to do with anything?Me: She put me out of the house

Mom: She did what?Dad: here we go

Mom: How does she put you out of your own house i don't understand

Dad: she moved in with him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: and no one cared to tell me?Leighton walked in..

Him: Good morningWe greeted back...

Leighton: Ms Jackson are you ready to go?Mom: that can wait

Him: You have to meet up with Sharon she's alreadywaiting for you

Mom: the dress is not running away LeightonLeigh: Mom..

Mom: Your little Brother is in trouble and he needs help

Leigh: so convinient that his troubles can come right whenmy wedding has to be prepared

Me: Excuse you?

Dad: ill go with Zaine and..Mom: ill go with Zaine!



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me.. Her: go get dressed!
I didn't say no more i went to get dressed...

. #BONOLO

My Grandmother was out sweeping, so that gave me timeto call
Simon.

Him: my Sweetheart

Me: Hey you, sorry i didn't call you last night Him: i understand but
im glad you called todayMe: That's because i have a new phone

Him: That's good so i can call you now?

Me: Yes just at night my grandmother doesn't like metalking to boys

Him: Im not just any boy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i know but she's a bit strictHim: That's gonna leave a scar
Me: She's been very good to me and Blessing, i don't wanna seem ungrateful by being disrespectful
Him: How are you holding up?

Me: Im good and i might even get a jobHim: a job?
Me: Yes i have to help out Grandma is not workingHim: if you need money you just have to say so Me: You have done alot already
Him: You and Blessing are my Priority and my worldthere's nothing i wouldn't do for you and him
I then heard Blessing crying..

Me: i have to go Blessing is cryingHim: Okay take care
Me: Send my love to mom



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i will.. I love youMe: i love you too

Him: Don't let the city corrupt youMe: Never

After bidding each other farewell i hung up and went toBlessing.. I picked him up..

Me: Shhhhh baby

I was at peace, couldn't wait for the Day Simon is gonnacome for me and Blessing then we can be family..

.

. #ZAINÉ

My mother was very fired up, we got to my house and sheflung the door open. Sometimes being a Reverend's wife all that goes out of the window..

Mom: Where is she?

She walked around the house, it was very untidy with



NOVELSGURU.COM

empty bottles of wine just laying around..

We found her in the bedroom getting dressed, she was shocked to see us..

Mom: You will know me well today!

My mom took off her heel and made her way to her..Me: Mom no!
My mom started hitting her..

Mom: Get out of my Son's house and his life!!! (shouting)

Melissa was trying to protect herself but my mother was determined to leave her wounded..

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

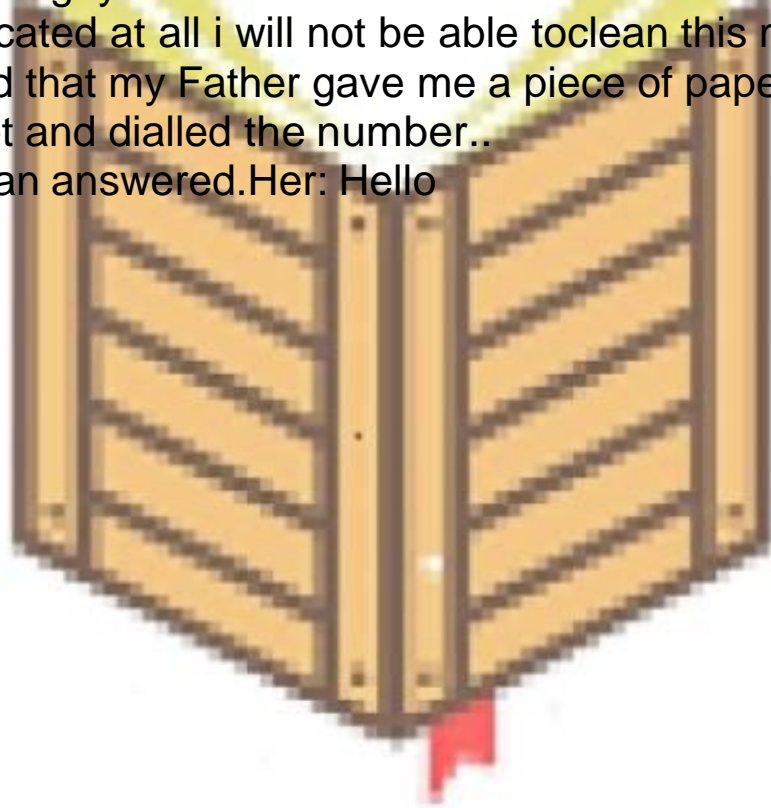
¥17 #ZAINÉ

Melissa did take her things and left, my Mother was on a serious mission and i don't think that she was gonna comeback ever again. My mother didn't hold back into telling herhow much lazy she is and how much of a drunk she is judging from all the wine bottles that were laying around.

Its like she never cleaned the house ever since i left, my sink at the bathroom was filled with strands of her hair orweave rather and her underwears were lining up in my dryer it was just too crazy.

After driving my Mom home, i came back and just looked at all the mess. There's guys who clean and do householdchores but i am not domesticated at all i will not be able toclean this mess. I then remembered that my Father gave me a piece of paper. I took it out of my pocket and dialled the number..

An old woman answered.Her: Hello



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: uhm good morning...

Her: ngikhuluma nobani? (who am i speaking too)I cleared my throat.

Me: Sorry about that you speaking to Zaine, Zaine Radebe igot your contacts from my father in regards to me wanting a maid?

Her: ohw yes, you have contacted the right person

Me: if its not too soon or too much to ask i would really like your Granddaughter to start tomorrow 07:00am to beexact

Her: that is no problem she will startMe: Thank you

Her: before you hang up there's one problemMe: Yes?

Her: Where do you stay?

Me: Lakeside guest house just close to carnival city inDalpark



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You not far from us Me: so she can get around?

Her: That's the problem, my Granddaughter is not from around here i don't think she will be able to come there on her own

Me: that is a problem

Her: Can you please pick her up?

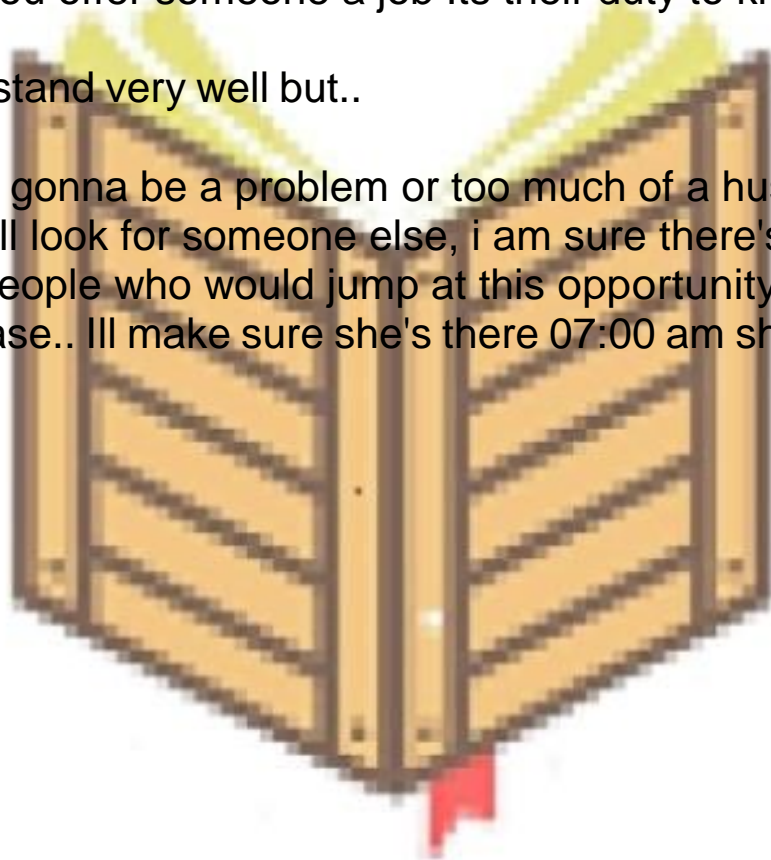
Me: with all due respect Miss Thabethe if im not mistaken? Her: Yes that's my surname

Me: When you offer someone a job Its their duty to know how to get to the place

Her: i understand very well but..

Me: if this is gonna be a problem or too much of a hussle for her i can very well look for someone else, i am sure there's alot of desperate people who would jump at this opportunity

Her: No please.. Ill make sure she's there 07:00 am sharp



NOVELSGURU.COM

and not a minute late just don't look for another person
Me: Good, and Miss Thabethe..

Her: Im still here

Me: if she's not here at 07:00am i will find someone else
Her: she will be there

Me: Good

I hung up the call after, can't believe this old hag..

The door bell rang and i went to open, it was my Brother...He made his way in..

Me: You can come in Leighton (sarcasm)I closed the door..

He looked at me with his hands in his pockets..Him: You know

Zaine you are very unbelievable
Me: What did i do?

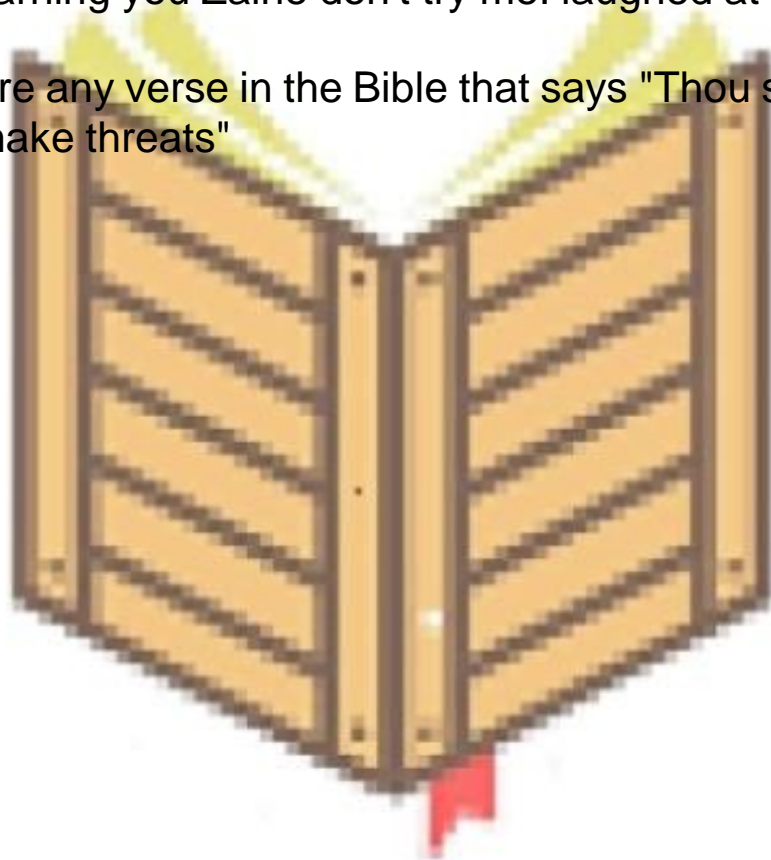
He looked around and i could see he was disgusted by how untidy my place was..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Are you trying to ruin my wedding huh?Me: by doing what?
Him: this stunt you pulled with mom earlier, i swearMe: You give me way too much credit
I walked up to the fridge...

Him: my fiance waited for Mom all morning so they could collect her dress but mom was here fighting your battles grow up Zaine!
I took out a can of flying fish and looked at him..Me: Are you done?
I opened the can and started drinking..He walked closer to me...
Him: i am warning you Zaine don't try mel laughed at him right in his face..
Me: isn't there any verse in the Bible that says "Thou shalt not get angry and make threats"



NOVELSGURU.COM

He composed himself..

Me: This Religion of yours is a joke, everything you standfor is a joke!

He grabbed me by my tshirt.

Him: Its not my fault you chose this way of living, don't make your problems my problems. Accept that you the less loved Son, you the lost Son.. Do you Zaine i don't care, but while you do you don't interfere with my perfect world!

Me: is this how the next Prophet should act? He looked at me..

Him: i am still your big Brother and i can knock off all your teeth if i want too..

Me: Get out of my house!

He let me go then fixed my Tshirt.

Him: See you tomorrow at my wedding little Bro, don't forget you'll be the one holding the rings.

He then whistled his way out of my house..



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #BONOLO

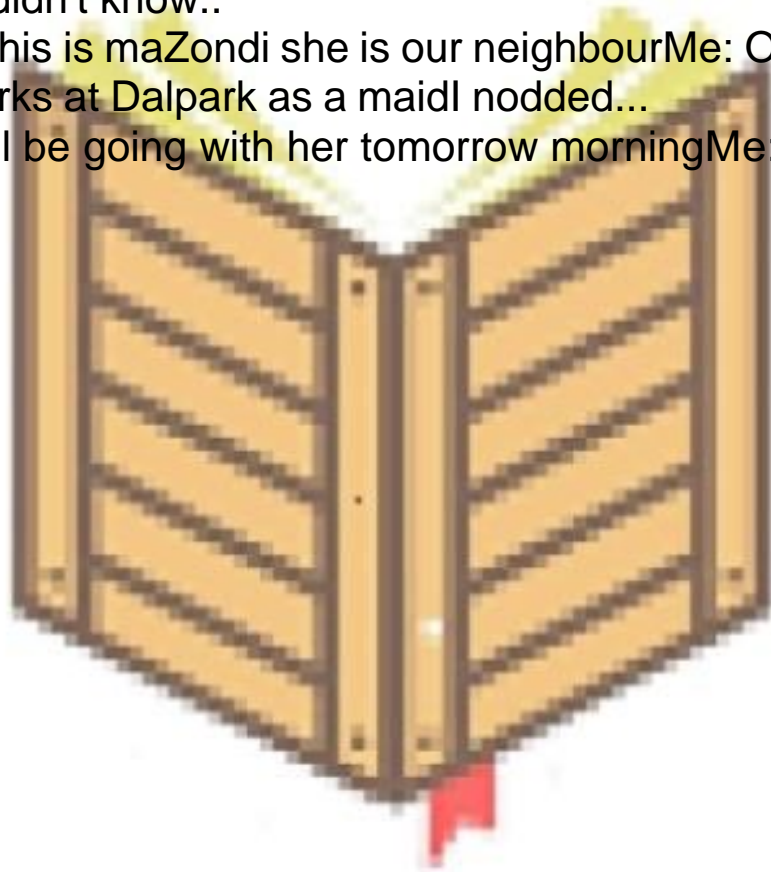
My Grandmother came to the bedroom to fetch me so we can go and talk in the lounge. I was a bit scared, am i in trouble? Did she maybe hear me talking to Simon over the phone earlier? Is she gonna put me out? Where will i go with a baby who has just been born a couple of weeks ago? She cannot be that heartless..

I made my way to the couch and there was a woman sitting across me whom i didn't know..

Grandma: This is maZondi she is our neighbour Me: Okay

Her: she works at Dalpark as a maid I nodded...

Her: You will be going with her tomorrow morning Me: Where?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You be starting work tomorrow
Me: Really?
Her: Yes i recieved a call from your new boss
Me: Wow that is great news
Grandma
She looked at maZondi..

Grandma: maZondi this is my Granddaughter Bonolo theone i have been telling you about

maZondi: Wow you beautiful
Me: Thank you

Grandma: Don't worry ill look after Blessing for you
Me: Thank you
Grandma

Her: You can go to your bedroom now i wanna talk to maZondi

Me: Okay

I stood up and went to the bedroom, i immediately called Simon to let him know..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Simon i got the job!

Him: Wow that's good sweetheart

Me: i mean i didn't mean it was gonna be this soon
Him: That's very good, im proud of you

Me: Thank you.. How are things at the Compoud?

Him: Abdul is going crazy out of his mind, he is oneveryone's throat trying to find out who helped youescaped

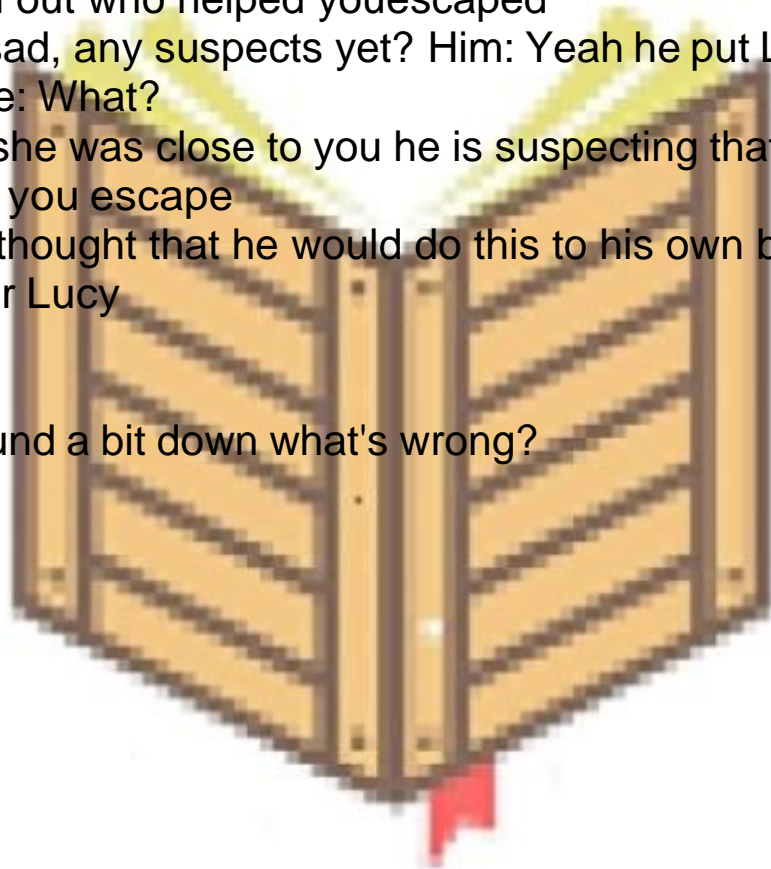
Me: That's sad, any suspects yet? Him: Yeah he put Lucy in Purgatory
Me: What?

Him: Since she was close to you he is suspecting that sheis the one who helped you escape

Me: i never thought that he would do this to his own blood,shame i feel sorry for Lucy

Him: Its sad

Me: You sound a bit down what's wrong?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Its nothing

Me: You can talk to me

Him: Im just a bit concerned since you far from me
Me: Concerned with?

Him: i know this is gonna sound a bit crazy but...
Me: but?

Him: What if another guy steals you away from me?
I chuckled...

Me: don't be silly

Him: it can happen, i am far and so are you we won't be able to see each other until God knows when

Me: don't think like that Simon i love you, i don't imagine myself being with someone else other than you

Him: guess im just being silly
Me: Yes you are

Simon is my heart and i don't see myself being with



NOVELSGURU.COM

anyone other than him..

.

. #ZAINE

James came later that day to give me his findings onMelissa..

Me: that took you long enoughHe looked around...

Me: don't even ask

I was a bit tipsy, i had finished all my 12 cans of flying fish..He
threw a file on the table..

Him: That's your girl

I opened the file and i ran on tweets from different guys..Me: What
is this?

Him: all the guys she has slept with, your girl is a whoreMe: a what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

All this tweets were crazy...

****TWEETS****

Kyle100: "Melissa is a well known whore, i wonder howmany abortions she has had now"

**

KingPule: "i hit that alot of times today i went to test for hiv,my Gods are with me because im negative... @CuteMel"

Romeo_999:" i wonder who you fucking now... @CuteMel"

Neo: "i still have all your pics baby.. @CuteMel"

Sandy1992: "Omg if i was her i would kill myself with such reputation.. @CuteMel"

LiraLira: "she is no different than a succubus sleeping withmen for money and a lavish lifestyle sucking their wallets"



NOVELSGURU.COM

dry.. @CuteMel

Naledi_Nae: "haven't heard from @CuteMel.. I wonder whoshe is sucking dry now"

James: That's why she moved away from home, she hascreated an everlasting reputation for herself

I couldn't believe what i was seeing, i even saw nakedpictures of her, sex tapes it was very crazy i couldn't believe that my Melissa can do such filthy things!

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥18



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

The following day i woke up very early to prepare for work.maZondi said our bus leaves at 05:00am so i really didn't wanna be late. I was wearing a Jean, tshirt, and pumps.

My Grandmother forced me to pack Leggings and another tshirt saying i should change into that outfit when i clean so i don't dirty my clothes. I was very nervous i won't lie, all i was hoping for was that i make a good impression with my cleaning. I am used to cleaning so i am sure that this wasn't gonna be difficult....

I kissed Blessing goodbye who was still sleeping, and then my grandmother walked me halfway to the bus stop where maZondi and other women were waiting. I greeted them, then stood with maZondi....

maZondi: How are you Bonolo? Me: i am good maZondi and you?

Her: i am good, so are you ready for your first day?Me: i think i am



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kept quiet before continuing with the questions..Her: How old are you?

Me: i am 17 years old

Her: hau shouldn't you be at school perhaps?Me: Its a long story

Her: So you don't have a future nje?I looked at her..

Her: i mean your future is circulated with you working as amaid from now on, that's very sad.

I kept quiet because i didn't know how to respond to her..

Her: i wonder who would agree to marry a Maid, i woulddie than to let my daughter be a maid

I didn't like where this conversation was going, and i didn'tlike what she was saying to me..

Her: You one of those girls who just disappear then comeback home to Grandma with a baby, hai abantwana bamanje (children of today)



NOVELSGURU.COM

What she was saying hit me hard, i wish people can actually know what's going on before judging..

The bus finally came and i sat behind her i didn't want to share the same seat as her in case she lectures me..

I was looking around as we were driving to our destination, and i saw beautiful places. I even saw the Hospital upfront and it was big and beautiful no lie..

We arrived at the place and the bus dropped us off at the gate. We climbed off and made our way to the security guards.

maZondi: ill drop you off first were you supposed to go

Me: There's no need maZondi you have done enough Thank you, my boss said i should just give him a ring when i am at the gate

Her: are you sure? Me: Yes

Her: Okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

As soon as she disappeared i made my way to theSecurities..

Me: Good morningHim: Morning

Me: Can i please be accompanied to a Zaine Radebe'splace?

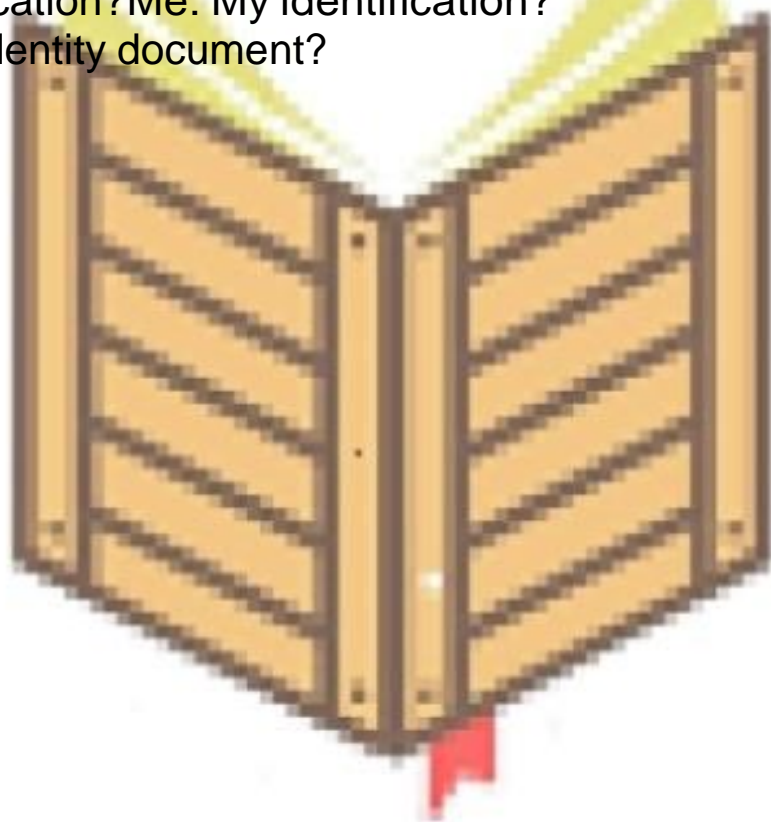
Him: is he expecting you? Me: Yes, i am his new maidHe looked at me..

Him: let me ring him up

He took the phone and called him but he it looked like hewasn't picking up..

They tried him again and again but still... Security: May i please see your identification?Me: My identification?

Him: Your identity document?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i don't have any

Security: That's gonna be a problem Me: Can you maybe take me up to him?

Security: We cannot just let anyone in mam'

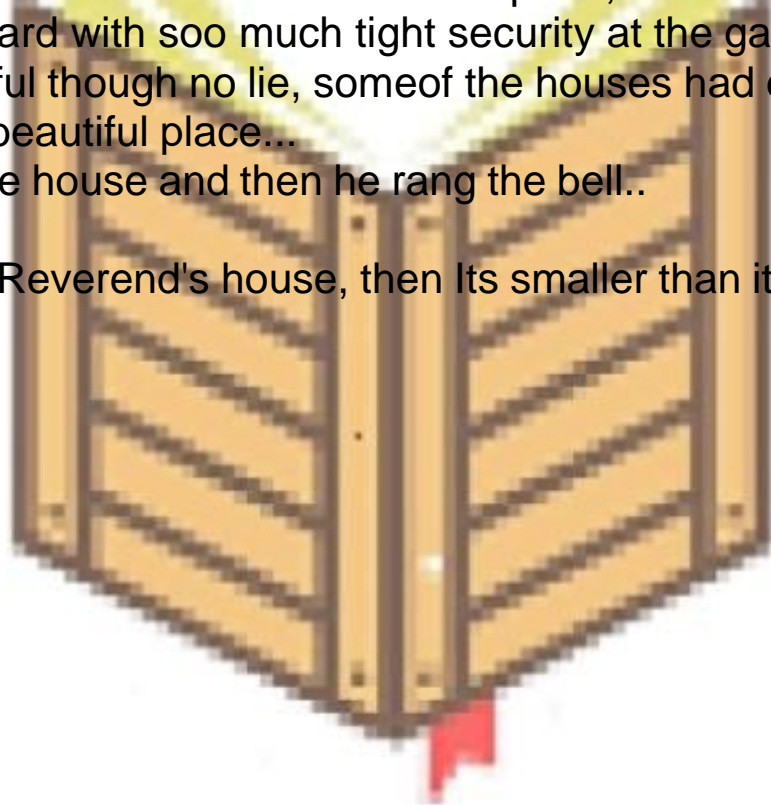
Me: Please i need this job, he said if im late i will be fired and i didn't know that i needed identification to get in

He looked at me.. Him: Okay lets go Me: Thank you

I went through the gate and then we made our way to Zaine Radebe's place. This looked like a compoud, so many houses under one yard with soo much tight security at the gate. The houses were beautiful though no lie, someof the houses had dogs in the yard was a beautiful place...

We got to the house and then he rang the bell..

If this is the Reverend's house, then Its smaller than ithought..



NOVELSGURU.COM

He rang the bell again and again..Him: Mr Radebe is like this
Me: Can i please ask what time is it?He looked at his wrist watch..
Him: 06:30

At least i was still early..

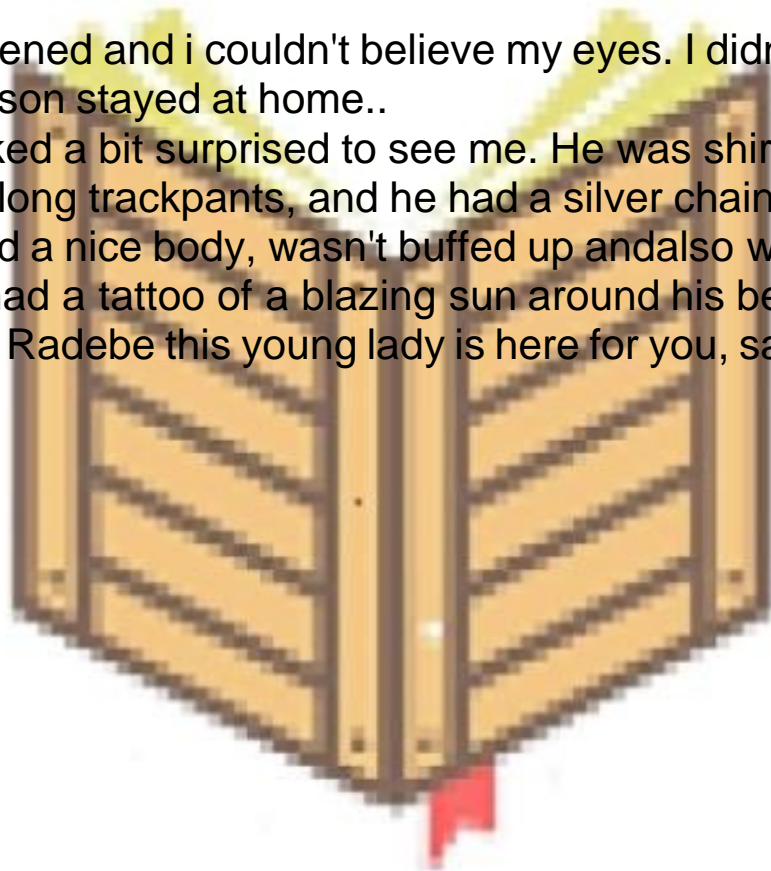
He rang the bell again continuously then i heard a voiceyelling from the inside..

Voice: Yeah im coming keep your pants on!!!! (yelling)

The door opened and i couldn't believe my eyes. I didn'tknow that Reverend's son stayed at home..

He also looked a bit surprised to see me. He was shirtless,only wearing his long trackpants, and he had a silver chainaround his neck. He had a nice body, wasn't buffed up andalso wasn't skin an bones. He had a tattoo of a blazing sun around his belly button..

Security: Mr Radebe this young lady is here for you, saying



NOVELSGURU.COM

something about being your maid?Him: my maid?

I looked at him.. Me: i am Bonolo His eyes widened..Him: You Bonolo?

I nodded.. This was a highly embarrassing moment..Security: so you do know her?

Him: ummm Yeah, i am.. I am expecting a BonoloSecurity: very well The security looked at me..

Him: Next time bring identificationMe: Yes sir

The security left.. We stood there not knowing what to sayto each other..

Him: i guess you can come in



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Thank you

I walked inside and his house was beautiful and small, but very untidy. Bottles of alcohol lying around, what looked like beer cans were also lying around..

Him: so you the Bonolo who is supposed to be my maid? I turned and looked at him..

Me: Yes sir

Him: How old are you? Me: 17

Him: 17?

I nodded..

Him: Excuse me

He took his phone from the table and called someone. His phone was big and looked expensive..

The person he was trying to call wasn't picking up.. He put his phone on the table..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Bonolo sorry i cannot let you work for me
Me: Why is that?
Him: You are underage you supposed to be at school
Me: Please i need this job to help my Grandma
Him: i don't wanna go to jail
Me: Mr Radebe please
Him: You can close the door on your way out
He made his way to his bedroom..
This was not happening to me..

. #ZAINÉ

I went to the bathroom and ran water into the bathtub while thinking about what just happened. Not only is this against the law, but i don't think i can have Bonolo at my house everyday Its gonna be hard for me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I can't believe my dad set me up like this, but most of all how can he promote this? this girl is young she's supposed to be at school.. After bathing i got dressed, my whole day is gonna be spent at the studio..

Today Its my Brother's wedding but after what happened to us yesterday i am not setting my foot there..

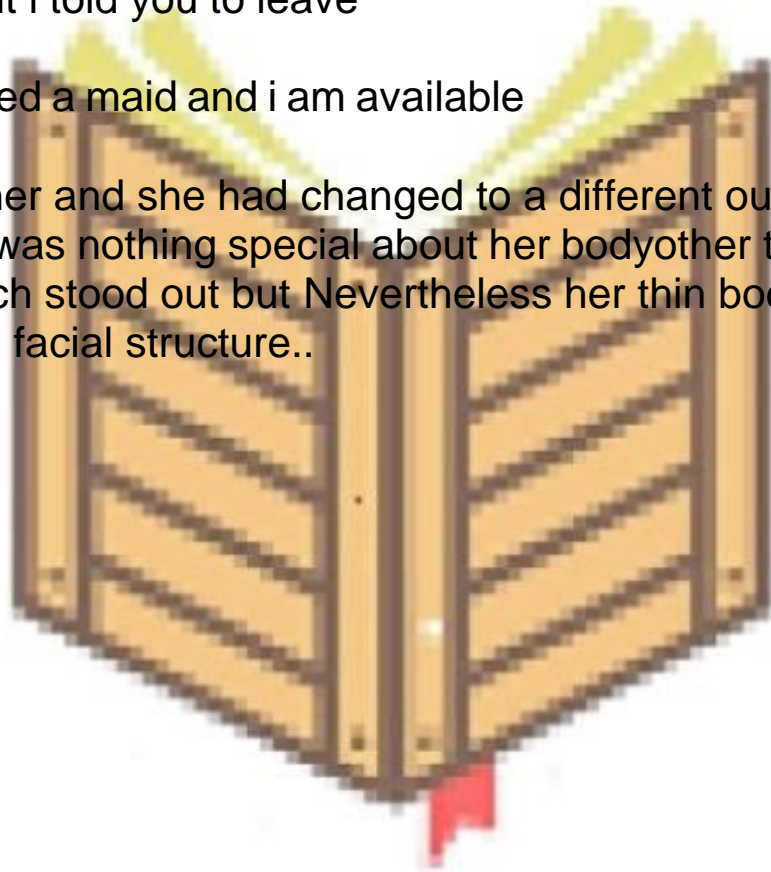
I took my phone and made my way to the kitchen where i found Bonolo tidying up..

Me: What are you doing? Her: Im cleaning Sir

Me: i thought i told you to leave

Her: You need a maid and i am available

I looked at her and she had changed to a different outfit. She wasn't thick, there was nothing special about her body other than her big breasts which stood out but Nevertheless her thin body went well with her thin facial structure..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bonolo i want you to leave

Her: i am not gonna leave. It was hard getting hereShe continued doing what she was doing..

I didn't say anything anymore i made my way to the door,before i walked out i looked at her..

Me: Dad what did you get me into?

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

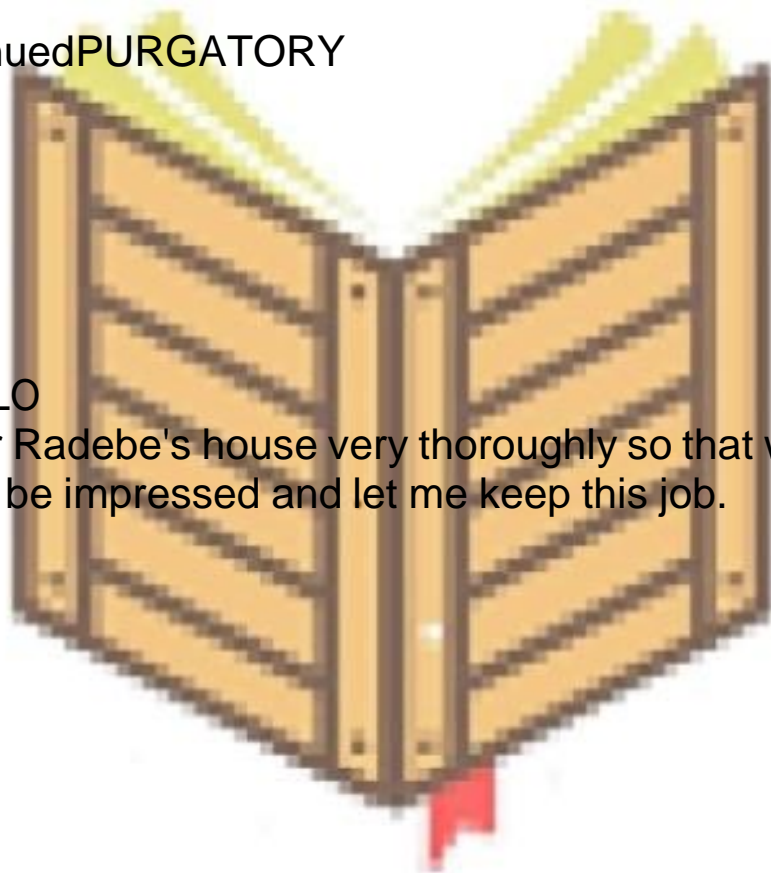
.

.

.

¥19 #BONOLO

I cleaned Mr Radebe's house very thoroughly so that when he gets here he can be impressed and let me keep this job.



NOVELSGURU.COM

His house wasn't that big, it was the kitchen, bathroom, 2 bedrooms and lounge. He also had a bathroom in his bedroom. I went as far as washing his Duvet and sheets, so they can smell fresh when throws himself on the bed. It wasn't that much tiring, i mean at the Compoud i used to clean every room there ever was there, and it was a very big house Yes i am Domesticated...

It was around 13:00 now in the afternoon, i had just finished taking his clothes down from the washing line to iron them before i go home. I only had a 30min lunch from 12:00-12:30 i ate a pie that was in the fridge. Most his foodi had to throw out because they had mould such as his cheese and Russians i can see that he doesn't eat much. Idecided that i was also gonna cook him some lamb stew and mini dumblings, that is the best Recipe i got from my mother at least his Meat wasn't rotten..

I wasn't feeling good anymore, i was feeling dizzy, Nauseated and at times i felt like i was going to throw up. Icontributed that to the pie, maybe it was spoiled and i got food poisoning or something..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I started ironing his clothes and drank lots of water i also thought that maybe i was dehydrated..

The feeling got stronger that i actually ran to the bathroom to throw up, and i sat on the floor next to the toilet i felt very horrible..

I must've fallen asleep there because i was woken up by someone ringing the bell..

I stood up then rinsed my mouth and went to check who it was...

I opened the door and some woman made her way in.. I looked at her and realised it was the Reverend's wife..

Her: Where is he? Where is Zaine!!

She took off her Fascinator and threw it on the kitchen counter. This woman was intimidating..

Me: Uhmm

She looked at me.. Her: And who are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i am Bonolo mam' i am Mr Radebe's Maid
Her: Maid..
She looked around.. Then after she looked at me..
Her: Where is he?
Me: i seriously don't know, he left early in the morning and didn't say where he was going
She put her hands on her face, she looked distressed, frustrated, Emotionally drained a lot was happening with her..
She put her hands down with her eyes closed and i could see that she was trying not to cry..
Her: Zaine is gonna kill me one day, all this stress he is causing me!
She walked to the lounge and i followed her, she threw herself on the couch..
Me: have you tried calling him?
She looked at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: would i be here if he answered his phone?Me: Im sorry i didn't mean to upset you more She kept quiet..

Me: Can i get you something to drink?

Her: No you can go back to what you were doingI decided to stop ironing and i started cooking...

. #ZAINE

It was lit at the studio, Chichi is a very dedicated and hardworking artist. We had managed to get 3 songs done so far, i threw her with beats and she worked her magic. Just7-8 songs left and i can finally release her mixtape..

She got out of the recording booth and made her way tome...

Her: My throat is dry

Me: all for a good course, your songs are lit!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You think so?Me: i know so

Her: all thanks to you for realising my TalentMe: wouldn't let a talent go to waste

She chuckled..

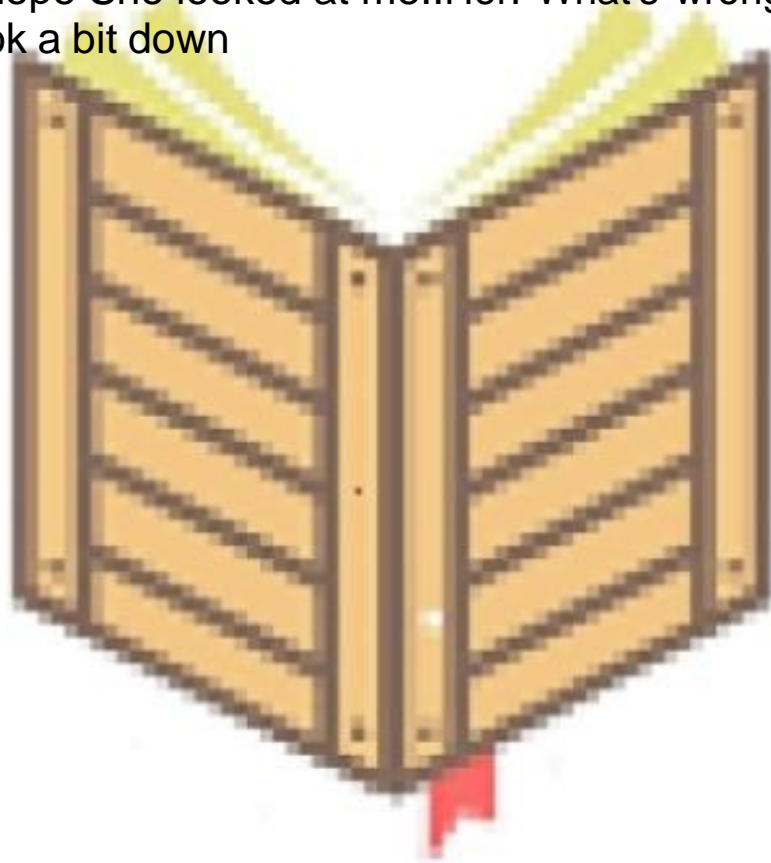
Me: Wanna go grab something to eat?She looked at the time..

Her: unfortunately i have a date with Blake in 20min timeMe: so you guys are now exclusive?

Her: We getting there, i mean we enjoy each other'scompany

Me: That's dope She looked at me..Her: What's wrong?Me: Why?

Her: You look a bit down



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Im tight just been a long day

Her: How are things between you and Mel?

Me: You touching a subject i don't wanna go too right now..But for all Its worth, things are a bit of a Volcano

Her: What happened?Me: long story

Her phone started beeping, she took it out..Her: Its Blake his outside and his early

Me: his not coming up?Her: i don't think so She stood up..

Her: i have to goMe: Enjoy

She hugged me and then went..

I chilled there while listening to her songs..

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #BONOLO

I had just finished doing the Dumplings, i did the Lamb stew first id like to believe that i was done with my chores for today..

I was still feeling a bit somehow but it wasn't as bad as before..

The Reverend's wife made her way into the kitchen...Her:

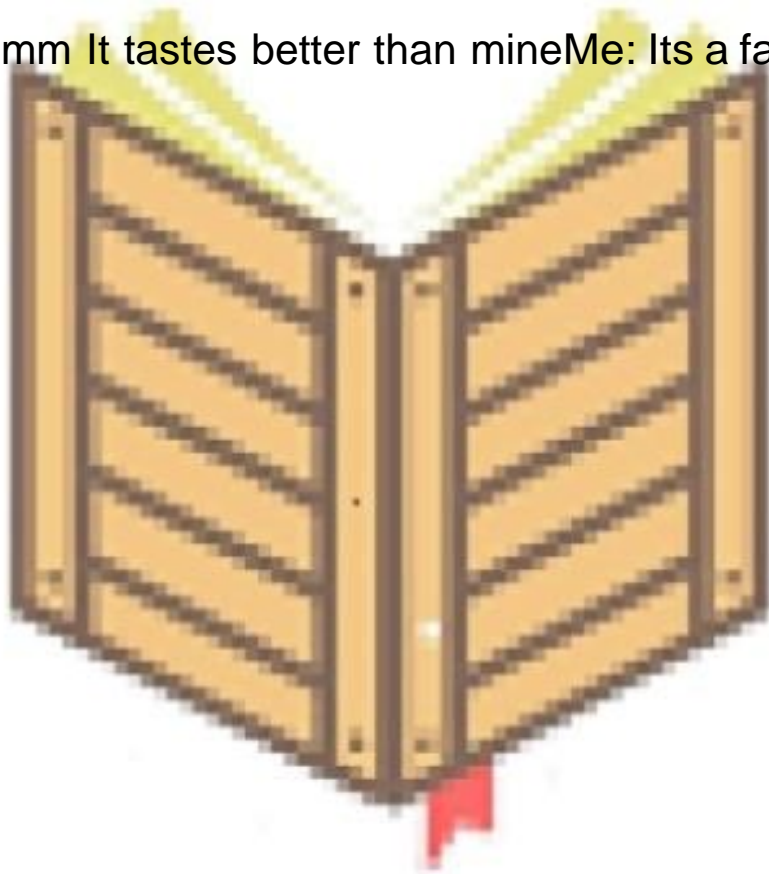
Something smells really nice

Me: That would be the Lamb stew She opened the pot..

Her: That's my favourite, can i taste? Me: Yes Ofcourse

She got a spoon and tasted..

Her: Hmmmmm It tastes better than mine Me: Its a family recipe



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: guess you can't share it?

I shook my head no, she laughed and so did i...

Her: i must admit you have worked your Magic this house has never been this clean before

Me: Thank you

Her: You look young how old are you? Me: Im old enough Mam'

Her: Please call me Ms Jackson I nodded..

Her: Let me go, Zaine won't come back soon he knows he is in trouble

Me: Okay

Her: it was nice meeting you Me: Same here

She took her things and headed to the door, maZondi made her way in as Ms Jackson made herself out..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Its 17:30 lets go

Me: uhm unfortunately i cannot goHer: Maids knock off at 17:30

Me: my boss is not here i can't leaveShe looked at me..

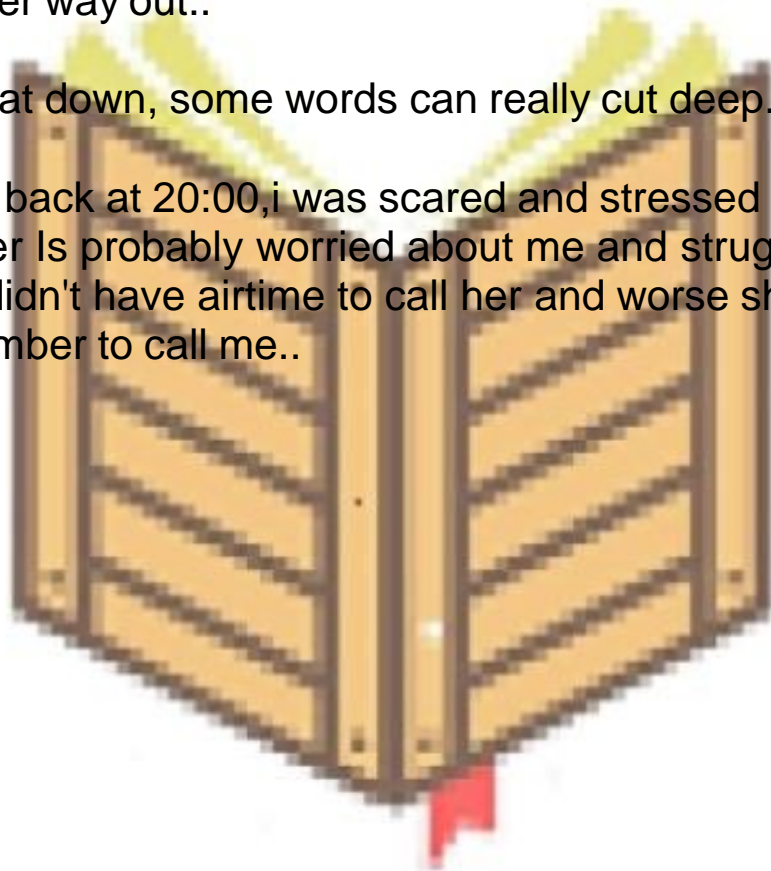
Her: Look at you, yazi you have already told yourself andaccepted that this is your life vele?

I didn't answer her, i was taught never to disrespect anelder under any circumstances..

Her: manje buka you over working yourself ai cha let mego She made her way out..

I went and sat down, some words can really cut deep...

Zaine came back at 20:00,i was scared and stressed thatmy Grandmother Is probably worried about me and struggling with Blessing. I didn't have airtime to call her and worse she doesn't have my number to call me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was pacing up and down when he made his way in, he was shocked to see me.

Him: You still here?

I didn't say anything, he looked a bit drunk or maybe he was just tired couldn't really make out how he was...

Him: i thought i made myself perfectly clear earlier on i still didn't answer him..

Him: Please leave and never come back He walked away..

At that moment i felt anger surfacing, i just cooked for this guy and cleaned for him and this is how he thanks me? He is so arrogant and full of himself..

I followed him..

Me: Can you at least drive me home!!! (shouting) I have a thin soft voice..

He looked at me..

Him: Who gave you Permission to come into my room?



NOVELSGURU.COM

He was about to take his tshirt off but when he saw me he kept it on..

Me: i saw you shirtless earlier so please chill a bit

Him: What the?...do you even know who you talking too? I am Zaine..
Zaine Radebe!

Me: We all have a name and surname believe me there's nothing special about yours!

He chuckled and looked up..

Him: Okay Helena you got me, is this another one of your tricks?

Me: Can you please drive me home my son needs his Mommy right now, my breasts are telling me that

Him: i don't think i had to know that Me: then take me home

Him: Fine i hope that this was your first and last day here Me:

pssshhh you gonna see me tomorrow again at 06:30 I said that while following him, he turned and looked at



NOVELSGURU.COM

me...

Him: What was that? Me: Nothing Mr Radebe

We walked to his car and he drove me home...Him: Where is home?

Me: Home is...

I didn't even know where home was..

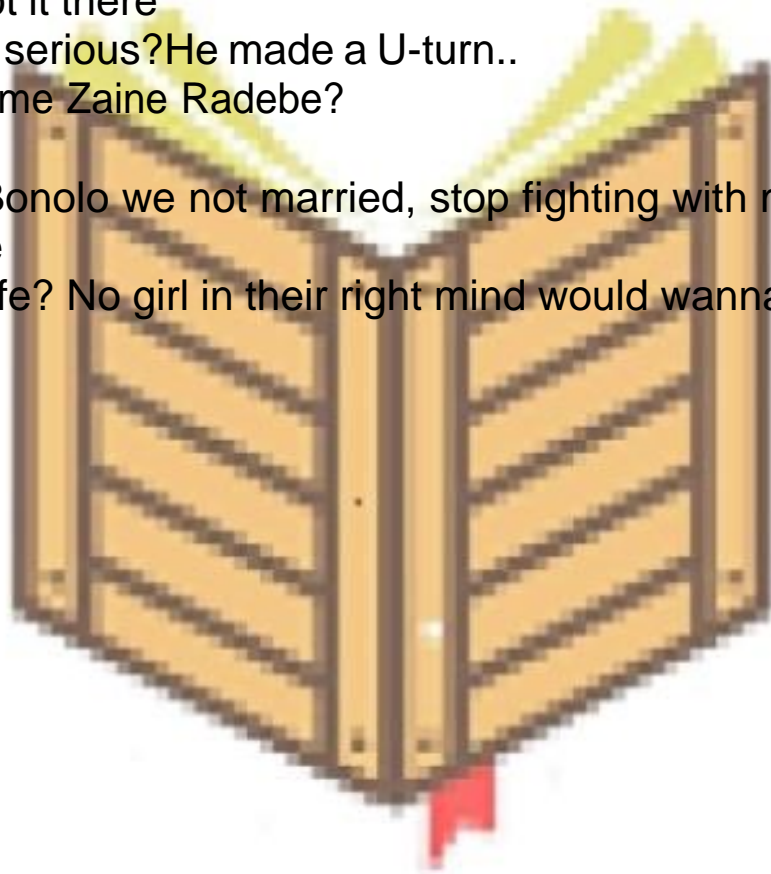
Him: Hold that thought, shit i have to fetch my phone from the studio, forgot it there

Me: Are you serious?He made a U-turn..

Me: Excuse me Zaine Radebe?

Him: Look Bonolo we not married, stop fighting with me as if like you my wife

Me: Your wife? No girl in their right mind would want to marry you!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

He hit the breaks and i leaned forward, with my forehead hitting the Dashboard..

Me: ouch!

Him: first rule always put your seatbelt on didn't they teach you that at school?

I kept quiet..

Him: What's wrong? Got tongue tied? I still kept quiet..

Him: Still can't hear you hear you Bonolo

I looked out of the window, you don't wanna know how much i was boiling inside...

.

To be continued

... PURGATORY

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥20 #BONOLO

We got to the studio and i have never seen such equipment. I have never been to a studio before, i don't even know what's done at a studio but all i saw was a lot of Complicated Equipment..

Me: What's this Equipment for?

He looked at me in a very weird way and very stunned..Him: Ookay I ran my hand on everything..Me: Amazing

Him: Really? Its that Amazing?

Me: well i have never stumbled upon anything like thisHim: You very weird



NOVELSGURU.COM

I let him be..

Him: You a lot calm now

Me: Its no use arguing with you

Him: Why did you do it in the first place?I sat on that couch..

Me: i just miss my Son Mr Radebe

He sat ontop of the table, with his arms folded....

Him: You love your Son don't you?Me: is that a Rethotical question?

Him: not at all, just that you bring him up alot inconversations

Me: You will understand one day when you a ParentHe chuckled..

Him: Yeah

Me: You don't wanna have kids one day?Him: No



NOVELSGURU.COM

He took his phone..Him: Let's go
I stood up and led the way with him following me and putting his hands on my shoulders..

Me: Stop it

Him: You short i can't help it

We got outside and went to his car..Him: so where is home?

Me: uhm.. I don't know

Him: Okay Bonolo quit playing im tired i wanna drive you home then come back and sleep

Me: Really i don't know where home is

Him: What do you mean you don't know where home is?How did you get to my place?

Me: i was with my Neighbour

Him: How do you not know home though?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i am not from here, i just moved in recently

Him: Then what am i doing driving you in the middle of nowhere?
I kept quiet...

Him: Can't you call someone? Me: i don't have airtime
He handed me his phone, it was too complex.. Him: What now?
Me: Im not Technology Minded He shook his head..
Him: call out the number

I did and then after he handed it to me.. Him: put it on your ear
I did soo..

My Grandmother picked up after a while.. Her: Hello



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Grandma

Her: Bonolo where are you? Its late, are you alright?
Me: Yes
Grandmother im okay, im on my way home
Her: Where are you?
Me: on my way home
Her: With who?
Zaine: This is no social call

Me: Grandma Mr Radebe is driving me home, he would like to know where home is?
Her: give him the phone

I did and she gave him the address

We finally arrived at home and my Grandmother was standing at the gate with maZondi, i got bored the sametime..
Me: ill see you Monday
Him: How about never?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I laughed..

Him: im serious, you can't work for me anymore. You underage and stressful look now i have to drive you home

Me: Ohw

Him: Yeah Good night

He leaned over and opened the door for me..Him: Bye
I got out, and went to my Grandmother as Zaine took off...

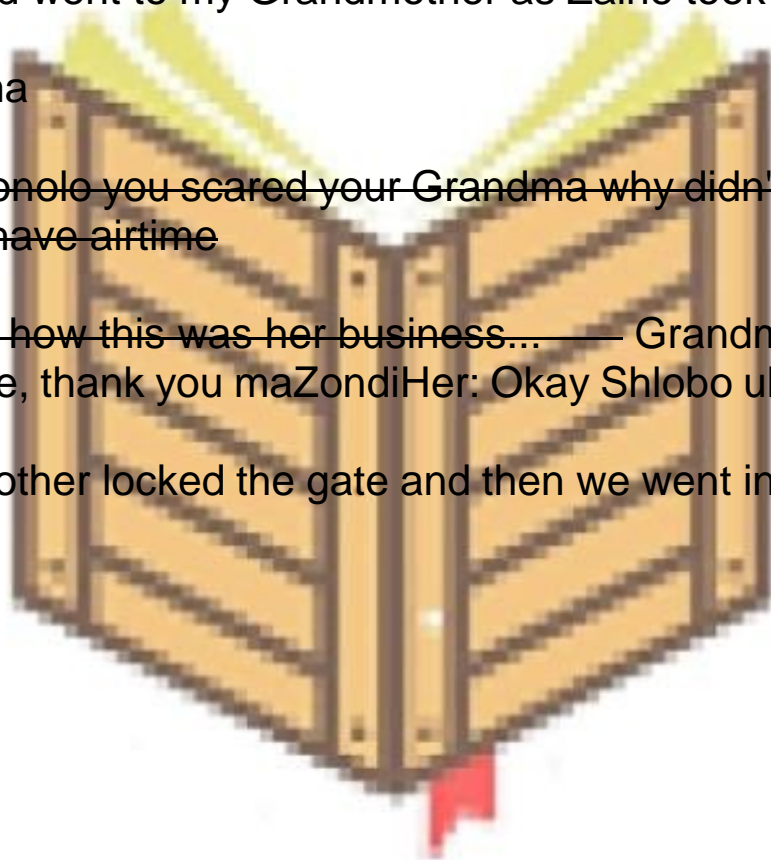
Me: Grandma

~~maZondi: Bonolo you scared your Grandma why didn't you call her?~~

~~Me: i didn't have airtime~~

~~I don't know how this was her business... —~~ Grandma: Its okay
lets go inside, thank you maZondiHer: Okay Shlobo ulale kahle
(sleep well)

My Grandmother locked the gate and then we went inside



NOVELSGURU.COM

the house..

Me: i hope Blessing wasn't too much troubleHer: he was an Angel

Me: Thank you Grandma

Her: You welcome, im only babysitting because youworking

Me: Thank you Anyway

Her: How was your first day?Me: it wasn't bad

Her: Im sure you tired?Me: a bit

Her: go bath ill make you something to eatMe: Thank you

.

. #ZAINÉ



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was woken up by my phone ringing none stop..

At first i thought it was my family going to scream at me for not attending Leighton's wedding, but when i checked the caller ID it was a land line number that i didn't recognise.. I answered.

Me: Hello

A woman was on the other end..

Her: Good morning am i speaking to Mr Zaine Radebe? Me: Who is asking?

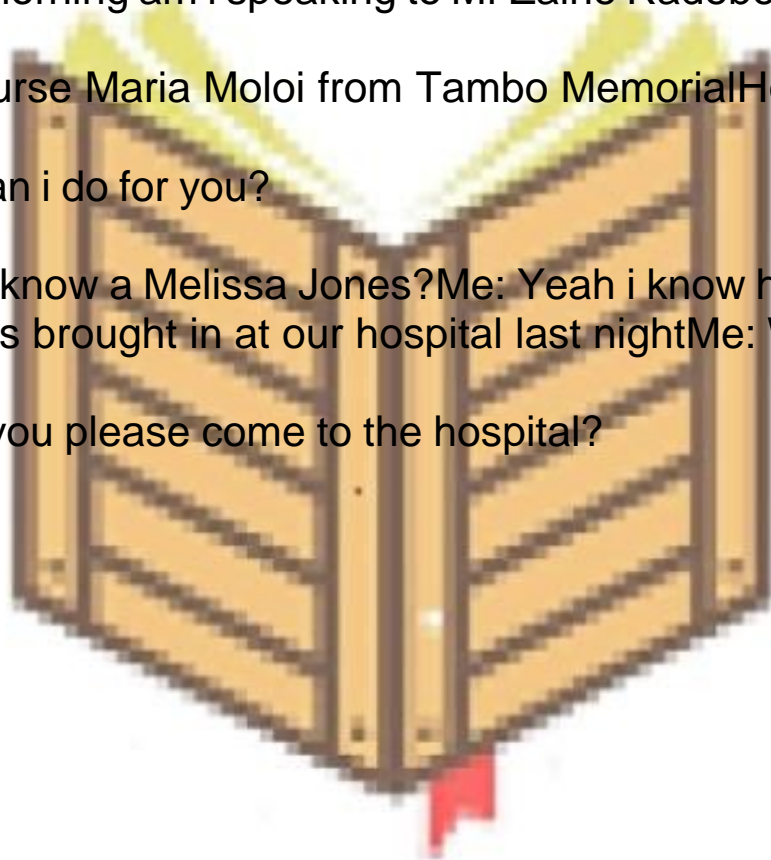
Her: i am Nurse Maria Moloji from Tambo Memorial Hospital in Boksburg

Me: What can i do for you?

Her: do you know a Melissa Jones? Me: Yeah i know her

Her: she was brought in at our hospital last night Me: What happened?

Her: would you please come to the hospital?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: uhm okay Her: Ward 9A Me: ill be thereHer: Thank you
I wonder what happened to Melissa..

. #BONOLO

I woke up very sick the following day. I was nauseated and vomiting, i seriously didn't know what was wrong with me i felt terrible. My Grandmother said Its Fine i shouldn't go to church, she gave me Paracetamol before leaving, and i had Siya minding Blessing for me...

I came out of the bathroom and made my way to them, he was feeding Blessing..

Him: How are you feeling now Mmata? I threw myself on the couch..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Its terrible Mmata

He had told me that "Mmata" means friend..Her: What do you think is wrong?

Me: think its the meal i ate last nightHim: Food poisoning?

Me: i think so

Him: That's good ke i almost thought that you pregnantI laughed..

Me: No maan i cannot possibly be...

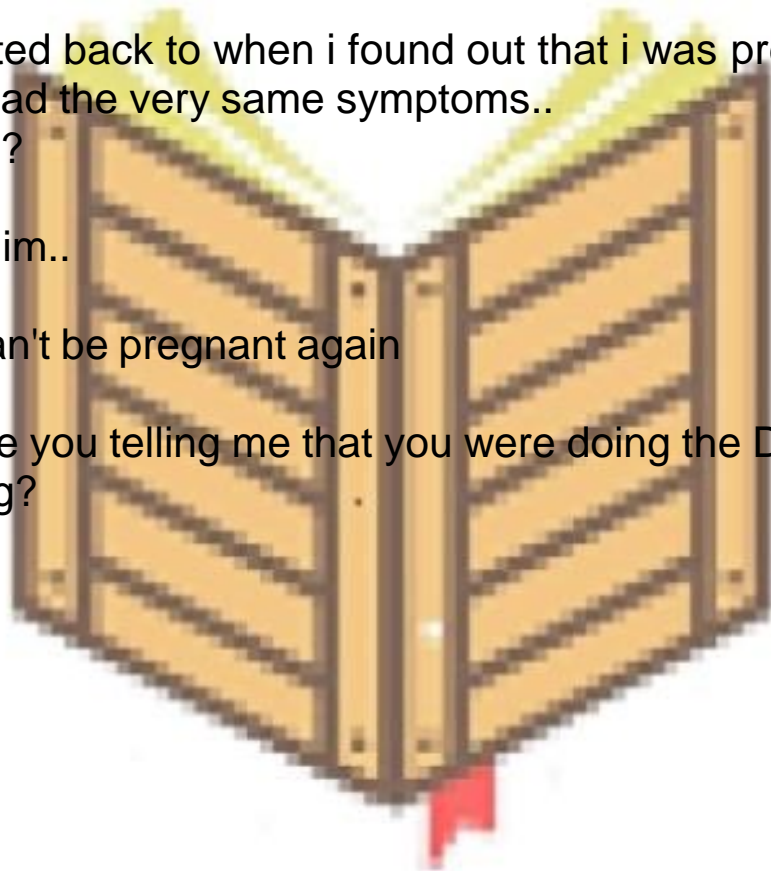
My mind dated back to when i found out that i was pregnant with Blessing, i had the very same symptoms..

Him: Mmata?

I looked at him..

Me: No.. I can't be pregnant again

Him: wait are you telling me that you were doing the Deedafter you had Blessing?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I suddenly felt somehow, i was confused and shocked.This cannot be happening to me..

.

. #ZAINÉ

I got to Tambo Memorial Hospital and went to thereceptionist.

Me: Good morningHer: Good morning

Me: i am here for Melissa Jones she was brought in lastnight ward 9A

Her: Its not visiting hours as yet SirMe: When are visiting hours?

Her: 13:00-14:00...19:00-20:00

Me: Its 11:00am now i cannot possibly wait for 13:00Her: Im sorry sir



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Please call Nurse Maria Moloji for me
Her: She's doing her rounds

Me: She is the one who called me so please
She picked up the phone and called her..

Nurse Moloji showed up after a few minutes..
Her: Mr Radebe?

Me: Yes

Her: Nurse Moloji

She gave me a handshake..
Her: This way please
I followed her as she led the way..

We got to ward 9A, it was around 8 females in the ward
and we made our way to Mel.

Her: is this her?
I looked at her..
Me: Yes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Melissa looked very disturbing, she was badly bruised. Her face was swollen, her eyes it was a disturbing scene to witness..
Her: We have sedated her she's sleeping

She had bandages wrapped around her body..Me: What happened to her?

Nurse: She was stabbed and beaten and also violated sexually, she was found laying in the bushes.

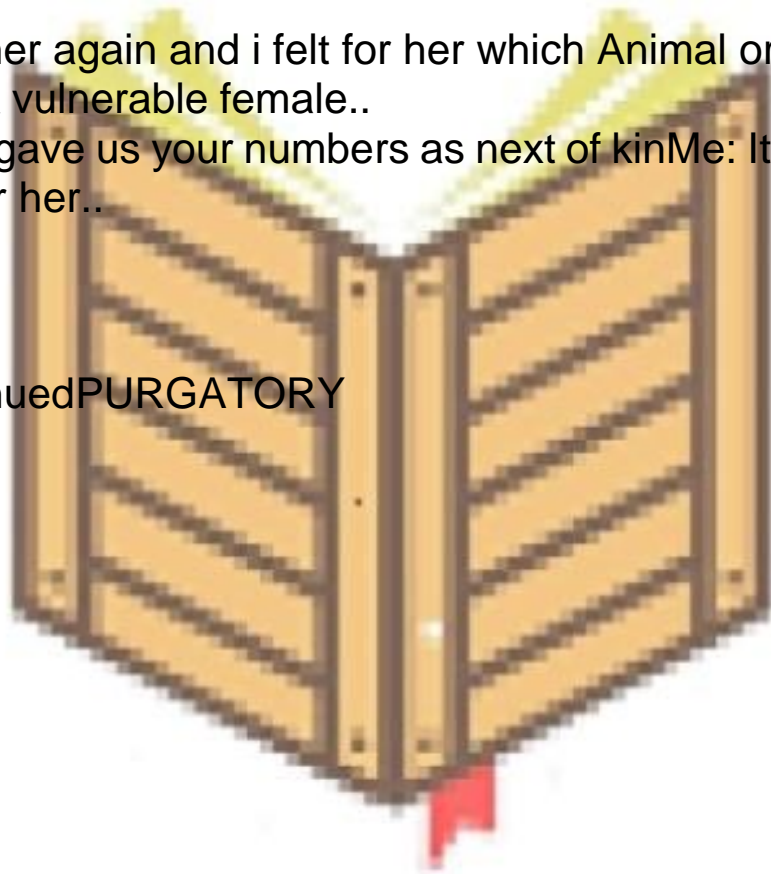
She is lucky to be alive

I looked at her again and i felt for her which Animal or Animals would do such to a vulnerable female..

Nurse: She gave us your numbers as next of kinMe: Its okay I truly felt for her..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY



NOVELSGURU.COM

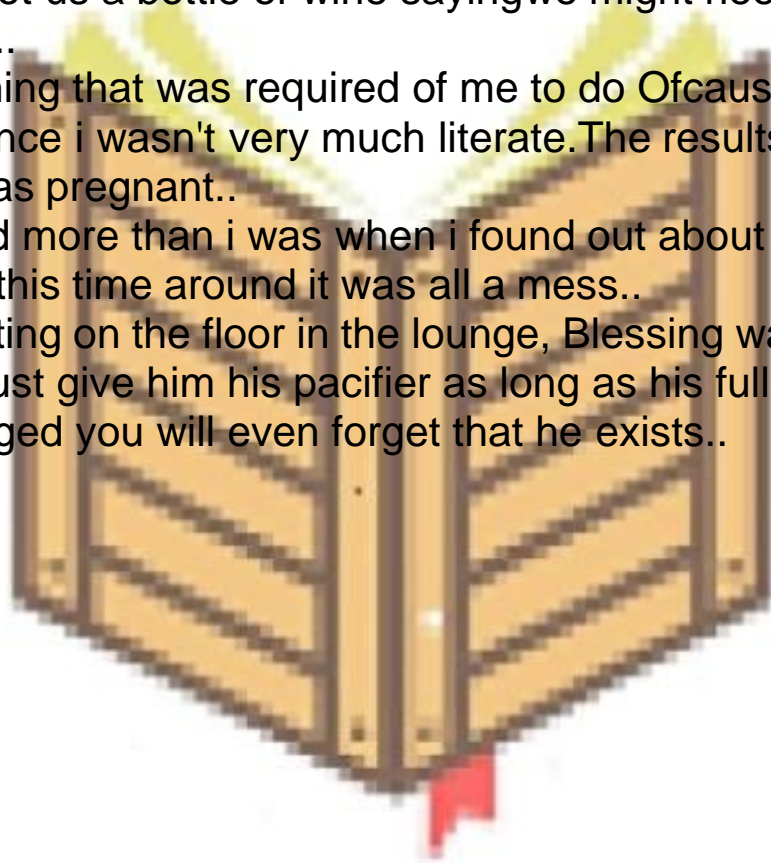
¥21 #BONOLO

Siya suggested that we quickly go to the Mall at clicks to get a pregnancy test, and we did. Not only did we get that but he also went home and got us a bottle of wine saying we might need it to down our sorrows..

I did everything that was required of me to do Ofcause with the help of Mmata since i wasn't very much literate. The results came back positive, i was pregnant..

I was pained more than i was when i found out about my first pregnancy, this time around it was all a mess..

We were sitting on the floor in the lounge, Blessing was on the couch you just give him his pacifier as long as his full and has his nappy changed you will even forget that he exists..



NOVELSGURU.COM

As Siya and i drank, i ended up telling him about my life and what happened to me without leaving any crucial detail behind..

Me: That's basically my life, you know i didn't think that i was ever gonna tell anyone about this until today must be the alcohol I wasn't drunk as yet but i could feel that i was getting there..

Siya couldn't believe that a human being has actually went through what i went through, he was so shocked that there was silence for a sweet 5min..

Him: Mmata i don't even know what to say
Me: You don't have to say anything

Him: Wow
Me: i know
I poured myself another glass..

Him: i know that you are hurting but slow down you breast



NOVELSGURU.COM

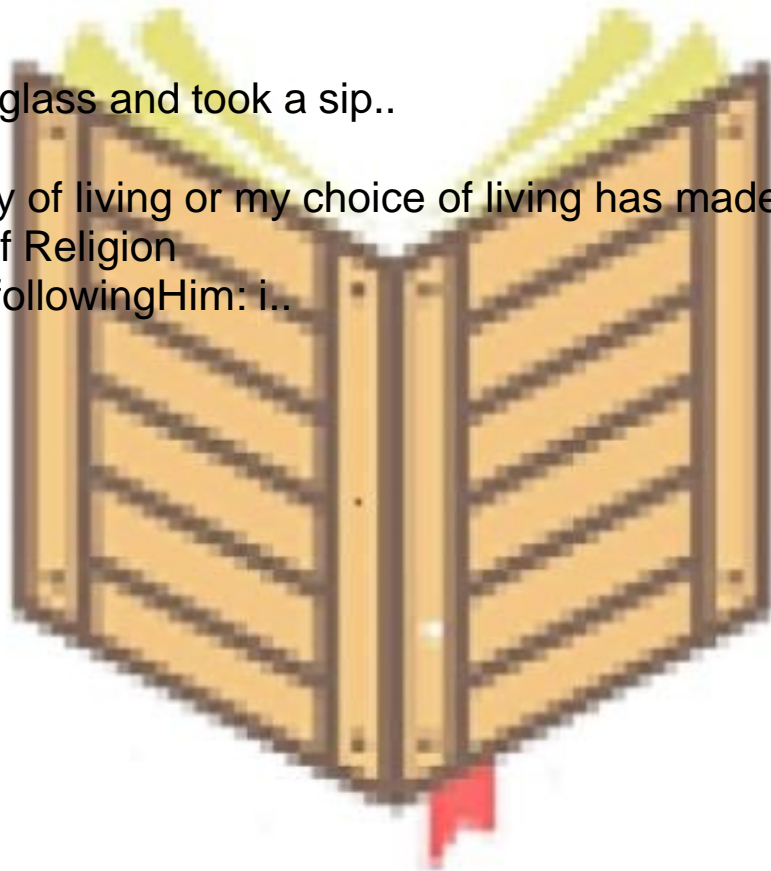
feeding and i don't want your Grandma thinking im a badinfluence
Me: i never knew alcohol tasted this sweet

Him: i even stole this bottle without my mother noticingMe: You
going to hell, stealing is wrong
He giggled..

Him: girl does that even exist?I looked at him..
Me: You a Non believer?Him: Not at all
Me: Why?

He took my glass and took a sip..

Him: my way of living or my choice of living has made me a Demon
in the face of Religion
Me: Im not followingHim: i..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I could see that what he was about to say was something that wasn't sitting well with him..

Him: Im Gay Bonolo, you should read the Bible about where Im gonna spend eternity

Me: Gay?

He chuckled...

Him: i forgot that you slow in a very Adorable way.. Gay meaning i am very much attracted to the same sex

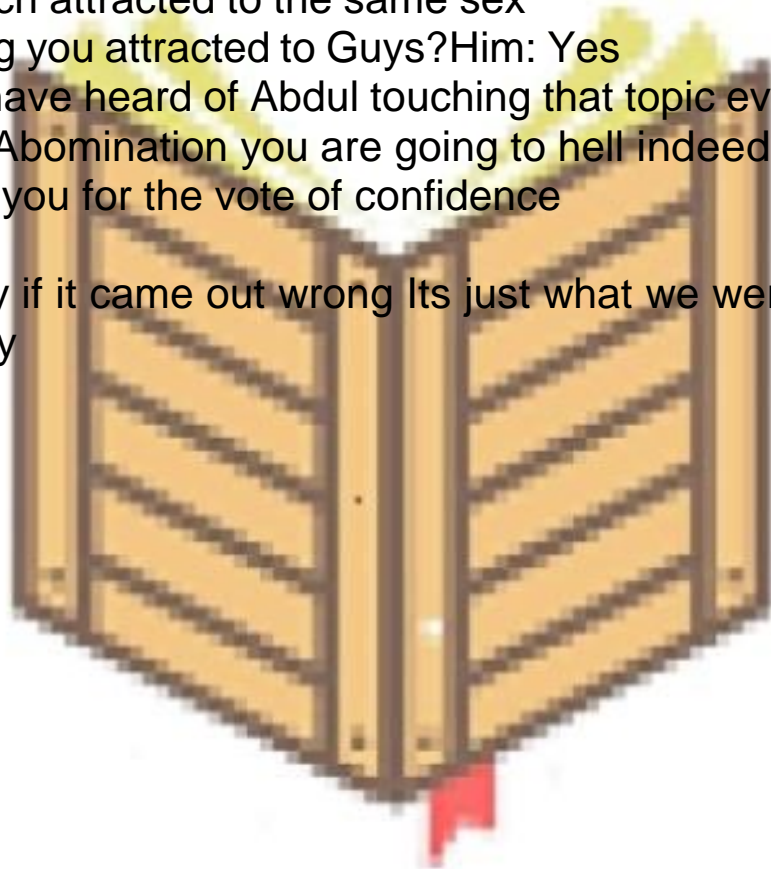
Me: Meaning you attracted to Guys? Him: Yes

Me: Wow i have heard of Abdul touching that topic every now and then, that's Abomination you are going to hell indeed

Him: Thank you for the vote of confidence

Me: Im sorry if it came out wrong Its just what we were taught

Him: Its okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

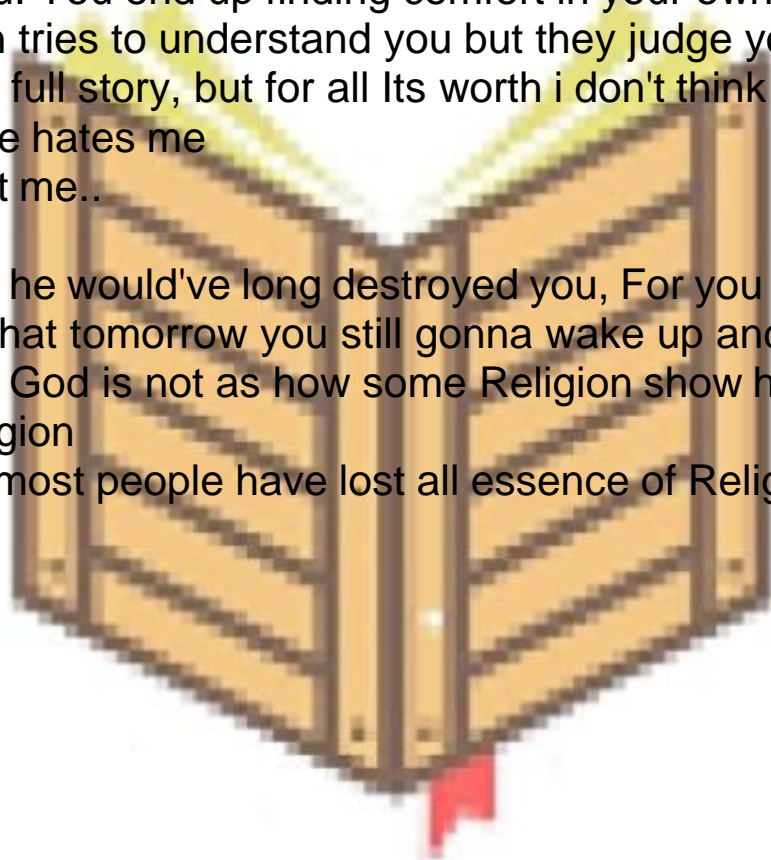
He took another sip..

Him: Its not easy living in a society where you are ridiculed,judged, hated, called a Demon by other people especially those practicing Religion. Its more painful when you have nowhere to run too because the only thing you ever knew and trusted for comfort was the word of God but when Its used against you then you just remain Confused because you also can't run to God especially after you were told how he feels about you

Me: i get you. You end up finding comfort in your own painbecause no one even tries to understand you but they judge you without knowing the full story, but for all Its worth i don't think God hates you i think he hates me
He looked at me..

Me: if he did he would've long destroyed you, For you to be here and for the fact that tomorrow you still gonna wake up and live Its proof enough that God is not as how some Religion show him, especially Abdul's Religion

Him: i think most people have lost all essence of Religion,



NOVELSGURU.COM

Jesus himself shared a table with the same person that was later gonna betray him but some people cannot share a table with you just because to them you are a disgrace that is enough to make you go crazy, Its enough to make you mad
I laughed because he said that last part singing..

Me: but Reverend Radebe is true he sounds true i mean his God is full of love and he is merciful

Him: he doesn't keep a record of wrongs, as long as you repent and be transparent to him he will forgive you

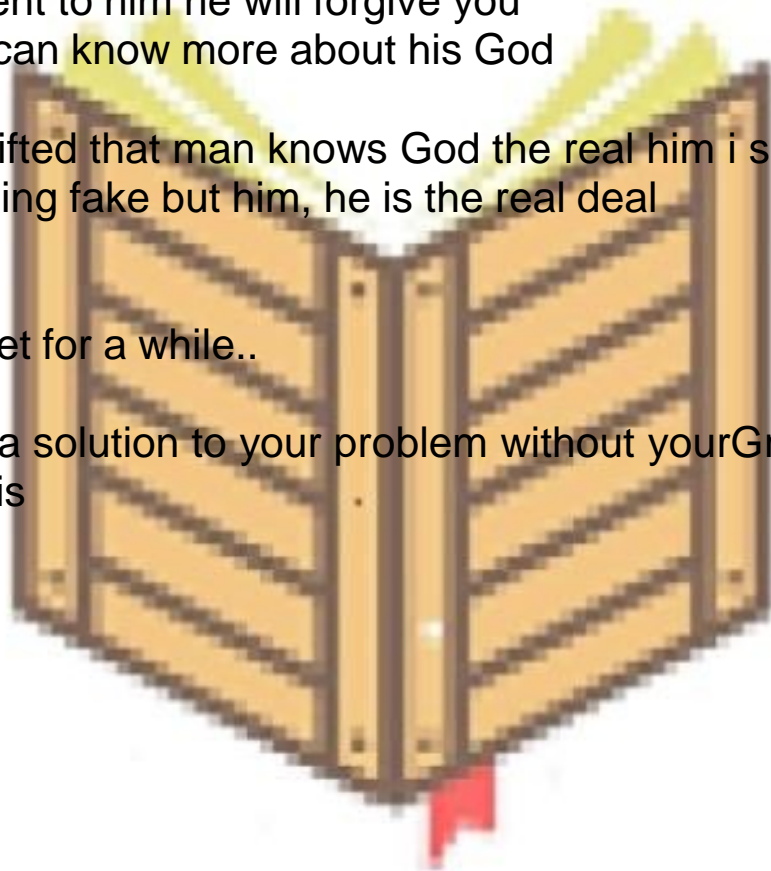
Me: i wish i can know more about his God

Him: he is gifted that man knows God the real him i see this other Prophets being fake but him, he is the real deal

Me: true

We kept quiet for a while..

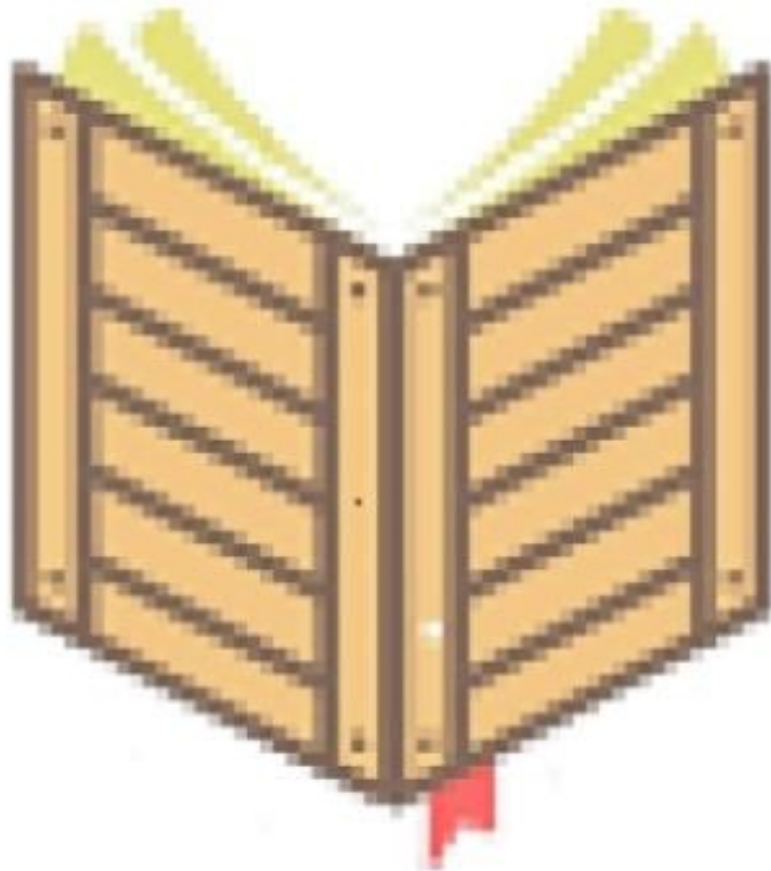
Him: i have a solution to your problem without your Grandma finding out about this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Im listening
Him: abortion
Me: Abortion?
Him: Yeah like terminating the pregnancy while Its stillearly
Me: Can that be done?

Him: R800 and another Blessing goes away
Me: Where is it done?
Him: i can get you the pills
Me: but i don't have R800
Him: ill steal R800 tomorrow from my mom's money getyou the pills
but you have to pay me back month end
Me: Ofcause i will when i get paid
We continued drinking..



NOVELSGURU.COM

#ZAINE

Melissa was still fast asleep, so i decided to go get mesomething to drink in the vending machine..

I passed the Vending machine at the receptionist earlieron, so i made my way to the elevator..

As soon as it closed Helena orbbed in..Me: What if i was with someone?

Her: i made sure that you alone, come on playtime is overwe have to go

He held my hand and orbbed us out..

Before i knew it i was standing in the middle of a roomthat looked like an office..

Me: Where are we?

The door closed and Prophet Badru made his way to hischair..

Me: You got to be kidding meBadru: Zaine we meet again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Fuck me!

He gave me a serious look..

Him: mind your language in my presence
Me: or what?
He chuckled...

Him: Boy i might be a Prophet but my human Nature can still kick your butt as your elder, now sit down!

Arguing with him was useless i went and sat down..
Him: Your time is running out Zaine

Me: Time for what?

Him: i believe you have already met Bonolo?
Me: Ohhh so you the one who sent her?

Him: No God sent her to you! laughed..

Me: What is God? Him: Its not a joke



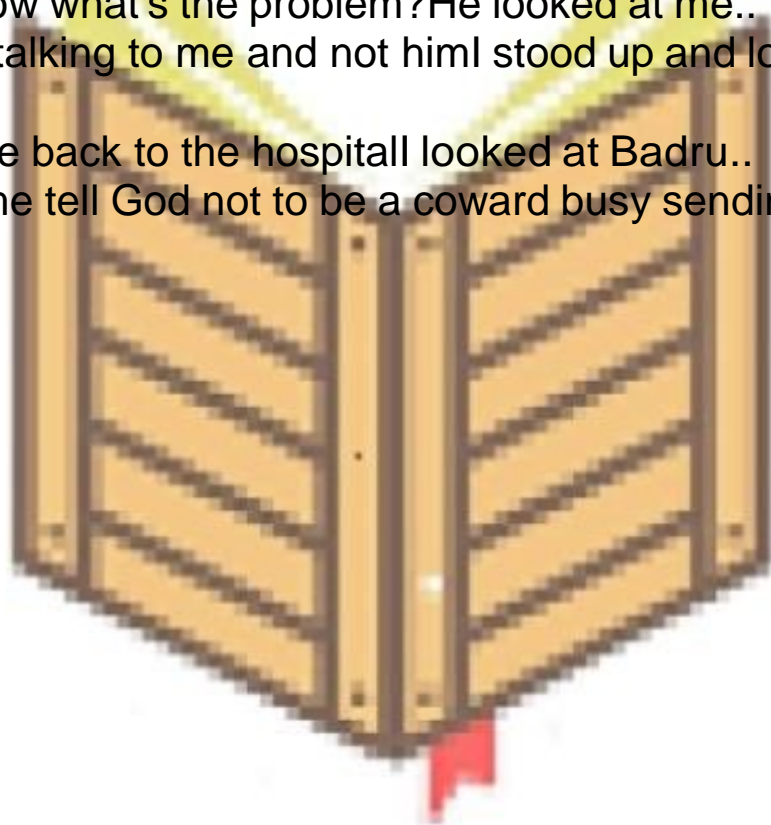
NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i ain't laughingHe looked at me..
Him: Do not challenge God Son

Me: How can i challenge what doesn't exist?Him: You don't Believe
God exists?
Me: No!

I stood up..

Me: Matter of fact can i please Go?Him: Zaine God is..
Me: You know what's the problem?He looked at me..
Me: Its you talking to me and not himI stood up and looked at
Helena..
Me: Take me back to the hospitall looked at Badru..
Me: Next time tell God not to be a coward busy sending



NOVELSGURU.COM

you to talk to me, can he come to me face to face?Him: You don't know what you have done
Helena held my hand and orbbed me back to the hospitalelevator..
I looked at her..

Me: i hope this will be the last time i see you

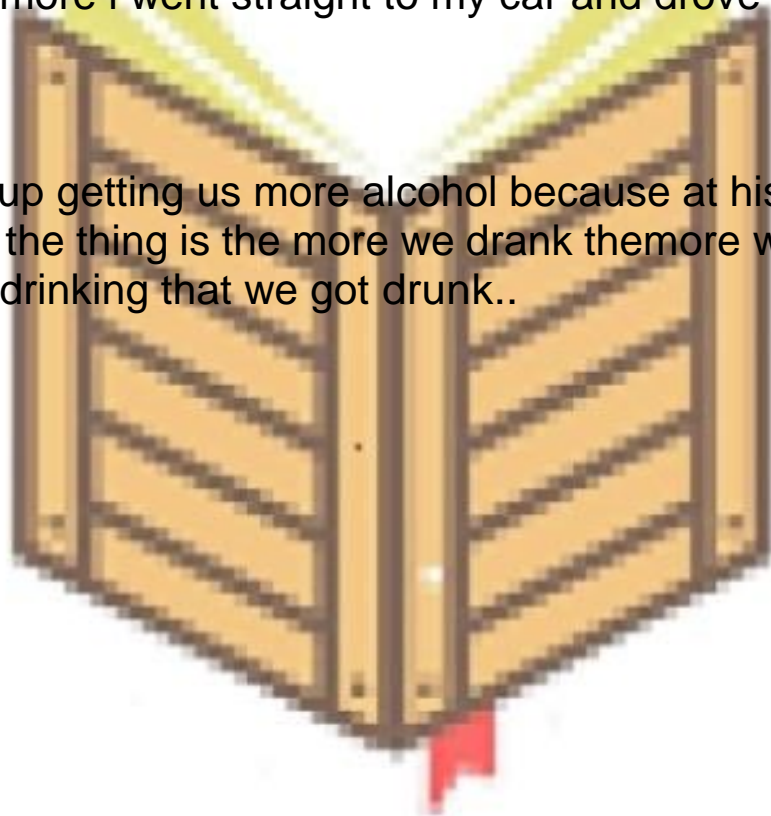
Him: May the only Living God have mercy on your soul!

I walked out of the elevator, i didn't even feel like staying atthe hospital anymore i went straight to my car and drove home..

.

. #BONOLO

Siya ended up getting us more alcohol because at his house they sell alcohol, the thing is the more we drank themore we wanted of it. We kept on drinking that we got drunk..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I started vomiting and Siya was laughing at me but Nevertheless i was feeling very good. I never knew that alcohol can relax you like this..

We were now playing music loud he had brought his speakers. I didn't understand his songs but they were very nice to dance too...

Him: "lengoma ing'ceda umoya, awuu Ngicela umoya..Awu mina Ngicela umoya"

I was dancing along too, we were having soo much fun until the door flung open and my Grandmother walked in..

Even in my drunk state i could clearly see that she was very furious.. maZondi went and picked up Blessing who was crying..My Grandmother came charging to me..

Her: Ya bakuxoshele zona lezi! (they kicked you out because of this) She slapped me repeatedly and then she threw me against the wall, i didn't know that she was this strong..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When i was trying to get up she came to me and started punching me all over and slapping me..

I was screaming and crying but that didn't alarm her..

Siya tried stopping my Grandmother but my grandmother turned and attacked him..

Grandma: utshwala kwami (alcohol in my house) maZondi: Zishaye Shlobo lezidakwa (beat those drunks) Siya: Siyaxolisa nje (we are very sorry)

Grandma: Out!! (screaming) She started pushing us out..

Reality kicked in my Grandmother was kicking me out..

She stood at the gate while we stood on the side of the road and she was throwing rocks at us while still yelling..

Her: Nidakwa emzini wami nge Sonto pho? Niwu Belzeebub uqobo lwakhe ma Devil worshiper ndini!! (you getting drunk at my house on a Sunday, you are the Demon Belzeebub himself you devil worshipers)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Not only was the situation painful but it was embarrassing because a lot of people were staring at us, some guys who were washing cars at the taxi rank tried to talk for us... Guy 1: baxolele gogo (forgive them Grandma)
Her: abahambe lama Rubbish!! This was not happening for real..

. #ZAINÉ

I got home and i was not in the mood for anything, all i wanted to do was to just unwind..

I locked the door and made my way to the fridge to get me a beer... I opened the fridge then as i grabbed the flying fish i heard a voice calling my name..

The voice sounded a bit deep and as if like it was in a storm, i heard the sound of violent waves together with



NOVELSGURU.COM

thunder. It was very weird and scary i felt myself beingoverwhelmed by fear a little....

Voice: "I am The Lord. I appeared to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob as Almighty God"

I slowly turned around to see the person talking to me, but unfortunately my vision got blurry i couldn't see anything then after that it was darkness all i could see was only darkness. I blinked a few times, but it was still pitch black..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥22 #BONOLO

Have you ever been hurt to a point where everything just



NOVELSGURU.COM

doesn't make sense to you anymore? No matter how hard you think and try to make sense of everything but what you get is more confusion?

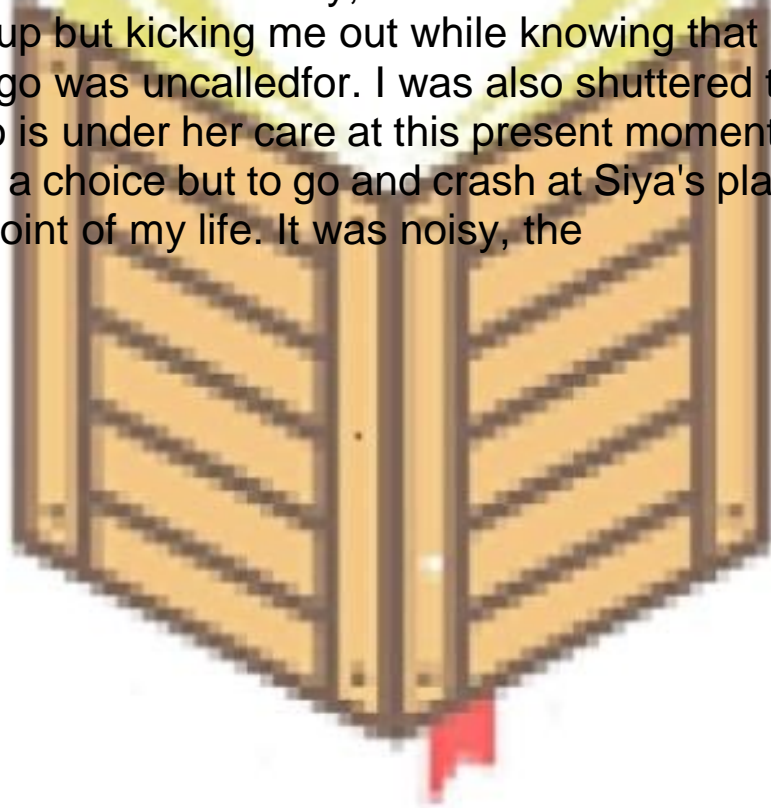
I didn't know what direction my life was taking, i didn't know my purpose in life anymore, my life felt like a puff of smoke just being blown to the air and gone in a few seconds..

I had moved away from a place that was a source of my daily pain, and it seems as if like my Grandmother's place was no different..

I am not saying that what i did was right and i am not going to justify it i will own up to my mistake but also i didn't expect my

Grandmother to react that way, i would have taken her yelling and beating me up but kicking me out while knowing that i have nowhere to go was uncalled for. I was also shattered that i won't see my Son who is under her care at this present moment...

I didn't have a choice but to go and crash at Siya's place which was the lowest point of my life. It was noisy, the



NOVELSGURU.COM

door kept on opening and shutting Constantly making it impossible for me to fall asleep. I couldn't sleep because of the noise, and at the same time i was scared for my lifewhat if one of those drunks bust into our bedroom rape me? I didn't even take off my jeans i slept while still wearing them..

It was hard sleeping with all that noise, i couldn't sleep at all with everything that's been happening i was missing Blessing too. I hope my Grandmother will not mistreat himbecause of my mistake of drinking..

When i laid on that bed i got enough time to reflect back on my past, i got enough time to go back and experiencemy pain one last time...

My mind was filled with every bad and painful memory, i felt myself suffocating in my own pain but there was nothing i could do but to cry myself to sleep. I am not a bad person, i have never hurt anyone but why do bad things happen to me? Will i ever get through this? But thenwho said everyone who has lived a painful life must gain



NOVELSGURU.COM

happiness and a good life at the end? Yes maybe in movies and in the world of fantasy it is destined that way, but definitely not in real life..

I stopped wishing for good to happen, i stopped hoping for a better tomorrow right now at this present moment, I am only gonna live because i have to live and because my life hasn't been taken away from me..

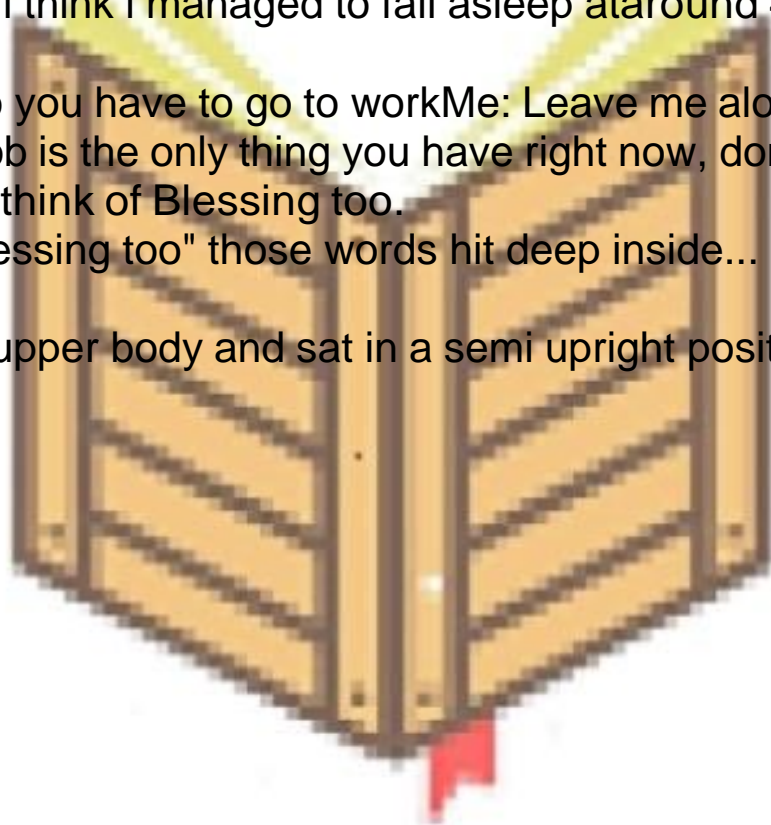
I was woken up by Siya the following morning, i didn't wanna wake up because i think i managed to fall asleep at around 4am when it was quiet..

Him: Bonolo you have to go to work Me: Leave me alone!

Him: Your job is the only thing you have right now, don't ruin things for yourself think of Blessing too.

"Think of Blessing too" those words hit deep inside...

I raised my upper body and sat in a semi upright position, i felt like hell..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why do i feel like this?Him: Hangover
Me: Alcohol?He nodded..
Me: Well never will i drink again

Him: We all said that, come on get ready

I got out of bed and stumbled my way around..Him: ill borrow you my clothes

Unlike my Grandmother's house Siya's house didn't have abathroom so we had to boil water and i had to use a basinwhich was new to me..

After bathing i used his lotion then wore his jeans, Tanktop and his shoes that were a bit big on my small feet...

Him: Just drink a lot of water when you get to workMe: Okay
He gave me R100



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: for transport

What i have noticed is that Siya has alot of money but hedoesn't work he is a student..

We both went out and walked to the stop to get ourtransport there..

Him: so i will come back with the pills todayMe: Thank you

Him: They not for free phela

Me: i know and i will pay you when i get paidHim: Okay

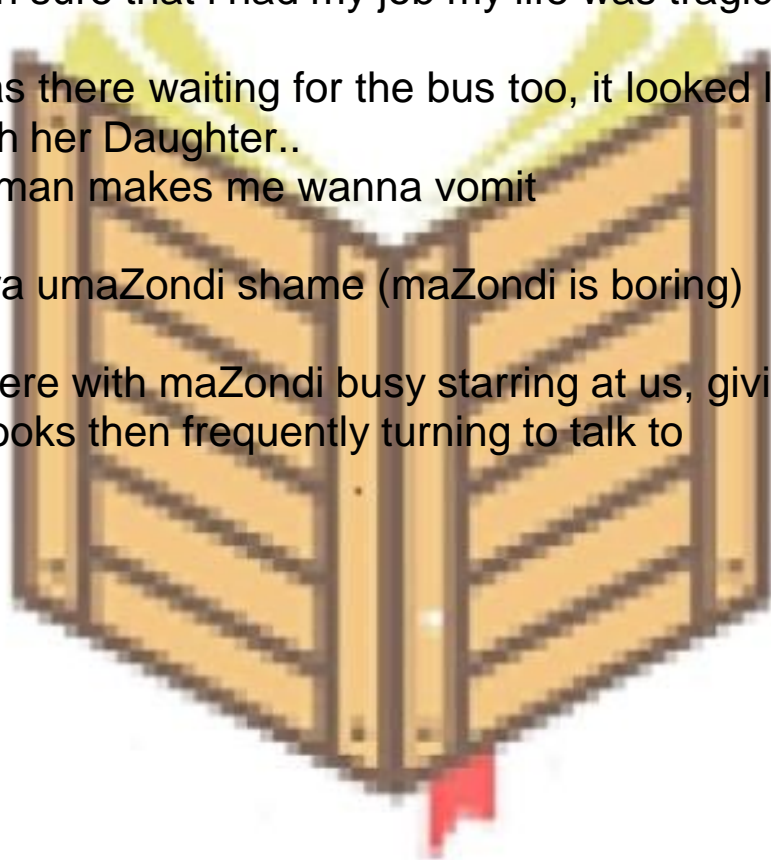
I wasn't even sure that i had my job my life was tragic..

maZondi was there waiting for the bus too, it looked likeshe was standing with her Daughter..

Me: that woman makes me wanna vomit

Him: yabhora umaZondi shame (maZondi is boring)

We stood there with maZondi busy starring at us, giving usshady and Weird looks then frequently turning to talk to



NOVELSGURU.COM

her Daughter it wasn't rocket Science for us to notice thathe was gossiping about us..

The bus arrived and we all went in, Thank Goodness Siyaclimbed in with me..

Me: Your school is near my work place?

Him: no the bus will make a last stop at jhb in town that'swhere my school is

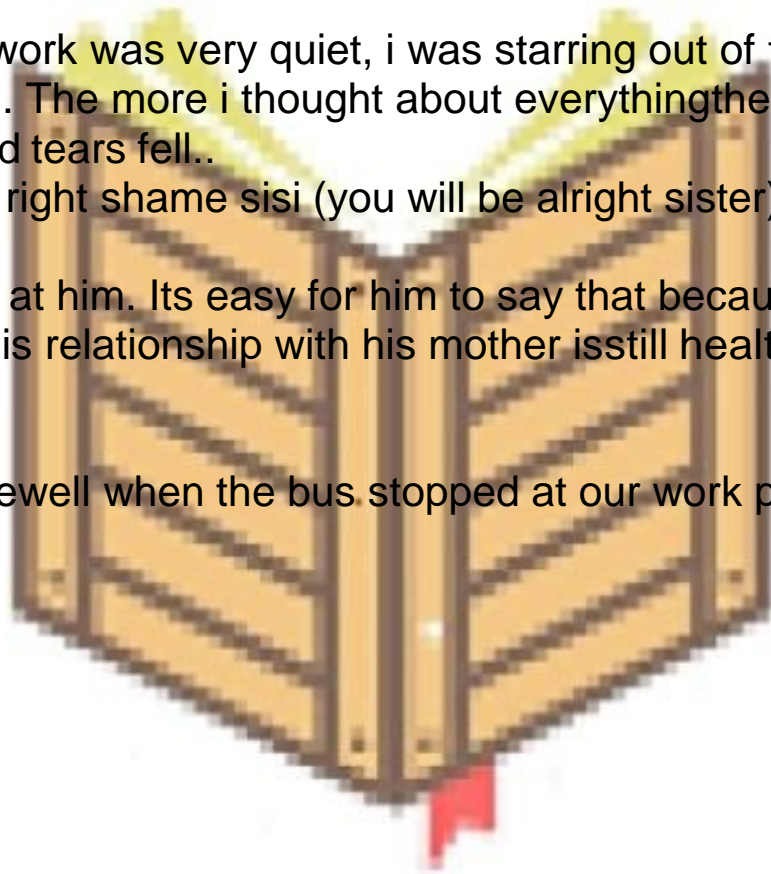
Me: Okay

The ride to work was very quiet, i was starring out of the window and thinking. The more i thought about everythingthe heavier my heart got and tears fell..

Siya: uzoba right shame sisi (you will be alright sister)

I just smiled at him. Its easy for him to say that becausehe is not in my shoes, his relationship with his mother isstill healthy..

I bid him farewell when the bus stopped at our work place.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I told him that i will see him later and he promised to bring along the pills..

The security guards at the gate didn't give me a hard time today, they let me in and i made my way to Zaine's place..

I am thankful that my phone was in my pocket when my Grandmother kicked me out, i will charge it when i get to the house because the battery was flat and i am sure Simon tried calling..

I got to Zaine's house and took a deep breath before knocking, he is another one who will give me a hard time...

I started knocking and he didn't respond. I tried opening but it was locked, so he was serious about not wanting me to work for him anymore....

I knocked until my fingers started hurting, there was nothing i could do so i decided to leave. As i turned to walk away i heard him talking from inside..

Him: is there someone knocking? I knocked again...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes Its me Bonolo

Him: Keep on Knocking don't stop

I kept on Knocking and Knocking i was getting tired..Me: Are you gonna open or not?

After a great deal of Knocking, the key finally turned and the door opened..

He stretched out his hands to me..Him: Bonolo is that you?

Me: Yes Its me

I went closer and he ran his hands on me..

Him: Boy am i glad to see you, only if i can see you i made my way in and closed the door..

Something was off with Zaine, he was shaking, his hands felt icy cold and things were just scattered around..

Me: is everything okay?

He was looking up most of the time, and when he talked to



NOVELSGURU.COM

me he couldn't make eye contact...Him: Bonolo im blind

Me: You what?Him: Im blind

I ran my hand across his face and his eyes went following..Me: Oh my goodness you are blind, what happened?

Him: i don't know honestlyl looked around..

Me: did you even sleep?

Him: i couldn't find my way to my bedroom so i stayed upall night sitting on the floor

I held his hand..Me: Come on

Him: Where are we going?

Me: Taking you to bed, you need to rest but i will make youa chilli soup first



NOVELSGURU.COM

We started walking to his bedroom..

Me: You lucky that you didn't get hypothermia, you could've frozen to death

Him: i do feel cold and i have a sore throat Me: and you shaking

Him: That's from fear and not the cold We got to his bedroom..

Me: there you go

Him: Are we in the bedroom? Me: Yes

Him: my bed? Me: Yes sit down I helped him sit..

Me: Let me go and make you that soup

he was still holding on to my hand and he pulled me before i could even take one step to the door, making me



NOVELSGURU.COM

to fall on him as he laid back....

Me: Zaine

Him: promise that you won't leave Me alone?Me: What?

Him: Bonolo im scared, i don't know what's happening withme
From how he was shaking, i knew that he wasn't fakingthis..

Me: Im not gonna leave youHim: You promise?

Me: i promise Him: Thank you

Me: Just sit here and ill..

Him: No stay with me for a whileMe: Okay ill just lie next to you
I took off my shoes and i helped him take off his shoes,



NOVELSGURU.COM

then i made us get under the covers..

He was sleeping behind me with his arms wrapped aroundme..

Him: Can you take off your shirt?

Me: What? Mr Radebe that doesn't sound right
Him: Body heat
Bonolo

Me: i am very uncomfortable with that

Him: We not gonna have sex im blind and too Traumatisedfor that

Me: either we sleep with our clothes on or im out
Him: fine then turn
around

I turned around and faced him..

He still wrapped his arms around me pulling me closer tohim..

Him: Thank you again
Me: You welcome



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't immediately fall asleep i kept on thinking alot for a while until i eventually fell asleep in his arms with my head on his chest..

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

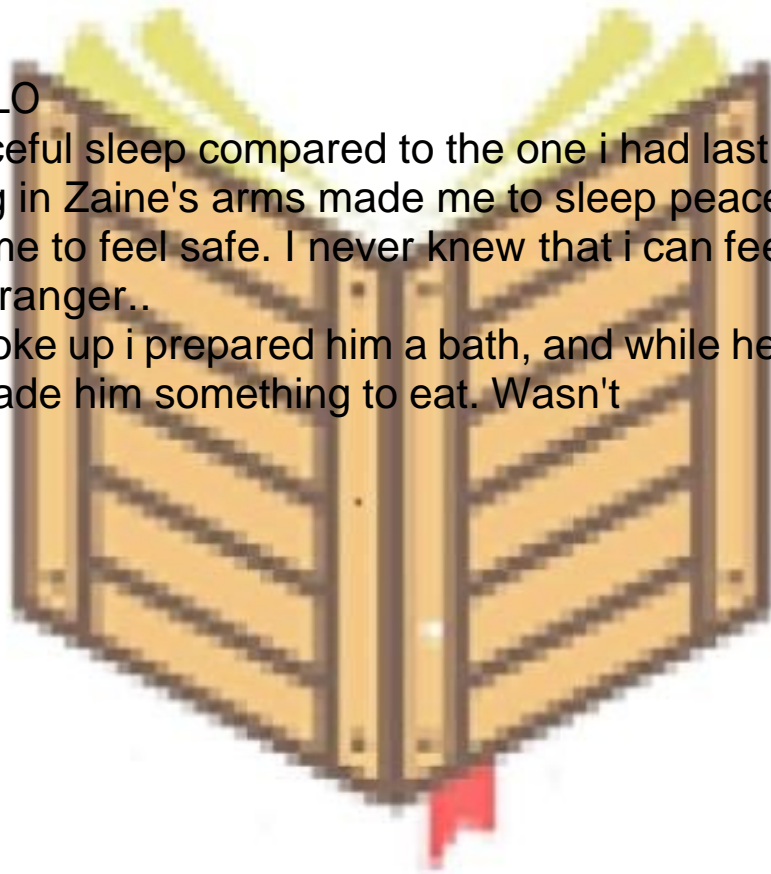
.

.

¥23 #BONOLO

I had a peaceful sleep compared to the one i had last night at Siya's place. Being in Zaine's arms made me to sleep peacefully and it also made me to feel safe. I never knew that i can feel safe in the arms of a stranger..

When we woke up i prepared him a bath, and while he was bathing i went and made him something to eat. Wasn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

something Complicated just fried chops, did some Mash potatoes and gravy and Corn, when i had done preparing the meal i went to check up on him i knocked first before going in..

Him: Come in

I walked in and he only had a towel wrapped around his lower body, was a bit awkward..

Me: You didn't have any difficulties with bathing? He looked my way but didn't look at me.

Him: not really

Me: Okay just wanted to tell you that lunch is ready Him: lunch? We slept for that long?

Me: i think so

I am not familiar with the time but i can determine if its in the morning, afternoon, or at night and what time it is just by looking outside at the change of weather..

Him: Bonolo?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes?

Him: will your grandmother allow for you to stay here for a couple of days until i am familiar with everything and i can get my way around?

Me: ill call her

Him: You can use the house phone Me: Thank you

I went and used the house phone to call my grandmother, at least it wasn't as complicated as a cellphone. I got a bit scared when i picked up the phone i mean things aren't a bed of roses between me and my grandmother but since i am in her care i have to answer to her and tell her about my whereabouts always..

I got her number from my cellphone then called her and she picked up..

Her: Hello?

Me: H.. Hi.. Grandma



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kept quiet..

Me: Grandma? Its me Bonolo Her: i know what do you want?

Me: i wanted to tell you that ill be staying in with my bosshe had a bit of an accident, he is blind so i am taking careof him until he can find his way around

Her: How do i know that you telling the truth?

Me: You can confirm with him, i can give him the phone

Her: You might be lying about everything, Bonolo after what happened i don't trust you anymore not even a little. You are a drunk, you sleep in Taverns now you sleeping around only God knows where! You are an embarrassmentand a curse!
I didn't say anything, i had nothing to say..

Her: Just get your act together, so you can get your child and move out of my house. You know i was staying alonepeacefully i don't know where you rocked up from, Yey uSathane uyangilinga bo! (the devil is testing me)



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't like what she was saying to me at all, it was cutting deep like a razor through my heart i was bleeding inside..

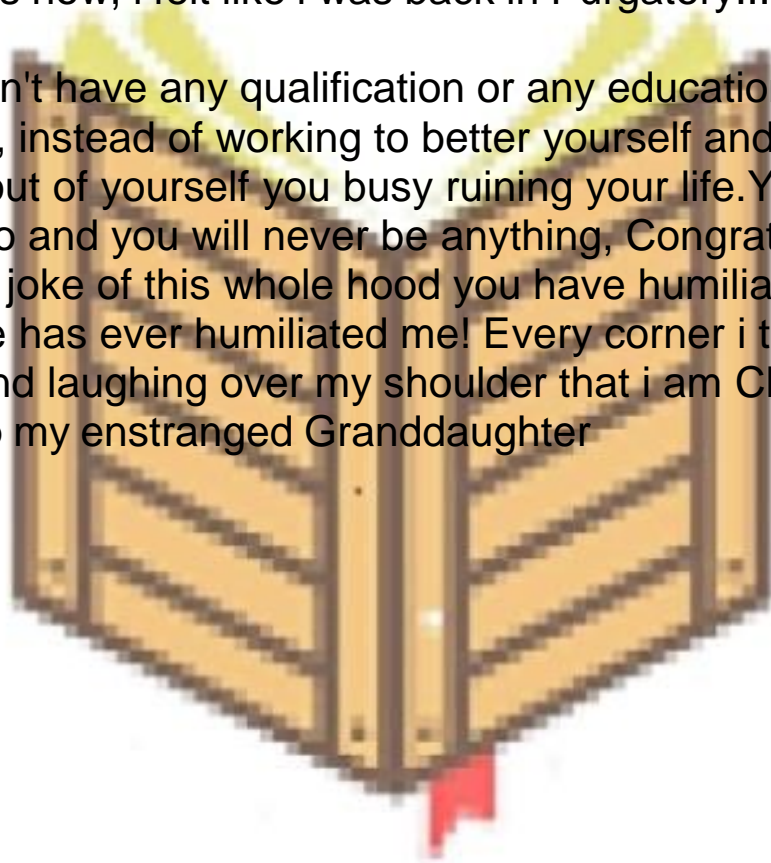
Her: Im sure bakuxoshele zona lezi lapho uvela khona (im sure that's why they kicked you out wherever you came from)

She exhaled..

Her: lapho ufeba khona please ufebe kahle ungaleti isisula kwami (while you busy bitching around make sure that you don't come back here pregnant)

I was in tears now, i felt like i was back in Purgatory...

Her: You don't have any qualification or any educational background, instead of working to better yourself and make something out of yourself you busy ruining your life. You are nothing in life Bonolo and you will never be anything, Congratulations you are now the joke of this whole hood you have humiliated me more than anyone has ever humiliated me! Every corner i turn people are gossiping and laughing over my shoulder that i am Christian but i cannot keep my estranged Granddaughter



NOVELSGURU.COM

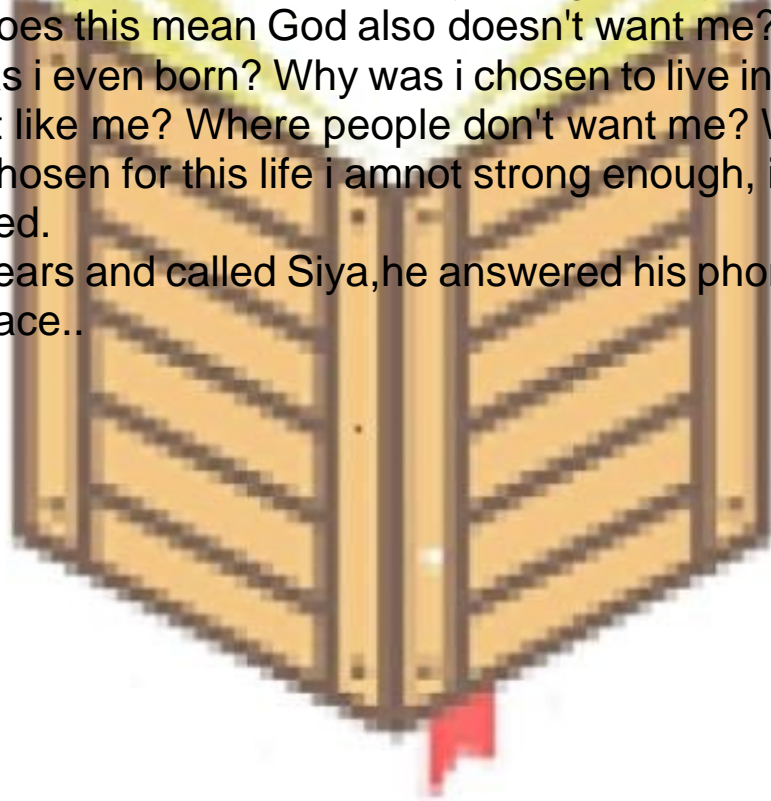
in order! I just feel sorry for your child right now, im sure you don't even know who his father is. Please don't go to my church anymore i don't want you embarrassing me further especially when i am such a respected woman there, now i see why nobody wants you! Not even God himself wants you!.

I couldn't take it anymore i put the phone down and broke down, her words kept on playing in my mind
"nobody wants you, not even God".

Now i see why things have turned out like this in my life, people hurt me because they don't want me. Why though? Why wouldn't anyone want me? Does this mean God also doesn't want me?

Me: Why was i even born? Why was i chosen to live in a world where people don't like me? Where people don't want me? Why God? Why was i chosen for this life i am not strong enough, i am breaking, i am shattered.

I wiped my tears and called Siya, he answered his phone and he was in a noisy place..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Mmata wami!!!!

And he sounded a bit drunk...

Him: Mmata if you calling about that thing neh? I haven't forgotten

Me: Ohw

Him: uRight Mmata?

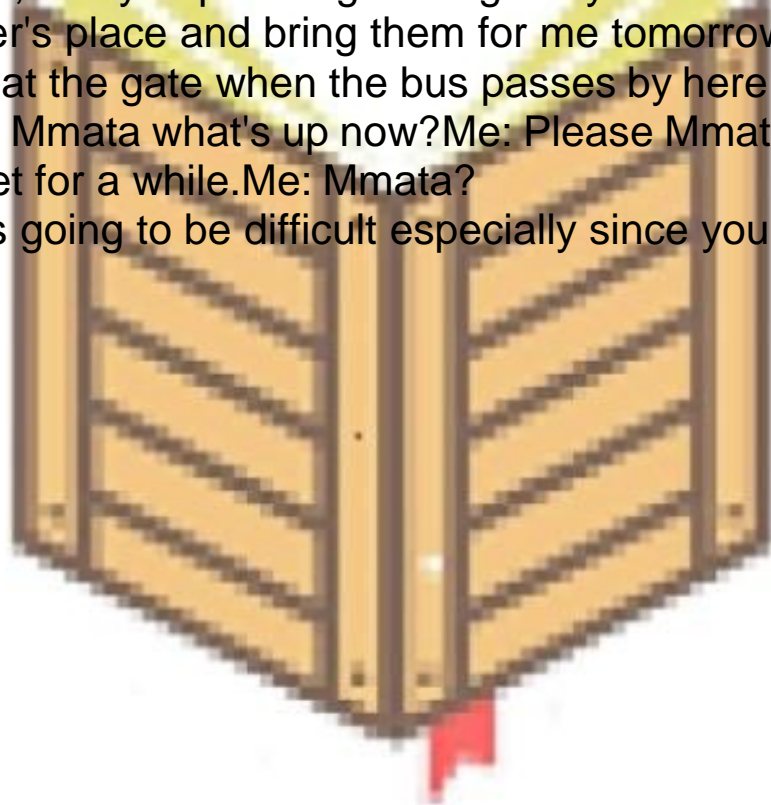
Me: Can i ask you for a huge favour? Him: Okay Mmata?

Me: Can you, can you please go and get my clothes from my Grandmother's place and bring them for me tomorrow morning, i will wait for you at the gate when the bus passes by here

Him: haaaa! Mmata what's up now? Me: Please Mmata

He kept quiet for a while. Me: Mmata?

Him: eish Its going to be difficult especially since your



NOVELSGURU.COM

Grandma, you know moss

Me: Please Mmata, plus i need those pills
Him: Okay i am not promising but i will try
Me: Thank you

I hung up and called the last person being Simon..
Him: Hello
Hearing his voice soothed my bleeding heart and my emotional wounds..

Him: Hello?

I closed my eyes with tears falling, Simon is my last hope..
Me: Its me

Him: hey sweetheart how are you?
Me: Not good Simon (sniffing)

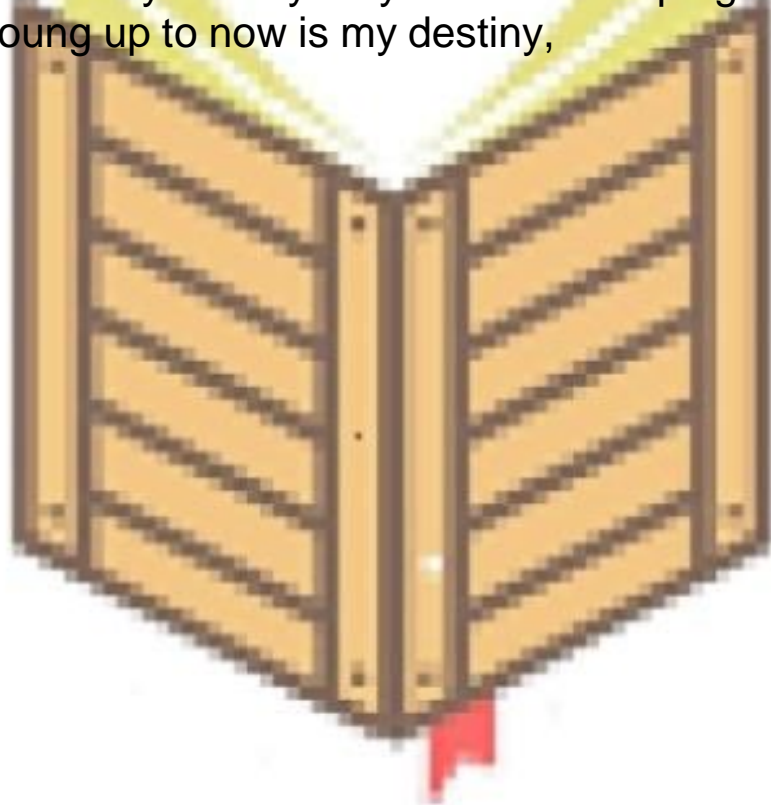
Him: You crying what's wrong?

Me: my Grandmother kicked me out
Him: she what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i am done Simon Him: What happened?Me: Its a long story
Him: Where are you staying and are you with Blessing? Me: i am at
a friend's place but i don't know for how longHim: this is not right
Me: i want to come back Simon, i need to come back Him: No ways
i am not going to let you come back here!
Me: i have nowhere else to go, my Grandmother told methat nobody
wants me, not even God and she's right because she is a woman of
God she goes to church shePrays
Simon: that is not true, i love you and i want you. You notcoming
back here especially not after what Abdul has done to you
Me: Maybe that's my destiny maybe Abdul sleeping withme since
from i was young up to now is my destiny,



NOVELSGURU.COM

maybe having two kids by him and being his wife despite how old he is, is my destiny!

Him: wait what? 2 kids? Me: i am pregnant again Him: No ways!

Me: but i won't be for long!

Him: Bonolo what are you going to do? I put the phone down...

.

. #ZAINÉ

I had been standing next to the door that separated the kitchen and the hallway, somehow i had been eavesdropping on Bonolo, hearing every word that she said..

I walked around and found my way to the bedroom with the assistance of the wall, when i had located the bed i sat



NOVELSGURU.COM

down. Hearing her talking about sleeping with someone ever since she was young played out that scene of that little girl being sexually violated by an old man, could it be that i was actually seeing Bonolo? I looked up which was useless because i wasn't seeing anything other than darkness..

Me: Helena!

After a couple of minutes of silence i heard her speaking..Her:
Zaine

Me: Thank you for respondingHer: What a change of attitude

Me: Prophet Badru said something about Bonolo?Her: are you ready to talk to him?

Me: i think so

Her: Then that's good, you should call him together with your Father

Me: would be easy if i could be able to see my phone so i



NOVELSGURU.COM

can call them

Him: You have Bonolo to help you don't you?

Me: ya but Bonolo seems to be not in a good space rightnow

There was a knock at the door..Me: You can orb out

Her: Don't worry she cannot see meMe: Eeerrr.. Come in

The door opened..

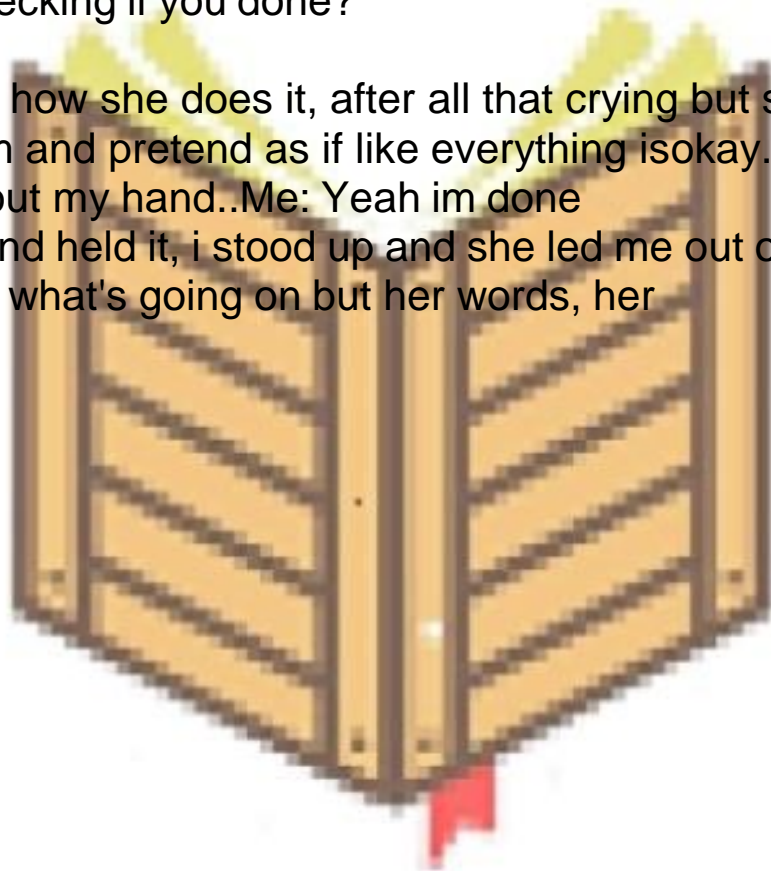
Her: was checking if you done?

I don't know how she does it, after all that crying but she still keeps her self calm and pretend as if like everything isokay..

I stretched out my hand..Me: Yeah im done

She came and held it, i stood up and she led me out of thebedroom.

I don't know what's going on but her words, her



NOVELSGURU.COM

cry can make any ears bleed Its one sharp painful cry thatcannot be ignored..

Her: Mr RadebeMe: Yes?

Her: You bleeding from your ears

I put my finger in my ear and i could feel some wetness Her: i heard Its dangerous when you bleed from your earsHe sat me down..

I was feeling a bit dizzy and a ringing in my ear, i heard hertalking but her voice was slowly fading away..

Me: Bonolo... I cannot hear you!!.. I cannot hear you!!!

I couldn't hear anything anymore other than her cry, herdeep painful cry..

I put my hands on my ears...Me: Ahhhhhh!!!!

It was torture..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After a while i felt something holding my hands, then everything became peaceful....

Her: Mr Radebe

She put a warm wet cloth on my ear..Her: The bleeding has stopped
She removed the cloth..I held her hand..

Her: Its alright i am here.. You shaking again

I wish that i could make out what's going on with me

.

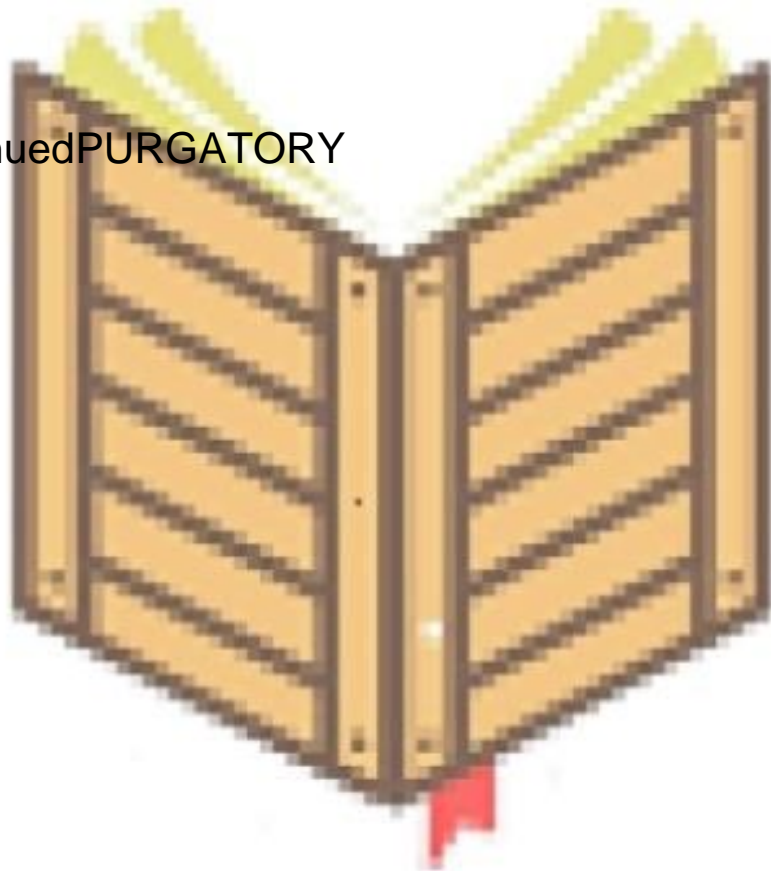
To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥24



NOVELSGURU.COM

#ZAINÉ

I had Bonolo call my Dad for me because this situation was starting to get out of control. I have never had so much fear in my life, one moment im good and doing what i love which is working with my Artists making money and then the next thing i am blind and bleeding from my ear it was just crazy. I needed answers, i needed to know what was going on and i needed to know now..

My father responded by saying that he will come later with Prophet Badru, so in the meantime i was chilling at the back with my boy Blake and Chichi they had come to check up on me since i haven't been at the studio, and theywere very shocked to learn that i was blind..

I found it very useless to sit outside because i couldn't seeanything, i could feel the sun hitting my skin but i couldn't see anything it was still pitch black..

Blake: What really happened?

I located my glass by running my hands on the woodentable..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i wish i knew

Chichi: Let me help you with thatShe led my hands to the glass..

Me: Thank you

Chichi: all of this doesn't make sense one moment you allfine then the next you blind

Me: i am still trying to make sense of everything

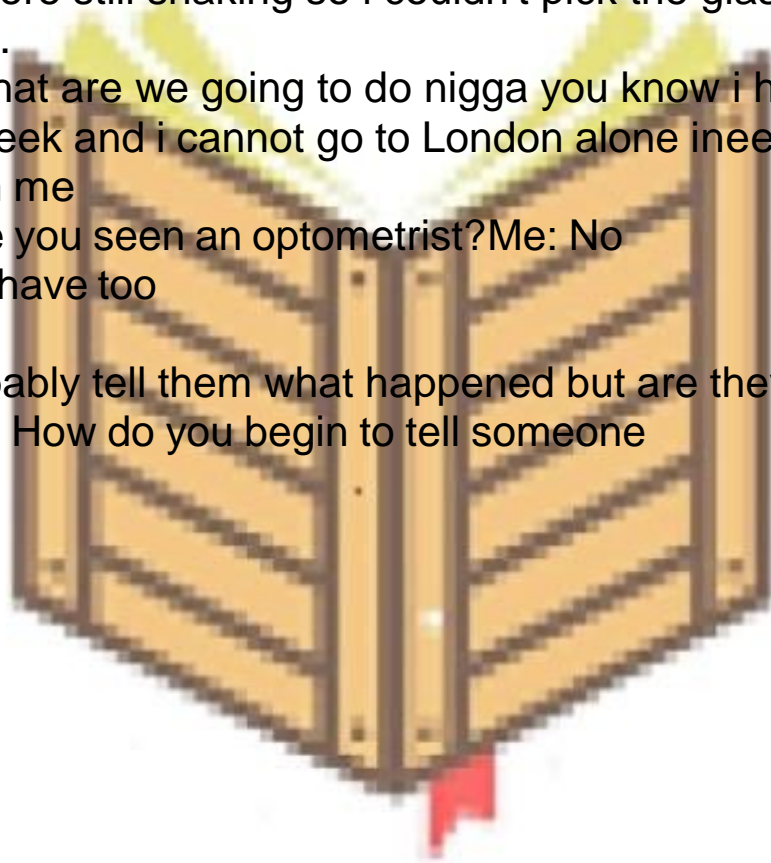
My hands were still shaking so i couldn't pick the glass upor have control of it..

Blake: so what are we going to do nigga you know i have to go on Tour next week and i cannot go to London alone ineed my support system with me

Chichi: have you seen an optometrist?Me: No

Chichi: You have too

I would probably tell them what happened but are theygonna believe me? How do you begin to tell someone



NOVELSGURU.COM

about the events that led to your blindness without sounding crazy?
Blake: This cannot be happening

Me: Relax Blake, im gonna get through this, blind or not i will be on that Tour with you

Him: this is fucked up im going for a smoke Sometimes i forget that Blake can be in his feelings..Chichi: i am still trying to let everything sink in

Me: How is the mixtape going?

Her: Its going good but since you won't be around i don't know what im gonna do

Me: Are you guys shitting me? What if i died today will yall stop making music?

Chichi: Don't talk like that Zaine especially with everything that's been happening

Blake came back..

Him: i still say this is shit



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that was quick

Him: Chi lets roll, and you Mister i am here first thing in themorning taking your ass to an eye doctor
I stood up..

Chichi: You need a Cane Zee Me: Fu.. I mean screw a Cane

Blake: What is wrong with you? Now you can't even say the word
"Fuck"

Me: Just get me inside Blake: Fine

He walked me inside the house.. He put his hand on my shoulder...

Him: ill see you tomorrow morning Me: Ayt cool

I heard footsteps and the door closing, it was now quiet.. It turned around and as i was about to call out Bonolo i heard her singing..



NOVELSGURU.COM

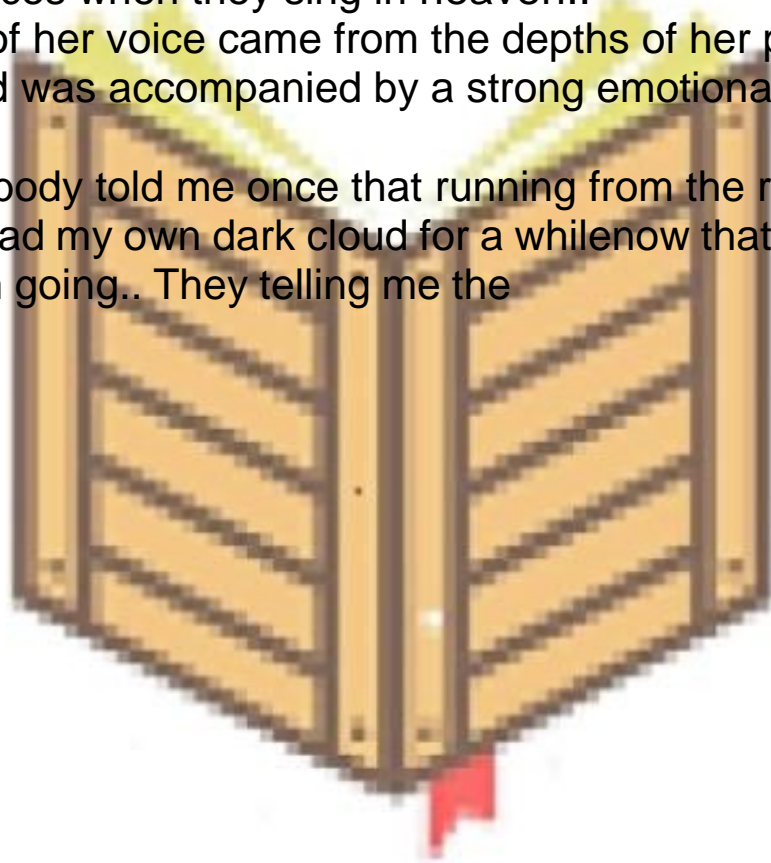
Her: "Somebody told me once that Pain is a game we all gotta play, but why am i in overtime with sudden death every other day....i know that for the good of life there's a Price we all gotta pay, but ill pay till im poor and i still don'tknow what it is to have a good day.. "

Her voice was beautiful and very unique. It was rear also,haven't heard it anywhere. In my line of work i come across alot of good singers but this voice i have never came across it..

I slowly but surely followed the sound of her Angelic voiceif i can put it that way because Angels are said and believed to have beautiful voices when they sing in heaven..

The sound of her voice came from the depths of her pain, every word uttered was accompanied by a strong emotionand pitiful sorrow..

Her: "Somebody told me once that running from the rain don't make sense, ive had my own dark cloud for a whilenow that goes wherever im going.. They telling me the



NOVELSGURU.COM

grass just might be greener on the other side, but i don't wanna take a chance on dirt..."
She then stopped..

Her: Mr Radebe you Scared me
Me: Im sorry i didn't mean too
Her: was i loud?

Me: Loud?.. No i..

Her: Im sorry i thought i was alone

Me: Can i now speak without being interrupted?
Her: Yes Sir im sorry

Me: You have a beautiful voice

Her: Thank you, i don't sing that often
Me: Why?

Her: i sing mostly when im sad, singing is therapeutic forme
cleanses my heart and soul

Me: then you should sing more often



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: ill try....can i do something for you?Me: No you have done enough for todayHer: Okay

Me: one favour thoughHer: Yes?

Me: When you clean don't change the furniture from their original postion, it makes it easier for me to move aroundwhen i know that everything is supposed to be where Its supposed to be

Her: Yes Sir

Me: and can we call me Zaine, i am not that oldHer: Okay

Me: in the meantime ill go and watch TvShe giggled..

Me: and what's funny? Her: Nothing just that...



NOVELSGURU.COM

She paused..Me: Just?
Her: Nothing

Me: i can still hear

Her: Then happy watching Me: Now that was sarcasticShe
laughed..

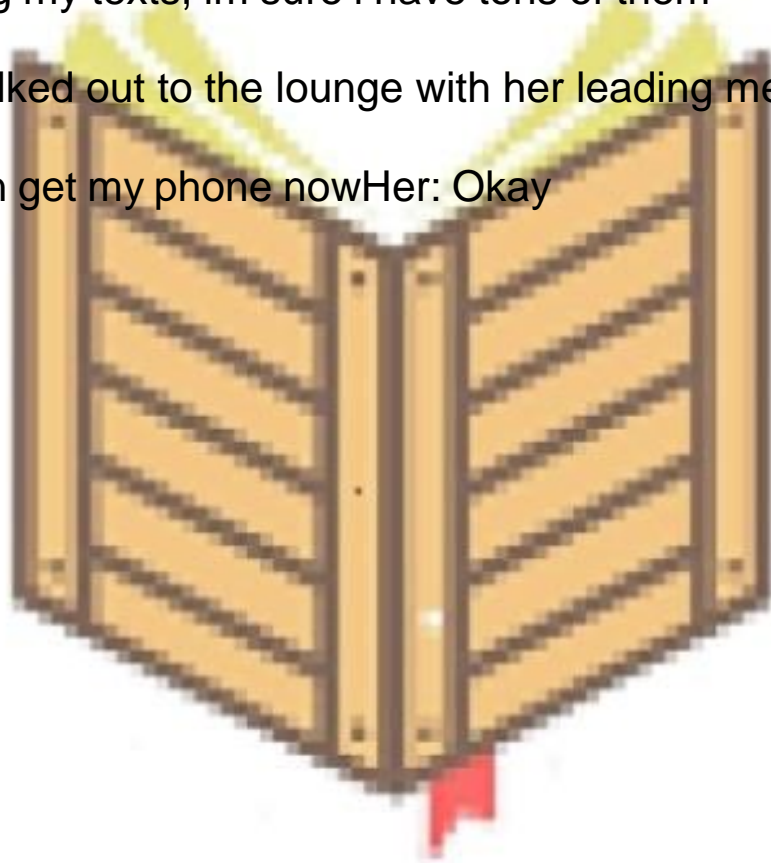
Me: didn't know that you can laughHer: i can

Me: Come i need your helpHer: With?

Me: Reading my texts, im sure i have tons of them

We both walked out to the lounge with her leading me tothe couch, i
sat down..

Me: You can get my phone nowHer: Okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was quiet for a while, then i heard her talking..Her: i can't find it
That was weird because i didn't hear here move an inch. Iwas
supposed to hear her dragging her feet but i heard none of that,
why would she lie?

Me: ummm okay The door bell rang..Her: ill get that

She really went to get it because i had her dragging herfeet..

I then heard my mother making noise...Her: Where is he? Where is
my baby?

Ms Jackson likes overreacting..

I heard her heels clicking all the way to me..Her: Zaine

She hugged me, freaked me out a bit because she caughtme off
guard..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She put her hands on my face..

Her: Your maid called and said you blind you can't see..Can you see Mommy?

Me: i..

Dad: Honey i don't think he can see youShe broke down..

Her: Ohh God help me who is doing this to my son?

I don't care how old you might be but when shit like this happens you need your mother..

Dad: Zaine im here with your Brother as wellMe: Where is Prophet Badru?

Him: i preferred it this way you will see him at a later stageI guess everyone sat down..

Dad: i need to be honest with everyoneThe room went quiet..

Dad: i am dying



NOVELSGURU.COM

What was he really trying to say? Leigh: What do you mean you dying?

Him: i have cancer, pancreatic cancer basically i am rotting inside have been for a while

Me: What?

No sound came from my mother meaning she knew about this..

Leigh: That's just demonic

Dad: No its not, this is how Its supposed to be Me: No Pops..

Him: Zaine please let me finish I kept quiet..

Dad: as it is known i have a gift of being a seer, and that gift was to be passed to one of my Sons so they can takeover from me when i am no more

Leighton cleared his throat..

Him: i think we all know who that is, i have always known



NOVELSGURU.COM

that i was gonna be the chosen one i have been preparing myself for this

Dad: Leighton have you had visions before?

Him: No but i will get them when the gift has been transferred to me

Dad: What makes you think that you the chosen one? Him: isn't it quite obvious?

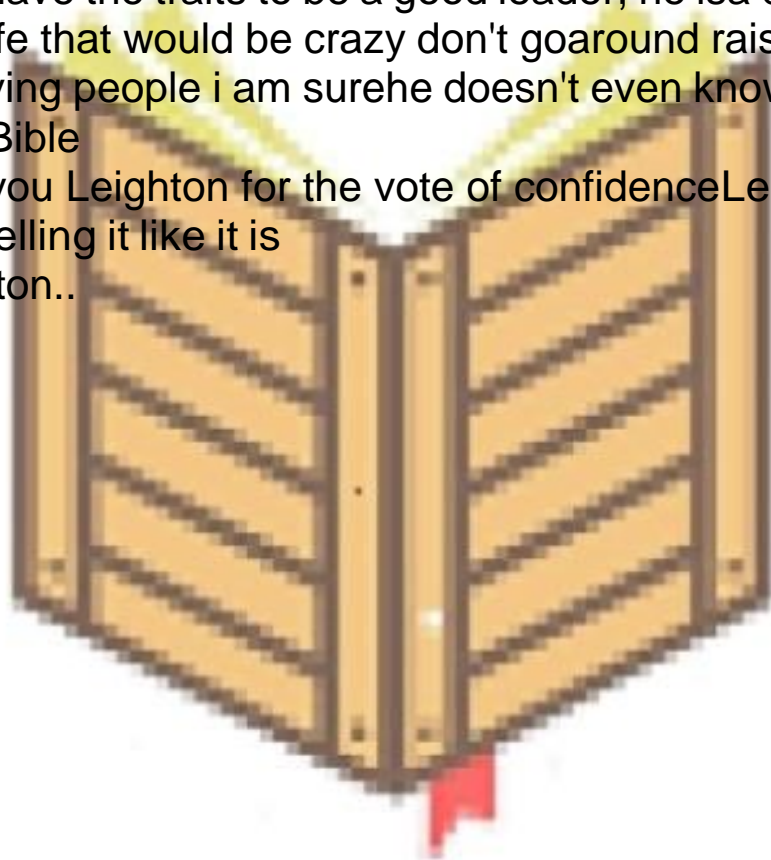
Mom: What if its Zaine who was chosen? He laughed..

Him: That would be Preposterous why would God choose Zaine?

He doesn't have the traits to be a good leader, he is a drunk he lives a reckless life that would be crazy don't go around raising false hope on undeserving people i am sure he doesn't even know how to pray or read the Bible

Me: Thank you Leighton for the vote of confidence Leigh: Im sorry but im just telling it like it is

Mom: Leighton..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: he is right mom, there's no way i could be the chosenone i mean i am not even much of a believer

Dad: if so then why are you scared?Me: Scared?

Dad: Zaine what happened? What led to your blindness?Me: i don't really remember

Dad: You do rememberMe: i don't

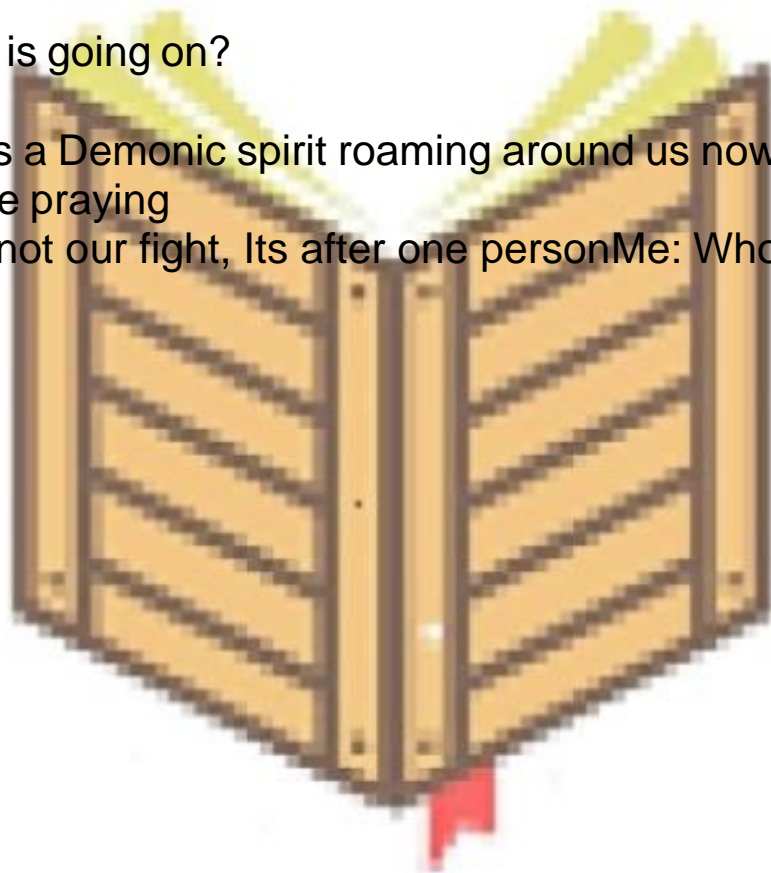
Dad: You do Zaine, you just don't wanna go back therebecause Its a traumatic experience

I kept quiet..

Leigh: What is going on?

Dad: There's a Demonic spirit roaming around us nowLeigh: Then we should be praying

Dad: No its not our fight, Its after one personMe: Who?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: The chosen one, the person that the entity is gonnaknockout will be the chosen son

Leigh: i am ready to fight it off!Dad: Leighton wait.. Bonolo!!

I heard her talking.. Her: You called me Sir?

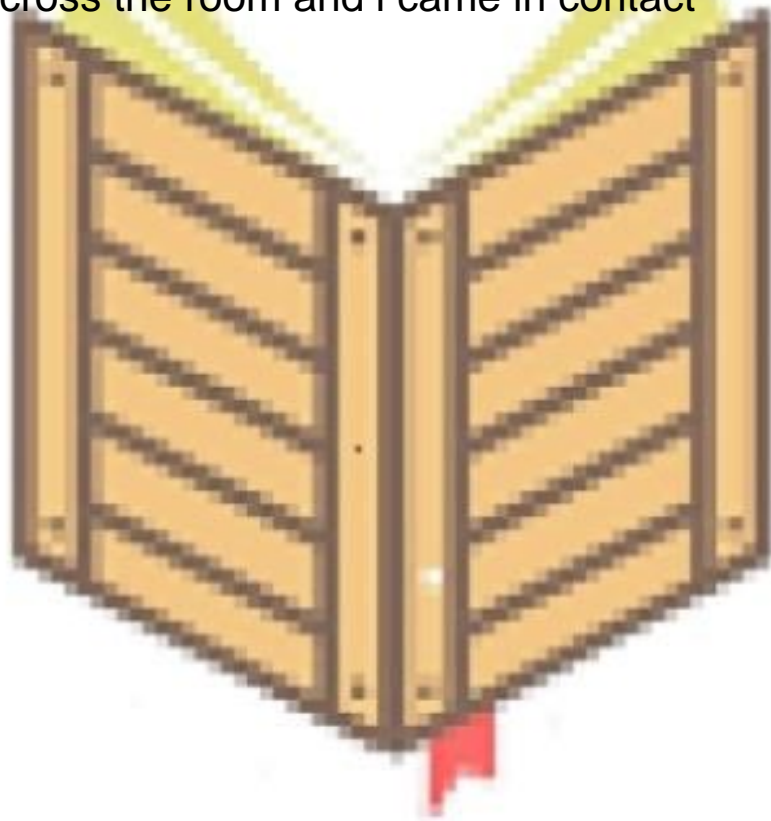
Dad: Someone might need your voice to lift them upHer: Okay

Dad: Everyone ShhhWe all kept quiet..

After a while i heard some heavy breathing, i heard footsteps as if like a horse was in the room.. I also heardsome groaning

Me: does anyone hear that?Leigh: hear what?

Before i knew it i felt myself being lifted off from the couch,i was sent flying across the room and i came in contact



NOVELSGURU.COM

with the wall.. Me: What the???

Mom: Come on Zaine you can fight it!

Me: How do i fight what i cannot see!! Pops what'shappening?

I heard the footsteps making their way to me.. I was deadscared..

Dad: Zaine! Remember it feeds off from your fear, do notshow fear

Me: Dad do something i am scared!! I was lifted up into the air again..

Me: Dad do something!

I was close to crying because this thing was sinking Itsclaws deep inside me..

Me: Pops!!

Mom: Radebe do something!Dad: This is not our fight



NOVELSGURU.COM

So my dad is willing to let his son die in the hands of whatever it is? I was still screaming and i was in a lot of pain..I could hear my mother crying..

Mom: God please save my son! continued screaming..

Bonolo: Come on Zaine you can fight this!Me: How do i.. I can't see it...

Dad: You know It, you had an encounter with it at your studio remember?

Me: Pops i am dying!!!!

I was giving in, i was drained, i was done this entity was heavy on me.. It moved from sinking its claws into me and into choking me.. I did taste death at that moment i won't lie.. Then in the midst of it all i heard Bonolo singing..

Her: "Kukhona iculo enhlizweni, ngoba kusho izwi lakhe,



NOVELSGURU.COM

ungesabi nginawe njalo endleleni yonke yakho" (There's a song in my heart because his word says so, do not be afraid i am with you always)

She kept on singing that verse over and over again was funny cause ive never heard her speak any African languages.

Her singing was soo powerful that it gave me strength It overpowered my fear and to top it all off my vision came back i could see the entity, i came face to face with it..

It looked into my eyes and all my fear was Channelled into it. It let go of me and started stepping backwards with Its eyes pleading with me that "Please don't send me to hell, Its not my time Yet"

Then after it ran off, i looked at everyone and i was a bit dizzy i went down.. Bonolo ran up to me..

Her: Its okay i got you She hugged me..

Her: i got you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at Leighton and he was filled with soo much angerand hurt that he walked out..

Dad: Leighton..

He tried going after him but he started feeling pain..My mom attended to him..

.

To be continuedMeet Simon PURGATORY

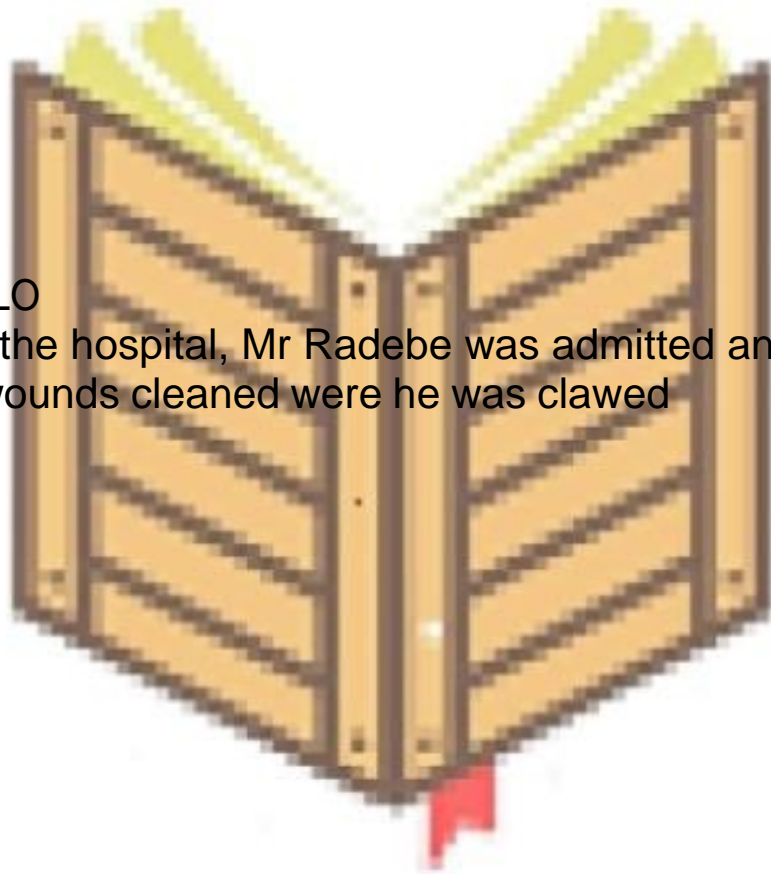
.

.

.

¥25 #BONOLO

We were at the hospital, Mr Radebe was admitted and Zaine was having his wounds cleaned were he was clawed



NOVELSGURU.COM

by that entity. In the meantime while the Nurse was cleaning his wounds, i went out and sent a call back to Siya because i got his missed call and he didn't take that long to call....

Me: Mmata?

Him: hai Mmata! i went to your house to ask for your clothes your Grandma chased me out with a broom
I exhaled..

Him: Your Grandma is still very angry Mmata aii

Me: somehow i am not surprised at how she reacted

Him: Your Grandma vele she is like that, the whole hood knows that she's like that

Me: i don't know what to say Him: Where are you?

Me: i am still at work Mmata Him: Its 19:30

Me: i know, ill be sleeping over my boss doesn't feel well



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: hai Mmata this people are abusing you now they want you to sleep over? Yini manje what's with the nonsense?

Me: Its okay Mmata plus i need this money since im all alone now, so i can be able to afford my own place

Him: ya you are right Mmata Me: i have to go Mmata

Him: Okay tomorrow morning i will wait for you at the gate to give you the pills

Me: You have them?

Him: Yes i got them for R1000 Me: Pretty expensive

Him: Its okay you can pay me R800, never mind the R200. Me: Thank you Mmata, friends like your are hard to find Him: You welcome

Mmata

Me: Bye Him: bye



NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung and made my way in.

I seriously wonder where Siya gets all this money from, he seems as if like money is not a problem to him wish it was like that with me too...

I got to the ward and Zaine looked like he was becoming a bit comfortable with that young female Nurse that he even didn't notice me standing at the door. He was sitting on the bed and she was standing in front of him, he had a bandage wrapped around his body..

Her: You telling me that a tiger scratched you?

Him: What else could it be? It sunk its paws and claws deep inside me

She laughed..

Her: i don't believe that you wrestled a tiger and then you lived to tell the story

Him: better believe it

I walked in and took his tshirt from the chair then i went and handed it to him. He looked at me and took it..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nurse: uhmmm let me go and attend to my other patients,i hope the tiger is dead

Zaine: i hope so too, when will i be coming to change mybandages?

Her: after 2 days

Him: and i will specifically ask for you, Nurse...Her: Nurse Bungane

Him: Nurse Bungane

She was all smiles and blushing like a teen who had justbeen asked on a date by their crush..

She walked out and Zaine put on his Tshirt..Me: How are you feeling now?

Him: ill be fine, im just thankful that i got my eye sightback

Me: That's good

He got down from the bed and then put his hand aroundmy shoulders and we walked out with him limping..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: wanna see my Dad first before leaving
Me: No problem
We walked to his Father's ward and he was with Ms Jackson..
M. Jackson: Someone looks better
Zaine: i am feeling better
Mr. R: How does it feel to be able to see again?
Zaine: feels good
We walked over to him...

Zaine: but the most important question is how are you feeling?
Mr. R: it happens a lot, i get cramps every now and then but ill be fine
Zaine: Why you never told me about the cancer?
Him: wasn't the right time yet
Ms. J: How are you feeling with everything that has happened today?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine shrugged his shoulders.. Him: Still a bit confused and lost
Mr. R: Everything will make sense, im still here i will guideyou
together with Prophet Badru

Zaine: PopsHim: Son?

Zaine: What if i don't wanna be a Prophet?Ms. J: Zaine..

Mr. R: Zaine i understand that you are confused andoverwhelmed
by what happened and..

Zaine: Pops i am still scared and shaken by what happened, i am
not built for this i cannot do this Yes mymentality has changed
about God but...

He paused and looked down..

Him: Just pray that the gift can be transfered to Leightonsomewhat

Ms. J: it doesn't work like that Baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr. R: Zaine do you think that we wanted to be Prophets?do you think i personally woke up one day and said God choose me?

Zaine: but Leighton is a better Candidate than me. He is very religious, he has been faithful ever since and he has been living right Its unfair for him not to be the chosen one

Mr. R: How God does things its beyond our understandingthat's why he is God

Zaine: i just don't understand everything

Ms. J: Why don't you go home and relax, it has been onetiring day

Zaine: that sounds like a planMs Jackson looked at me..

Her: i didn't know that you had such an amazing voice

Mr R: Amazing indeed, you must join the church choir theycould do with your beautiful voice

Ms J: That's very true



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: Before anyone starts preaching, Bonolo lets go
Me: Okay
I looked at Mr Radebe..

Me: i wish you a speedy recovery Sir

Him: Thank you soo much, you such a sweet person Ms J: and
very respectful not forgetting being humble

That's the most sweetest thing that anyone has ever said to me, if i
was Ms Jackson i would take those words back especially after all
the trouble i have caused my Grandmother by being
disrespectful...

Mr R: and i see you guys are already becoming close
Zaine looked at
me..

Zaine: we are becoming good friends

Ms Jackson and Mr Radebe looked at each other..Ms J: heard that?

Mr R: Yeap they starting to become good friends



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: What's going on?

Ms J: Nothing im just glad that you and Bonolo are friendsas you refer to it, she's a good influence on you

Zaine: i guess so He looked at me...Him: Let's bounce

He hugged his father, then he hugged his mother too..Ms J: Call me when you get home

Zaine: i will

Ms Jackson opened her arms for me to go and give her ahug and i did..

Her: You kids be well nowZaine: Yes mam'

We started walking out with Zaine walking behind me andhis hands were on my shoulders...

Me: Your hands are heavy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Stop complaining

Me: i liked you better when you were blindHe pulled my hair a little..

Me: Ahhh! You such a nuisanceHim: Its this your real hair?

Me: Yes

Him: How did you get it right?Me: Meaning?

Him: Its long like a weave

Me: i don't know but ive always had long hairHim: Okay

He took out his car keys and unlocked the car then we got in..

It was hard for him to find a comfortable position but assoon as he was comfortable he started the car and drove..

Him: i think we should get pizza while we on our way home



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that be good

Him: Something bothering you?

Something was definitely bothering me. I didn't know where i stood now that Zaine got his eye sight back, will i be required to go back home i mean i am practically homeless i have nowhere to go..

Me: Its nothing im fine

Him: You not a good liar but Its okay

We went pass some restaurant and he bought a big box of pizza with cool drinks, then we went to some Engine garage and he bought us some snacks..

Me: Are we gonna be joined by someone? Him: Why?

Me: soo much food

Him: i am trying to feed your skinny ass Me: Ohw

Him: was supposed to be a joke



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Sorry Him: Its cool

We got home after a while and we walked in with the food..Him: We gonna have a midnight feast

Me: Yey..

Him: Bonolo what's wrong?Me: Its nothing im just tired

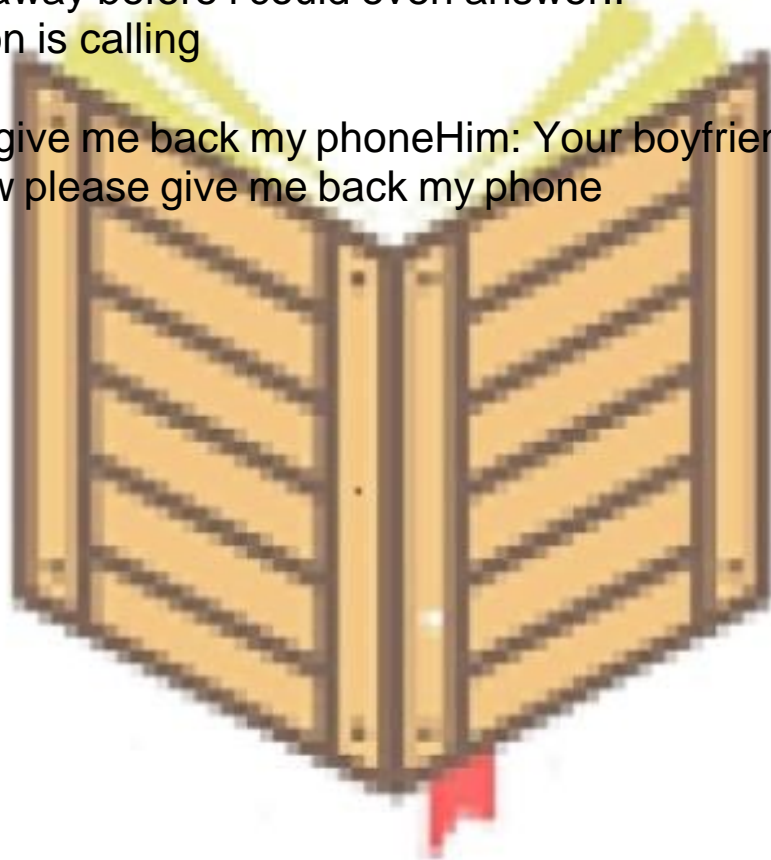
Him: in life you need to talk in order to get helpMe: i know

My phone started ringing and i got it from my pocket, butZaine snatched it away before i could even answer..

Him: a Simon is calling

Me: Please give me back my phoneHim: Your boyfriend?

Me: Yes now please give me back my phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I can just answer and tell him that we are busy
Me: No please..
He answered..
Him: Hello
I tried grabbing it but he was busy pushing me away..
Him: Yes she is here... Ill check if she's not busy..
He lowered the phone...
Him: Are you busy?
I shook my head no..

He put the phone next to his ear again..

Him: unfortunately she is busy... No problem i will pass the message.. Bye
He gave me my phone back..

Him: Says you should call him back
I took my phone and pushed him..

Him: Ouch! I am still hurt remember?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What is wrong with you? (shouting)Him: i was just tripping, chill!

Me: Not everything is a joke Zaine!!!

Him: Im sorry Bonolo i was just playing aroundMe: grow up maan!! I clicked my tongue and walked away.. I really didn't like what Zaine did, Simon is the only person who can help meright now and he is ruining things for me....

.

. #ZAINE

I felt a bit bad about what happened, i was just trying to bemy joking self as always but i guess it didn't work. I grabbed a plate and put a few slices of pizza then went to the guest room.. I knocked.. Her: go away!



NOVELSGURU.COM

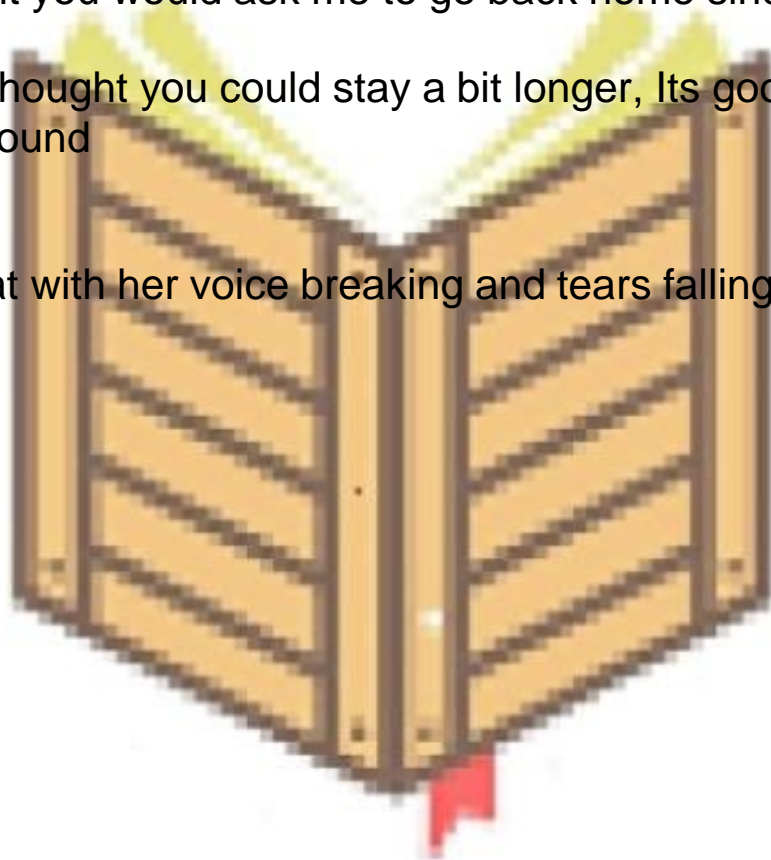
Me: I made you something to eat
Her: i am not hungry!
I opened the door and she was laying on the bed crying. I put the plate on the mini couch then went and sat next to her..
Me: i am sorry i didn't mean to upset you She turned and had her back against me..
Her: Its fine
Me: Why don't i make it up to you, take you out tomorrow so you can get a few clothes since you didn't bring any
She turned and looked at me with tears in her eyes..

Her: Thought you would ask me to go back home since you okay now

Him: Well i thought you could stay a bit longer, Its good having someone around

Her: Really?

She said that with her voice breaking and tears falling..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's if you want tooShe nodded..
Me: Come here

She came closer and we hugged..

I might be blind to a lot of things but i am not blind to see that this girl is broken and needs help. I mean she helpedme when i was fighting off whatever wanted to kill me, sothis is the least i could do for her..

.

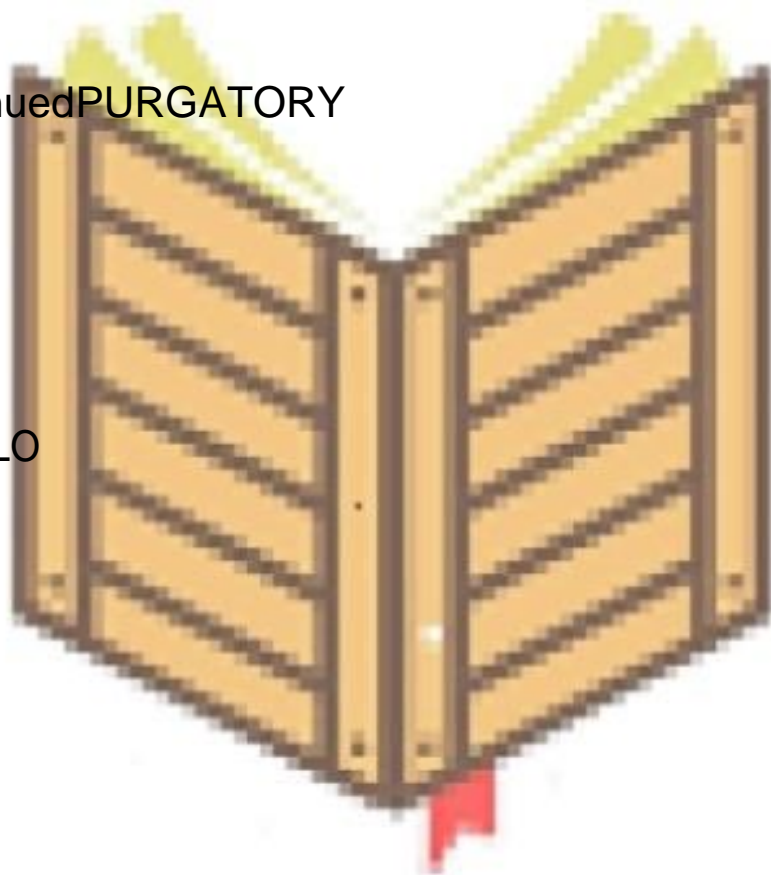
To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥26 #BONOLO



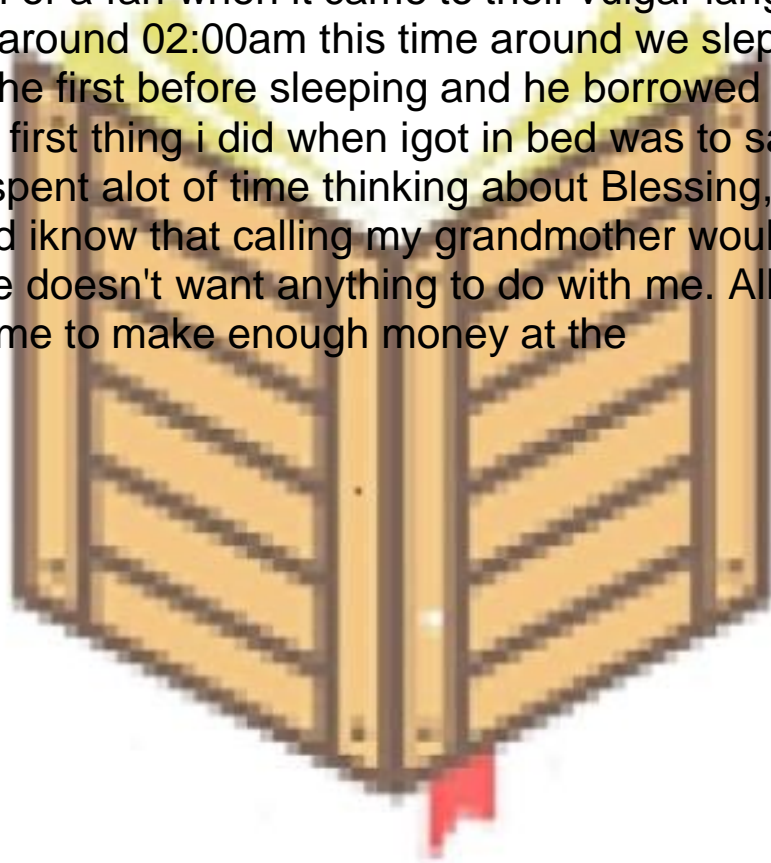
NOVELSGURU.COM

I had a great time with Zaine last night. We had our midnight feast eating while watching a few movies. I was never a fan of movies or anything but after last night i will sure watch a alot. At the Purgatory we had a cable, but Zaine did things differently. He would just download any movie he specifically called the source of which she got the movies from as Torrent and with what he referred to as WiFi he was able to download any movie in 30min usinghis laptop then after he would connect it to his big Tv on the wall. I didn't know any movies, he was the one selecting for me telling me that girls love this ones and hate this ones. He was very well informed because he chose nice movies, one that we watched which i truly enjoyed was titled "Something borrowed" it was a movie about this two best friends one was wild and one was conserved. The conserved one liked a certain guy but didn't tell him so her besty snatched him and they got married. The other friend had to live with the fact that her best friend married the man of her dreams and a man that she loved so much, it was a sad movie but the ending was



NOVELSGURU.COM

beautiful. Although their friendship ended but at least the two love birds found their to each other, i even shed a few tears at the end of the movie Zaine only looked at me and Laughed while shaking his head. I am even surprised that he wasn't shaken by the movie but what am i saying? He was bored out of his mind all throughout that he was even playing with his phone until the movie finished... After that movie, we watched his movies. We watched Hangover 1-3, those ones he didn't have to download them because they were already in his laptop. I swear i have never laughed that much but i wasn't much of a fan when it came to their vulgar language.. We slept at around 02:00am this time around we slept in different rooms. I bathe first before sleeping and he borrowed me one of his Tshirts. The first thing i did when i got in bed was to say my prayers then after i spent alot of time thinking about Blessing, i was missing him a lot and i know that calling my grandmother would be useless because she doesn't want anything to do with me. All i was praying for, was for me to make enough money at the



NOVELSGURU.COM

end of the month so i can be able to get me and Blessing aplace to stay..

I thought that maybe Simon was gonna call again but hedidn't, i think he was still upset from Zaine answering myphone....

I was woken up the in the morning by Siya's call, i answered and he told me that he was waiting for me at thegate, i wore the Jean and shoes then quickly made my wayto the gate. It was a bit cold which was unfortunate because when the weather is cold and cloudy like that, i fail to determine what time it is by looking at the sky..

I got to the gate and he was already waiting for me. He looked great, his outfit looked new and expensive Siya always rocks what he Wears. Other than his bag, he had a plastic with him..

Me: Hey

He hugged me..

Him: How are you kodwa Mmata?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Im good and you?Him: ngi right
He looked at me..Him: and then?
Me: and then what?

Him: You wearing a soccer tshirt? Chelsea to be exact

Me: Ohw uhm my boss borrowed me since i don't haveclothes

Him: Bonolo what's going on mara?Me: with what now Mmata?

Him: i don't know what's going with your life nje you pullingin
serious shifts, you sleeping over and it seems as if like you
enjoying yourself

Me: Agh we will talk about that some other timeHim: ya plus i have
to go ill be late for school Me: You going to school?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Why would i leave so early?

Something wasn't right with Siya, he was going to schoolbut he had a small bag which clearly couldn't even accommodate one book..

Him: i brought you this

He handed me the plastic it was written Legit

Him: Its a dress, underwears, bras, and sandals you haveto change

Me: Mmata you shouldn't haveHim: i wanted too

Me: now i will owe you a lot of money

Him: You don't have to pay me for the dress Its a giftMe: Thank you
I hugged him again..

Him: before i forget here is your staffHe handed me 3 pills..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You drink two the white ones, then the red one you put inside your... You know

Me: Ohw i got you

Him: Drink tonight when you go to bed

Me: i will do so.. What are they supposed to do?

Him: make you bleed, i brought you pads they inside the plastic I checked..

Him: Don't worry it will be as if like you going on your periods

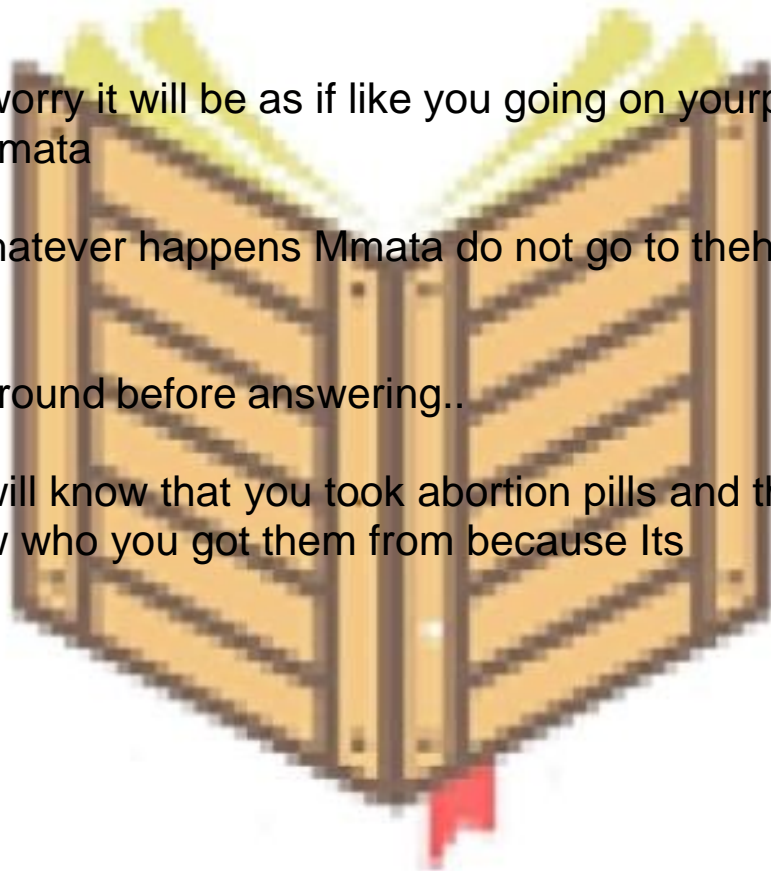
Me: Okay Mmata

Him: and whatever happens Mmata do not go to the hospital

Me: Why?

He looked around before answering..

Him: They will know that you took abortion pills and they gonna wanna know who you got them from because Its



NOVELSGURU.COM

illegal to have this pills they not even Sold at any pharmacy you only get them at the hospital, so we will be in alot of trouble we can even get arrested. Imagine you will never even see your son

Me: i won't go to the hospital MmataHe then took out other pills..

Him: this are contraceptive pillsMe: Contra..?

Him: Ceptive... Contraceptive. You need to start taking them as from tomorrow they prevent pregnancy when youhave unprotected sex

Me: Im never having sex, so i don't need them

Him: Take them Mmata you might never know. Drink them everyday don't even skip one day

I put them in the plastic..

He fixed his glasses, i don't know why he was wearingglasses because the was no sun..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: my work here is done

Me: Thank you sow much MmataHim: You still owe me that R800

Me: As soon as i get paid ill sort you out

As we were standing there some beautiful car pulled overnext to us, and it was making alot of noise..

The person inside lowered the volume...Siya: my ride is here Mmata i have to go

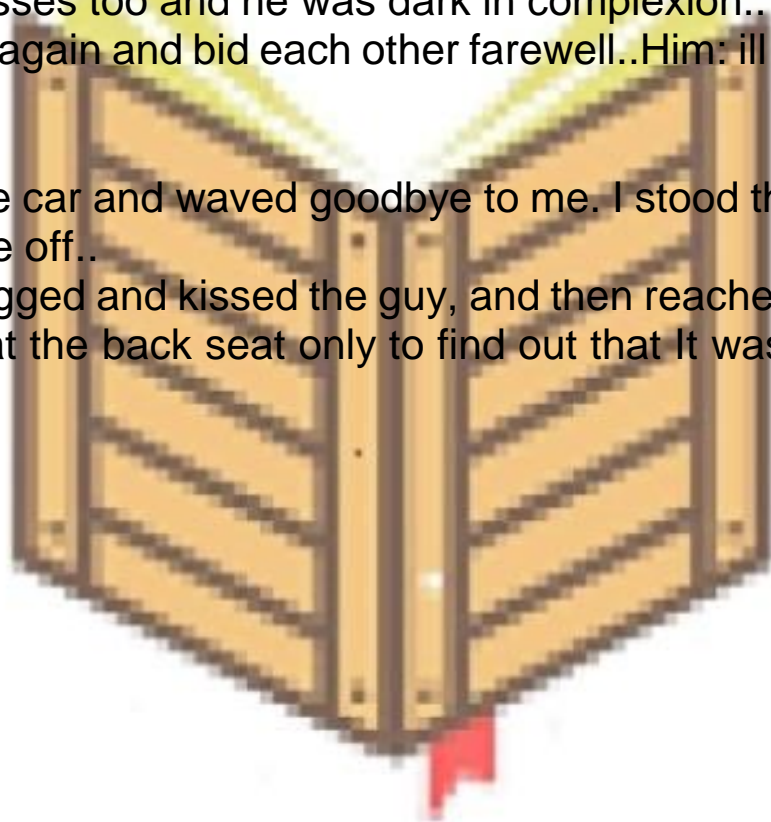
I looked at the person and it was some buffed up guy, he was wearing glasses too and he was dark in complexion..

We hugged again and bid each other farewell..Him: ill call you

Me: Okay

He got in the car and waved goodbye to me. I stood therewaiting for them to take off..

Siya first hugged and kissed the guy, and then reached outfor something at the back seat only to find out that It was



NOVELSGURU.COM

alcohol..

He waved goodbye again as they took off, and i made my back into the yard..

I quickly walked up to the house because it was still cold..

I opened the door and walked in Zaine was at the kitchen.He was wearing a vest and boxers, he was making himself some drink..

Me: Good morningHe looked at me..

Him: Where you coming from?

Me: i met up with a friend, he wanted to give me thisHim: he?

Me: Yes a he that is into guysHim: i see

Me: ya

I started walking to the bedroom..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Bonolo

I stopped and looked at him..Him: Are you alright?
I nodded.. He still looked at me

Him: this is gonna sound somehow butHe cleared his throat..
Him: Are you having problems with your periods?Me: huh?
He didn't say anything..

Me: Why.. Why would you ask such?

Him: i had a disturbing dream about you last night, youwere
bleeding to death and you were in pain
It was getting a little bit hot up in here..Me: i.. I am sure it was just a
dream He drank from the squeeze bottle..
Him: i hope so



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walked fast to the bedroom and closed the door. I stood against the door and started breathing in and out.. That was very close I jumped when i heard a knock at the door after a few minutes..
Zaine: Bonolo

I threw the plastic on the bed...

I then opened the door and looked at him..

Him: You can prepare yourself we going to the mall remember?

Me: Yes, ill bath now

He gave me a weird look which made me nervous. It was like he was seeing through my soul what i wanted to do tonight and was just waiting for me to be honest with him..

Me: is.. Is that all? Him: Yeah

I slowly closed the door and exhaled..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that was very close

.

. #ZAINÉ

Most of the dreams that i have they feel so real and the one i had about Bonolo was real. She was bleeding very bad and was standing in the middle of the kitchen while screaming in pain. I don't know why i had the dream or what it meant.. When i got to my bedroom preparing to take a shower my phone rang, i went to answer it and it was my mother..

Me: Ms Jackson

Him: Good morning baby how are you? Me: Im good and you?

Her: Im fine thanks

Him: How did you sleep? Me: i slept good



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: No Demonic attacks and all that?Me: No i slept peacefully
Thank you Her: Okay, how is Bonolo?
Me: Why do you ask?

Her: she is your friend isn't she?

Me: You have never asked about Blake

Her: i am asking about her because she cooked a deliciousslamb
stew this other time

Me: When?

Her: Never mind Zaine.. Actually i am calling to tell yousomething

Me: Yes?

Her: We having a service tonight and since Dad is inhospital i will be
the one preaching

Me: ohh that's nice

Her: i would like you to come



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ms Jackson...

Her: Please Zaine i need your support

Me: Where is Leighton can't he support you?

Her: he is not in a good space right now and he hasn't been home since from yesterday

Me: is he alright?

Her: i don't know i tried calling but his phone is off
Me: That's bad, he is really taking this hard

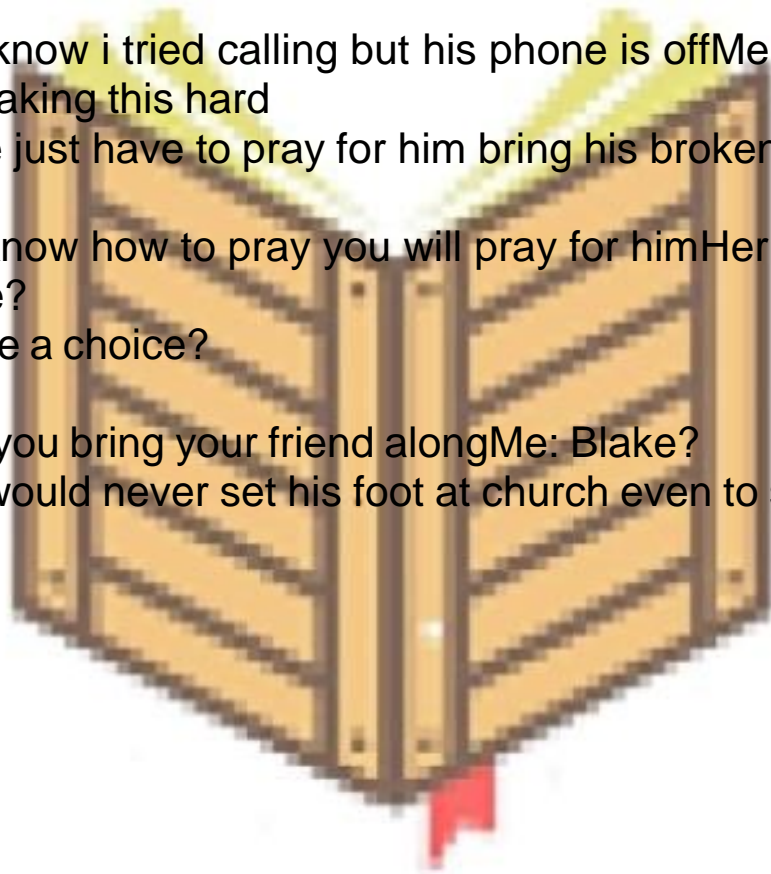
Her: true we just have to pray for him bring his brokenheart to the Lord

Me: i don't know how to pray you will pray for him
Her: So are you gonna come?

Me: do i have a choice?

Her: Thank you bring your friend along
Me: Blake?

Her: Blake would never set his foot at church even to save



NOVELSGURU.COM

his life, i am talking about Bonolo Me: What's up with you and Bonolo?

Her: i just would like her to lead Praise and worship tonight
Me: don't you have a choir for that?

Her: We do

Me: and that girl who leads the choir what's her name again?

Her: Refiloe Zondi

Me: thought you were happy with her

Her: The only reason why she is in the choir and always playing close to me is because her mother wants you to marry her, she's trying to worm her way into the Radebe family
I laughed...

Her: You don't know how irritating they are, Lord forgive me

Me: ya i can imagine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Im getting another call see you tonight
Me: Okay
Her: i love you bye
Me: Bye
Her: Don't forget Bonolo
Me: i won't
I then hung up and went to shower...

My mom seems a bit fond of Bonolo and i found that Extremely weird because she has never been fond of any girl that's close to me, but i don't blame her though Bonolo is an Angel and that guy Simon is very blessed to have her as his girlfriend..

After showering i put on my lotion then got dressed. I decided to wear a hat because my hair was alot now i really need to go and cut..

When i was done i took my wallet, my phone, and my carkeys then went to wait for Bonolo at the kitchen. Girls



NOVELSGURU.COM

always take forever to get ready and i was starting to be very impatient..

Me: Bonolo!!! (shouting)

She replied in her sweet Angelic voice..Her: Im almost done!

Me: You were almost done 30min ago, are you for real?Her: now im almost done for real

I waited and now it was 45minMe: Bonolo!!! (shouting)

Her: Zaine im coming

Me: if i got paid everytime when you said that i would be rich!

She kept quiet..

I went and made my USN shake again, and then i heard her talking..

Her: i am done we can go



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turned and looked at her..Me: You know next...
What i saw made me speechless..

She was wearing a long summer white dress that was sleeveless, she had tied her hair nicely into a ponytail but at the front she made a hump was a beautiful hairstyle and it suited her thin face. She had big white studs earrings, she didn't have make up on and that's what made her more beautiful..

Her: We can go now

I saw her lips moving but i couldn't make out what she was saying..
All i heard was my name being repeatedly called out..I snapped out of it..

Her: You were complaining that i was taking long now you the one delaying

Me: ya lets go



NOVELSGURU.COM

She led the way and i followed..

Me: control yourself Zaine (whispering)She stopped and looked at me..

Her: What?Me: What?

Her: did you say something?Me: Something like?

Her: i thought i heard you say something

Me: Nothing much just that the pizza didn't do justice, you still skinny

Her: Thank you Zaine for the complimentHim: but i wasn't complimenting you Her: Okay

Who was i kidding? She has a beautiful thin body..

Our hands touched when we tried reaching for the doorhandle..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i got it Me: allow me

She looked at me, and i looked at her too..Me: i got it for real

She let go and then i opened the door for her and she went inside, i then closed and went to my side Its gonna be a long day i swear..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥27 #BONOLO

We went to this other mall called East Rand Mall, was an



NOVELSGURU.COM

environment that i wasn't familiar with. I have never been to a mall before, never been into such a big place with so many shops and moving stairs it was very beautiful i won't lie..

We went to different shops trying to get clothes that fit and i must say i found pretty good clothes at Legit and Identity i mostly was fascinated by their bum shorts..

Zaine was on his phone most of the time making calls to certain people leaving me to do everything on my own, but even if he helped i doubt he was gonna help me choose clothes that i liked..

I didn't get much clothes especially because it wasn't my money i just got a few jeans and dresses, we got toiletries too..

When we were done, we went to eat at Steers.. Him: i like their BBQ sauce

Me: i wouldn't know it

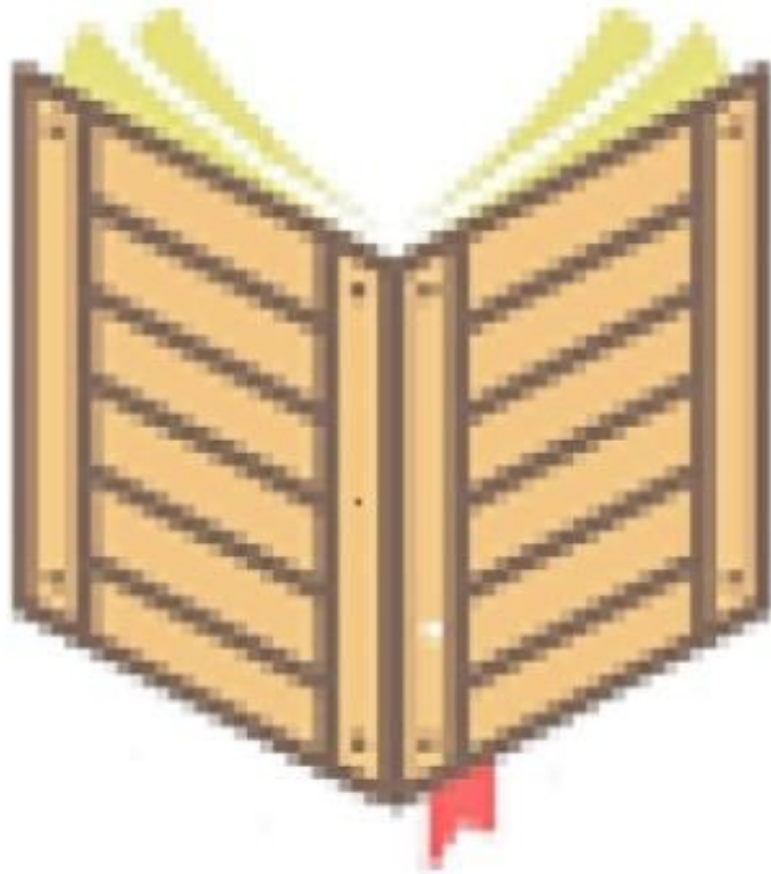
I checked my phone and still nothing from Simon had sent



NOVELSGURU.COM

him a lot of call backs..Him: expecting a call? I looked at him..
Me: sort off Him: Simon?I nodded..
Him: When do you guys see each other?Me: he is busy and far
Him: so it is a long distant relationship?I nodded..
Him: must be hard Me: We will get thereOur order came up..
Him: Let's eat i have to be at the studio

We started eating and the BBQ sauce was nice no lie..Him: so my
mom asked if we can come to church later,



NOVELSGURU.COM

she's preaching and would like you to lead the choir I started coughing..

Him: Are you alright? I nodded again..

Me: Sorry about that Him: Its cool

I thought about my Grandmother's words, her saying i shouldn't even show up at church because she doesn't want me to embarrass more..

Me: i don't think that ill be able to come to church Him: Why?

Me: i.. Well.. I need to do a lot of things around the house i'm sure that later i will be tired

He chuckled..

Him: i don't buy that, what really is the problem? I kept quiet...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: my mother would be very disappointed if you don't make it
I drank my Soda..

Him: Come on it'll be fun, and i won't feel comfortable showing up
alone
I still kept quiet..

Him: if you don't come i won't come too and you will have to answer
to my mother

That would be bad, i don't wanna give Ms Jackson any reason to
dislike me plus we going to church my Grandmother would be very
crazy to make a scene at church..

After eating, we took the clothes and made our way home. Funny
how i refer to his place as "Home"

The drive home was a bit long, gave me a lot of time to think about
my life, Simon, Blessing, and my unborn baby which i'm supposed to
kill tonight. How does a life of a 17 year old get to be this messed
up? I don't even know



NOVELSGURU.COM

where my life is headed right now, everything is sooo dark iam in this dark tunnel where i can't even see a bit of light that can lead me to the Exit...

I was tired physically, Emotionally, and mentally. If i had one wish right now i would wish for death, i mean death has to be so easy because life is very hard..

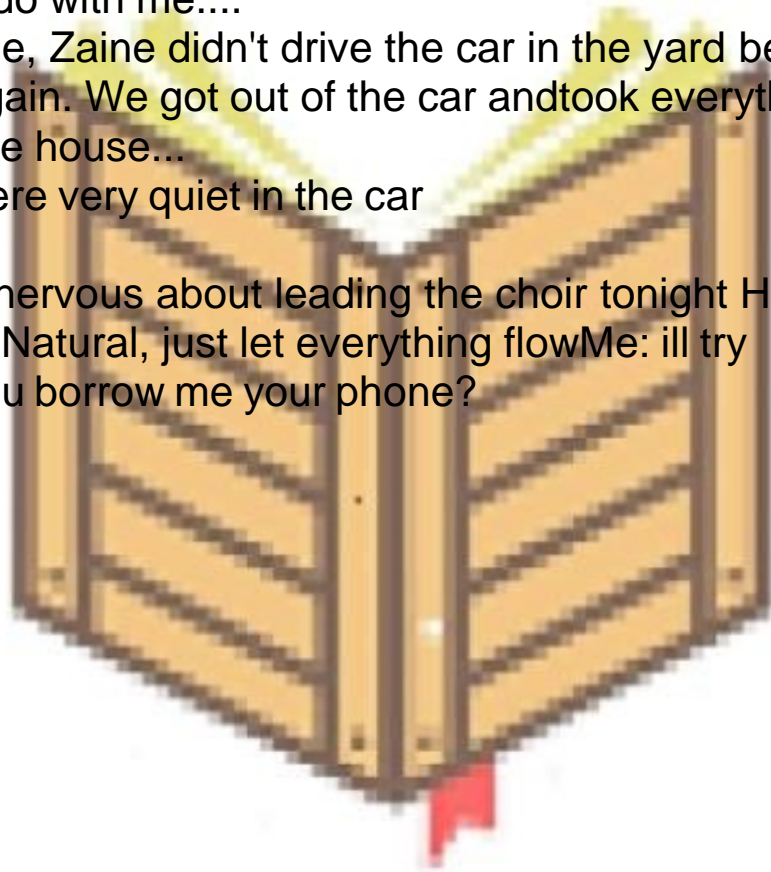
What's worse is that i cannot even contact my mother or Lucy to talk to them, i am all by myself with no one other than Blessing. I cannot count Simon because right now it looks like he doesn't want anything to do with me....

We got home, Zaine didn't drive the car in the yard because he was going out again. We got out of the car and took everything from the car inside the house...

Him: You were very quiet in the car

Me: Im just nervous about leading the choir tonight Him: Don't worry you a Natural, just let everything flow Me: ill try

Him: Can you borrow me your phone?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave it to him..

Him: You need a new phone

Me: Maybe if you pay me ill get a new phone
Him: do you even have a bank account?

Me: No

Him: so how will i pay you? Me: give it to me in my hand

Him: i cannot physically give you a lot of money you need to open a bank account

I don't even know how that works..

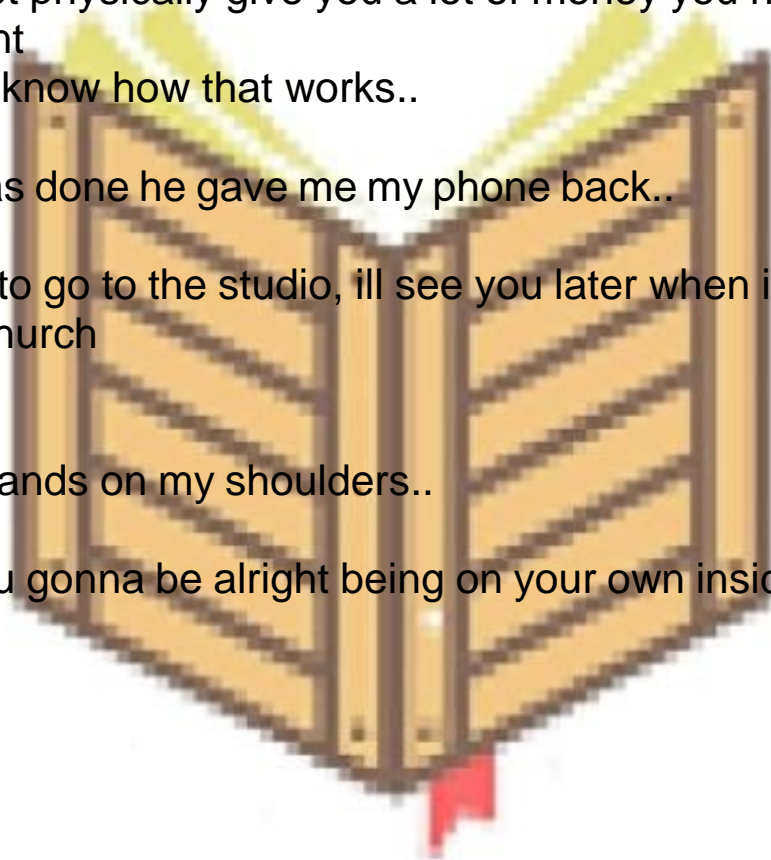
When he was done he gave me my phone back..

Him: I have to go to the studio, ill see you later when i come to pick you up for church

Me: Okay

He put his hands on my shoulders..

Him: Are you gonna be alright being on your own inside the



NOVELSGURU.COM

house?

Me: Zaine i am not 3 years old

Him: Yeah this time around don't take forever to prepare yourself for church

Me: i won't

Him: ill see you then Me: Okay

He took his things and made his way out..

I took the clothes to the guest room, then after i tidied up around the house..

.

. #ZAINÉ

Since i was feeling better and everything, i had to go back to the studio and continue working..

We had to get Blake's new album out, and we had to finish Chichi's mixtape..



NOVELSGURU.COM

They were already working when i got there, i have dedicated Artists.
Chichi: Hey look at you, how you feeling? She came and hugged me..
Me: Im cool you know everything is going Ayt now

Her: You got your vision back i see, what's up with that? Me: it
wasn't something serious

Blake came out from the recording booth.. Him: Boy

Me: Yeah china im back

Him: You didn't need to see that optometrist after all? Me: true that

Him: Let's get to work and we got a tour to prepare for remember?

Me: How can i forget about that.. Look yall go do your thing i have a
serious phone call to make



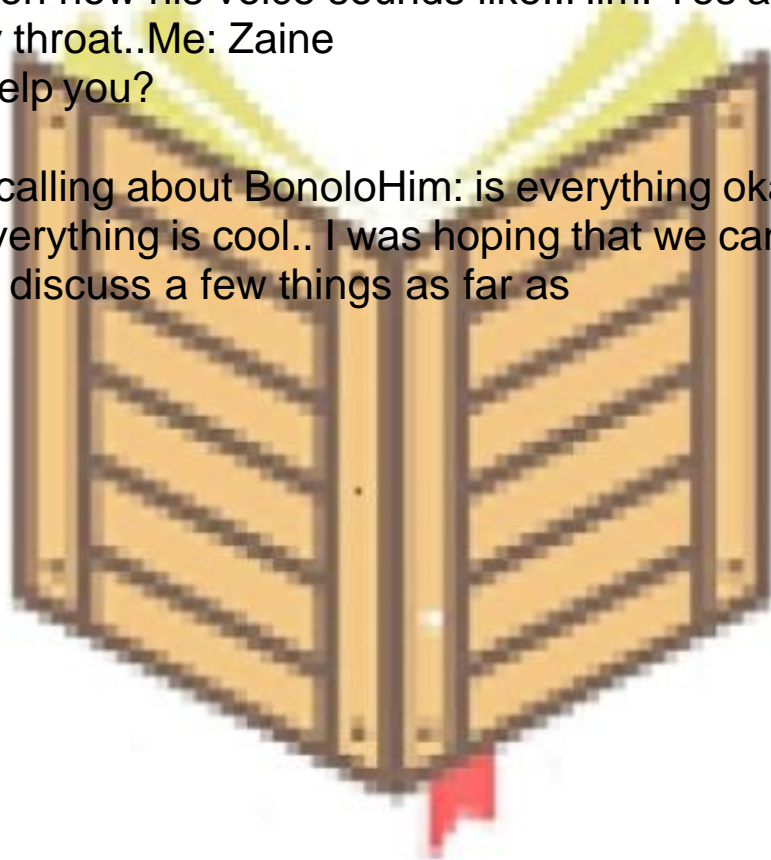
NOVELSGURU.COM

Blake: i hope Its Dr Dre
Me: You'll never know
I made my way out to make that call. When i asked for Bonolo's phone i actually stole Simon's number i figured out that maybe if i talk to him he can let me in on what's happening with Bonolo, so i called him and he answered..
Him: Hello

Me: am i speaking to Simon?

I had forgotten how his voice sounds like..
Him: Yes and who is this?
I cleared my throat..
Me: Zaine
Him: Can i help you?

Me: Yes im calling about Bonolo
Him: is everything okay?
Me: Yeah everything is cool.. I was hoping that we can meet up tomorrow to discuss a few things as far as



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bonolo is concerned

He kept quiet for a while.. Him: What are you to Bonolo?

Me: i am her Fri..i mean i am her boss Him: so how does Bonolo concern you?Me: will you be available tomorrow?

Him: i work at Benoni, ill only be free during lunchtimefrom 13:00-14:00

Me: cool ill make the tripHim: cool

I hung up, hope that i will get the information that i needfrom him. I then heard someone coughing behind me, i turned around to check who it was and it was Melissa..

Her: Hi Zaine

She still looked like a mess, but better than how she wasat the hospital...

She smiled at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: You not even gonna come and hug me?Me: ummm Yeah
I walked up to her and hugged her,she was shaking andfinding it
hard to maintain hee balance..

Her: i missed you

This cannot be happening..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥28 #ZAINÉ

I got some drinks and then we went to sit in another roomso we can
talk, we needed to talk..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How are you feeling?

She looked at me and smiled..

Her: Im feeling much better Thank youMe: You don't look better

Her: i do get pains here and there, but ill be fineMe: That's good

Her: The Nurse told me you came to see meMe: Yes i did you were still in a bad state Her: Thank you though

Me: You welcome

We drank the cool drink in silence.. Me: if i may ask what really happened?She looked down..

Her: i don't wanna talk about it Zaine

Me: Its okay sorry if i made you feel uncomfortableShe closed her eyes and forced tears to fall..



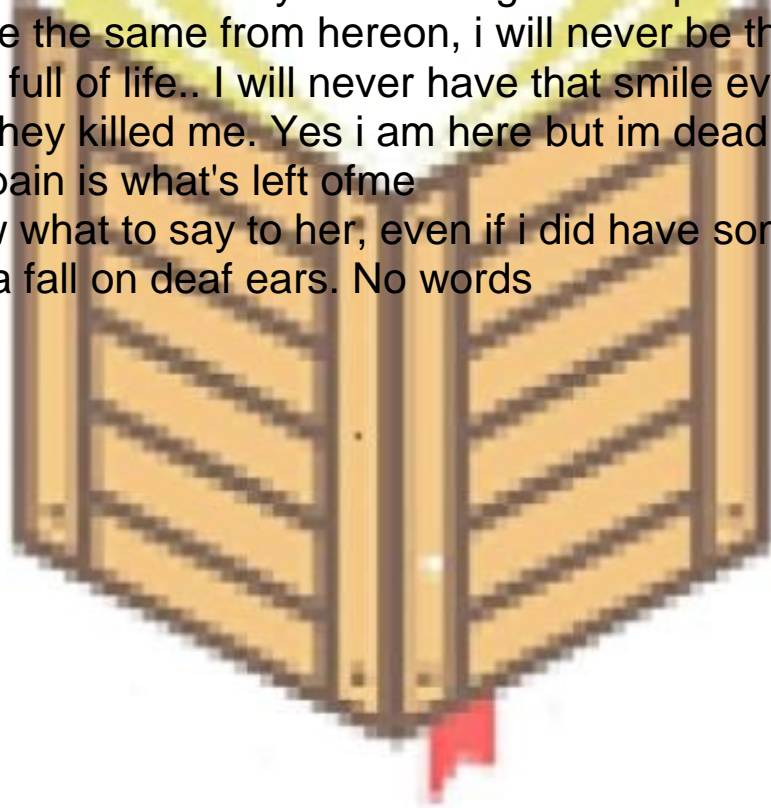
NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i still have a clear picture of what happened to me. Those 4 men holding me down and taking turns with me. I could still feel their hands chocking me, their tongues forcing their way into my mouth..

She shook her head and put her hand on her chest, her level of being emotional was now sky rocket high...

Her: i..i..i asked them to stop, i begged them to stop Zaine but they continued, my scream was not loud enough to reach and Damage their eardrums, my heart was not beating enough to alert them that i was scared, my tears Zaine.. My Tears didn't wet them enough to make them realise that they were killing me deep inside. My life is not gonna be the same from hereon, i will never be that girl who was bubbly, full of life.. I will never have that smile ever again, they ruined me, they killed me. Yes i am here but im dead Zaine only my Shadow of pain is what's left of me

I didn't know what to say to her, even if i did have something to say it was gonna fall on deaf ears. No words



NOVELSGURU.COM

will take away the pain that she has been through, no words will reverse time and right the wrongs of what happened that day to her she will forever have to live with what happened. My anger and hate towards God comes from situations like this, why can't God protect the Vulnerable? Why does he let such cruelty happen to women and children leaving them with Permanent scars both Emotionally and mentally? If he is a Protector and Good then why is he allowing evil to roam around like this? She wiped her tears..

Her: it was when your mom kicked me out. I had nowhere to go, i spent the day just walking around trying to think of something until it was dark. As i was walking not knowing where i was heading, i heard a loud noise behind me i turned and looked i saw headlights coming from down the road as they approached me i noticed that it was what looked like a GTI. The car slowed down its pace right next to me and the window rolled down i then saw 4 to 5 guys i can't quite remember. It was very dark and 10min can pass without a car passing by it was a very quiet road.



NOVELSGURU.COM

They first started making weird comments and when ignored they threw insults at me
I put my arm around her shoulders..

Me: Shhhhh you don't have to go there again
She laid her head slightly on my chest..

Her: When all of that was happening to me i kept on asking myself that if i die will you know how much i love you (Crying)

Me: Shhhhh

With my other hand i brushed her hair...

After what seemed like forever of her crying, she finally composed herself..

Her: Im sorry about that
Me: don't be silly

Her: all i do is cry this days
I wiped her tears..

Me: crying sometimes cleanses the soul



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i wish that was true Me: Where are you staying?

Her: With a friend, but ill have to find another place to staybecause her Husband is coming back in a few days and she says that her Husband has an eye for other women and with what happened to me she's scared that her he might try his way with me

Me: That's bad, why don't you go home?Her: and say what?

She took a deep breath..

Her: i left home for a while then i suddenly come back saying that this and that happened to me, do you think myparents are gonna believe me?

I kept quiet..

Her: You don't know my parents Zaine they are evill remembered what James revealed to me as far as

Melissa is concerned, but this is not the best time to bring



NOVELSGURU.COM

up the matter..

Me: You can stay with me until you back on your feet againShe looked at me not believing that i've just said that..

Her: No Zaine i can't

Me: This happened because of my mom and im not gonnalet it happen again

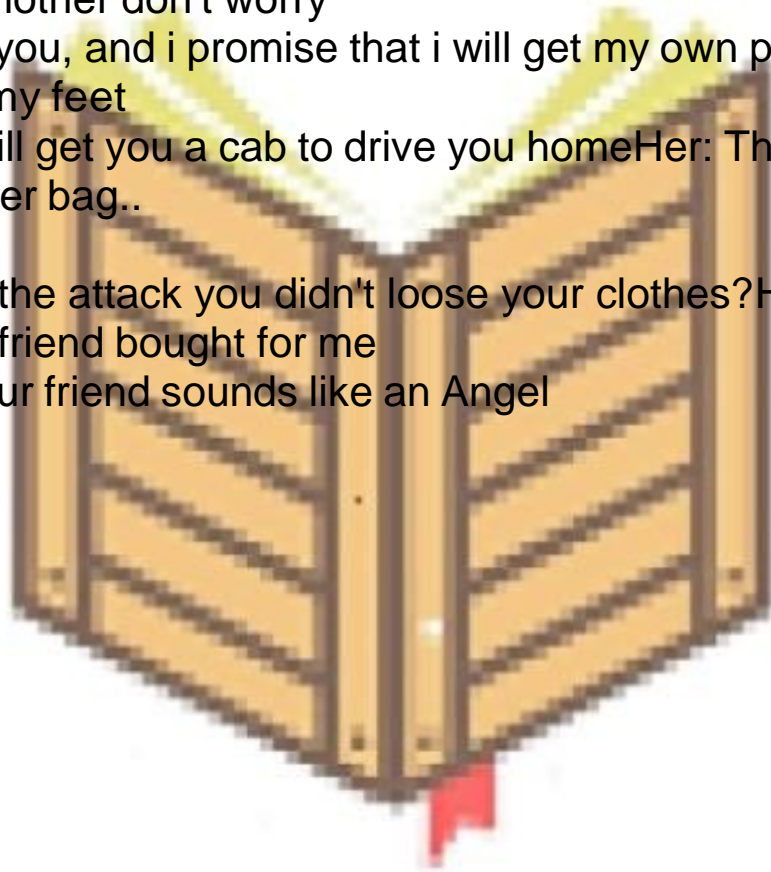
Her: i don't wanna have any run ins with Ms Jackson againMe: i can handle my mother don't worry

Her: Thank you, and i promise that i will get my own placeas soon as i get on my feet

Me: i know, ill get you a cab to drive you homeHer: Thank you I looked at her bag..

Me: with all the attack you didn't loose your clothes?Her: Its new clothes, my friend bought for me

Me: Ohw your friend sounds like an Angel



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: She is

Me: Let me call the cab for you

.

. #BONOLO

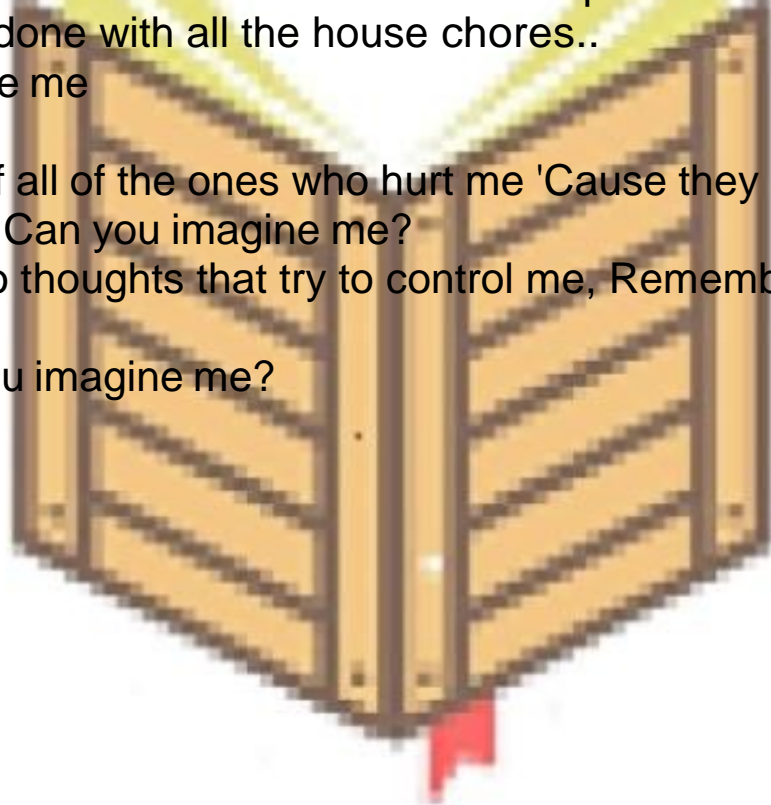
I was very nervous about tonight, i mean i will be standing right infront of a lot of people singing for them and hoping that i take them to heaven in a spiritual level, i was only leftwith a few hours until we go to church so i used that time to practice my Vocals since i was done with all the house chores..

Me: "Imagine me

Letting go of all of the ones who hurt me 'Cause they neverdid deserve me Can you imagine me?

Saying no to thoughts that try to control me, Rememberingall you told me

Lord, can you imagine me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Over what my Grandmother said and healed from what my StepFather (Abdul)
And I wanna live and not read that page again... "

My phone disturbed me when it rang, i went and got it then Answered..

Me: Hello

Simon: Sweetheart

Me: Simon? Ohhh my God im so glad to hear your voice

Him: Sorry that i didn't respond to your call backs i was busy

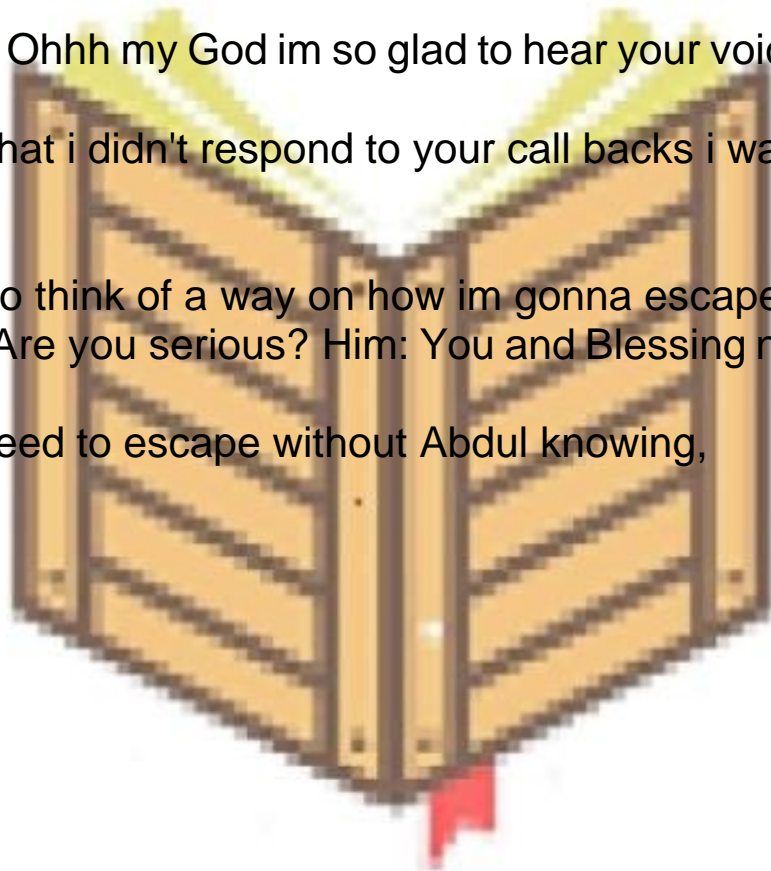
Me: with?

Him: trying to think of a way on how im gonna escape thePurgatory

Me: What? Are you serious? Him: You and Blessing need me

Simon

Him: i just need to escape without Abdul knowing,



NOVELSGURU.COM

because if i just up and leave he might have me followed and he will find out where you are

Me: You taking a great risk Him: i have too

Me: Please be careful i don't know what ill do if something happens to you

Him: Nothing will happen

Me: How is everyone at the Compoud?

Him: Your mother is sick she's been admitted in the Purgatory hospital

Me: What happened?

Him: Since you left her health hasn't been good Me: That's not good

Him: but she is a strong woman she will pull through Me: i hope so

Him: she will



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: and Abdul is he still at it?

Him: Yes he got himself another girl again

Me: that man is sick

Him: it looks like he is slowly but surely forgetting about you but i

need to make sure before i leave

Me: Well i cannot wait

Him: it will be sooner than you think

Me: i know

Him: i love you and take care of yourself

Me: i love you too

Him: bye

Me: Bye

My heart jumped for joy, at least things are still good between me and Simon. Very much soon we will be together, we are going to be a family at last..

The door opened popping the bubble of my world offantasy. Some girl walked in with some man...



NOVELSGURU.COM

She was bruised and had crutches with her, the guy was holding her bag for her..

She looked at me..Her: Who are you?Me: i am Bonolo

She made her way to me... Her: What are you doing here?

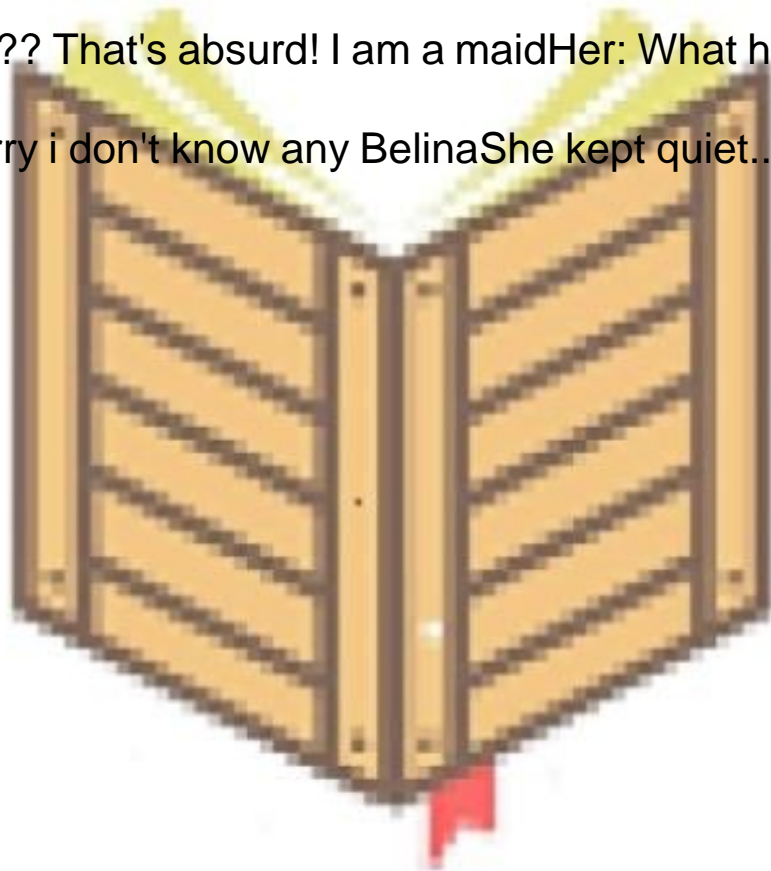
Me: i work For Zai.. I mean Mr RadebeShe looked at me from head to toe..

Her: working for him how? Are you selling yourself to him?Me: i don't understand

Her: are you a prostitute?

Me: a Prosti?? That's absurd! I am a maidHer: What happened to Belina?

Me: i am sorry i don't know any BelinaShe kept quiet..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i am Melissa Zaine's girlfriend
Me: Ohw
Her: didn't expect that i see
She looked at the guy..
Her: Bonolo you can take my bag to the bedroom
Me: Ofcause
I made my way to get her bag and the guy walked out..
Her: at what time are you gonna knock off?
Me: i live here
She chuckled..
Her: ithi uyadlala (tell me you joking)
I held my peace..
Voice: She's not kidding

We looked at the door and Zaine walked in..
Melissa: Baby what's going on?
Him: i had to rush home because i knew this was gonna



NOVELSGURU.COM

happen

We looked at him hoping to get a clear explanation..Him: i see you ladies have met each other

Melissa: Yes we did, what i don't understand is her livingwith you
Zaine walked over to me..

Him: ya she's my live in helper and friendHer: friend?

Zaine: yes friend

She kept quiet and Zaine looked at me..Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: haven't prepared myself as yetHim: here we go again

Me: give me a few minutes

Him: You know Its gonna be hoursMe: ill try to make it Minutes



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: lets go then

He put his hands on my shoulders as always leading me to the bathroom..

Me: You won't change Him: Why should i?

Me: i wish you were still blind

Him: That's why im taking you to church you are evil, gonna pray for you child!

Me: Ohw please you can't even pray to save yourself Him: wanna bet?

Me: Yes

He squeezed me on my shoulders and started talking in a language that i didn't understand calming he is praying in tongues and i just laughed..

.

To be continued PURGATORY



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥29 #ZAINE

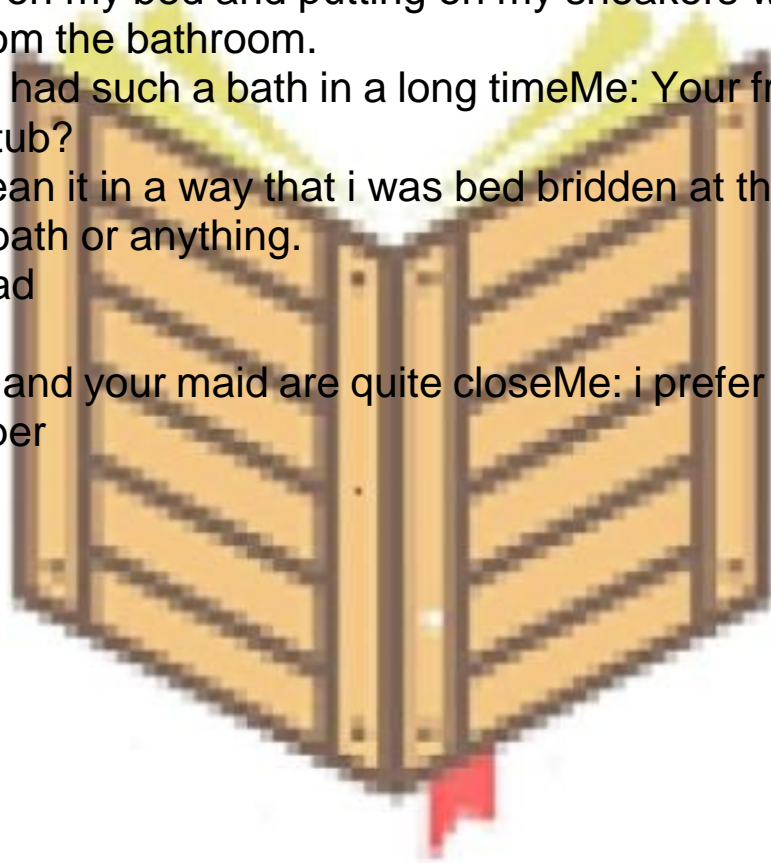
I prepared myself for the church service, i really didn't wanna go but my mom needs full support so i am gonnago and support her.. I was sitting on my bed and putting on my sneakers whenMelissa walked in from the bathroom.

Her: haven't had such a bath in a long timeMe: Your friend didn't have a bathtub?

Her: No i mean it in a way that i was bed bridden at thehospital and i couldn't go bath or anything.

Me: that's sad

Her: So you and your maid are quite closeMe: i prefer her being called a helper



NOVELSGURU.COM

She sat down next to me..

Her: i miss us, miss how our relationship used to be
Me: yeah things used to be great between us

Her: What happened? You no longer look at me as how you used to, Its like we total strangers

Me: i just think that things would've been better if you were honest with me

She looked at me dumbfounded..

Me: Your history with guys? Sex tapes? Nude pictures?
She sighed then put her hand on her forehead..

Her: guess it was only a matter of time till you found out
Me: Why did you lie?

Her: honestly Zaine, that is a past i am trying so hard to move on from. I am not proud or happy with the choices imade back then and ive paid for my sins. You don't know how hard it is waking up in the morning knowing that you have a history that you have moved on from but there's



NOVELSGURU.COM

still people who bring it up to your face. I have made a success of my career or at least i hope so, and all i want is for my modelling picture in a bikini posted on social media without people throwing comments like "Skank".. "tramp"..

Me: i don't know Melissa

Her: i promise you i am a completely different person from how i used to be

She held my hand and i stood up..Me: You lied to me Melissa

Her: How could i have told you that i was a loose girl?Would you have still loved me?

I turned and looked at her..

Me: i don't know but you could've been honest and gave me a chance to respond and react

Her: So where does this leave us now?Me: i just have a lot to think about Her: take all the time you need



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my things and made my way to the door.. Me: Are you gonna be alright alone for a few hours?She nodded...

Me: see you later

I opened the door and Walked out, i bumped into Bonolo inthe passage..

Me: at least this time you finished in timeShe rolled her eyes..

Her: lets go

We walked out to the car.. Bonolo looked great at always, ididn't know that girls with slim bodies can look this fine not even Mel's body is this beautiful looking and she's a model..

We got into the car and i started driving..Me: Are you ready?

Her: i have no choice

Me: at least you will be singing and not talking



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: is that better? Me: a whole lot better
Her: i hope so
We drove up to my house so we can get my mother and the rest of the family, we have to leave together for church..
I parked in the drive way, then we got out of the car and we made our way to the door..
Bonolo: Wow your Parents house is huuge Me: They have done pretty well for themselves
Her: but why is it away from other houses and roads and shops?
Me: They like their privacy plus Its good to be away from everyone so they don't harass you
We got to the door, i open and we walked in..
Her: You didn't even ring the bell
Me: Its my house, i don't have too



NOVELSGURU.COM

We found Nkhensani at the kitchen, she is my Brother's wife. Nkhensani is a beautiful dark skinned Tsonga girl allthe way from Limpopo in Tzaneen. Her and my brother met at varsity if my memory doesn't decieve me and theyhave been together ever since..

Me: Hey you

She looked at me all smiling..

Nkhensani is very sweet, humble, and has a good heart ihope Leighton knows how blessed he is..

I went and hugged her.. Me: minjani? (how are you)She laughed..

Me: What, i am learning?Her: i know you are

Me: You don't believe me?Her: trust me i do

She looked at Bonolo..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: This is Bonolo she is my friend and my helper, Bonolo this is Nkhensani my sister in law

Nkhensani: Hello Bonolo Its a blessing to know you Bonolo: Same here

Nkhensani: You beautiful Bonolo: You beautiful too Me: Where is Ms Jackson?

Nkhensani: in her bedroom, nervous you know how she is Me: We have to go, ill get her

Her: Please do

I went to get my mother..

.

. #BONOLO

I was standing there busy looking around, this house was big and beautiful. Its amazing how other people are living,



NOVELSGURU.COM

they live a life of luxury and some of us we barely surviving..
Nkhensani: would you like something to drink?Me: No im fine thank you
Her: Come on a drink won't hurt

Me: i don't want my bladder acting up at church, i don't like doing ups and downs
Her: i know what you talking about

Zaine and Ms Jackson came down after a few minutes, and Ms Jackson looked beautiful as always. Her dressing style is very elegant and classy, she is a woman of class..
Ms J: Bonolo i am glad you made itShe came and hugged me..
Her: Thank you for coming

Me: You welcome and you look good by the wayHer: Thank you very much and so are do you Me: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ms J: should we go?Nkhensani: i think so
Zaine: isn't Leighton gonna join us?

Ms Jackson and Nkhensani looked down..Ms J: Its a long story, can we go?
Zaine: Let's go

We walked out to the car..

The church service went very well, when i first grabbed themic to lead the choir in Praise and worship i was very nervous but as i kept on singing everything started flowing..
It wasn't that full which made things better for me, my Grandmother was sitting there with her friend maZondi..
After the Praise&whorship we prayed and then Ms Jackson was called to come and Preach. She preached about forgiveness and second chances, that if God can forgive us for our darkest sins why can't we forgive others



NOVELSGURU.COM

too? she really owned her preaching and it was very educational i really enjoyed i hope the message moved my Grandmother and taught her something..

When the church service was finished i decided to go and talk to my Grandmother because she has been eyeing me ever since. I went up to her with hopes that what she has just witnessed will make her to be proud of me and at least forgive me. She was standing with maZondi and she didn't have Blessing with her..

I was scared as i made my way to them, my Grandmother is unpredictable there's no telling how she's gonna react to the situation..

Me: Good evening

maZondi gave me a weird look almost as if like i disgust her..

Grandma: kaze ufunani manje lo (i wonder what she wants)

maZondi: hai you will find me in the bus

Grandma: Okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

She walked away..

I looked at my grandmother, who looked like she had swallowed 10 lemons. Her expression was very sour.

Me: Grandma i would like to Apologise again for what happened, i really didn't mean to disrespect you like that

Her: but you did

Me: i know and i am sorry

Her: So what do you want now?

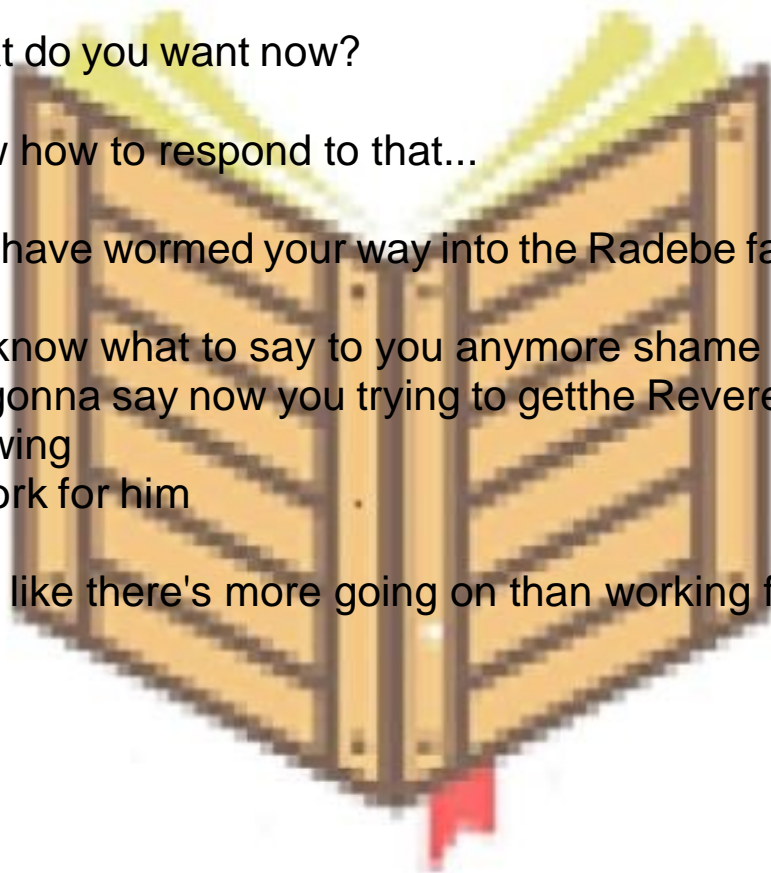
I didn't know how to respond to that...

Her: So you have wormed your way into the Radebe family?Me: Its not like that

Her: i don't know what to say to you anymore shame Bonolo, what are people gonna say now you trying to getthe Reverend's Son under your wing

Me: i just work for him

Her: it looks like there's more going on than working forhim



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't know why my grandmother always has to be like this..
Her: do you know Refiloe? maZondi's Daughter? I shook my head..
Her: Well mannered girl, she was raised in a good way and Ms Jackson knows her she's supposed to marry Ms Jackson's Son Zaine but now your Jezebel tendencies are really tempering with fate
Me: those are not my intentions

Her: Bonolo i don't know how to tell you this but.. Compared to Refiloe you are nothing! Refiloe is studying at a college she is a virgin, she doesn't drink, she doesn't party she doesn't have friends especially ones that will lead her astray now do you really think that you would compete with that?

I felt tears forming and burning my eyes..

Her: You are a drunk, you have a baby, you are uneducated you are the whore of Babylon! Stop with what you are doing.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Do you think that Ms Jackson will let her Son marry you? No you will only be his whore like you already are.
She looked up..

Her: God why? Why did you bring me such a curse! She then looked at me..

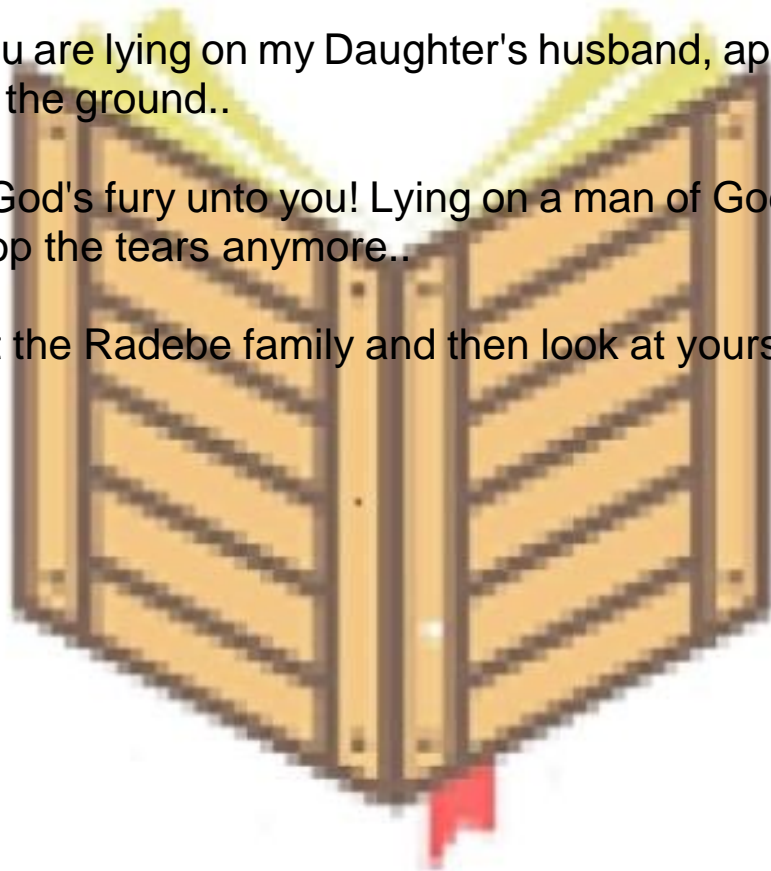
Her: Bonolo you don't even know who the father of your baby is!

Me: i do know.. Its my step father he used to sleep with me
She laughed..

Her: Now you are lying on my Daughter's husband, a prophet?
She spat on the ground..

Her: i send God's fury unto you! Lying on a man of God like that!
I couldn't stop the tears anymore..

Her: Look at the Radebe family and then look at yourself



NOVELSGURU.COM

do you belong there?

She turned me around and i looked at them. They weren't your typical family..

Her: You wanna embarrass such a family? Do they even know about your sins?

I turned and looked at her..

Her: yazi you have hurt maZondi so bad, yerr Bonolo maan! She hit me on my shoulder..

I was crying now and also had hiccups..

Her: Where did you even get the clothes from? I didn't answer her i kept on crying..

Her: Tomorrow i want you back home, you will quit your job and apply for the government monthly welfare your child will have to live on that R250 or R300 a month.. And stop crying we not at a funeral! I wiped my tears..

Her: Tomorrow i want you home i am serious, if you not



NOVELSGURU.COM

home i will fetch you do we understand each other?I nodded..
She clicked her tongue and walked away..

After such a beautiful service that we had, then someone breaks
you like that? Lord have mercy on my broken soul..

You cannot begin to imagine how i felt at that moment, iwas torn
into a million pieces...

I then felt someone putting their hands on my shoulders..Voice: Are
you ready to go?

I turned and looked at him..

Zaine: What's wrong what happened?

I couldn't say anything, i was too emotional with to sayanything..
He pulled me closer to him and hugged me as i sobbed..

.

To be continued



NOVELSGURU.COM

..

No edits

Typed in a hurry i am at the clinicPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥30 #BONOLO

Ms Jackson didn't want us to go straight home, she suggested that we pass by her house for a delicious meal before going home which will just take about 40min, she wanted me to try her Lamb stew and give her some pointers. I was still very emotional about what my Grandmother said, no matter how hard i tried to compose myself and remain calm i just couldn't it was too much...

When the table was being set up, Zaine suggested that we



NOVELSGURU.COM

go take a walk around the pool to get fresh air, he was drinking beer as always and i was on Guava juice..

It wasn't cold, was just windy but the wind hit my skin softly and dried my tears that were streaming down my cheeks..

Him: everytime when i feel emotional or angry or even confused, i used to walk around the pool at this time alone to clear my head and just look at the stars..

My mind was far away, i was lost deep in my thoughts.

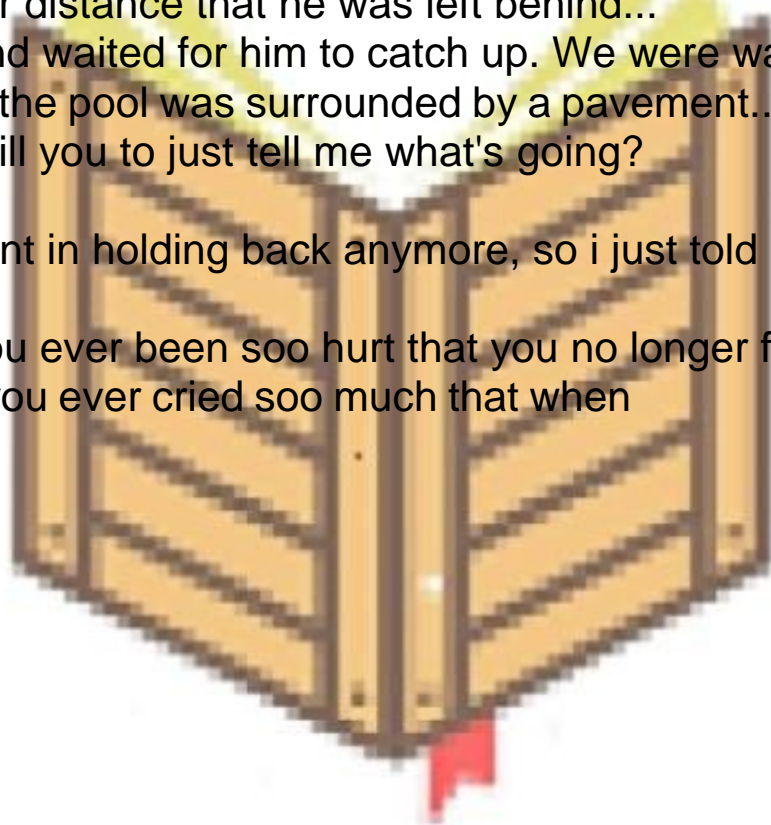
He slowed down and i continued walking, i only realised later when i was at a far distance that he was left behind...

I stopped and waited for him to catch up. We were walking barefooted, the pool was surrounded by a pavement..

Him: will it kill you to just tell me what's going?

I saw no point in holding back anymore, so i just told him what happened..

Me: have you ever been soo hurt that you no longer feel the need to live? Have you ever cried soo much that when



NOVELSGURU.COM

you wake up one day and the whole day passes without you crying it suddenly doesn't feel normal? Have you ever spent most of your days wondering if death is easy, because life is extremely hard? I giggled after saying that, just didn't believe that i was breaking it all down to someone i've just known for a couple of days..

Me: it all started when my Mother married this "Prophet" named Abdul

I literally did the inverted Comas..

Me: i was 6 years i think and he promised us the world, he promised us the moon and the stars. He told me that his God was gonna help him take care of us..

I wiped my tears..

Me: the first few weeks were very nice, we were shown love, we were treated with respect and we were surrounded by loving people, the Purgatory felt so real they really stood for what they believed in and that is leading a



NOVELSGURU.COM

perfect life..

He was still looking at me, anticipating what i am gonna say next i couldn't put or make out the emotions he had atthat moment..

Me: As i grew up things started changing. He didn't see meas a little girl that i was anymore or his step daughter. It allstarted with a touch, then pecks on the lips until a prophecy came about that i am supposed to fullfil his sexual hunger. I was young i didn't know what to think or what was happening but he said that Disrespecting God ordenying the Prophecy might bring about deadly consequences..

I looked at my glass, and then i looked at him again..

Me: That's how my journey started of being his sexual possession. He took my virginity, he helped himself almost everyday he didn't care if i was tired, as long as idon't bleed it won't alert him that he should stop..

I exhaled trying to continue telling the story withoutbreaking down even more...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Simon was chosen to cover the shame, although this was a Prophecy from the one above but what was happening was hidden from everyone, Simon had to take the fall for everything even when I fell pregnant and had my baby Simon had to take the fall and be the Father of my baby. You know he slept with me again a week after I had given birth to Blessing and here I am pregnant again.. He put his hand under his chin and squinted his eyes, I don't know if he was believing me or he thinks that I am lying...

Me: I was never allowed to go to school, actually girls at the Purgatory weren't allowed to go to school. He told us that we were created to be baby incubators, we belong at the kitchen and submitting to our husbands at all times, but funny enough he never did what he was doing to me to his daughters, he wasn't doing this to his own flesh and blood. When he was supposed to give me my freedom he denied, he said a prophecy came that we were supposed to get married. That's when my Mother and Simon decided to help me escape, and here I am.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took a sip from the glass..

Me: i thought that maybe living with my grandmother was gonna be better but you know what? She told me i am lying, she told me that I will feel God's fury for lying on Prophet Abdul, even called me the whore of Babylon
I exhaled again..

Me: Im done Zaine, i feel like just ending my life you feel me? I am done!

He still looked at me showing no emotion whatsoever. I don't blame him this was a lot to take in..

One of the helpers interrupted us when she told us that the food is ready, and we made our way to the house..

I was trying very hard as to not think about all the things that my Grandmother said, i was engaging in laughter, we were talking and it was just a peaceful dinner that i really enjoyed..

Ms J: So Bonolo what do you think? Me: it tastes better than mine



NOVELSGURU.COM

She laughed..

Her: You just lying to make me feel betterMe: i am serious

Nkhensani: i wish to taste yours Bonolo Ms J: Yes one day you

should cook for usMe: i will

We continued eating..

Ms J: Zaine what is your take on the meal?

Zaine kept quiet.. Ever since we sat at the table he hasbeen very quiet and lost in his own thoughts.

I held his hand and he looked at me..Me: Are you alright?

He faked a smile..Him: Yes i am

He looked at us..

Him: Can i be excused?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ms J: uhmm that's rude
Him: Just for a while
He stood up and went upstairs..
Nkhensani: What's going on with him?
Ms Jackson shrugged her shoulders...
We ate dinner and then we also had dessert all on our own without Zaine. After the dessert we decided to watch Tv while drinking coffee, i was already full..
Ms J: Its 23:00, are you guys gonna sleep over?
She asked that looking at me..
Me: i seriously don't know

Nkhensani: You can sleep over we have plenty of room
Me: ill have to ask Zaine
Ms J: Let me go and check up on him
She stood up and i stood up too..
Me: Can i please go?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She looked at me and smiled, then sat down..

I don't know why Zaine was acting like this but i hope Itsnot what i said..

I knocked and there wasn't any answer, i just decided toopen and walk in...

He was sitting on the bed with his elbows balancing on hislegs and his face buried in his hands..

It was very silent..

I cleared my throat, he looked at me and i noticed that hiseyes were a bit red..

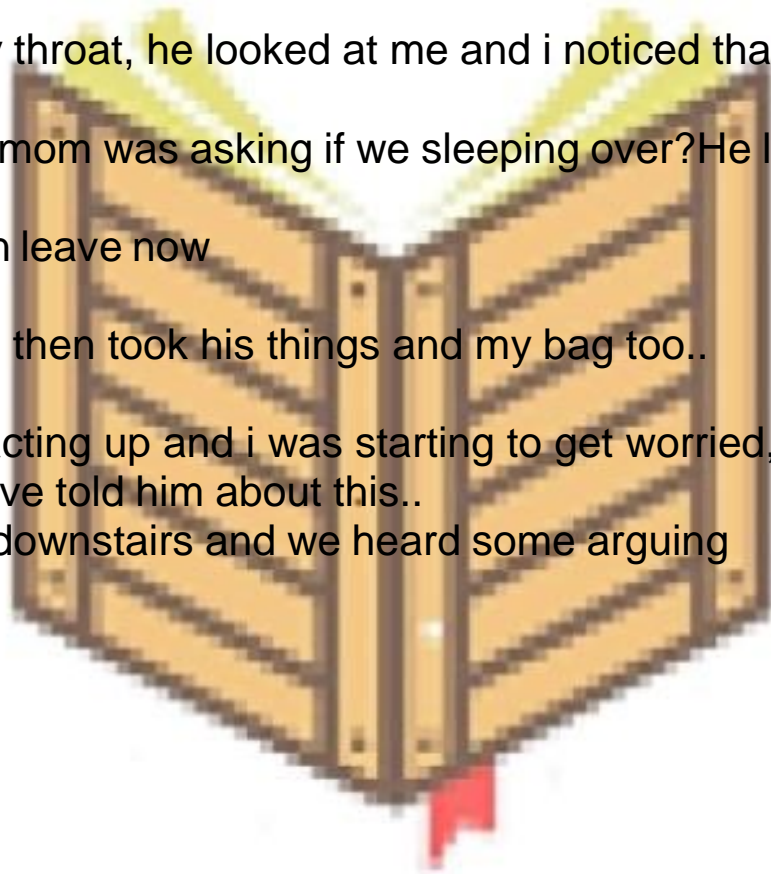
Me: i.. Your mom was asking if we sleeping over?He looked at the time..

Him: We can leave now

He stood up then took his things and my bag too..

Zaine was acting up and i was starting to get worried, i probably shouldn't have told him about this..

We walked downstairs and we heard some arguing



NOVELSGURU.COM

coming from the sitting room, we went there and his brother was now in the room busy arguing with his mother and Nkhensani was just looking down with tears falling..

Ms J: You married this poor child to let her sleep alone? What's wrong with you Leighton? It's not even a month since you got married and already you are acting up!

Leigh: Are you done?

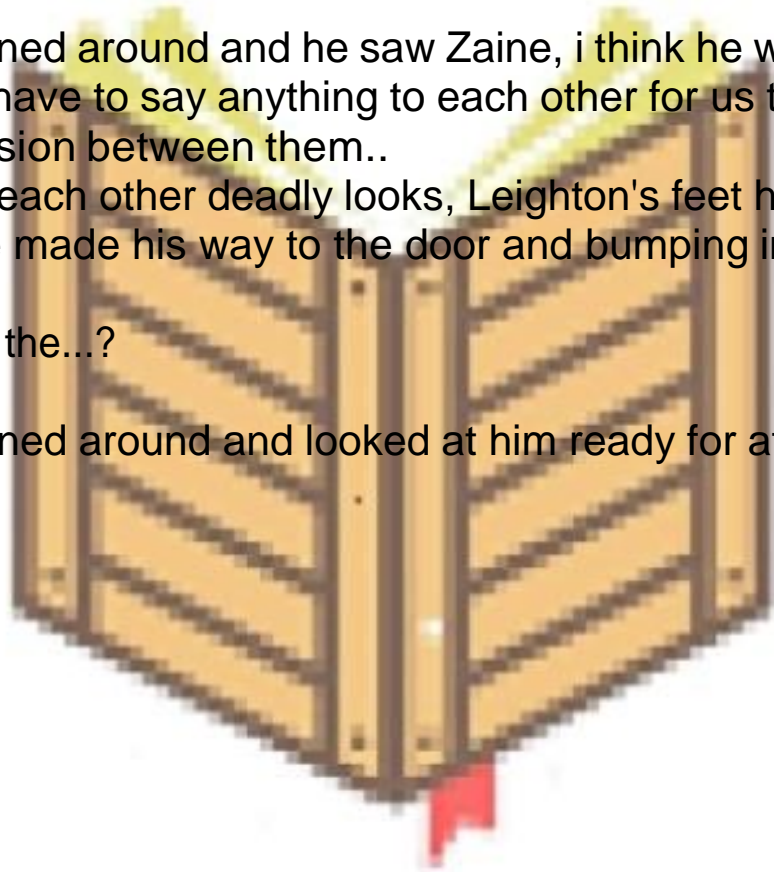
Ms J: am i.. who do you think you talking too?

Leighton turned around and he saw Zaine, i think he wasn't ready.. They didn't have to say anything to each other for us to notice that there was tension between them..

After giving each other deadly looks, Leighton's feet had the courage to move. He made his way to the door and bumping into Zaine on purpose..

Zaine: What the...?

Leighton turned around and looked at him ready for a fight..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leigh: my bad, im sorry

Zaine just lost it and went to Leighton started attacking him..
We were not prepared for that at all..Ms J: Leighton and Zaine stop it!!!

They were throwing each other around against the furniture it was a mess they were really out to kill each other..

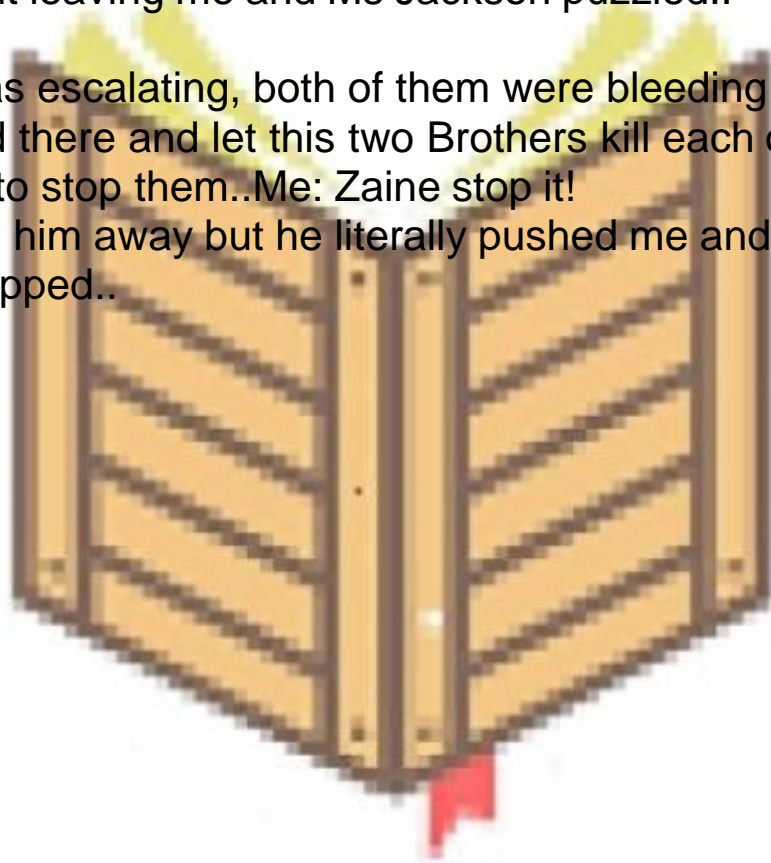
Nkhensani: i am calling security!!!

She went out leaving me and Ms Jackson puzzled..

The fight was escalating, both of them were bleeding and i wasn't gonna stand there and let this two Brothers kill each other...

I went over to stop them..Me: Zaine stop it!

I tried to pull him away but he literally pushed me and i fell,that's when he stopped..



NOVELSGURU.COM

They were both breathing very heavy, their clothes were torn, they were bleeding it was a lot going on..
Leighton looked at Zaine..

Him: i wish you were never born Zaine: i wish you were not my brother
Ms J: Hey i said stop it!!!

Zaine came to me and stretched his hand..
Him: Come on lets get out of here

I stretched my hand out to his and he helped me get up and then we made our way out..

Ms J: Zaine!!! Zaine ignored her..

The drive home was a deadly one, Zaine was driving shit! I know that i wanted to come face to face with death, but definitely not like this..

I was relieved when we got home safe, and we made our way in..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Melissa was standing at the kitchen looking like she was ready to explode..

Her: Where have you been, and what happened to you?

Zaine gave her the hand and made his way to the bedroom banging the door behind him..

Melissa folded her arms and looked at me opening up her nostrils as if like smoke is gonna come of there, i just ignored her too and made my way to the guest room i really didn't have time for her..

.

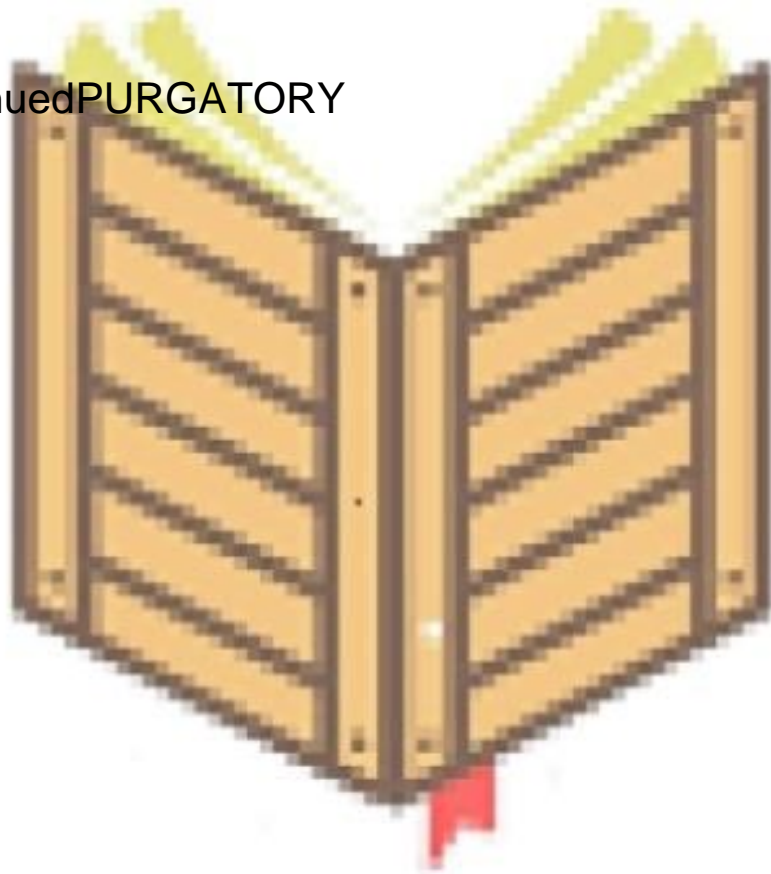
To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥31 #ZAINÉ



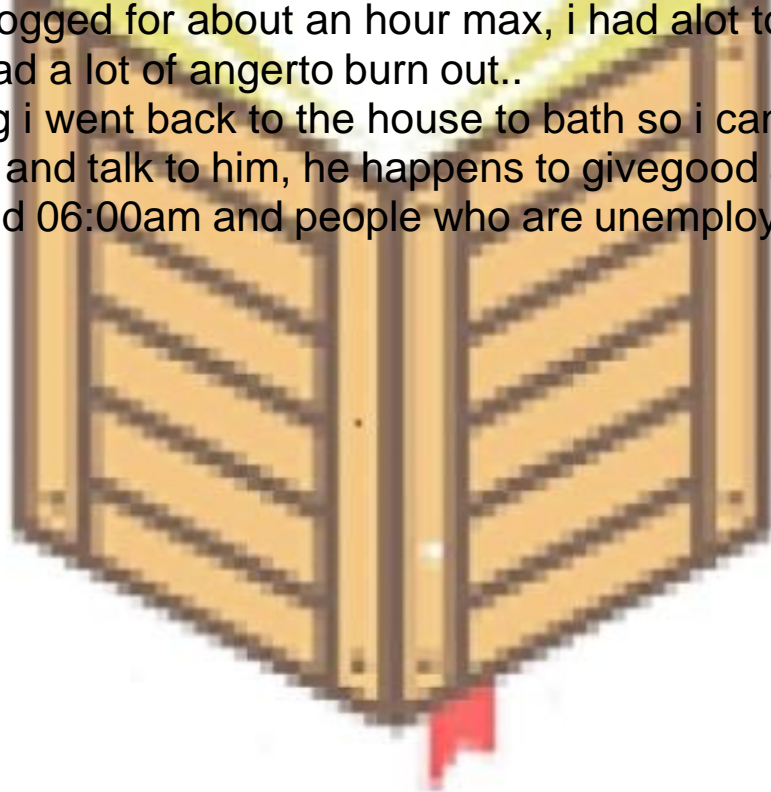
NOVELSGURU.COM

When Mel told me about how she was sexually violated and brutally beaten, i did feel a bit sad for her because nowoman deserves to go through such a traumatic experience but with Bonolo it was different. I was angry, i was hurt, i didn't understand how all of this happened to her at such a tender age. Step fathers too should be protective over their step daughters at all times because they had stepped up to becoming a father figure in their lives, but what this Abdul of a person did to Bonolo i can'teven find the right word to describe the person that he is..

I woke up early that morning and went for a morning jog, iwas still bruised from the fight i had with Leighton last night especially my knuckles. I jogged for about an hour max, i had alot to think about and i also had a lot of angerto burn out..

After jogging i went back to the house to bath so i can gocheck up on my Pops and talk to him, he happens to givegood advice..

It was around 06:00am and people who are unemployed or



NOVELSGURU.COM

don't go to school are supposed to be sleeping the morning away, but for some weird reason Mel was awake..

Her: MorningMe: Yeah

I went to turn on the water in the shower..Her: going to the studio?

Me: ill go later, now im going to see my Pops at thehospital

Her: Rev Radebe is in hospital? What happened?I looked at her..

Me: Just not feeling good

I took off my Tank top and then she came to me andhugged me from the back...

Her: want me to join you? Me: You should be sleeping

Her: i can't sleep when you not next to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turned around and held her hands, came closer thenkissed me...
We kissed for like 30sec then i pulled out..She looked at me.
Me: Sorry i can't do this

I went straight to the bathroom to shower..

I still thought of a way on what was gonna be my next step in helping Bonolo because quite Frankly this was a very tough situation and i was clueless..

When i was done showering, i put on my lotion then dressed up and walked out. I went to the guest room to check up on Bonolo first and she was still sleeping, then imade my way to the door passing Melissa at the kitchen while she was making herself something to eat..

Her: byeMe: bye

Her: Your maid is still sleeping



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was about to walk out when she said that. I turned and looked at her..

Me: Let her rest

Her: some other maids are very fortunate this days

Me: Let Bonolo be, i don't wanna come back and find out that you were troubling her

She kept quiet..

Me: Im glad i made myself clear

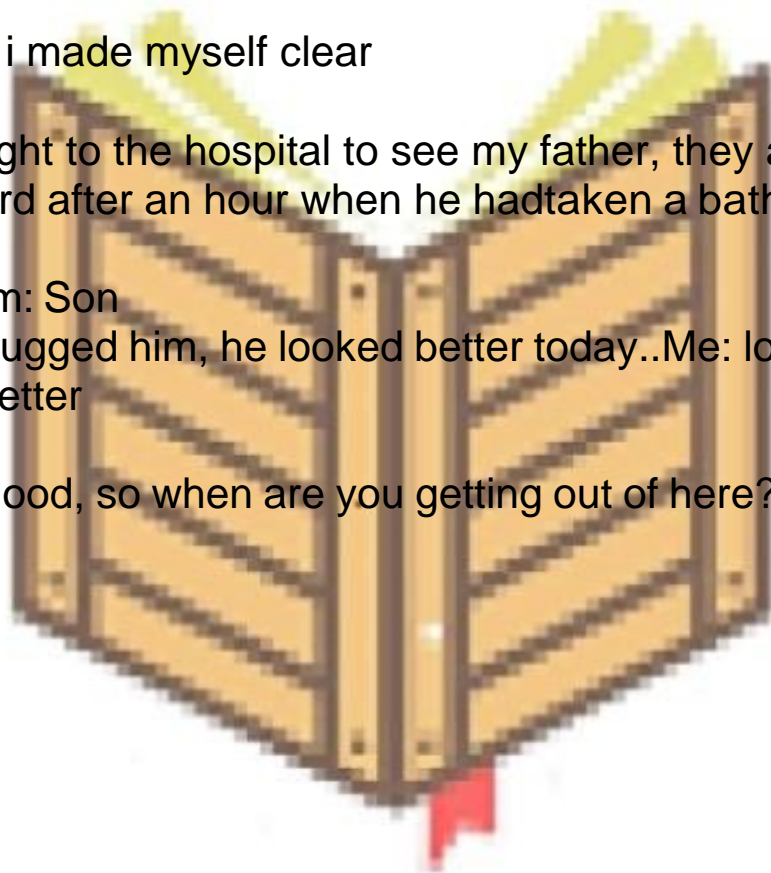
I drove straight to the hospital to see my father, they allowed me to go to his ward after an hour when he had taken a bath and ate breakfast..

Me: PopsHim: Son

I went and hugged him, he looked better today..Me: looking better

Him: i feel better

Me: That's good, so when are you getting out of here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Tomorrow

Me: that's even better We kept quiet..

Him: Mom told me about the fight you had with your Brother last night

I looked down...

Him: You two shouldn't be in each other's throats Me: i don't know what his problem is

Him: he is still trying to accept the fact that he was not the chosen one

Me: he acts like i asked for this Him: i know just be patient with him I nodded...

Him: Something on your mind? I looked at him..

Me: Nothing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i know you Zaine, talk to mel looked at him..

Me: i think..Him: Yes?

Me: am inlove with someoneHim: Who?

Me: BonoloHim: Okay

He didn't look or sound surprised... Me: What's that supposed to mean?He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: i am not God, i don't know your future

I know when he says that there's something he is hidingfrom me..

Me: Pops what are you not telling me?

Him: Nothing Son, Bonolo is a humble girl and very sweet i



NOVELSGURU.COM

like her Me: is it?

Him: pass me my Bible and stop asking a lot of questions I did as i was told..

.

. #BONOLO

I woke up and brushed my teeth, i washed my face while i was at it too..

I then started cleaning the house while singing my favourite gospel songs.

My cleaning session could go a lot faster if Melissa didn't play cleaning guard on me. She followed me wherever i went, standing there and looking at me as if like she's trying to see if i am doing a good job or not. It didn't take me that long to realise that Melissa is lazy, i am sure she never cleaned a day in her life but then what should i



NOVELSGURU.COM

expect from a 'Princess'. As i was singing she interruptedme when she started singing too..

Her: "i can't leave him alone, i tried that good boy game butthe dope boys turning me on.."

I am a very peaceful person or i would like to think ofmyself that way, i don't like engaging in fights or arguments so i let her be...

Her: Bonolo right?

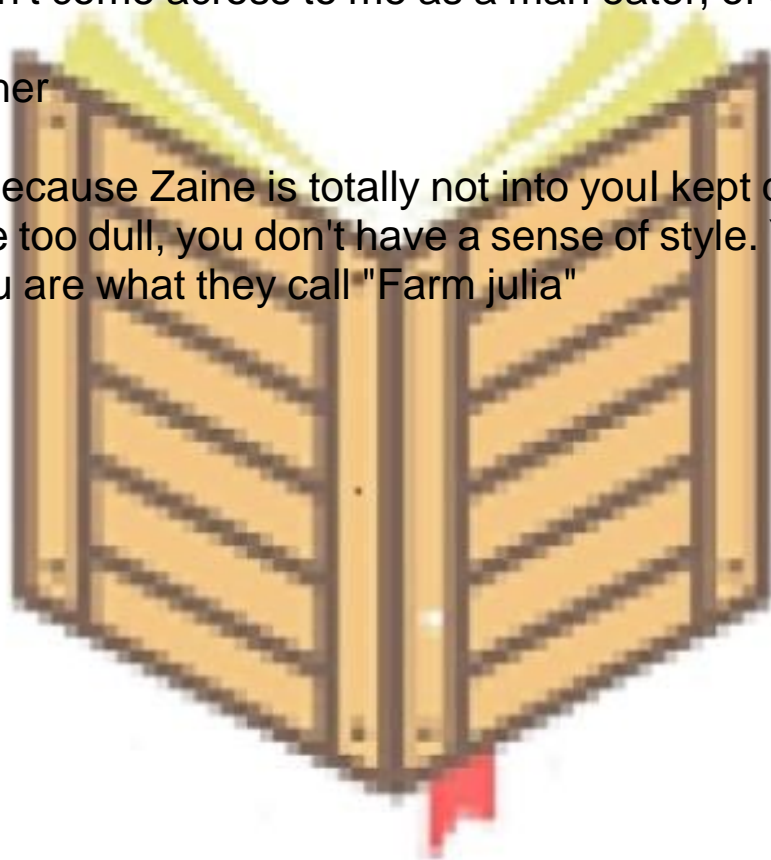
Pssshhh she gonna act like she forgot my name..I nodded..

Her: You don't come across to me as a man eater, or a boyfriend stealer

Me: Im Neither

Her: Good because Zaine is totally not into youl kept quiet..

Her: You are too dull, you don't have a sense of style. Youhardly dress up you are what they call "Farm julia"



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Then i shouldn't be a threat to youShe laughed..

Her: Please girl don't get ahead of yourself who said you athreat? I mean you not Megan good or Gabriel union, youno competition to me

Me: then why are we having this conversation?

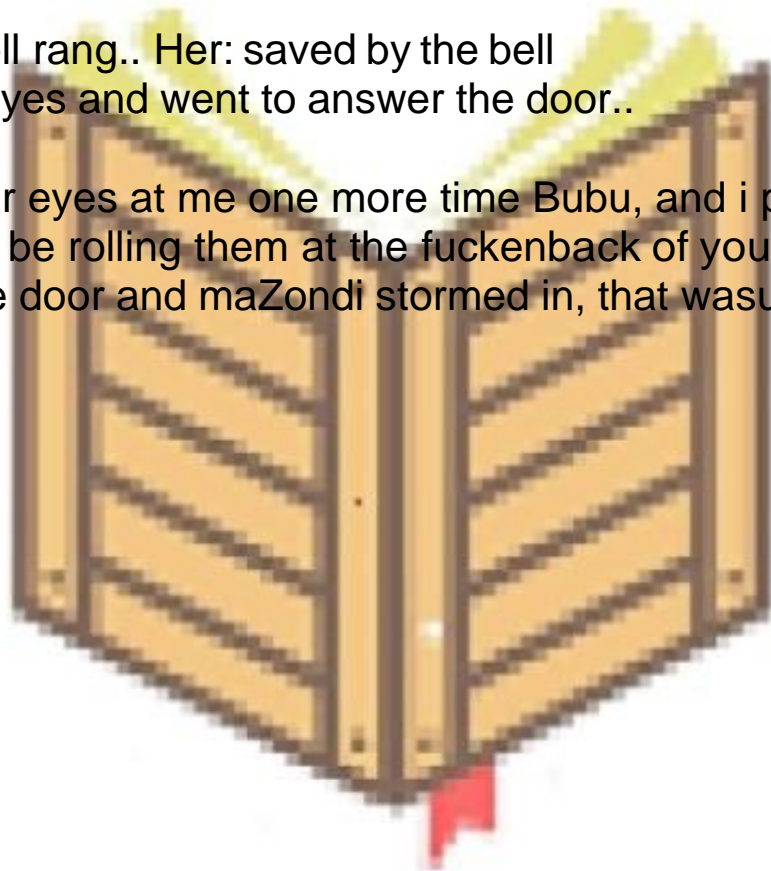
Her: because i see now that you are carrying your weighttoo much as if like this is your house

I kept quiet..

The door bell rang.. Her: saved by the bell
I rolled my eyes and went to answer the door..

Her: roll your eyes at me one more time Bubu, and i promise you that you will be rolling them at the fuckenback of your head!

I opened the door and maZondi stormed in, that wasunexpected.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I closed the door and looked at her, she looked at me ready to explode like a Volcano..

Her: ukhohlakele! (you are evil)

When people wanna be otherwise i let them be otherwise..Her: You are trying to tarnish my daughter's dream?

Me: i don't understand wha..

Her: Yey don't play smart with me! You know very well that Refiloe is said to marry Zaine soon and you are here being a Jezebel in his life!

Mel: What?

maZondi didn't give Mel any attention..

maZondi: i can take you being a drunk but being this spiteful cha!
She clapped her hands..

Her: Worse with your evil heart you have the nerve to stand in a holy place and sing heee! heee! hee!

Imagine me, imagine me, imagine me uGog'wakho your



NOVELSGURU.COM

swine! (imagine your grandmother your swine) Wow i didn't think that maZondi can be this livid..

Her: our lives were peaceful when you were not around, goback to where you come from maan! Nobody wants you!

Since you came here you have managed to turn our lives upside down!

She clicked her tongue and then walked away..

Melissa stood there with a smirk on her face, she enjoyed every moment..

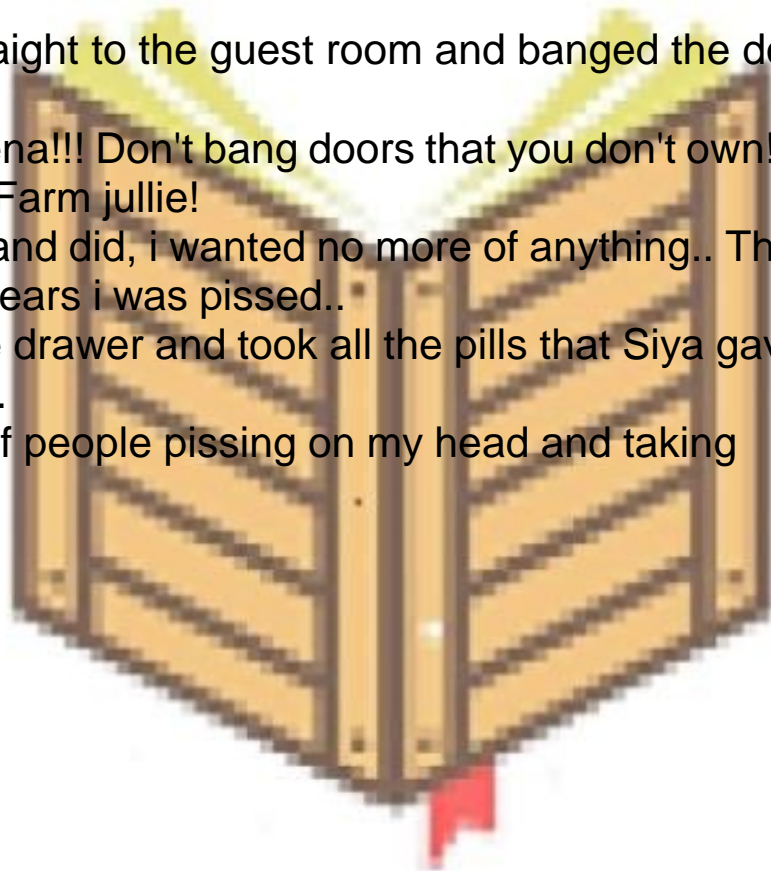
I walked straight to the guest room and banged the door..

Her: Hey wena!!! Don't bang doors that you don't own! This is not your house Farm jullie!

I was done and did, i wanted no more of anything.. This time around i didn't have tears i was pissed..

I went to the drawer and took all the pills that Siya gave me and drank them..

I was tired of people pissing on my head and taking



NOVELSGURU.COM

advantage of the fact that i am defenseless and have noone..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

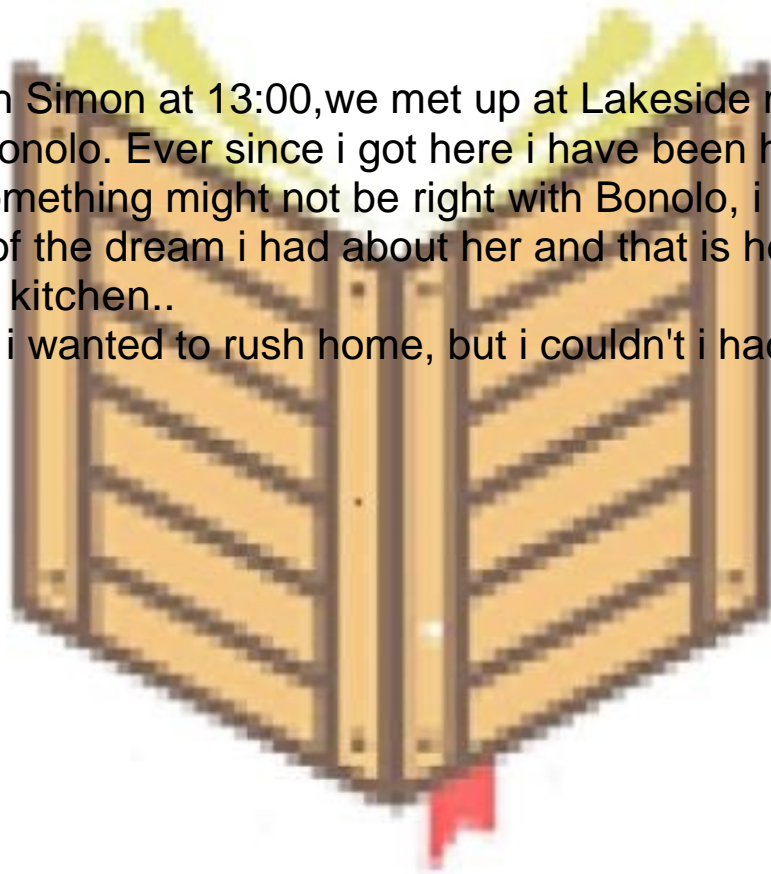
.

.

¥32 #ZAINÉ

I met up with Simon at 13:00,we met up at Lakeside mall so we can talk about Bonolo. Ever since i got here i have been having this bad Aura that something might not be right with Bonolo, i kept on having flashbacks of the dream i had about her and that is her bleeding to death at the kitchen..

As much as i wanted to rush home, but i couldn't i had to



NOVELSGURU.COM

meet up with this Simon dude, what if its the only time illbe meeting up with him..

I had called Melissa a few times and she was telling methat everything is okay but one cannot trust Melissa..

I thought Simon would be a bit younger, maybe 18 or 19but he looked a bit old looked like he was in his mid 20s.He was just another Ordinary guy, nothing fascinating orinteresting about him...

Me: Thank you for meeting up with meHim: Its fine

Me: like i said, i would like to talk to you about BonoloHe leaned forward..

Him: Im all ears

Me: Bonolo works for me, she is my helperHim: she told me

Me: Yeah the thing is Last night she.. she told me somethings



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: What things?

Me: being raped by her step father, Prophet Abdul

His eyes widened, if it was possible his jaw would've dropped down too..

Him: What exactly did she tell you? Me: i think you know

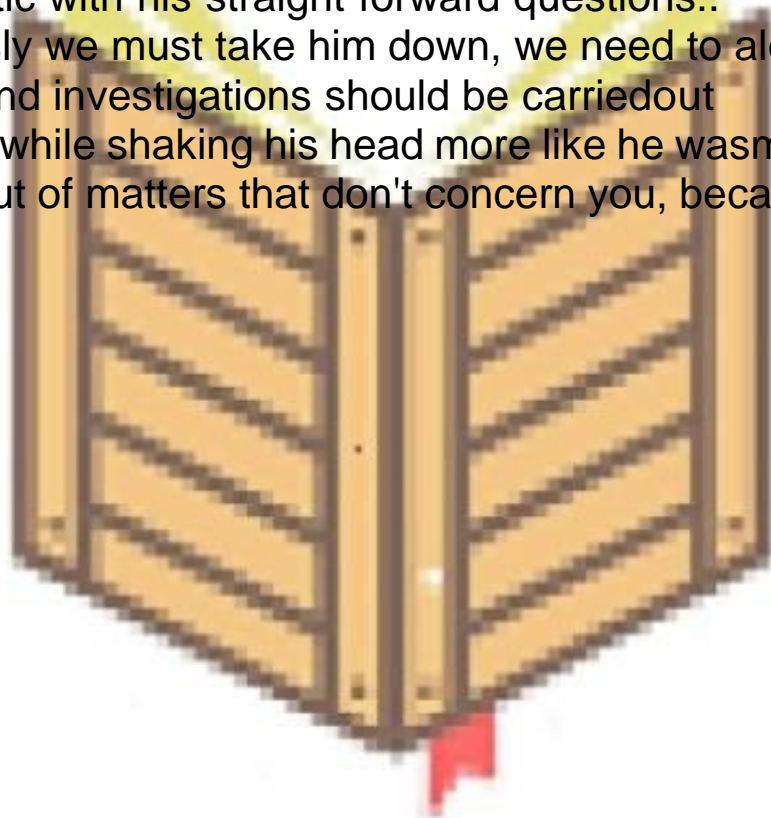
He was trying to put up a brave front, but deep down i could see that he was shaken by this, and kind of worried that i now know..

Him: so what do you wanna do with what she has told you? He was a bit sarcastic with his straight forward questions..

Me: obviously we must take him down, we need to alert the cops about this and investigations should be carried out

He laughed while shaking his head more like he was mocking me..

Him: Stay out of matters that don't concern you, because



NOVELSGURU.COM

you don't know what you getting yourself into

Me: i was hoping that you would have the same attitude asme on this matter, for someone who deeply cares about..

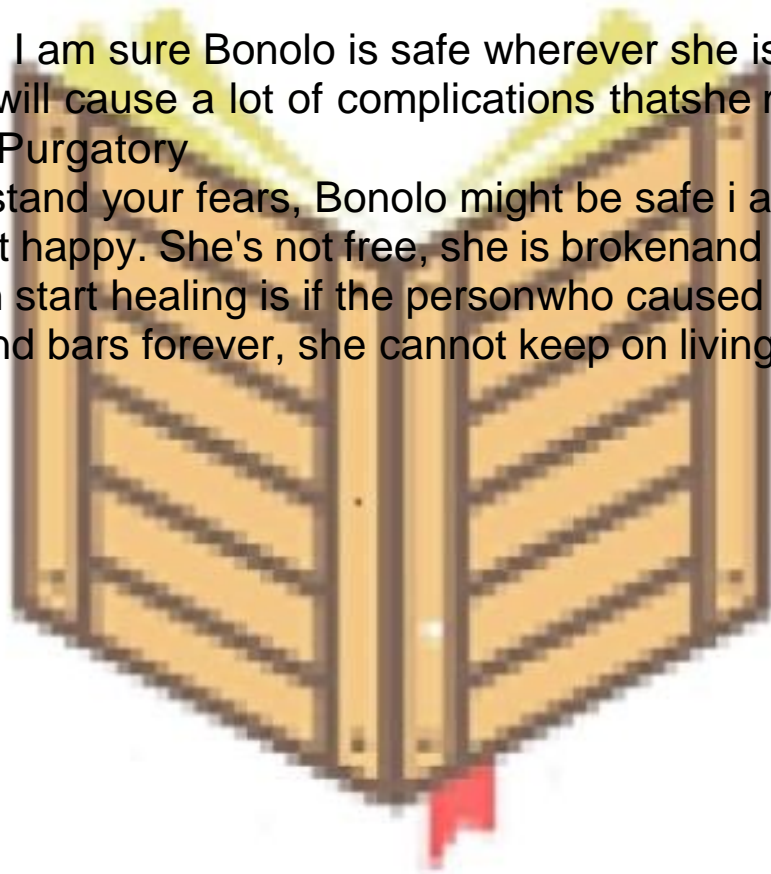
Him: i do care about Bonolo and i love her too. If i didn't iwouldn't have helped her escape the Purgatory

I looked at him for a few minutes before continuing..Me: tell me what exactly happens in this Purgatory? Him: Look uhm....

Me: Zaine

Him: Zaine.. I am sure Bonolo is safe wherever she is andwhat you suggesting will cause a lot of complications thatshe might end up back at the Purgatory

Me: i understand your fears, Bonolo might be safe i agreewith you but she's not happy. She's not free, she is brokenand the only way that she can start healing is if the personwho caused her all that pain is behind bars forever, she cannot keep on living in fear Its not healthy!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You talking like this because you not in our shoes. You don't know the Purgatory or what happens there, you don't know how that Prophet works and his people will forever stand by him no matter what, because they stand for what they believe in and they believe in him

I exhaled it was clear as daylight i wasn't getting through this guy..

Him: i don't know what you heard but please let it go for Bonolo's sake and safety. She has escaped the Purgatory that's all that matters i know that this will take a while for her to get over it but she is strong always has been. The Bonolo i know will beat this!

When one talks like this, there's nothing you can say anymore to convince them otherwise..

Me: i see you have already made up your mind Him: Yes i did I stood up..

Me: guess our meeting ends here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: unfortunately

Me: You love Bonolo don't you? Him: is that a Rethotical question?

Me: No

He thought for a while.. Him: Yes i do love BonoloMe: i can clearly see that

He gave me a look indicating that im loosing him..

Me: don't get me wrong but.. I view your relationship withBonolo as if like you guys are siblings you know Brother and sister relationship. You love her, you always wanna protect her like a Brother would, you wanna shield her from all the evil roaming around that's pretty sweet if youask me

Him: Are you gonna get your point across anytime soon?

Me: if you were in love with her then it would be a differentstory,you would go all out your way to make sure that the



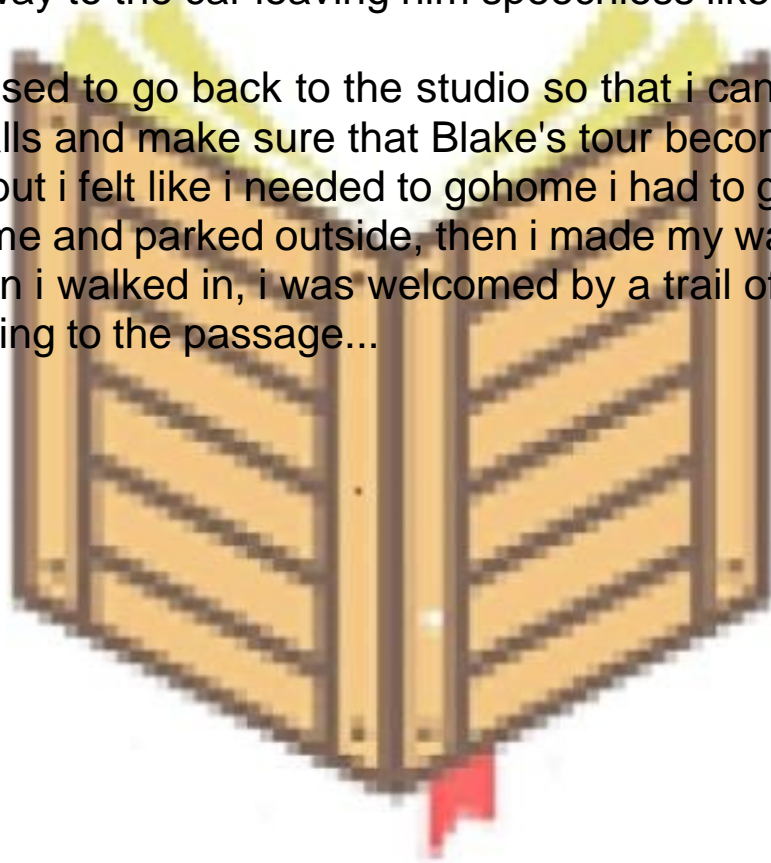
NOVELSGURU.COM

person who hurt her pays even if it means killing him yourself. Her tears everyday, and her smile that hides off soo much pain would be motivation enough for you that you won't give up until that smile carries a lot of hope and redemption. Im talking about you would even lay your lifedown if given just so that you can see her experience a different life than the one that she has experienced, but then why would you know all of that after all you love her don't you?

He didn't know what to say.. Me: You have a good day Sir.

I made my way to the car leaving him speechless like that..

I was supposed to go back to the studio so that i can make a couple of calls and make sure that Blake's tour becomes a success next week, but i felt like i needed to go home i had to go home.. I arrived home and parked outside, then i made my way to the house. When i walked in, i was welcomed by a trail of blood from the kitchen leading to the passage...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bonolo?

I followed the trail until i bumped into Melissa at the passage..

Her: You home early Me: Where is Bonolo? Her: Bonolo?

I held her and shook her..

Me: Where is Bonolo? (shouting)

Her: Calm down she's sleeping i guess

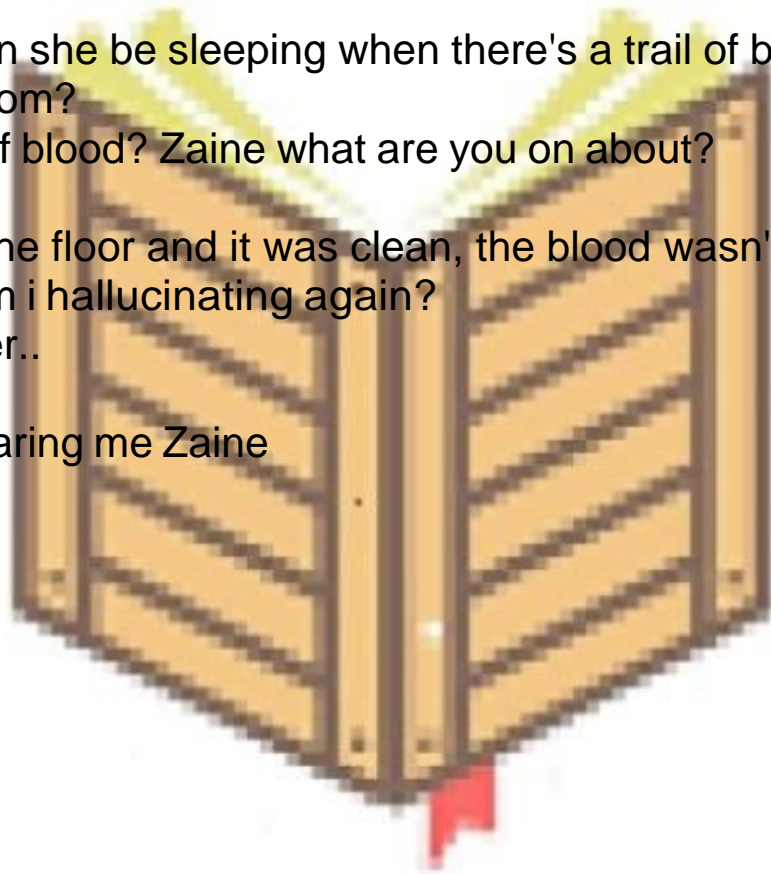
Me: How can she be sleeping when there's a trail of blood leading to the guest room?

Her: a trail of blood? Zaine what are you on about?

I looked at the floor and it was clean, the blood wasn't there anymore am i hallucinating again?

I let go of her..

Her: You scaring me Zaine



NOVELSGURU.COM

I made my way to the guest room to look for her with Melissa following me, and Bonolo was laying on the floor in her own pool of blood..

Mel: Oh my goodness what happened here?

Me: i am not seeing things she's really bleeding isn't she?

Mel: What the?? Zaine this person is dying, she's bleeding way too much!

I went to her and tried to wake her up but she wasn't waking up..

Me: What have you done? I looked at Melissa...

Me: don't just stand there get a flipping towel! (shouting) She rushed to the bathroom to get a towel..

I held Bonolo tight and close to me that some of her blood stained my clothes, i saw this happen why didn't i stop it?

Me: Come on hold on, don't do this to me! Please don't do this to me i need you!!!

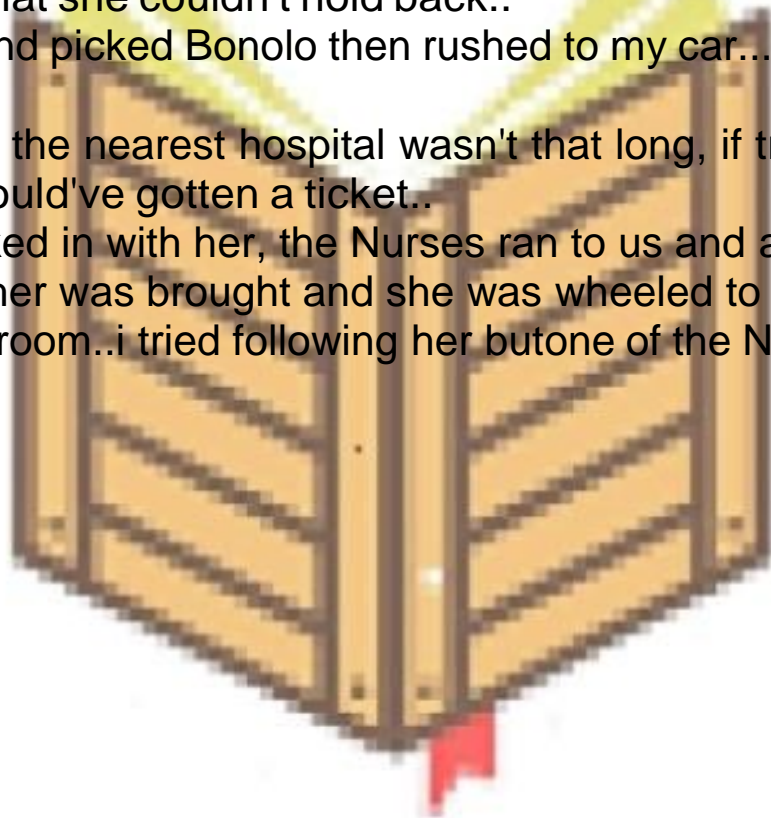


NOVELSGURU.COM

I was rocking her back and forth just praying that she makes it, she had to make it. I was so lost in that moment, that i didn't notice Melissa standing there looking at me with tears in her eyes..
Her: You didn't react the same way to me when i told you about what happened to me
Me: Melissa i don't have time for your shit

Her: You in love with her.. You in love with her Zainel didn't respond to that..
She then walked away because she was starting to get very emotional that she couldn't hold back..
I stood up and picked Bonolo then rushed to my car...

The drive to the nearest hospital wasn't that long, if traffic officers saw me i would've gotten a ticket..
When i walked in with her, the Nurses ran to us and attended to her, a stretcher was brought and she was wheeled to the emergency room..i tried following her but one of the Nurses stopped me...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nurse: Sir please stay here Me: No i need to be with her
Nurse: i understand your frustrations but i am sure that theDoctors
are going to do their best with her
I calmed down..

Her: Please go to the reception and fill the form then gohome
Me: Home?

Her: The is no use for you to be here now, plus you need tochange
I looked at her..

Me: You do everything you can for her and ill come backlater
She nodded and went..

I went to the receptionist and i had to fill in the forms, but i didn't
know much about her so i only gave away her nameand surname
Bonolo Thabethe i didn't know if she was



NOVELSGURU.COM

using that surname though and then i drove home..

My phone kept on ringing, it was Blake he probably is verypissed that i didn't come back but ill deal with him later..

I got home and it was quiet, i made my way to the bedroom and when i opened the door i found Melissaontop of the bed trying to hang herself but she was struggling to tighten the rope.

I looked at her..

Me: You got to be kidding me!

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥33 #ZAINÉ



NOVELSGURU.COM

Melissa was not really like this when we first met. Back then she was the girl of my dreams, she had a unique personality, she wasn't clingy, obsessed nor the jealous type. I am not saying that she's not supposed to be jealous but her jealousy is way out of control now.. I looked at her..

Me: What are you doing?

Her: i am trying to get your attention, seems like this is the best way to get it i mean Bonolo did it, didn't she?

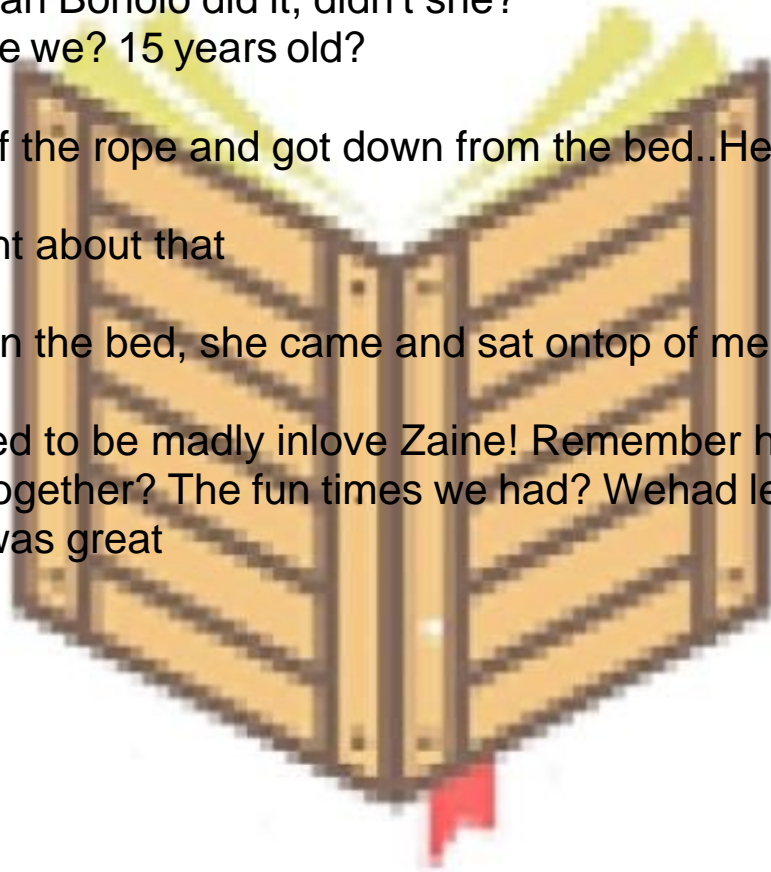
Me: What are we? 15 years old?

She let go of the rope and got down from the bed.. Her: We need to talk

Me: You right about that

I sat down on the bed, she came and sat on top of me..

Her: We used to be madly in love Zaine! Remember how crazy we used to be together? The fun times we had? We had less fights, everything was great



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: everything was unti..

She put her finger on my lips..

Her: i love you and i am not gonna have that girl take you away from me.

Me: Melissa listen...

She kissed me before i could even finish the sentence. Itshard to resist such an intense affection and attraction when a kiss just reminds you of all the good times you have had with what seems to be a stranger now in your house. I know Melissa but at the same time i don't know her, all the things i found out about her at least she could've just told me the truth and saw my reaction after that.. I squeezed her small waist tight as our tongues found arhythm, with her hands around my neck...

Did i say Bonolo is the only girl i know with a sexy slim body? I probably forgot the woman sitting ontop of me. Icontinued squeezing her waist until she gasped...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Im sorry

She smiled at me..Her: Its okay

We continued kissing. I have missed this, ive missed us being intimate. I haven't been sexual with anyone lately somey testosterone levels are sky rocket high..

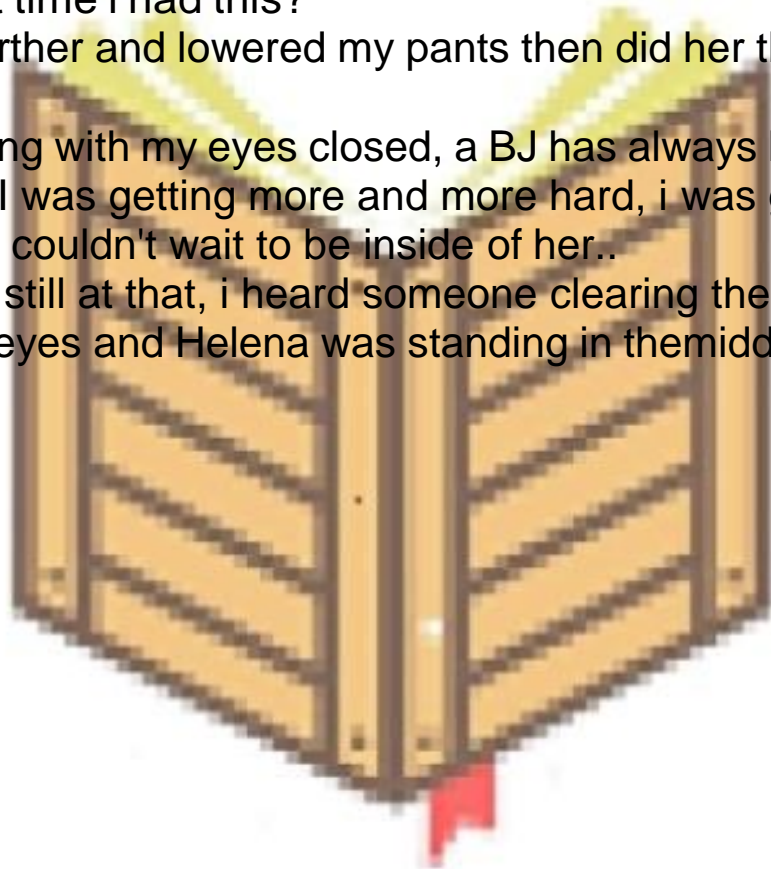
I laid back as she worked her magic on me.

She took off my tshirt and planted wet kisses on my body,when was the last time i had this?

She went further and lowered my pants then did her thingas always..

I was moaning with my eyes closed, a BJ has always beena nigga's weakness.. I was getting more and more hard, i was grabbing on to her hair and couldn't wait to be inside of her..

As we were still at that, i heard someone clearing their throat i opened my eyes and Helena was standing in themiddle of the bedroom..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I pushed Melissa and she fell on the floor..Her: Ahhhhhh Zaine!!!
I quickly pulled my briefs up and my pants up..

Her: i am your Guardian Angel ive seen you naked a lot oftimes
Melissa got up and looked at me.. Her: What is wrong with you?
(yelling)Me: i.. Ill be right back

I got up and fixed myself then walked out with Helenafollowing me
to the guest room. I closed the door andlooked at her..

Me: What the fuck? (yelling)

Her: Shhhhh keep it down, remember you the only one whocan see
me?

I took a deep breath..

Me: Why would you show up when im just in the middle of..Her: of?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: being intimate with Melissa?

Her: Zaine i am here because i need my wings back
Me: here we go again

Her: The only way i can get my wings back is if you change your ways

Me: i have changed my ways

Her: You haven't changed nothing!

Me: first of all i now do believe that there's a greater force out there above me

Her: a greater force? Zaine you telling me that after what you been through you still don't believe that God does exist?
I sat down..

Me: i didn't say that

There was a knock at the door..
Melissa: Zaine?
I kept quiet..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She opened and walked in.. Her: What are you doing here?
Me: uhm waiting for a call from Blake

Her: You gave up all of this just because of a phone call from your friend?

Me: and a client Her: Zaine..

Me: don't crowd me please

She looked around and then looked at me.. Her: Fine ill give you some space

Me: Thank you She walked out..

Me: look Helena i am not saying that i don't believe in Godor his existence. There's things that happened that i cannot explain, things beyond my human understanding..

Her: That's a start



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i know

Her: Tomorrow Prophet Ayo Badru has a sermon at Sandton maybe you can go and attend?

Me: and maybe he can give me better advice about Bonolo's situation

Her: Maybe.. Can i ask something? I looked at her..

Her: about your succubus?

Me: Why you keep on referring her to a female sexual Demon? Is she a Demon?

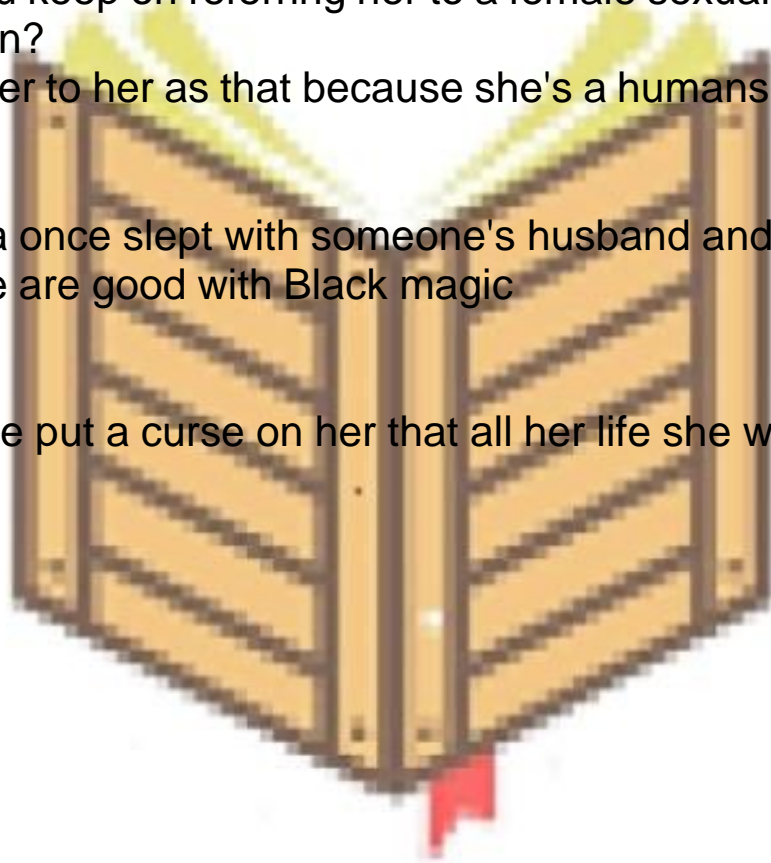
Her: No i refer to her as that because she's a human succubus

Me: Im lost

Her: Melissa once slept with someone's husband and you know other people are good with Black magic

Me: Ohw

Her: The wife put a curse on her that all her life she will



NOVELSGURU.COM

never be able to close her legs to any man, her sexualhunger cannot be satisfied

That was overwhelming for me to hear, i am not gonna saythat i am lucky because i had used a condom everytime that we were sexual but the thought of her sleeping around is just crazy...

Helena: even when you too where exclusive, she stillseeked sexual Satisfaction from different men

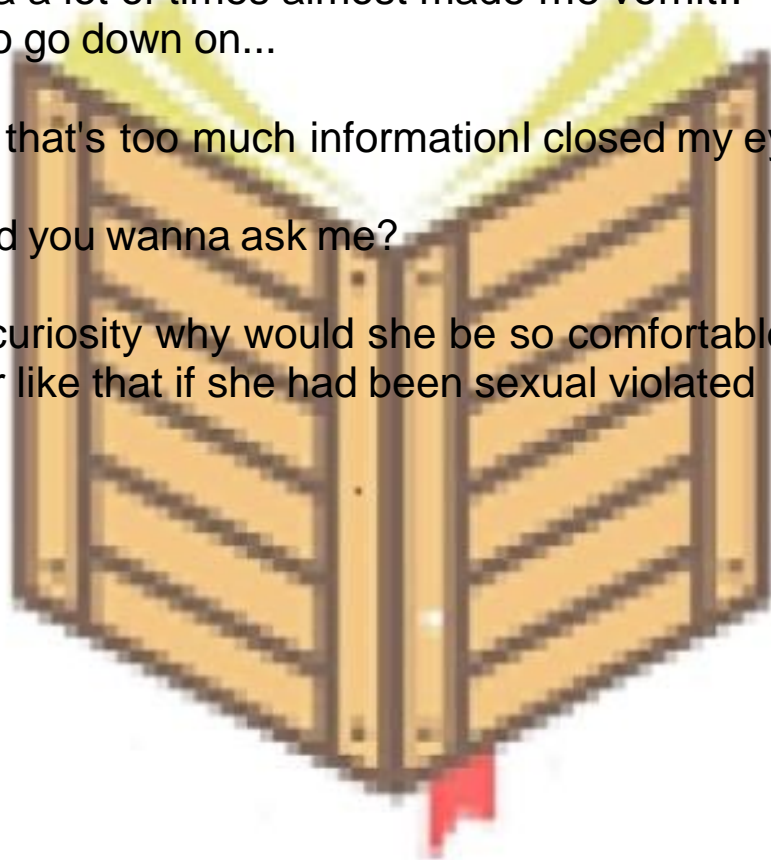
I immediately felt disgusted and sick to my stomach,it waseven hard for me to swallow my saliva knowing that my tongue had been in her vagina a lot of times almost made me vomit..

Me: i used to go down on...

Her: hold it, that's too much informationI closed my eyes and swallowed..

Me: What did you wanna ask me?

Her: out of curiosity why would she be so comfortable withyou touching her like that if she had been sexual violated



NOVELSGURU.COM

recently?

Me: so she lied about that? She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: play time is over Zaine you really need to find this girlhelp so she can have her old life back

Me: How?

Her: i don't know maybe a prophet can break the curseMe: ill inform Prophet Badru or Dad

Her: You so slow Me: they Prophets

She rolled her eyes at me..

Me: Are you allowed to do that?

Her: i am almost human like Kimbella nowMe: Kimbella?

Her: story for another dayI checked the time..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i have to go and see Bonolol stood up...

Her: ill be watching over you as always
Me: Not when im bathing please

Her: Im a Guardian Angel i am not interested in you likethat

Me: Whatever

I walked out of the guest room to go and shower again,since i had Bonolo's blood..

.

. #SIMON

Zaine's words stuck to me like super glue, driving from work to home that afternoon his words kept on playing in my head and especially him asking me if i am in love with Bonolo. I find it hard to differantiate between being in love with someone and loving someone to me love is love and i



NOVELSGURU.COM

love Bonolo..

The first thing i did when i got to the Purgatory was to go and see Bonolo's mother at the sick ward, the Purgatory has sick wards instead of a hospital....

As i made my way to her i saw Prophet Abdul standing beside her bed..

Me: Good afternoon

They greeted. She looked worse than the last time i saw her.. I held her hand.

Me: How are you feeling today? Her: a bit compressed

Me: You were doing soo well what Happened? Her: i don't know

Abdul: Your sins are leading you to your gravel looked at him...

Him: i had a vision and her sickness is caused by her sin



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What sin?

Him: i was hoping that she could tell us

I looked at her and i prayed at that moment, i was praying that she doesn't say anything about Bonolo's whereabouts

Abdul: confess!

I saw tears streaming down her cheeks..Her: id rather die

Abdul gave her a death stare, his look was sucking the lifeout of her that's how sinister it was..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.

¥34



NOVELSGURU.COM

#SIMON

I waited for Abdul to leave so i can talk to Bonolo's mother and find out what's really going on. Looking at her i could see that she carried a lot of fear, she looked terrified and my first thoughts were that Abdul has everything to do with her being terrified.. I looked at her still holding her hand..

Me: You were really getting better what happened?

She looked around and put her other hand on top of my hand with tears falling down..

Her: i am not really sick Me: huh?

She wiped her tears with her trembling hand.. Her: he...

She kept quiet when one of the Nurses passed by.. Her: he has given them instructions to drug me Me: What? (yelling)



NOVELSGURU.COM

With her remaining strength she squeezed my hand..Her: Not so loud (whispering)

We looked around and two Nurses were now looking at us all suspicious, but they were a bit far from us to hear what we were talking about..

Her: he knows that i helped Bonolo escapeMe: How? We had the most perfect plan

Her: as a mother you would do anything to protect your children even if it means laying down your own life

She coughed..

Her: he thinks that i got smarter and realised that what he was doing to Bonolo was sinister, he is very sure that i helped Bonolo escape because of what was happening to her

She coughed again this time closing her eyes with her hand on her chest...

Her: I have been coughing all day that my lungs together



NOVELSGURU.COM

with my chest are giving up on me I put my hand on her shoulder..

Me: everything is gonna be alright She shook her head no..

Her: Everything is not gonna be alright. He is on to us Simon and you need to leave before he does something to you

He pointed at the box of tissues and I got them for her, she took one and covered her mouth while coughing. When she lowered it, it had blood she was coughing up blood.

Her: It's only a matter of time until I give in to death Me: don't talk like that

Her: Just do me one favour Me: Anything

She put her hand on top of mine that was on her shoulder, she was still trembling..

Her: escape, take Bonolo with you and Blessing. Skip the



NOVELSGURU.COM

country if you have too just take care of my Daughter and my Grandson

Me: don't talk like that please

Her: Please take care of them for me Simon, with how my mother is you all they have

I kept quiet while looking at her..Me: Okay i will

She closed her eyes, she wasn't dead just too tired and drained that she needed to shut her eyes for a couple of minutes...

I looked at the Nurses again and when our eyes met they looked away making themselves look as if like they busy. I pulled the duvet and put it over her, just until up to her chest and then after i made my way to my house. I was confused at what i should do next this was a deep and yet dangerous situation. Escaping now will be a bit dangerous Abdul might have me followed and one mistake he will get



NOVELSGURU.COM

to to Bonolo....

.

. #ZAINE

I was now at the hospital sitting next to Bonolo's bed. She was still unconscious, the Doctor's main concern was that Bonolo lost a lot of blood and it might take a while for her to recover completely..

I looked at the Doctor

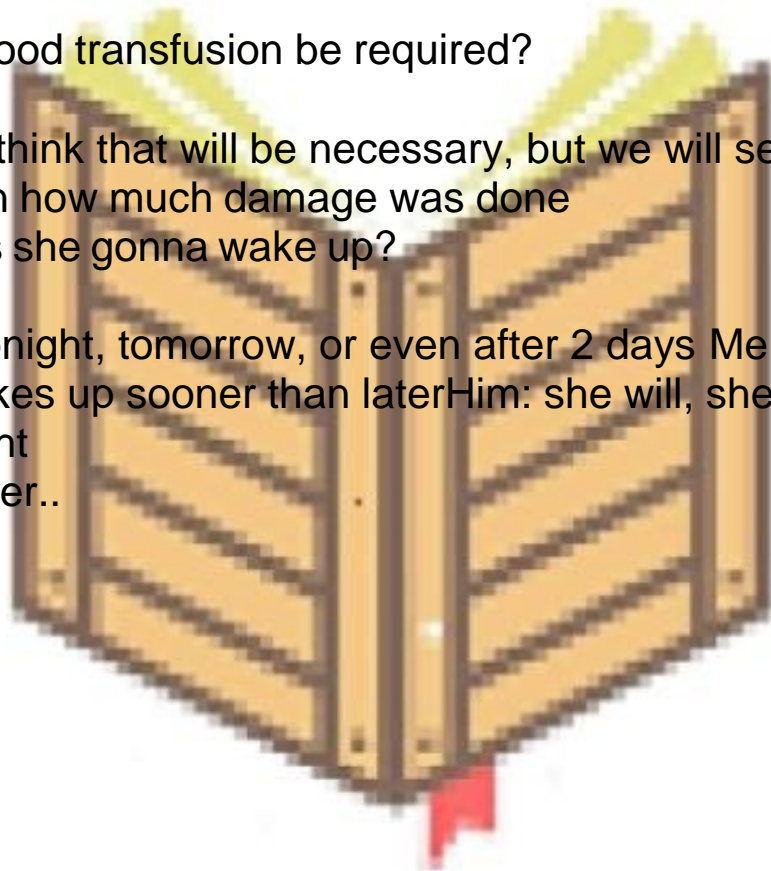
Me: will a blood transfusion be required?

Him: i don't think that will be necessary, but we will see when she wakes up on how much damage was done

Me: When is she gonna wake up?

Him: later tonight, tomorrow, or even after 2 days
Me: i just hope that she wakes up sooner than later
Him: she will, she is stronger than i thought

I looked at her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: She is

Doc: Yes, the IV is working wonders, i didn't think that it was gonna work

As the Doctor was talking i got this weird feeling as if like there was a dark cloud in this hospital or great evil..

Everything moved in slow motion, i saw the Doctor's lips moving very slow and i couldn't make out what he was saying..

I saw the lights flickering, and then i looked at the door and i saw this human figure wearing an all black long robe. I didn't see the person's face because of the hat that was covering their face..

Me: hey!

He started walking away and i stood up then made it to the door and started following him, it looked like a he.. i followed him until they got in the next ward, i didn't walk in i just stood at the door to observe what was happening..

There was a patient there with a lot of machines keeping



NOVELSGURU.COM

them alive and helping them breath..

I looked at the door and it was written "22A intensive care unit"
I saw the human figure approaching the patient, what I saw next
made me question my sanity once more...

The Patient's spirit separated from her body and then the Figure
stretched out its hand to the patient's apparition.

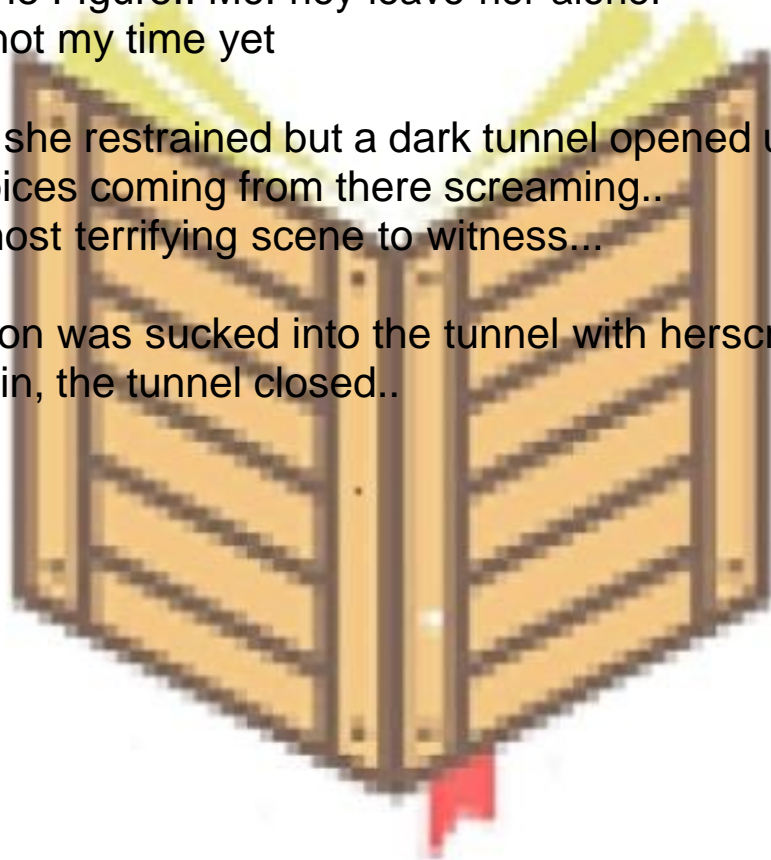
The patient looked at me first and I saw fear in her eyes.. Her: Its
not my time yet

I looked at the Figure.. Me: hey leave her alone!

Patient: Its not my time yet

As much as she restrained but a dark tunnel opened up on the wall,
and I had voices coming from there screaming..
It was the most terrifying scene to witness...

Her Apparition was sucked into the tunnel with her screaming, after
sucking her in, the tunnel closed..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at the Figure..Me: Who are you?

Him: You could've saved her, it wasn't her time indeed

It then shimmered disappearing from where it was standing..

While i was trying to comprehend what i have just seen ifelt a hand shaking me..

I came back to reality and i was sitting next to Bonolo'sbed with the Doctor looking at me and standing next tome..

Him: Are you alright? I lost you there for a couple ofseconds

Me: i..

It seemed as if like i had a premonition..Dr: is everything okay?

I looked around..Me: i think so



NOVELSGURU.COM

I started hearing beeping sounds.. A couple of minutes later a Nurse rushed into Bonolo's ward...

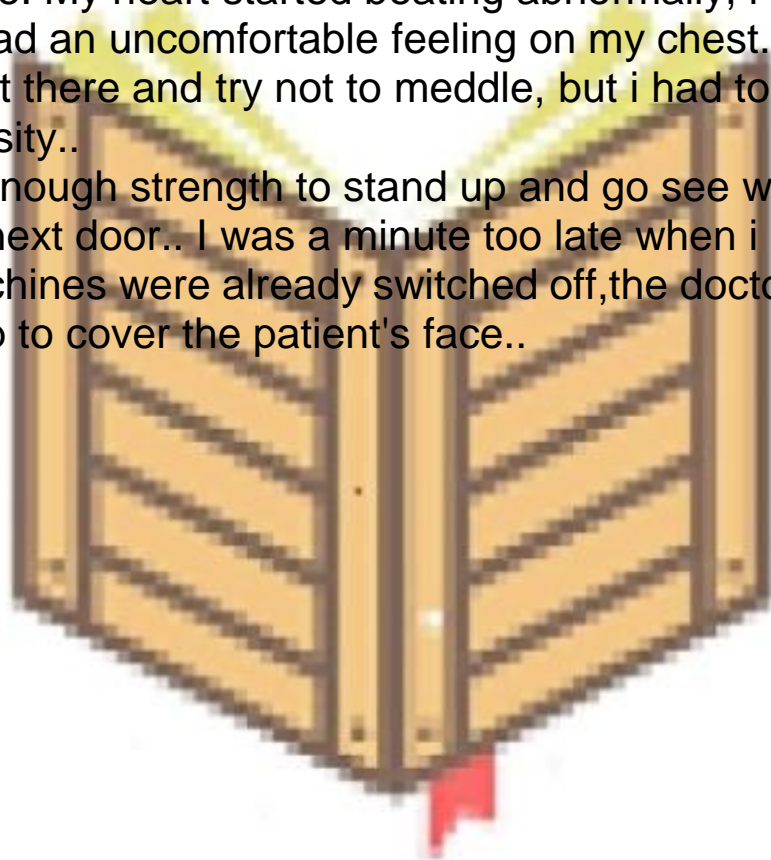
Nurse: Doctor you are needed at the Intensive care Unit 22A now!

Dr: What happened?

Nurse: looks like the Patient is going into cardiac arrest The doctor rushed out with the Nurse following him..

You can just imagine how i was feeling and what was going through my mind as i was sitting there. My fear came back again with full force. My heart started beating abnormally, i felt very hot and i also had an uncomfortable feeling on my chest. As much as i wanted to sit there and try not to meddle, but i had to go and feed off my curiosity..

I gathered enough strength to stand up and go see what was happening next door.. I was a minute too late when i arrived there and the machines were already switched off, the doctor was pulling the sheet up to cover the patient's face..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doctor: time of death 17:30

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

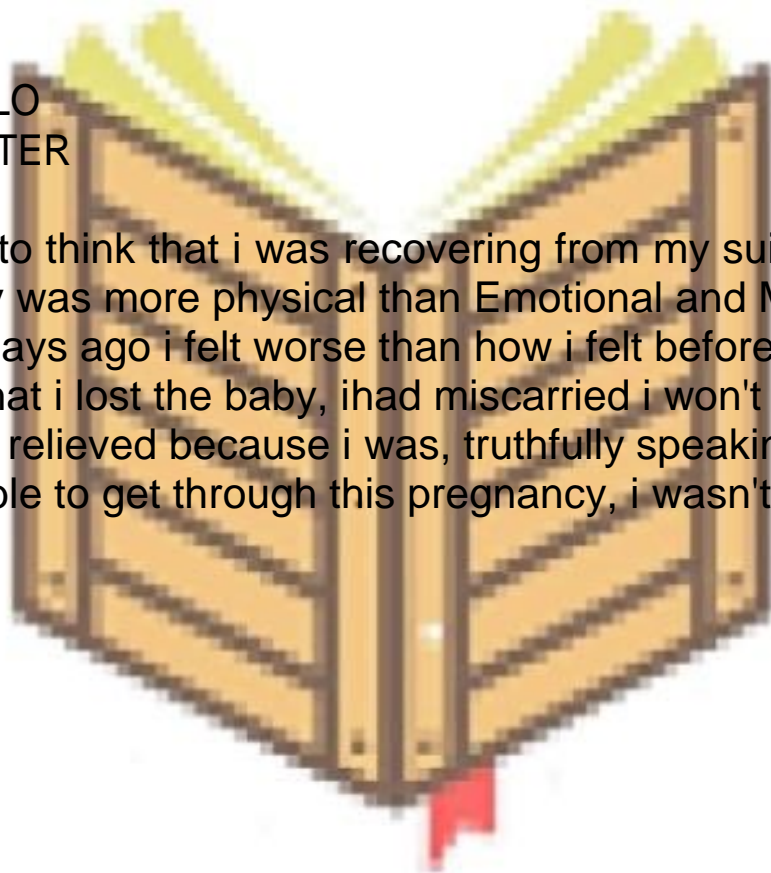
.

.

.

¥35 #BONOLO
- 4 DAYS LATER

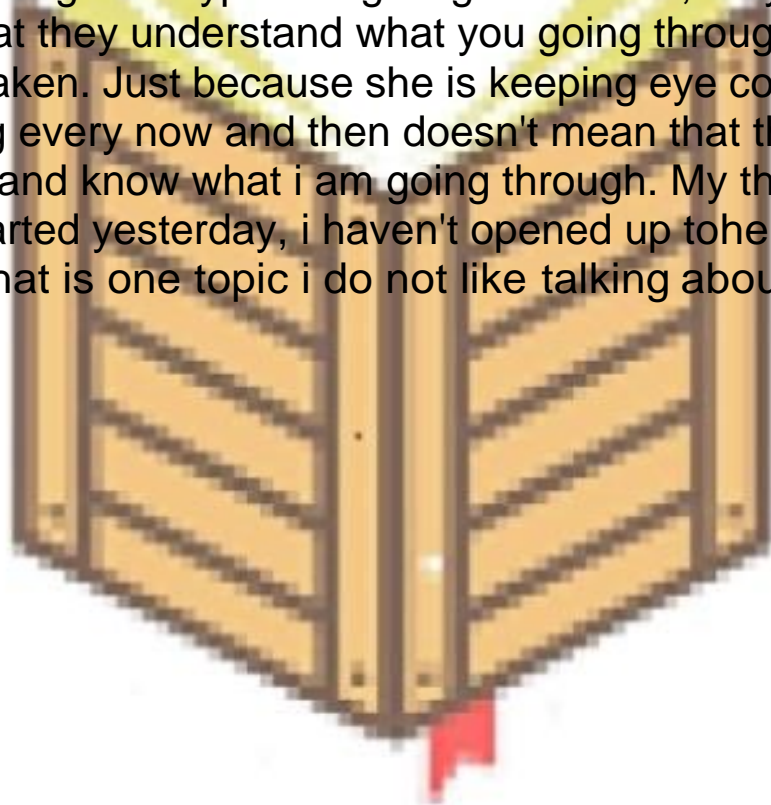
I would like to think that i was recovering from my suicidal incident. My recovery was more physical than Emotional and Mental, when i woke up 2 days ago i felt worse than how i felt before. The good news was that i lost the baby, i had miscarried i won't lie and say that i wasn't relieved because i was, truthfully speaking i wasn't gonna be able to get through this pregnancy, i wasn't that strong enough



NOVELSGURU.COM

anymore. Zaine hasn't come to see me ever since i wokeup, i don't blame him i mean who would wanna be arounda psycho, that's how i see myself right now as a psycho..

The Doctor had organised a psychologist for me, for the time being that i am gonna be at the hospital, i am obliged to speak to the psychologist since i have been diagnosed with clinical Depression. The Doctor couldn't close his mouth busy telling me that the Psychologist comes off highly recommended and that she studied overseas. That's the problem, i don't need a well educated person talking to me about my problems while they don't understand what i am going through. They paid to give good advice, they paid to make you think that they understand what you going through but i am not that easily taken. Just because she is keeping eye contact with me and nodding every now and then doesn't mean that they understand and know what i am going through. My therapy sessions started yesterday, i haven't opened up to her about my tragic life, that is one topic i do not like talking about at all..



NOVELSGURU.COM

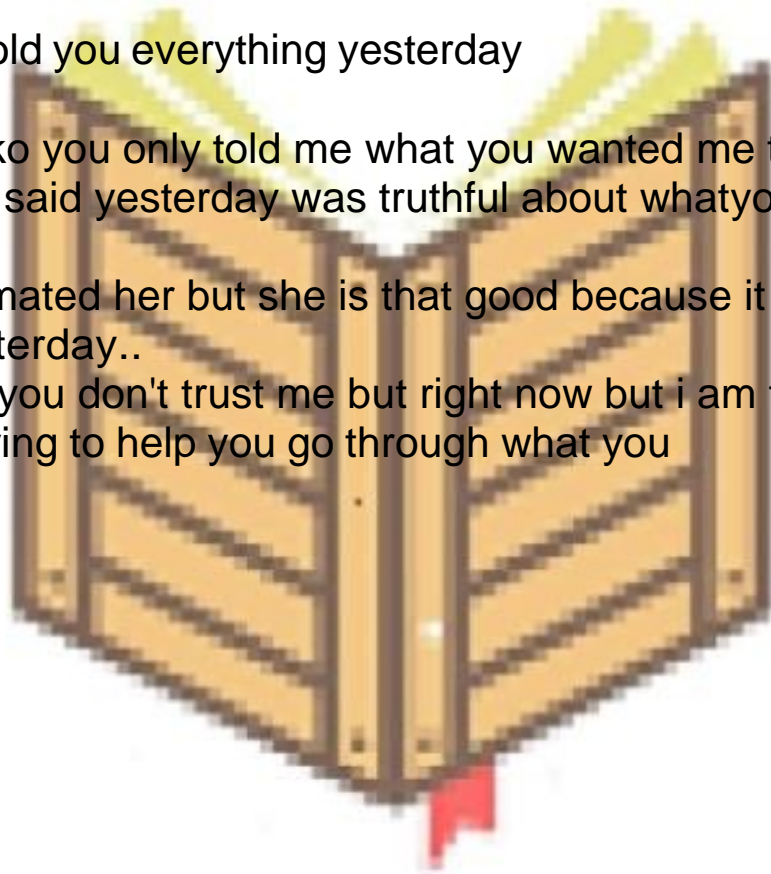
She was back again today, sitting on the chair opposite mybed with her short black skirt, a white shirt, black heels, and black stockings. She had glasses on and was tapping her foot on the floor waiting for me to be more honest and more open with her today. Looking at her note pad, nothing much was written other than "Bonolo Seko" that's all i could read since i wasn't familiar with anything else.. She fixed her glasses and then looked at me..Her: are we gonna be more engaging today?
I turned and faced the other way..

Me: i have told you everything yesterday

Her: Ms Seko you only told me what you wanted me to hear, nothing you said yesterday was truthful about whatyou going through

I under estimated her but she is that good because it istrue i told her lies yesterday..

Her: i know you don't trust me but right now but i am tryingto help you, i am trying to help you go through what you



NOVELSGURU.COM

going through in a more better way that won't be harmful to you
I turned and looked at her..

Me: i am tired of talking, all i do is just talk and talk it doesn't help

Her: This time around you talking to a different person

Me: You different because you paid to talk to me as if you understand what i am going through but in actual fact you don't understand anything

Her: That's what you think, but Its entirely not true I faced the other way again..

Me: Maybe i don't wanna talk today She sighed..

Her: You said the same thing yesterday so i am just gonna sit here until you decide to talk

Me: suit yourself

We sat in total silence, the only thing that was making



NOVELSGURU.COM

noise was her clicking her pen, which made an irritating sound...
I wasn't planning on saying anything and she wasn't planning on giving up. Our quiet session ended when the Doctor walked in and asked for her, then they went out of my ward to talk probably talking about my condition and how I am not willing to open up..
The Doctor walked in after a few minutes.. Him: Miss Seko
I turned and looked at her..

Him: How was your session today?

I don't know why he was asking me that if he already knows the Answer..

Him: You are on suicidal watch Miss Seko, you are obliged to talk to the psychologist so that she can write a report and we do a psychiatric evaluation

Me: I am not crazy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: No one says you are, we just trying to help you
Me: so is you and everyone else doctor

We were disturbed by a familiar voice..Zaine: Can i come in?

Doc: Yes you can

He walked in. He was still his Handsome self, and seeing him made me emotional..

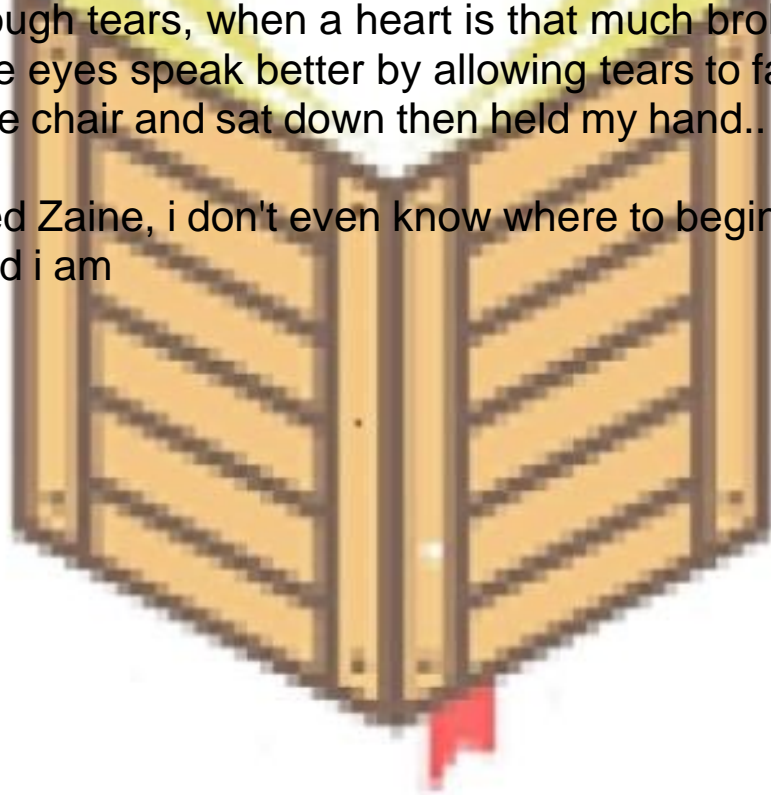
Doc: i will give you some space

He walked out and Zaine came to me.Him: How are you?

I couldn't stop my bleeding heart from reflecting its pain and wounds through tears, when a heart is that much broken and wounded the eyes speak better by allowing tears to fall..

He pulled the chair and sat down then held my hand..

Me: i am tired Zaine, i don't even know where to begin to explain to you how tired i am

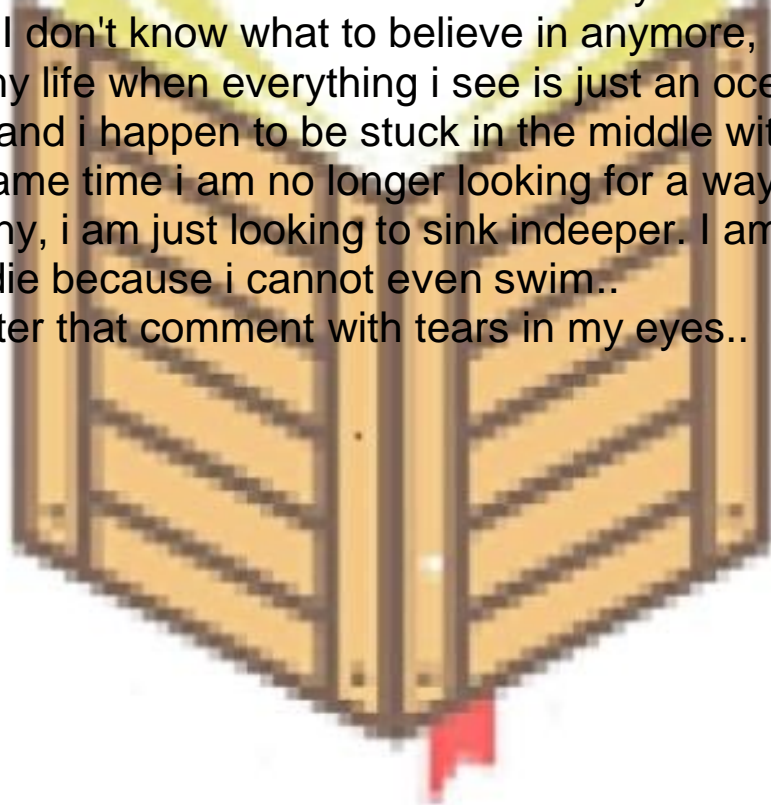


NOVELSGURU.COM

Everytime when i am like this, Zaine would rather lend me a good ear than a mouth full of fake comforting words. He is a good listener and sometimes we need someone who will just listen to us and watch us cry than someone who would comfort us with words that are extracted from a dictionary, words to partially comfort our ever lasting pain..

Me: i feel like i am suffocating and i don't even know what to do. My mind is captured and imprisoned by deadly dark thoughts that keep on flashing in my spiritual eyes that God has given up on me, God has forgotten about me, or maybe he is too busy giving other people his attention thathe became blind to my suffering and deaf to my cries. I don't know what to believe in anymore, i don't know how tolive my life when everything i see is just an ocean of pain and sorrow and i happen to be stuck in the middle with no way out. But at the same time i am no longer looking for a way out because there ain't any, i am just looking to sink indeeper. I am looking to drown and die because i cannot even swim..

I laughed after that comment with tears in my eyes..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: That's basically my life

Him: am i allowed to say something? I looked at him..

Him: my boy's tour is coming up in a few days, i would really like you to tag along

Is Zaine serious right now? I am pouring my pain out to him and he is telling me about a tour, what is a tour?

Me: tour?

Him: he is going to perform in London

Me: You are asking me to go with you to London? Him: is it too much to ask?

I didn't know what to say..

He started playing with my fingers again..

Him: You said you stuck in an ocean, and lets say i was just passing through with my boat and i saw you drowning and i offer you my help by bringing you into my boat are you willing to get in the boat?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Zaine..

Him: Just give me a answer

I don't know where this conversation was going but then i would like to hear the end of it...

Me: Yes,

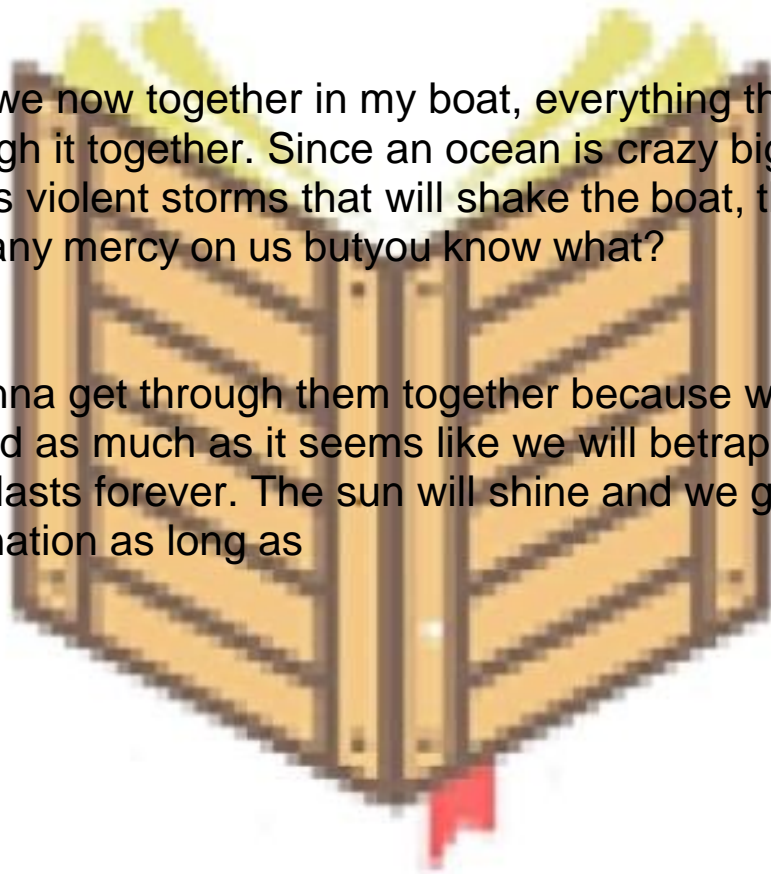
Him: i was hoping for that answer you know what that means?

Me: What?

Him: Since we now together in my boat, everything that happens we go through it together. Since an ocean is crazy big, we gonna come across violent storms that will shake the boat, the waters won't have any mercy on us but you know what?

Me: What?

Him: we gonna get through them together because we on that boat together, and as much as it seems like we will be trapped forever but nothing lasts forever. The sun will shine and we gonna make it to our destination as long as



NOVELSGURU.COM

we stand together, and we still have our boat. But even if we don't have the boat anymore we gonna drown together and die together His words comforted me somehow, more than the psychologist's words would..

Him: You know what, when you get discharged maybe you can jump in a couple of songs with Chichi, that will keep your mind occupied and keep you from thinking a lot

Me: sing in the studio?

Him: Yes with no crowd, think you can handle that? Me: i think so, i mean i love singing

Him: That's good because she's struggling a bit with her mix tape so i think she can do with your Vocals
I smiled..

Me: id like that very much He smiled at me too...

Him: Why don't you sleep a bit? Looks like you could do do



NOVELSGURU.COM

with some beauty sleep

Me: Are you saying that im ugly?Him: very much
I laughed..

He widened his eyes.. Him: she can laugh too?
I blushed and faced the other way..Him: and she can blush too?
Me: Stop it!

Him: let me go get something to drink while you get somesleep

Me: You gonna be here when i wake up?Him: if you don't sleep for
too long

Me: Okay

He made his wat to the door..Me: Zaine



NOVELSGURU.COM

He stopped and looked at me..Me: Thank you
Him: That's what a person does when they inlove withsomeone
Me: i don't understandHim: one day you will
He walked out after saying that..

. #SIMON

Prophet Abdul banned me permanently from Purgatory. Since i
Have been going to visit Bonolo's mother at the sick ward he had
assumed that i had a hand in Bonolo's disappearance and i think
the Nurses snitched too. He hadme brutally beaten in order to
confess but i love Bonolo and i wasn't gonna give in, i would rather
die than have Abdul get to Bonolo. When he realised that torturing
me



NOVELSGURU.COM

wasn't helping, he banned me and told me never to come back. He lied to the people and told them about how muchi was Judas and sold Bonolo away, he made me look like this evil person that betrayed the Purgatory, he said the Devil has gotten to me and there was nothing they could do to help me the devil has seriously gotten into me..

I wasn't discouraged about any of that, my only concern was Leaving Bonolo's mother behind in that situation but i hope that one day i will come back for her...

All i took was my truck and my clothes then left, Thank God i had saved up some money so i rented a flat at Benoni just close to my workplace. Wasn't a beautiful orexpensive one was just a Bachelor's flat and rent was quite affordable R2000 a month. At last i was free..

I was gonna go and get Bonolo together with Blessing but not now because Abdul might have let me go in hopes that i will lead him to Bonolo,he is that smart after all..

To be continued



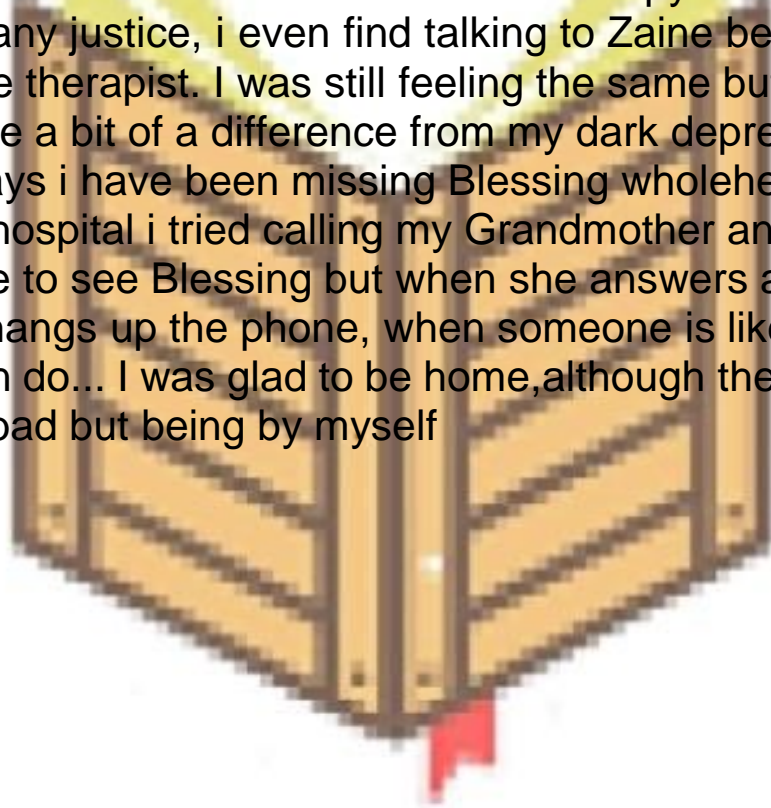
NOVELSGURU.COM

PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥36 #BONOLO

I was finally discharged from the hospital, Zaine came to pick me up. The Doctor still ordered me to attend therapy but i don't think that will do any justice, i even find talking to Zaine better than talking to the therapist. I was still feeling the same but having Zaine around made a bit of a difference from my dark depressed self. This past days i have been missing Blessing wholeheartedly, when i was atthe hospital i tried calling my Grandmother and ask if she will allow me to see Blessing but when she answers and hear that Its me she hangs up the phone, when someone is like that there's nothing i can do... I was glad to be home,although the hospital wasn't that bad but being by myself



NOVELSGURU.COM

the whole time were i even loose myself in thoughts that itry not to have is destructive to my life...

Him: Welcome back! looked around..

Me: Its clean

Him: i tried to tidy upMe: You cleaned?

Him: What? You think i don't have it in me?I shrugged my shoulders..

He looked at me, and his look pierced through my skin..Him: You have been very quiet, anything bothering you?Me: sort off

He still looked at me waiting for me to tell him what's wrong..

Me: My Grandmother doesn't want me to see my SonHe put his hands in his pockets..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Why?

Me: there was a time when my friend and i drank wine in her house
He curved his lower lip...

Me: Yeah i know, she kicked me out Him: kicked you out?

Me: beat me up, kicked me out, then insulted me on the streets. She
didn't even want me coming to church

Him: i do not promote what you did, but.. Me: but?

Him: kicking you out that's a bit extreme Me: i know

Him: so you have been living here while you knew very well that you
homeless and didn't tell me?

Me: Its like that

Him: What if i kicked you out too?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shrugged my shoulders...

Him: i am not promoting what you did but your Grandmother had no right to put you out, you just a kid you supposed to go through situations so that you can learn what's good and what's not. If you don't make mistakes how are you gonna learn?

The was sense in what he was saying, my Grandmother shouldn't have put me out she could've at least yelled and beat me up then tell me that what i did wasn't right.

Him: in the meantime you can go and bath, then ill make us something to eat so that we can watch movies

Me: id like that a lot

He walked me to the guest room, but half way we heard the door bell..

Him: Who could that be? I looked at him....

Me: You should know Its your house



NOVELSGURU.COM

He pushed me a bit and i laughed. He went to open the door and his mother walked in, Ms Jackson looked serious this time around.. She looked at me then looked at Zaine..Zaine: What are you doing here?

Her: am i not allowed to come here anymore?Zaine: That's not what i meant

She gave me one of the most deadliest looks ever..Me: Can i get you anything to drink?

She shook her head no..Me: ill be in the bedroom

Her: actually i am here to talk to the both of youShe made her way to the lounge...

Her: You can follow me

We looked at each other and then followed her..

We all sat in the lounge and we waited for her to start



NOVELSGURU.COM

talking. From how she was eyeing me i could see that i was in a lot of trouble. My life has been circulated by fear, ialways have fear of what might happen and the deepest fear right now that i have is being homeless. I am in trouble to go back to Purgatory and besides that i will not be able to handle that pain that i have been through.

She looked at Zaine.

Her: What exactly is your relationship with this girl?Zaine: This girl? I have moved from being Bonolo to being "This girl"Zaine: She's my maid

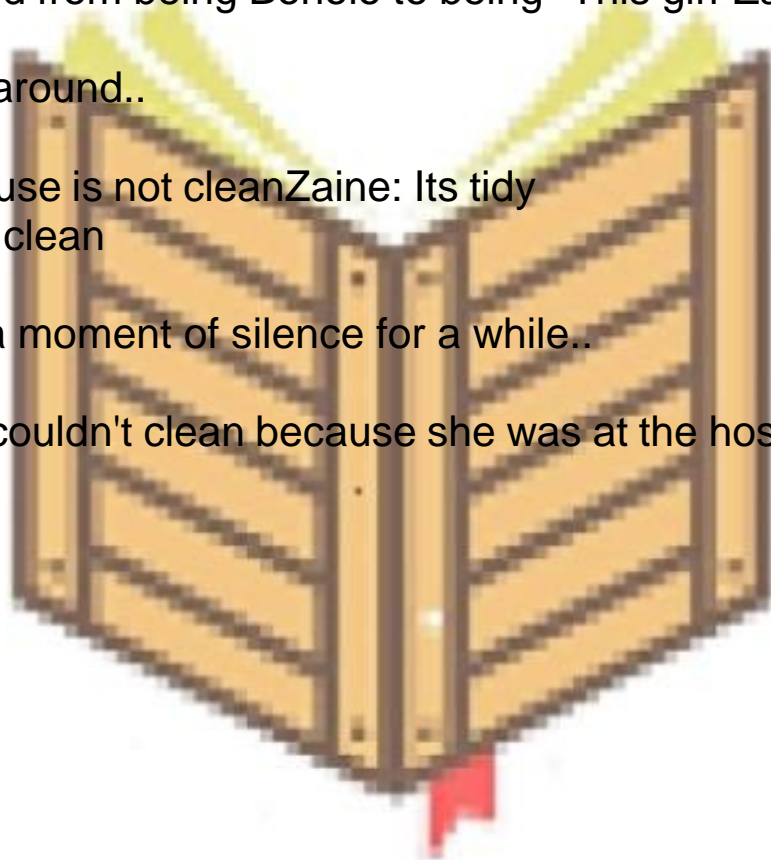
She looked around..

Her: The house is not cleanZaine: Its tidy

Her: but not clean

There was a moment of silence for a while..

Zaine: She couldn't clean because she was at the hospital



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: for?

Zaine: Why do i get the feeling that you asking me Rethotical questions?

Her: Rethotical or not, this girl is living with you isn't that right? My heart started doing the "lum-dum" sound, fear was once taking over again. This woman is gonna ask me to move out..

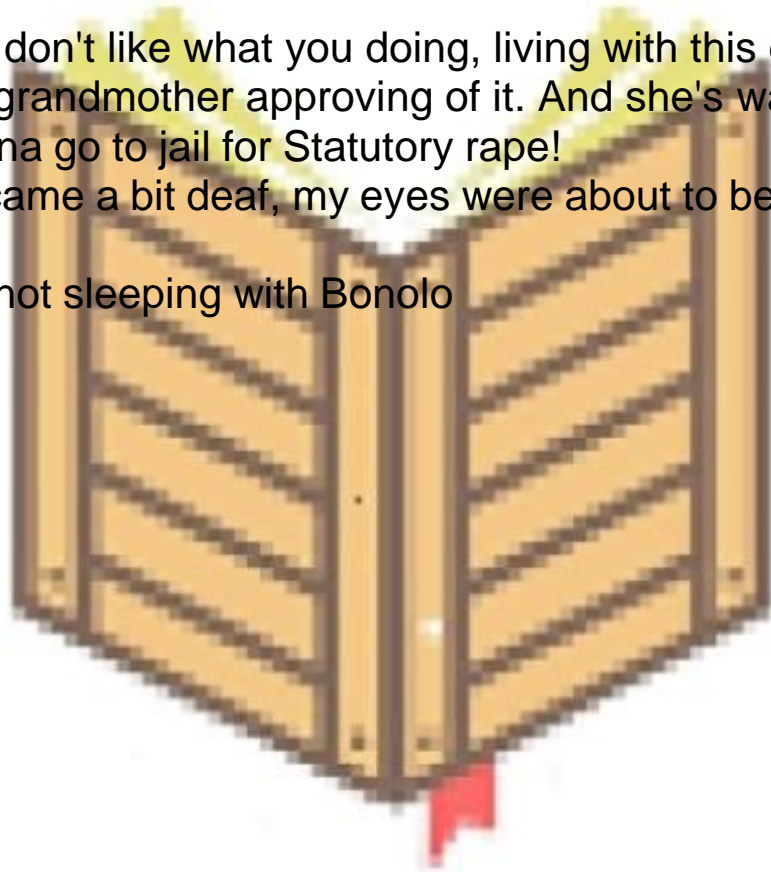
Zaine: her grandmother kicked her out Her: for what?

We kept quiet, and i looked down.

Her: Zaine i don't like what you doing, living with this girl here without her grandmother approving of it. And she's way too young you are gonna go to jail for Statutory rape!

My ears became a bit deaf, my eyes were about to be filled with tears..

Zaine: i am not sleeping with Bonolo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: That's not what ive heard Zaine! Her grandmother said this child is trouble that's why they kicked her out wherever she was living before. She is a loose cannon shehad been sleeping around and blamed a prophet for her Promiscuous ways. Her Grandmother says she's out of control, she drinks and hangs around with a boy who sellshis body in exchange for money and a good life! That's not true, God knows that's not true.. Zaine: but you cannot believe anything that..She hit him on his shoulder..
Her: Zaine!! (yelling)

She looked at him all pissed..

Her: You are not listening to me! Listen to me for once! (yelling) all this girls that you mess with are not good! Stopit Zaine, stop it! Its Enough now!

Ms Jackson was very angry, that she scared me i waseven shaking literally and i couldn't stop the tears fromfalling..



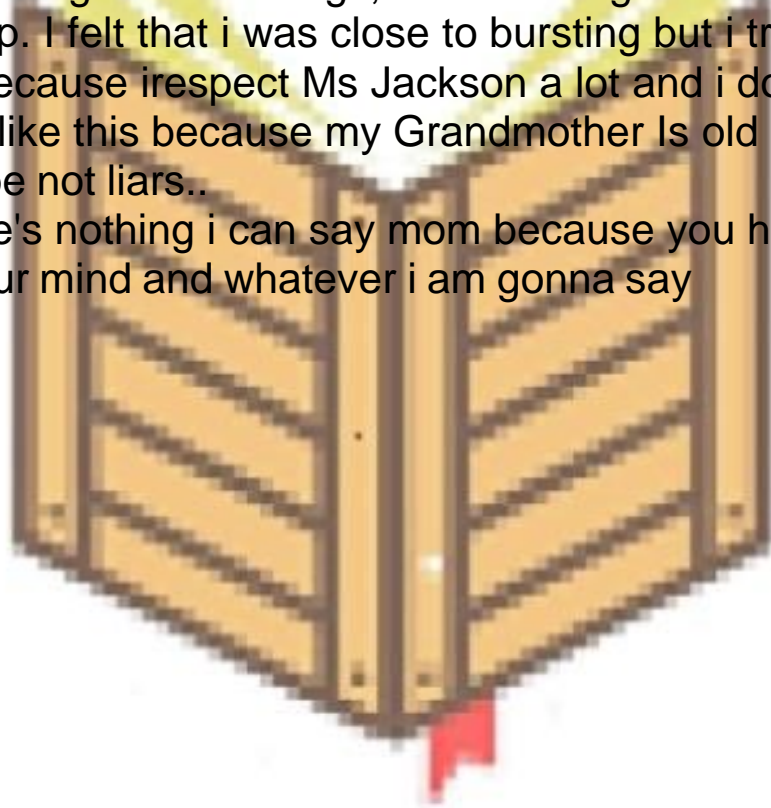
NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: take this girl back home! I do not wanna have any runins with her family again! I can take everything but lying ona prophet, drinking, and sleeping around! She is more trouble than Melissa!
(yelling)

Zaine: but Mom you cannot tell me what to do, i am nolonger living with you

Her: i am your mother and i will talk were i see fit! She's amother when was the last time she even called to check up on her Child? I called my grandmother when i was in the hospital but assoon as she hears that Its me she would hung up. As Ms Jackson was busy yelling and being in her feelings, i was hurting and i was starting to get fueled up. I felt that i was close to bursting but i tried so hard to hold back because irespect Ms Jackson a lot and i don't blame her for reacting like this because my Grandmother Is old and old people are said to be not liars..

Zaine: There's nothing i can say mom because you havealready made up your mind and whatever i am gonna say



NOVELSGURU.COM

to you, you will never believe it

Her: take this child back home Zaine, Today!Zaine kept quiet...

Her: am i making myself clear?Him: Yes Mam

She stood up and then walked away, i couldn't hold back anymore i just started crying. Zaine was sitting a bit far from me..

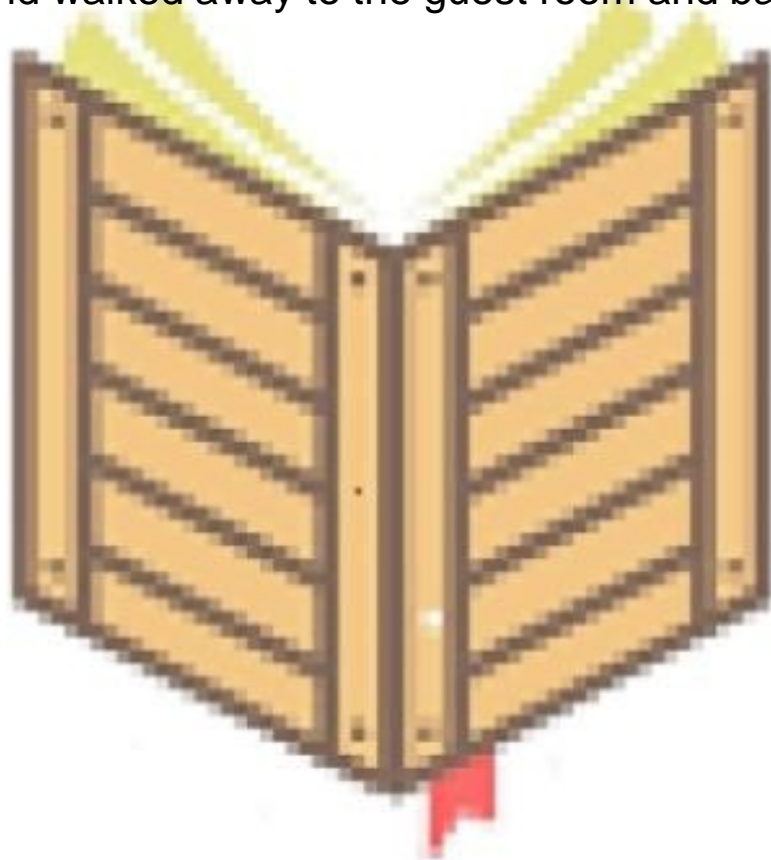
Him: Come here

I shook my head no..Him: Please

I stood up and walked away to the guest room and banged the door..

.

. #ZAINE



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bonolo probably wants to be alone right now and i get that, but she is someone who cannot handle pain that well anymore. She's been hurt soo many times that all she knows Its pain. I am trying to help her, i am trying to show her that life cannot be this hurtful forever, but how can i achieve that when people keep on hurting her left, right, and centre. If God really wants me to change my mind and perception of him, then he is doing it the wrong way. Why can't he be the voice of the voice less? Why can't he fight for the oppressed? While i was sitting there i decided that Enough is Enough, i am going to put and end to this. If God doesn't wanna get God now, then i will Get God for him! I took my keys and my phone then made my way out to my car. I locked Bonolo inside the house and drove straight to her grandmother's place while i called James..
James: Zee Radebe

Me: hey man how are you? Him: Im good and you?
Me: Wish i could say the same



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: What's wrong?

Me: i need you to track someone for meHim: Who?

Me: a Prophet Abdul Him: That's all you got?Me: for now

Him: gonna be hardMe: dig deeper

Him: ill try but im not promising anythingMe: i need you to get me

his Address Him: Why a Prophet?

Me: That's personal

Him: fine ill try, but im not promisingMe: cool

Him: Ayt

I hung up and i hope that James gets something for me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After an hour or so i arrived at her Grandmother's place, she was standing at the gate with some woman and a girl who looked like she was in her 20s, the girl was holding a baby. The hood is very weird, once you park your car everyone is already looking your direction and gossiping..

I got out and made my way to them..Me: Sanibonani (greetings)
They greeted back..

Me: i am Zaine, Zaine Radebe..The other lady replied..

Her: We already know you, how are you Zaine?She extended her hand to me..

She doesn't even know me but she looked very excited to see me..
I looked at the Grandmother..

Me: You are Bonolo's Grandmother?Her: Yes i am



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Can i please talk to you, in privateShe looked at her people..
Her: Shlobo ill fetch Blessing later

The other lady agreed and they went. She led the way andwe got inside the house..

Me: Sorry to just come to your house like this, but i have totalk to you about Bonolo

Her facial expression changed..Her: What has she done now?

Me: Why would you assume that she did something?Her: Where there's Bonolo there's trouble

Me: If i am not mistaken you spoke to my mother?

Her: i had too, that child is devil sent, she is a Demon! shemust go back to wherever she came from!

Me: Ma i don't think you understand what's happening withBonolo, Bonolo has been hurt soo much. Her heart is literally bleeding..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She clicked her tongue...

Me: do you know that she has tried to hurt herself?Her: hurt herself?

Me: committing suicideHer: did she die?

Me: What?

Her: i hope she is dead! She deserves to die!!!

It dawned on me that on this person, the lights are on butthere's no one at home i cannot knock sense into her or reason with her..

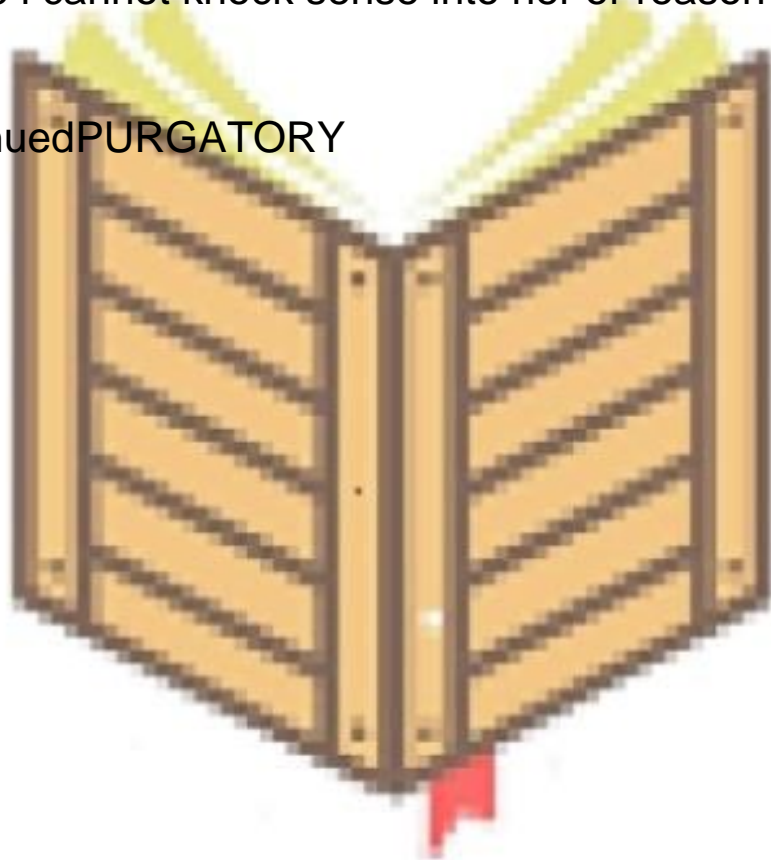
.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥37 #ZAINÉ

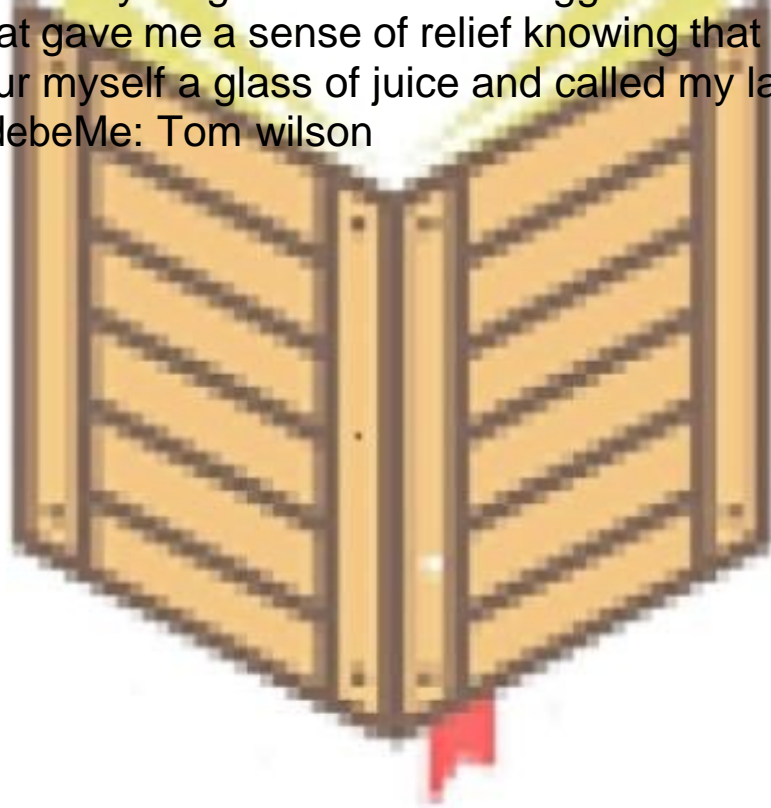
Trying to talk sense into this woman was very impossible, even a one Year old can be more understanding than her. I couldn't believe that she would wish death on her Grandmother, her own flesh and blood..

I arrived home and i was a bit exhausted from all the drama that i had today, my mother kept on calling me but i ignored i wasn't up for her yelling at me again...

The first thing i did when i got home was to check up on Bonolo and she was sound asleep, i was hoping that she was just sleeping and she didn't drink anything that could've drugged her. She was breathing that gave me a sense of relief knowing that she's fine...

I went to pour myself a glass of juice and called my lawyer Tom..

Him: Mr Radebe Me: Tom wilson



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: The one and only I sat down..

Me: i wanna talk to you about something Him: What is it?

Me: need some legal advice Him: hit me

Me: There's this girl that i know, her Child was taken away from her by her Grandmother

Him: Why?

Me: Its a story of she got drunk then the Grandmother got angry. She beat her up, humiliated her in public and then kicked her out of her house

Him: Where is she living now? Me: with me

I cleared my throat after saying that... Me: Can she be able to get her child?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: No

Me: Just like that?

Him: The court will be in favour of the Grandmother. The girl doesn't have a stable home, she drinks, does she have a job?

Me: She's my maid

Him: The court will favour the Grandmother, the girl will be proclaimed unfit to have the baby in her care

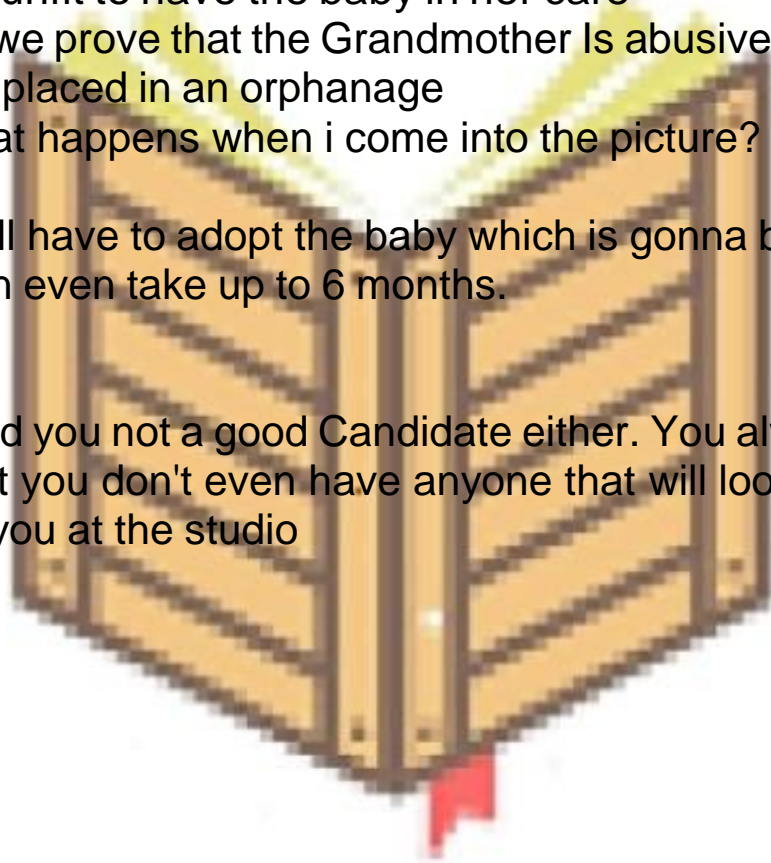
Me: Even if we prove that the Grandmother is abusive? Him: then the baby will be placed in an orphanage

Me: and what happens when I come into the picture?

Him: You will have to adopt the baby which is gonna be a long process, can even take up to 6 months.

Me: Really?

Him: Yes and you are not a good candidate either. You always work, I am sure that you don't even have anyone that will look after the baby when you are at the studio



NOVELSGURU.COM

I exhaled..

Me: This is a tough situation, there's nothing that can be done?

Him: The only thing that can be done is for the girl to talk to her Grandmother

Me: ya the Grandmother is impossible to talk to
Him: then that's bad

Me: What's the worst that can happen?

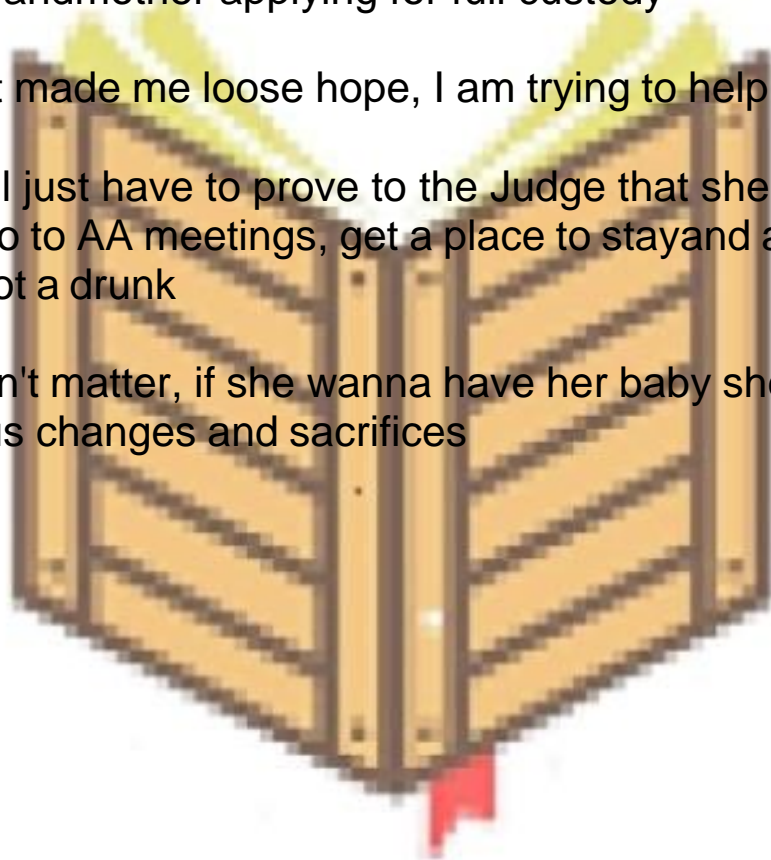
Him: The Grandmother applying for full custody

Hearing that made me lose hope, I am trying to help Bonolo but it's impossible..

Him: she will just have to prove to the Judge that she's changing her ways. Go to AA meetings, get a place to stay and a concrete job

Me: She's not a drunk

Him: it doesn't matter, if she wants to have her baby she will have to make serious changes and sacrifices



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: alright thanks man
Him: my pleasure
Bonolo's life is impossible, the more i try to help the harder it gets... I sat there starring at my phone after ending the call with my lawyer trying to think of the next great plan to help Bonolo..
Her: was that your lawyer?

I turned around and she was standing at the doorway
Me: for how long have you been standing there?

She came and sat down next to me..
Her: long enough

I looked at her. Her eyes were red and swollen indicating that she had been crying..

Me: i was trying to get legal advice on how you can get your son back

Her: and?

Me: Its a bit difficult and Complicated



NOVELSGURU.COM

She closed her eyes, then opened them again...

I stretched my hand to touch hers, but she yanked it off... Her: ill start cooking

Me: You don't have too we can go out Her: i want too

I let her be. My phone kept on ringing and ringing, i checked again and it was my mom i ended up putting it on silence..

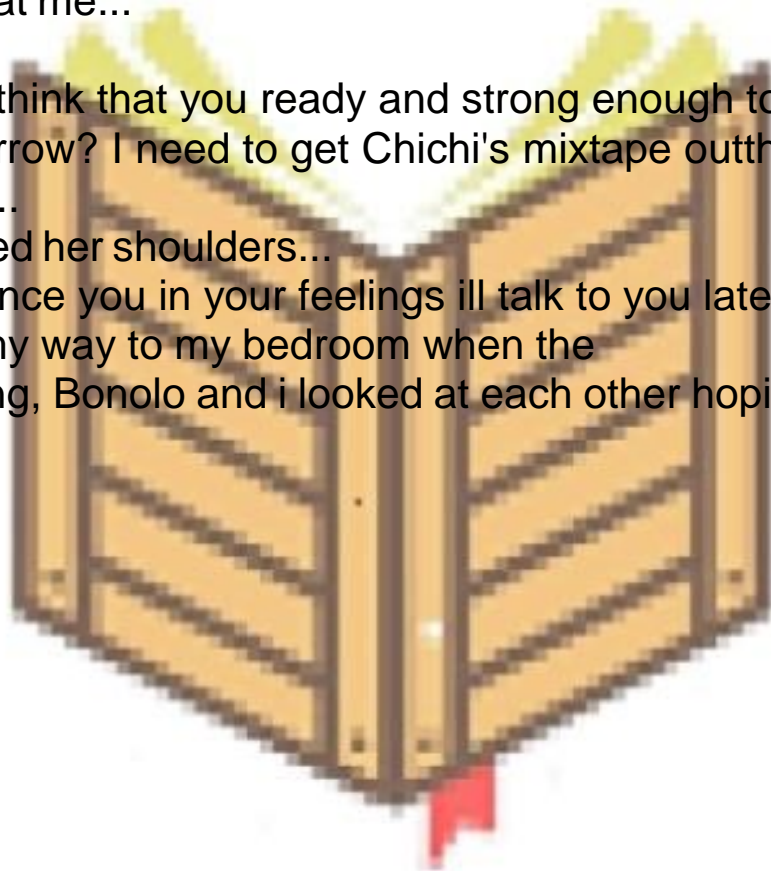
Me: Bonolo

She looked at me...

Me: do you think that you ready and strong enough to go to the studio tomorrow? I need to get Chichi's mixtape out there as soon as possible...

She shrugged her shoulders...

Me: Okay since you in your feelings ill talk to you later I stood up and made my way to my bedroom when the door bell rang, Bonolo and i looked at each other hoping



NOVELSGURU.COM

that Its not my mother again....

I went to see who it was and it was Blake..Me: Blake?
He walked in..

Him: Can i have a word with you?Me: Yeah sure
Bonolo gave us some privacy...

Blake looked serious and angry..He handed me a document..
Me: What's this?

Him: i am leaving Quest Records, i am going to sign withAmbitiouz
entertainment
Me: What?

Him: i have been patient with you man and you killing meas an
artist

Me: i know that i haven't been a good producer lately but



NOVELSGURU.COM

this is extreme man

Him: at the end of the day i am an artist, my reputation matters. This is what keeps food on the table for me and provides a lavish lifestyle for me do you understand? I need this life you playing with my career

I looked at the document again..Me: is Chi coming with you?

Him: No she's staying with youMe: What happened man?

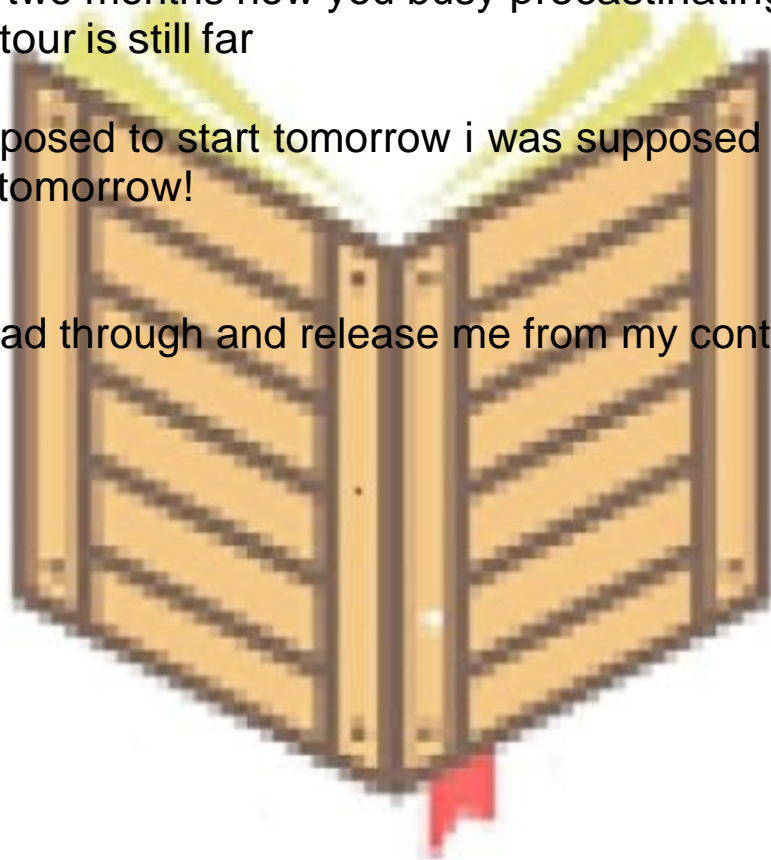
Him: You were supposed to plan my tour and everything beforehand, but Its been two months now you busy procrastinating

Me: but the tour is still far

Him: Its supposed to start tomorrow i was supposed to be performing tomorrow!

Me: Shit!

Him: Just read through and release me from my contract



NOVELSGURU.COM

man

Me: i Can't, i need you Quest Records needs you

Him: if that was true, then you would be treating me like imatter

Me: You do matter

Him: Zaine just release me from my contract okay?He didn't even wait for me to respond, he left..

.

. #BONOLO

I have been eavesdropping on Zaine's conversations and i was starting to feel very bad over the fact that i am causing destruction in his life. I care alot about Zaine and ever since i made it in his life things have been taking a downward spiral. Maybe now Its time that i should consider going, i need to get away from him that's the onlyway that his life can be normal again..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to the guest room and sent Simon a call back, he called me after a few minutes of sending him the call back....

Him: Hey sweetheart Me: Hey

Him: How are you? Me: Im good and you Him: Im fine

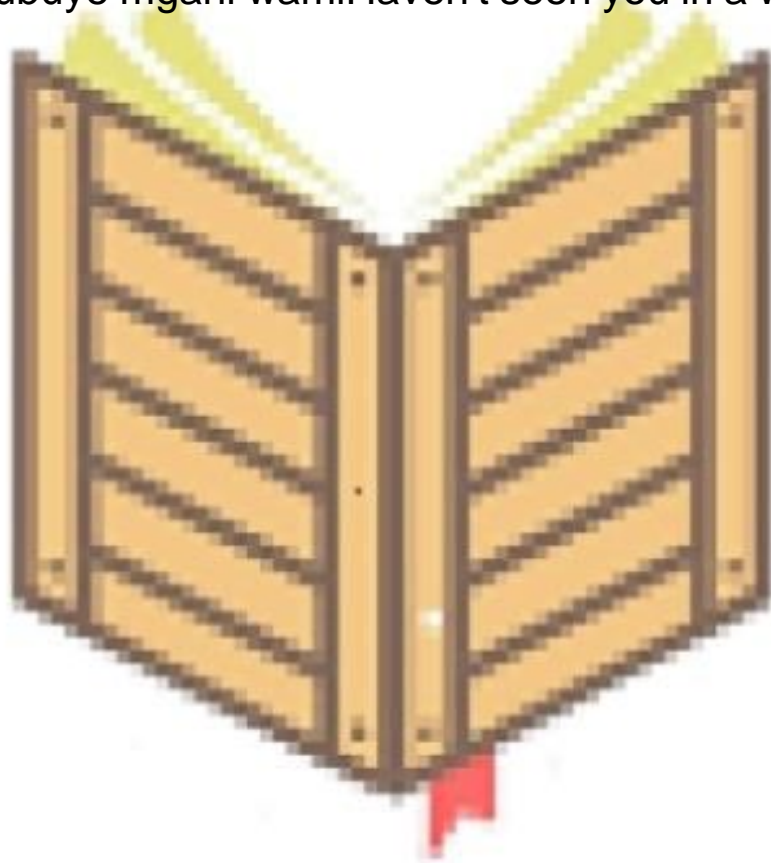
Simon is my boyfriend but there's a lot of things that are happening in my life that he doesn't know off. I was hospitalised and he didn't know, i have Depression and he doesn't know. Its almost as if like we are total strangers, on the other hand Zaine is my friend but he knows more about my life than my boyfriend, i am even living with him instead of my boyfriend. There's something about this situation that makes it sound so wrong..

Simon: Nolo? Me: i.. I am here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: is everything fine sweetheart?Me: Yes i.. I think so
Him: then that's good Me: uhm.. I have to goHim: What's wrong?
Me: Something just came upHim: Something like?
Me: i really have to goI hung up...
I walked over and sat on the bed while thinking. My relationship is not soo perfect but my friendship is whatpart of that statement sounds normal?..
As i was sitting there and having this different thoughtsengulfing my mind, i heard a song that sounded very familiar..
"Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wamiHaven't seen you in a while



NOVELSGURU.COM

Girl I thought you're better off without me ain't gotta stress about it no more"

I could swear that i heard this Song somewhere i just don't remember where..

I stood up and made my way to the lounge were the sound was coming from..

Zaine was playing the song while laying on the couch, looked like he had passed out..

I moved closer and i just looked at him trying to make sense of what was happening

Me: Zaine

He didn't move an inch.. I gently shook him..

Me: Zaine

He opened his eyes and looked at me..

Him: What's wrong? Did something happen? Me: This song where did you get it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: huh? Me: the song

Him: Ohhh Its one of my favourite songs Me: if you say so

Him: Why are you asking? Me: Sounds so familiar

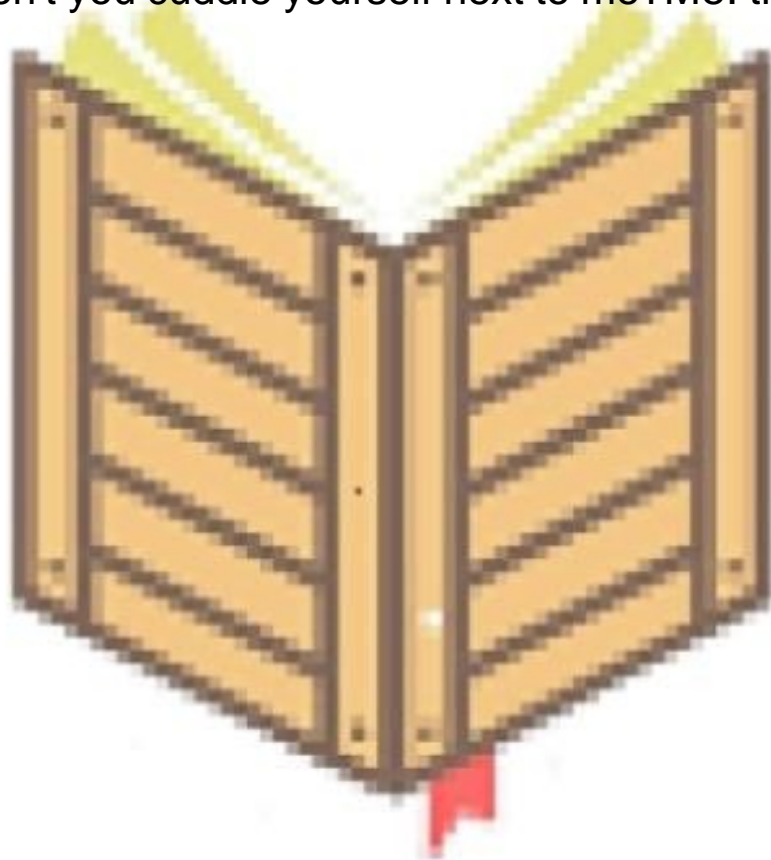
Him: You have heard it before? Me: i think so

Him: Where?

Me: i can't remember but Its a good song Him: Its not good Its great

Me: Yes it is... Maybe we can go out after all Him: ya later, now im just tired wanna rest a little Me: Okay ill let you rest

Him: Why don't you cuddle yourself next to me? Me: the couch is small



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You not fat, and i have to keep an eye on you
Me: Okay
I laid next to him, and he he laid behind me with his armscuddling me..

We were so close to each other that i could feel his warmbreath hitting on my neck. Something is wrong with this picture, i am supposed to be like this with my boyfriend Simon and not my friend...

I turned and looked faced him..Me: Zaine

He opened his eyes and looked at me...Him: What now?

Me: This is not right? Him: What is not right? Me: This, what we doing
Him: Why you say so?

Me: Im supposed to be like this with Simon and not you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Where is he?Me: Good question

We continued starring at each other like that and before i knew it he leaned closer and kissed me whole body froze ididn't expect that at all..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

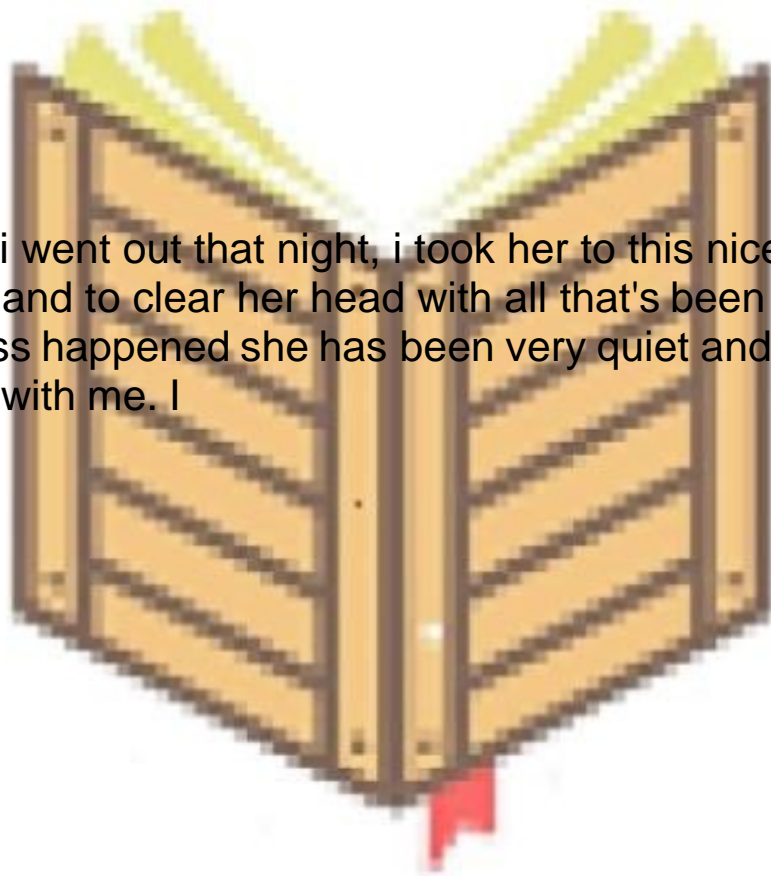
.

.

.

¥38 #ZAINÉ

Bonolo and i went out that night, i took her to this nice restaurant for a nice meal and to clear her head with all that's been happening. Since the kiss happened she has been very quiet and couldn't make eye contact with me. I



NOVELSGURU.COM

won't say the kiss was great, and i won't say that it was bad either but it did reveal that Bonolo doesn't have much experience with such. For someone who has a boyfriend you wouldn't expect them not to be skilled in such, which made me wonder if her and Simon ever kissed. At first i thought that she was reluctant because of the fact that she has been sexually violated but that wasn't the case with her it was just a case of not knowing what she was doing.. I looked at her and she was looking around trying to familiarise herself with the place..

Me: How are you finding your food?

She looked at me, then looked at her plate..Her: Its.. Its not bad I would believe that if she actually ate something, even a small portion...

Her: Thank you for taking me out Me: Its nothing you needed fresh air



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i did

Me: and you look beautiful by the way dresses really suit you

Her: Thank you

She wasn't soo happy with the compliment.

She seemed as if like something was bothering her..Me: Something on your mind?

She shook her head no, i looked at her..

Her: Not that i am meddling in your business but i overheard the argument you had earlier on with your friend

Me: Yeah that

Her: i know Its my fault that you have been neglecting your work

Me: don't ever think like that, it was my choice to be less involved with my Artists Its my fault, not yours

Her: but still..

I extended my hand to hers and this time around she didn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

yank if off..

Me: ill find another great artist don't worry Blake is not the only talented rapper out there, there's other rappers who can spit She smiled and started eating her food. I lied to not put more stress on her, i was fucked. Blake was the only artist who brought a lot of dough for me and loosing him is gonna be a serious set back i can even go broke because he will be leaving with all the money he has made off his sales. Being his manager and Producer i only get 30% of the profit he makes and with my financially demanding lifestyle my 30% was at the verge of finishing soon..

Me: How are things between you and Simon? She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: things are fine

Me: i expected your reaction to be enthusiastic when being asked about your boyfriend

Her: i don't know Zaine i just don't wanna talk about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Okay

I continued eating my food.. Her: can i ask you something?Me: shoot

Her: uhm since the kiss happened where does that put us?Me: i really don't know

Her: i like our friendship and i value it a lotMe: but?

Her: but i love Simon and i don't wanna ruin my relationship with him. Simon has always been there, he has protected me and sacrificed a lot for me and Blessing

Here she goes describing someone she is "inlove" with asif like Its her Brother than her lover

Me: i understand and i don't wanna ruin your relationshipwith him

Her: plus you have Melissa and she looks crazy i don'twanna be caught up in fights



NOVELSGURU.COM

I haven't seen Melissa for at least 2 days now, i just go home one time and she wasn't there but her clothes are still at my place....

Since we were having this "friendship date" i took out my phone to check my messages and i got a message from my mother that i have to go to the hospital, my father is grave sick now..

Me: We have to go Her: What's wrong?

Me: Its my dad he is very sick now i stood up..

Her: Im sorry to hear that, you can drop me off at home first

Me: That's gonna take forever i have to take you with Her: Ms Jackson remember?

Me: She will have to wait, come on lets go

We walked out and went to my car and i drove to the



NOVELSGURU.COM

hospital..

I was Scared, i know Cancer is deadly but my father cannot die, i still need him. With my family being like thisto me he is the only one who understands me and i can'tafford to loose him..

We arrived at the hospital and we quickly rushed to hisward. Bonolo stopped halfway..

Me: What?

Her: You have to go in alone, i don't wanna start MsJackson, ill wait for you at the receptionist

Me: Okay i understand

She came closer and hugged me..Him: now go

I hurried up and went to his ward. I found my mother andmy Brother standing by my Father's bed..

I made my way to him and he did look bad, very bad..Me: Pops



NOVELSGURU.COM

He turned and looked at me. His lips were dry, he had black spots around his eyes, his eyes were even half-opened. He looked drained and he was very pale..

He stretched his hand to me and I held it..He was even struggling to talk...

Him: You.. You..

Me: You don't have to say anything

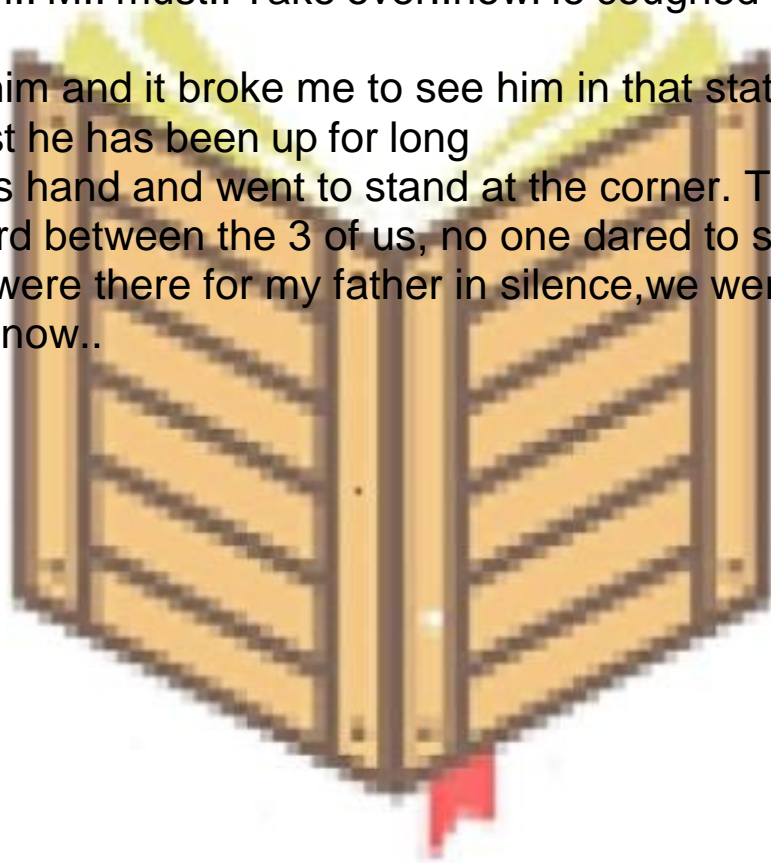
Him: You.. M.. M.. must.. Take over..nowHe coughed and closed his eyes..

I looked at him and it broke me to see him in that state..Mom: he needs to rest he has been up for long

I let go of his hand and went to stand at the corner. Things were very awkward between the 3 of us, no one dared to say anything to anyone we were there for my father in silence, we were strangers than Family now..

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

I sat at the receptionist while playing with my fingers and singing in a soft voice..

Me: "is there a man out there? Someone to hear my prayer.. Gimme.. Gimme.. Gimme.. A man after midnight won't Somebody help me chase the shadows away"

I was busy thinking about the kiss i shared with Zaine earlier on. It wasn't the best, i mean i haven't had a serious kiss before and with Abdul it was a disgusting scenario it was more of him shoving his tongue down my throat it was very disgusting...

I was brought back into reality when the smell of a cologne made its way to my nose. It wasn't strong, it didn't smell bad, it was a pleasant smell. It was a men's cologne guys who smell good like this are very attractive..

I looked on my side and this good looking man was sitting next to me. He was very handsome, he was wearing all formal and his clothes looked expensive. He had broad shoulders if i didn't know well i would say that he is playing



NOVELSGURU.COM

rugby or used too because he had a fine upper body. My description of him doesn't mean that i am attracted to him because he looked way older than me, old to be my father..

He had rolled his shirt sleeves revealing a Blue vintagePolice watch and he had a tattoo on his arm..

Him: hi

He had a wide beautiful smile, he seemed soo friendly..Me: hello

Him: What is a beautiful girl like you doing sitting alone?Me: Just waiting for a friend

Him: ohh i see, is your friend sick?

Me: No sir he is seeing his father who is very sickHim: That's sad

Me: i know

Him: Im actually here to see a friend tooMe: Your friend is sick too?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yes Me: Im sorry

Him: Its alright his time is up Me: he is dying?

Him: unfortunately Yes, he is refusing treatment he has cancer

Me: Why?

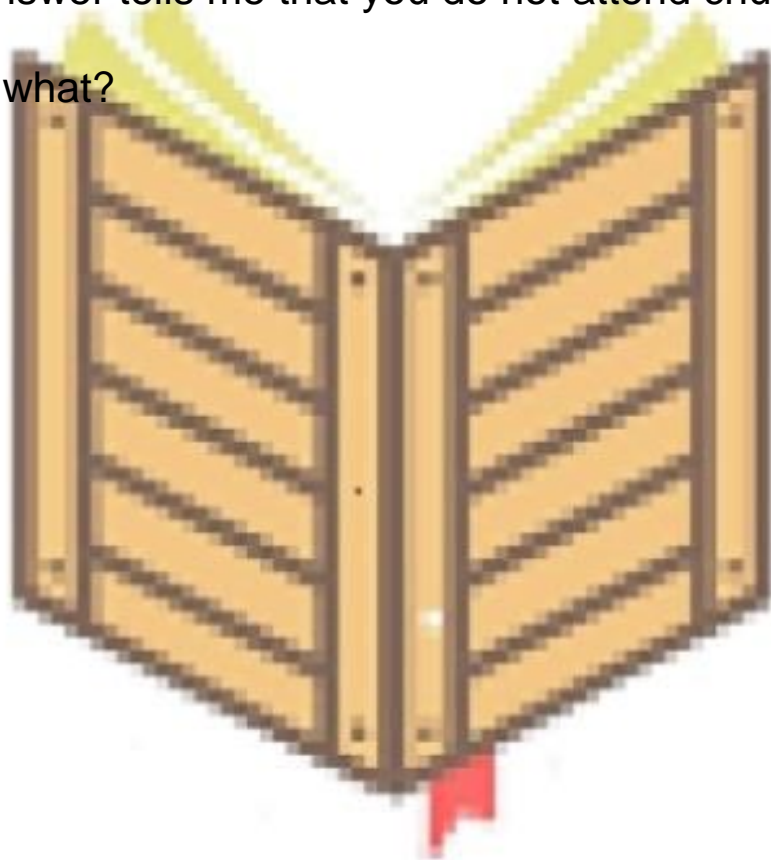
Him: Because he has to make way for someone else Me: i am not following

Him: one day you will We kept quiet..

Him: Where do you church? Me: uhm that's a bit personal

Him: That answer tells me that you do not attend church Me: Its not like that

Him: Its like what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Just that i don't think i am perfect enough to be in that environment

Him: Who told you that?Me: my Grandmother

Him: Why did she say such?

Me: long story, but the situation is that i believe her wordsHim: Because?

Me: i don't know she's a serious Christian, she goes to church, she Prays and i tend to believe her words

Him: You sound as if like you don't have a good relationship with her

Me: That's true.. I just don't know why she doesn't love me or want me

Him: You want her to love you? Me: Yes i don't have much family

Him: do me a favour

I looked at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: go sleep on the reception counter
Me: What?
Him: climb up there and sleep there
Me: No are you serious?
Him: Yes

Me: i am not gonna do that
Him: Why not?
Me: i can't expect the counter to be a bed It is not Its purpose to serve as a bed
Him: then that's your answer
Me: Im confused
Him: You cannot expect other people to give you what they don't have or weren't created for.. If you feel like your Grandmother doesn't love you then she wasn't created to love you. The more you expect people to give you what they weren't created for you will only be hurting yourself
Me: i didn't look at it that way



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i am giving a sermon tomorrow why don't you come
He took out a small card and handed it to me..

Him: has the address of the venue and time
Me: "Forgiving God"

Him: That's what ill be teaching about
Me: You a Pastor?

He chuckled..

Him: No i am not, i don't preach i teach
Me: Prophet Ayo faziel-Badru

Him: Yes

Me: No thanks ill pass
Him: Reason being?

Me: i don't need a reason
Him: handed him the card...

Him: The way you hate Prophets just because of one that hurt you deeply



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Excuse me?

Him: Just watch out because one day you might be married to one
He stood up..

Me: i will never marry a prophet, most evil people on earth

Him: careful what you say remember the saying "Never say never"..
Bye miss Seko was nice to finally meet you
He walked away, how does he know me? See the reason i want
nothing to do with Prophets there's something sinister about them..
I will never marry a prophet most evil people on earth who use God
to hurt those that are defenseless..

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥39 #BONOLO

We got back from the hospital later that night, Zaine was awfully quiet on our way home he was captured in his own thoughts. I can only imagine what he is going through, Its not easy to hear that your Parent is grave sick especially if its a Parent that you love dearly..

We got home and all he wanted was to just bath then go to sleep. I wish i could be there for him the same way that he has been there for me all this time but it wasn't easy because he was shutting me out i don't know how to reach out to him...

When he went to his bedroom i also went to the guest room and my phone was ringing on the bed, i went and answered it..

Me: Hello Siya: Mmata!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Mmata..Its has been a while

Him: That's because you don't answer your phone i havebeen calling you!

Me: Sorry Mmata i have been busyHim: Are you back at home?

Me: No my grandmother still doesn't wanna see meHim: so where are you staying now?

Me: a friend's place

Him: if you want a place to stay you can just come livewith me
Mmata

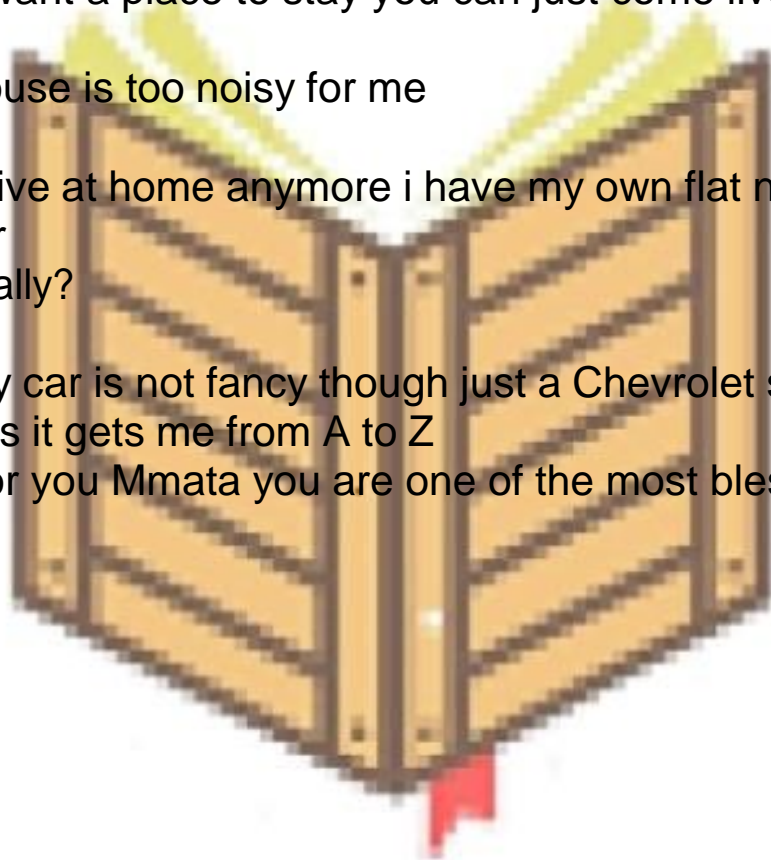
Me: Your house is too noisy for me

Her: i don't live at home anymore i have my own flat nowand i even bought a car

Me: Wow really?

Him: Yes my car is not fancy though just a Chevrolet sparkbut Nevertheless it gets me from A to Z

Me: Good for you Mmata you are one of the most blessed



NOVELSGURU.COM

people i know

Him: i am Blessed Mmata but this lifestyle doesn't come easy

Me: i thought you were still in school, how are you able to afford everything?

Him: i have my ways Mmata i am a Blessee Me: a Blessee?

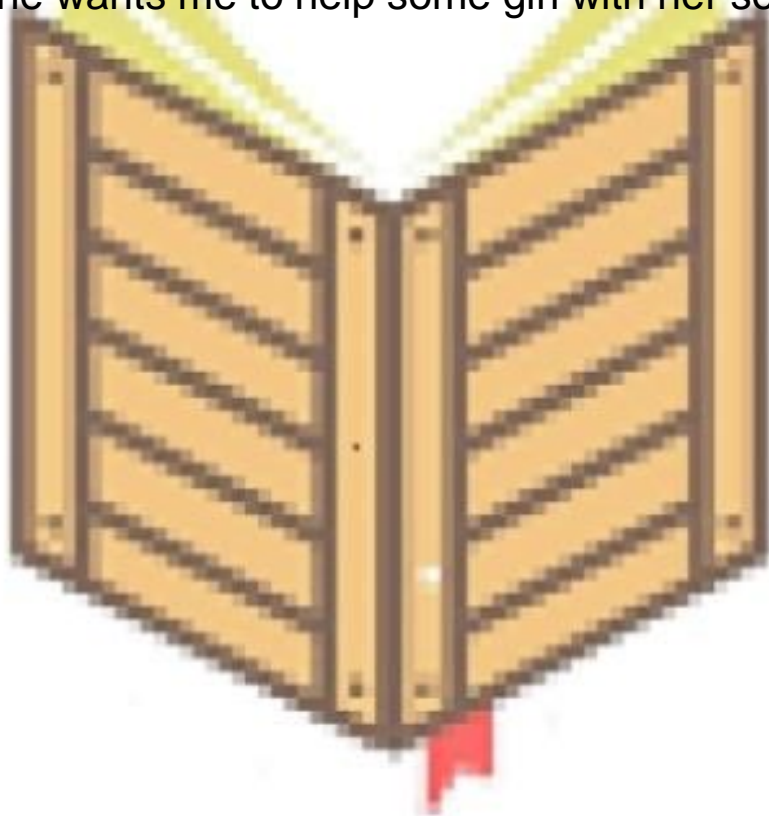
Him: Ask no questions and hear no shocking statements Me: Ohw

Her: i wanna fetch you tomorrow so you can come and see my flat

Me: at what time tomorrow? Him: in the morning

Me: that won't do i am supposed to go to the studio Him: studio?

Me: Yes Zaine wants me to help some girl with her songs



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: did you just say Zaine? As in like Zaine Radebe? TheeZee?
Me: Yes

Him: Get out of here!Me: You know him?
Him: Everyone knows Zee, the question is how do you know him?
Me: long story

Him: i must come to the studio tomorrow morning, seems like there's a lot you wanna tell me
Me: You should come, do you know where his studio is?Him: Yes i know were it is
Me: Okay

Him: i have to go ill see you tomorrow morning thenMe: Tomorrow morning it is
Him: much love Mmata



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: much love

After the call i went to bath, then after i said my prayers and went straight to bed..

The following morning i woke up and prepared myself so that i don't make Zaine late as always. When i was done preparing myself i went to the kitchen to prepare something to eat for the both of us..

The house was quiet, Its highly not normal for Zaine to be still sleeping at this time. I decided to go and check up on him i was a bit worried..

I knocked and he didn't say anything. I slowly opened the door..

Me: Zaine..

He was still sleeping.. I went over to the other side and there was a whiskey bottle on the floor it was half empty..

Me: Zaine

He was fast asleep...



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shook him until he opened his eyes and looked at me..Me: wake up we supposed to be at the studio

Him: Fuck i forgot He rubbed his eyes..Him: What time it is?Me: i am not sure

He got up and sat up straight while i went to open thecurtains...

Him: do you have to do that? Me: the sun must shine throughHim: ill go and bath

He was shirtless and only wearing his jeans..

He stood up and made his way to the bathroom...

Him: You should try wearing tight things with G-strings andnot a bum short

I looked at myself..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: How did you??? You are Nasty!

He winked at me and made his way out..

I started making his bed and tidied up a little around his room..
When i was done i made my way to the kitchen to eat something..
He showed up after a while wearing a vest and track pants...

Me: What an outfit

Him: i am not planning on going anywhere
Me: What about the studio?

He took one of my sausages from my plate...
Me: Hey!

Him: We live to share.. Ill see Chi tomorrow today i am not feeling good

Me: Its all that alcohol you been consuming

He pushed me and i almost fell from the chair..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: grow up Zaine!!

He folded his arms and stood at the sink just looking at me..

Me: What now?

Him: Your earrings are different today Me: so?

Him: You mostly wearing Cubic Zirconia studs today you wearing hoops earrings.

I looked at him..

Me: You have been noticing?

Him: i notice everything about you Me: like?

Him: You like tying up your hair than to leave it dangling because you find tying it up more neat..

Me: than letting it loose Him: Yeah that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Wow i.. Its a first for someone to know that about me
Him: Simon doesn't notice such things?
I shook my head no..

Me: those are silly things to notice
Him: chuckled..
Him: silly but cute

Zaine was starting to make me feel a bit uncomfortable with all this talk..

He made his way to me and stood behind me...he whispered next to my ear

Him: again i think you will look more sexier in a G-string
I turned and looked at him..

Me: You should stop saying such things Its not right

The door bell rang, he pecked my lips and went to check who it was... I continued eating my breakfast when i heard Simon's voice..

Simon: Good morning



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: Yeah

Simon: is Bonolo around?

Zaine: How did you find my place?Him: i was directed

Zaine: How did you get in?Simon: security

Zaine: Its like now they just let anyone inSimon: is Bonolo around?

Zaine looked at me and then looked at Simon while blocking the Door..

Zaine: She's working try coming during her lunch time at13:00

Simon: Can i talk to her?

Zaine: i thought i made myself clear on that statementMe: Zaine

He looked at me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Its fine

He looked at Simon..

Zaine: She doesn't have the whole day make it quick

He let him in and then Simon came to hug me while Zaine went to stand at the kitchen sink again..

Simon: How are you Sweetheart? Me: Im good and you Zaine Chuckled..

Zaine: Sweetheart how cute and clichel looked at him..

Me: Can you please give us some privacy? Zaine: Privacy.. In my house?

Me: Please

He looked at me thinking...

Him: Fine make it quick you still have a lot of chores to do Me: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

He walked to his room...

Zaine: i see that you wearing that Blue bum short that i like That was awkward, Zaine can be impossible..

Simon: Blue bum short? Me: Its nothing

Him: How does he know the colour of your bum short? Me: he is just being silly

He looked around..

Him: Your Grandma is right, i must take you out of here Me: You were at my Grandmother's?

Him: That's how i got here she directed me Me: i see

He looked at me.. Him: Sweetheart I looked at him..

Him: When was the last time you saw Blessing?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why ask?

Him: Its like you have neglected him
Me: That's not true

Him: then what's true?

Me: Simon i don't wanna talk about it

Him: What happened to you Nolo? This is not you, you have changed
It would be very lovely if Simon could take his time to find out what's been happening to me this past few days instead of asking me this questions..

Him: tonight ill come get you, you and Blessing are moving in with me

If he said that to me a week before, i would probably be happy but now i enjoy living with Zaine more than anything...

Me: Ohw

I looked down..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i thought you would be excitedMe: i am

Him: i mean we have always wanted this haven't we?I looked at him and smiled..

Me: i am excited.. But what about Abdul?Him: Don't worry about him

Me: and how did you get out of the Purgatory?

Him: That doesn't matter, what matters is that we finallygoing to be a family

Me: that's great..

He came and hugged me

Was it great? Was i excited? No i wasn't my heart justwanna be here with Zaine..

.

. #ZAINE



NOVELSGURU.COM

All i wanted to do was to just sleep the whole day. I was beyond the word fucked, i was done and still felt a bit wasted..

I was laying on my bed while starring at the ceiling and i felt as if like the bed was moving when my cellphone rang..

I stretched my hand and got it then Answered..Me: Hello

James: Abdul Sekol sat up straight..

Him: i found himMe: No ways!

Him: found everything about him, his compoud and where it is situated Its called Purgatory i am Emailing everything to you

Me: You son of a gun!Him: Thank me later

Me: ill transfer your payement later



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Ayt cool

I hung up and went to the kitchen..The dude Simon was still there..

Bonolo: Hey guess what?Me: What?

Her: i am moving in with Simon tonight he has found us a flat
That was unexpected news to my ears..Simon made his way to me..

Him: Thank you for giving my girlfriend shelter when she needed it
the most, i have spoken to her Grandmother and she's fine with
everything so ill take my family to their newhome Tonight
He pat me on my shoulder.. I looked at his hand..

Me: Take your dirty calloused hand off my tshirt before ifuck you
up!

He took off his hand then went to Bonolo and kissed her



NOVELSGURU.COM

cheek..

Simon: ill come and take you out for lunchBonolo: Okay

Him: i love you Her: i love you too

He walked up to the door, i looked at Bonolo..Her: ill start cleaning

She walked passed me..Me: Bonolo

She stopped and looked at me.. Me: do you really wanna move out?

She exhaled..

Her: i don't know, im confused

Me: Maybe this will un-confuse you

I went up to her and kissed her again, this time she was more relaxed than the last time..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I broke the kiss then looked at her with my hand on her cheek..
Me: i think i am inlove with youHer: Same here
This time around she was the one who got closer and kissed me.
Was cute because she was short so she had to stand on her toes.
The more relaxed she was, the more the kiss got less tense..

To be continued PURGATORY

¥40 #BONOLO

We spent our morning outdoors. The weather had no



NOVELSGURU.COM

jealousy, it was a bit warm but yet cloudy. Zaine decided that we go to a park and just take a walk around, i was allfor the idea. We were walking around while eating ice creams and holding hands. We would stop every now andthen to kiss, it was a very special moment for me to experience such, not even Simon has made me feel this way..

Me: You know ZeeHim: Its Zaine

Me: but everyone calls you Zee

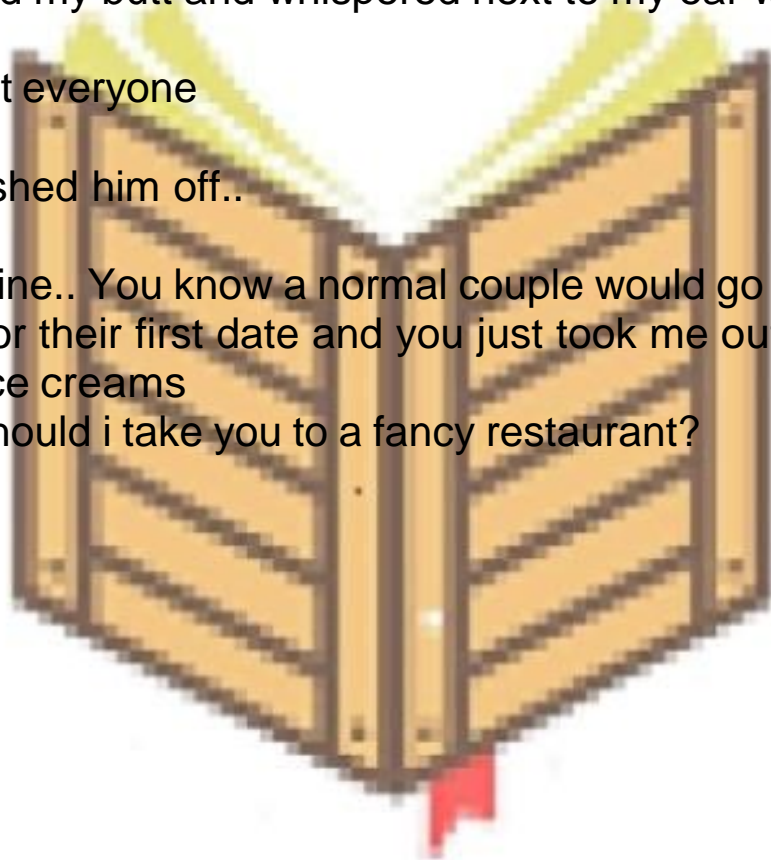
He squeezed my butt and whispered next to my ear withhis cold lips..

Him: You not everyone

I slightly pushed him off..

Me: Fine Zaine.. You know a normal couple would go to afancy restaurant for their first date and you just took me out to a park and we licking ice creams

Him: Why should i take you to a fancy restaurant?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i mean the movies we watched the guys would take their girlfriends to fancy restaurants

Him: We not in no chick flick We continued walking..

Him: How many dates have you went out too with Simon? I stopped, he stopped too..

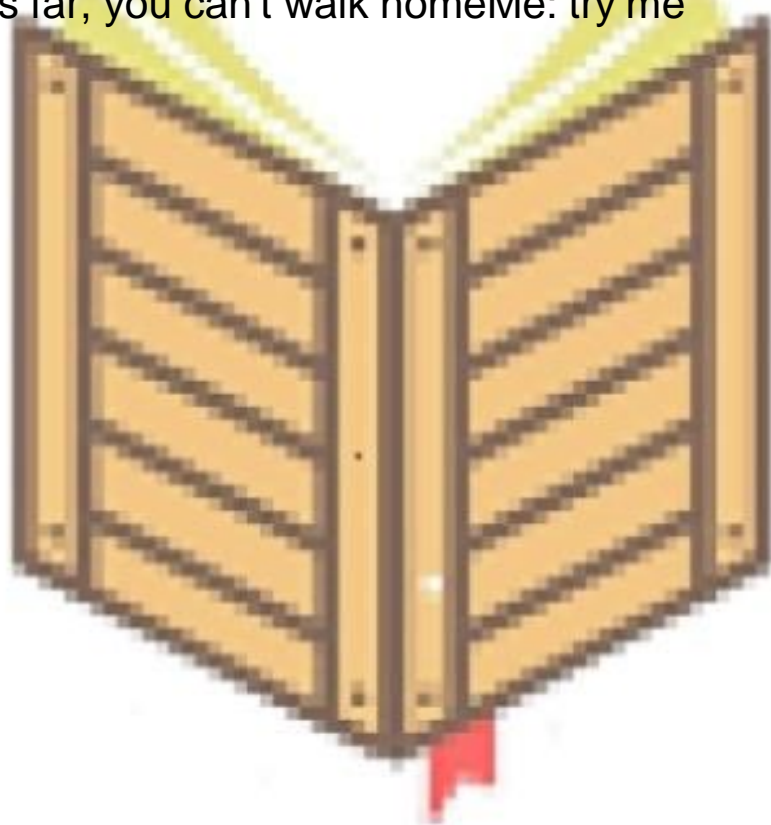
Me: do we have to talk about him? Him: he is your boyfriend

Me: i know but.. Him: but?

Me: i just don't wanna talk about Simon right now Him: i thought you guys loved each other

Me: one more word about Simon and i promise you ill go back home

Him: home is far, you can't walk home Me: try me



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at me then laughed.. Him: Okay ill stop bringing him up
He held my hand again and we continued walking..

Him: Are you guys really in a relationship or you were forced to be in a relationship?

I let go of his hand and turned back..Him: is she Seri... Bonolo?
I ignored him and continued walking...

He ran and caught up with me then stopped me..Him: now im serious i won't bring him up

Me: ill walk home

Him: i know you will, you that crazyMe: Are you insulting me?

Him: No i.. You know what lets kill it

He held my hand as we tried walking again in peace hopefully..



NOVELSGURU.COM

His phone beeped and he took it out..Him: Ohw
Me: What?

Him: Just got an Sms that American swiss they have a new Brand
of watches Daniel Klein, they arrived yesterday
Me: expensive?

Him: We will have to go and check them out

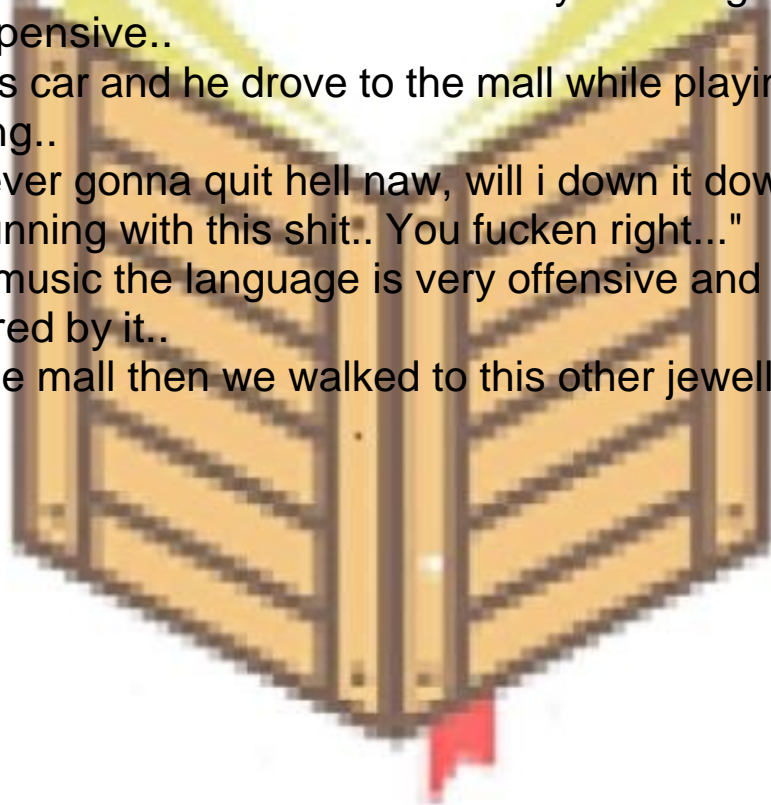
What i have noticed about Zaine is that he loves watches,he has a
collection of watches in his bedroom. They all designed beautifully
and look expensive..

We got to his car and he drove to the mall while playing music and
singing along..

Him: "am i ever gonna quit hell naw, will i down it down a bit hell
naw, am i running with this shit.. You fucken right..."

Most of his music the language is very offensive and heseems not
to be bothered by it..

We got to the mall then we walked to this other jewellery



NOVELSGURU.COM

shop..

As soon as we walked in some lady who was wearing allblack came to us..

Her: Zee Zaine: Yoli

Her: How are you? Zaine: Im good and youHer: Im fine thanks They hugged..

Her: been a whileHim: true that
She looked at me..

Him: i thought that you were with Melissa?Him: Yeah things happen you know

Her: ill ask no more

Him: Can you show me the new watches



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Daniel Klein? Him: Yes please Her: right this way We followed her.. Her: They still new Him: They dope He looked at me.. Him: want one?

Me: uhm i don't really wear watches

Him: There's always a first time for everything

I looked at the watches and with the help of the sales assistant i chose a one that was navy blue, the strap was steel instead of genuine leather. Zaine chose the same colour but his strap was genuine leather. It was a beautiful watch i won't lie, after getting the watches we went out to eat..

Him: Are you getting used to this restaurants?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I nodded..

Me: but never been to this one Him: wimpy they have good shakes

Me: if you say so

Him: i have to tell you something Me: What is it?

Him: i.. Me: You?

Was my first time seeing Zaine This speechless..Him: i found
Prophet Abdul

Me: You what?

Him: i sent out my PI to tail him and he did, he E-mailed me the
Address of his compoud called Purgatory and i am going there
tomorrow

Me: Zaine are you hearing yourself?Him: Yes i am going to expose
him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Fear crept in again, where Abdul is concerned i can't helpbut feel very scared..

I was even starting to shake..Me: Why are you doing this?

Him: he has to pay for what he has done!Me: Just leave it alone please..

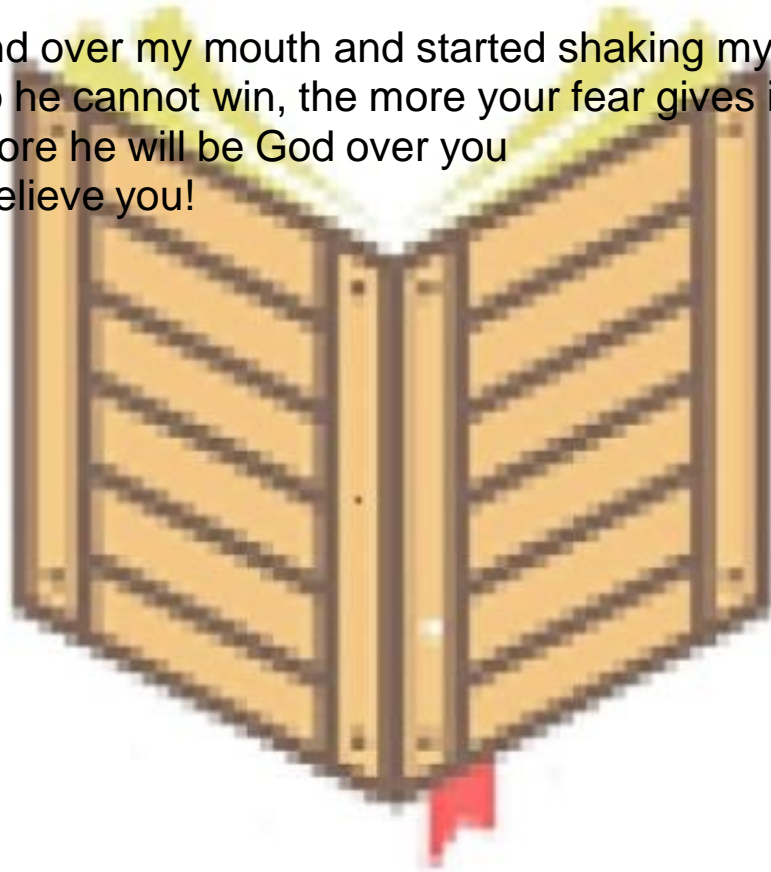
Him: i am not gonna leave it aloneMe: Why not?

Him: Because i love you and knowing that you have beenhurt like that it makes me angry to know that the person who did that to you is still out there probably doing the same to other innocent young girls

I put my hand over my mouth and started shaking myhead...

Him: Bonolo he cannot win, the more your fear gives in tothis the more and more he will be God over you

Me: i can't believe you!



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked at me..

Him: You say that you love me but you putting my life indanger again, if Abdul finds me..

Him: Im doing this so that he cannot find you!! stood up..

Him: Where are you going now?Me: Home

Him: fine ill drive you

Me: don't bother, Simon will pick me up ill call himHim: Ohw so Its like that now?

I walked to the exit with him following me, he grabbed myarm..

Him: Bonolo waitI pushed him...

Me: Stay away from me!

I took off the watch and threw it at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: this is crazy you overreacting!
Me: Stay away from me!
I took my phone out and walked away to call Simon..

. #ZAINÉ

Bonolo wants to act like a child so i let her be, i don't have time for milk and cookies..

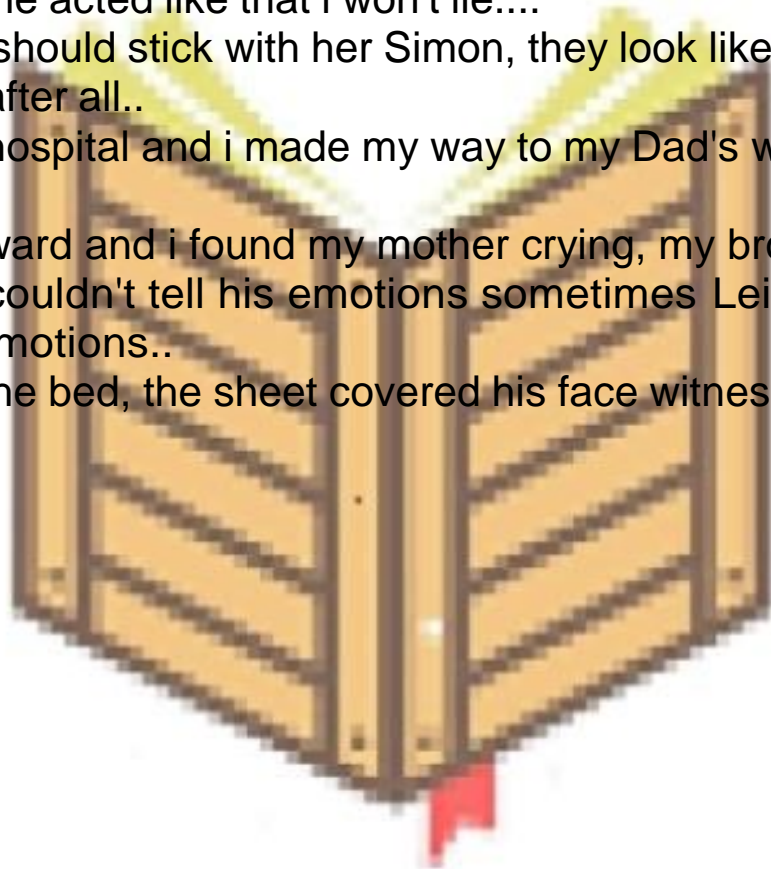
I got to my car and drove to the hospital to see my father, i was very upset that she acted like that i won't lie....

Maybe she should stick with her Simon, they look like they deserve each other after all..

I got to the hospital and i made my way to my Dad's ward..

I got to his ward and i found my mother crying, my brother was there too i couldn't tell his emotions sometimes Leighton doesn't show any emotions..

I looked at the bed, the sheet covered his face witnessing



NOVELSGURU.COM

that alerted me that my Father is no more..I made my way to him..
Me: Dad..

Leighton came and held me from going to see what was happening with my father..

I looked at my mother..Me: What happened?

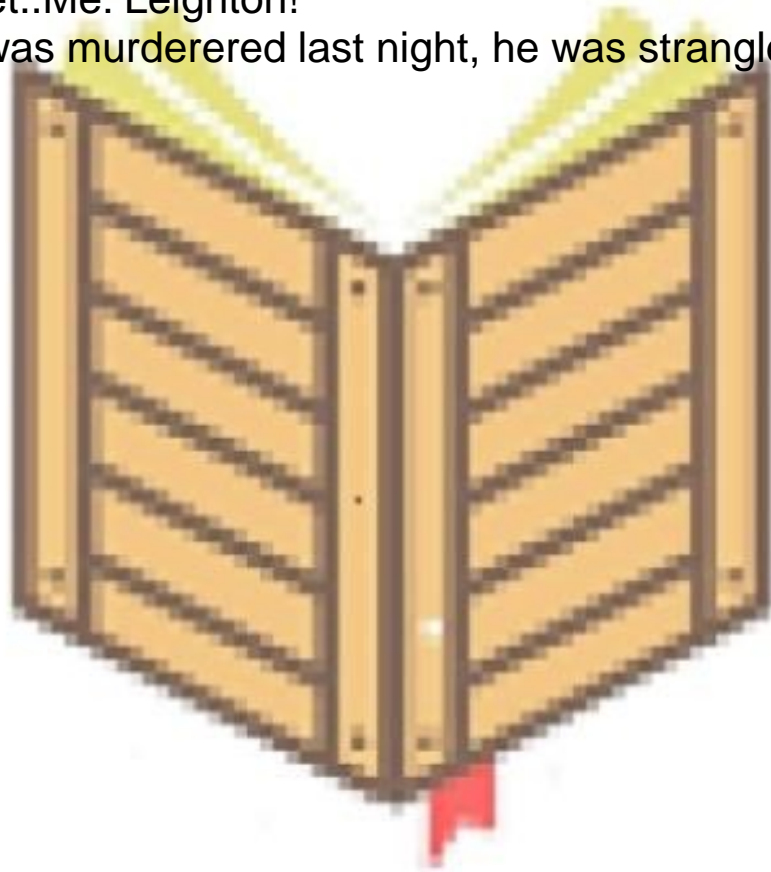
She shook her head while crying..Leighton pushed me out..

Me: What's happening with Pops?Him: Calm down

Me: don't tell me to calm down what's happening with Pops!

He kept quiet..Me: Leighton!

Him: Pops was murdered last night, he was strangled to



NOVELSGURU.COM

death

Me: What? How does someone strangle someone to death in a private hospital

Him: That's what we're trying to find out, the cops are gonna look into this matter

This was unbelievable, I cannot believe that my Father died like that. If he was intended to die then it wasn't supposed to happen like this..

I sank down on the floor..

Leighton came and put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: I'm sorry little Bro, I know how close you and Pop were

.

. #BONOLO

Simon came to fetch me and he was driving me to Zaine's place to get my things..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: You still haven't told me what's going on?Me: It doesn't matter
Him: after getting your clothes we will go and fetchBlessing
Me: my Grandmother will never allow

Him: she will i have already talked to her, told her i amBlessing's
father
I looked at him..

Me: then she will think that i was lying for real that Abdulwas
sleeping with me

Him: You told her?I nodded..

Him: You shouldn't tell anyone sweetheart not everyone isgonna
believe you

I looked out of the window..Me: i figured that out

I looked at my phone hoping Zaine would call but he didn't..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't even know why i was expecting his call..

Simon held my hand and smiled at me, i faked a smile too..

.

To be continued

Through the eyes of Precious Moloji

PURGATORY

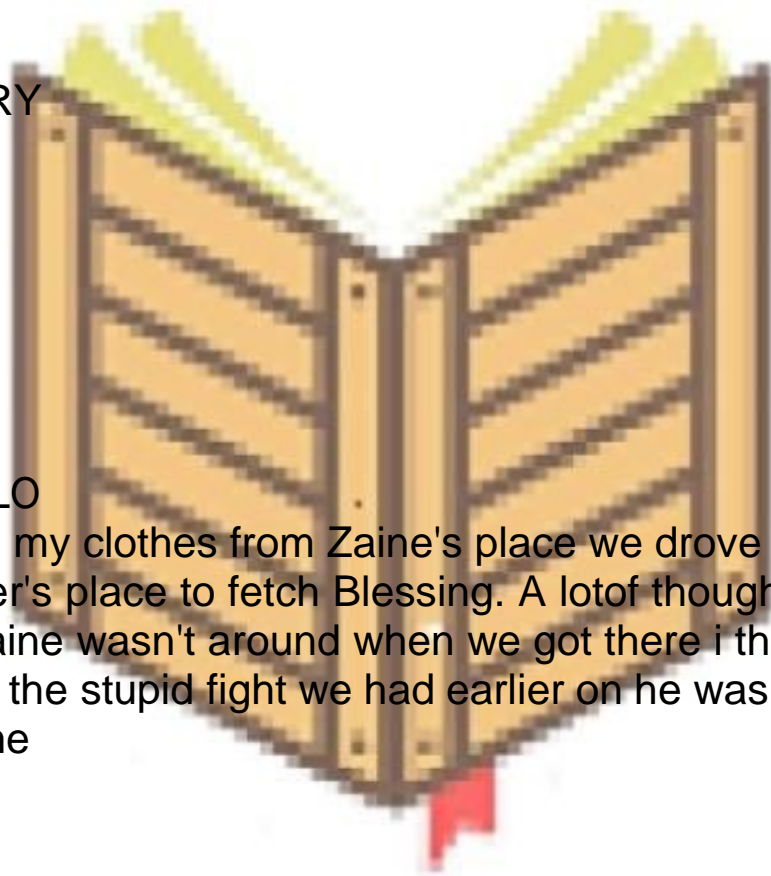
.

.

.

¥41 #BONOLO

After getting my clothes from Zaine's place we drove straight to my Grandmother's place to fetch Blessing. A lot of thoughts troubled my mind first Zaine wasn't around when we got there i thought that maybe after the stupid fight we had earlier on he was gonna drive straight home



NOVELSGURU.COM

and sleep, that's what he does mostly when he is mad. Another thing that troubled me was how my Grandmother was going to react especially after what happened that time with me and Siya drinking in her house. Is she gonna attack me and Simon, probably with hot water this time around? I was very worried about her reaction... I looked at Simon as he was driving, he looked at me too and Smiled. Everytime when our eyes meet he always smiles at me, Its not something that holds a special moment but Its a routine to smile at each other when our eyes meet same as saying "i love you". The greatest Difference between Simon and Zaine is that when i am with Zaine everything just happens spontaneously. Nothing is forced, nothing is faked every little thing that we do, from joking around to walking in the park while holding hands is moments that are not staged or enforced. Simon on the other hand tries so hard to make sure that he does everything in a perfect manner, he enforces happiness in me not in a bad way though but more of like he is Obligated to always make me feel



NOVELSGURU.COM

comfortable he makes it a chore and his duty to be perfect towards me..

Back then it didn't bother me because i didn't have much experience with relationships i have never been in one but since i met Zaine he has changed my whole perception of how relationships should be. He makes it more fun, enjoyable, memorable and sometimes the arguments we have like the one we had earlier on, makes the heart bleed because of the fact that we both have too much pride to break the silent treatment. I made sure that my phone is on my hand the whole time incase he calls, but he never did which hurt more..

We arrived at my Grandmother's place and we walked up to the door while holding hands. We had to show a united front so Simon said to me in order for her to allow us to leave with Blessing.. After Knocking 3 times she opened the door while coughing, my heart skipped a beat in fear. I started



NOVELSGURU.COM

trembling and i felt hot flushes throughout my wholebody..
As soon as we got out of the car everyone was already looking at us, Simon being white in a ghetto neighbourhood really made him famous with all the eyeson him..
My Grandmother opened the security door for us and wewalked in to sit down..
She closed the door and sat down on her favourite couch..

The house was quiet, i was wondering were Blessingwas..
Simon: Thank you for welcoming us with such warmth andkindness
Grandma: You welcome that's just how i amYeah right!
Simon: as we have already spoken about this earlier on, iasked for your Permission to take my girlfriend and our Son so they can come move in with me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Grandma: We Have already discussed itShe looked at me..
Her: Bonolo what do you say?

There's a lot i wanna say but then again Freedom ofspeech is limited in this house...

Me: i would like to move in with Simon i already have myclothes with me

Her: You are lucky for this guy to forgive you and stillwanna be with you after all that you have done

Here are the words that wound..

Her: This is your last chance to redeem yourself and make something out of your life. You don't have parents Bonolo and i am old ill die Soon. No one is gonna be like Simon always willing to help you and hide off your shame and mistakes from the world to laugh at you

I kept quiet.. She stood up..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: ill go fetch Blessing from next door

She walked out. He words stuck with me, does Simon see me as another charity case? Is he with me because he pities me and not because he loves me? Did she tell my Grandmother that he always has to take the blame in orderto hide off the shame that was brought upon me?

Those questions i kept on asking myself over and overagain.. Is this what Simon told my Grandmother?

I let go of his hand because my temper was starting todecieve me.. We sat next to each other until my Grandmother came back with Blessing, i stood up when they made their way in.I missed him soo much my life was empty for the past few weeks that we were separated. My Grandmother handed him to me, and i sat down.

Me: Hey

He looked at me i don't know if he recognised me or notbut again he was still a baby to even know who i am..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Grandma: all thanks to umtaka maZondi she has been looking after Blessing all this time..

I looked at Blessing and im not gonna let this happen again, for him to be raised up by strangers..

Grandma: You must know that i am giving you a last chance, mess up again you will be dead and buried to me, are we clear i will take your baby and you will never see him again are we clear?

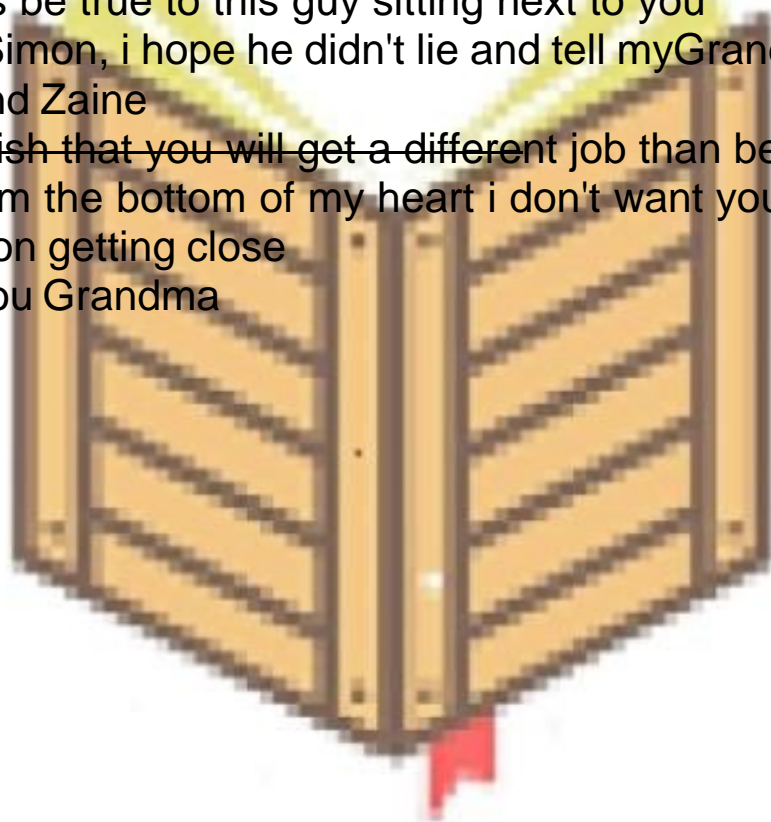
Me: Yes Grandmother

Her: i don't wanna hear that you messing with the Pastor'sson, you must always be true to this guy sitting next to you

I looked at Simon, i hope he didn't lie and tell my Grandmother things about me and Zaine

~~Her: i just wish that you will get a different job than being a maid~~
because from the bottom of my heart i don't want you and the Prophet's Son getting close

Me: i hear you Grandma



NOVELSGURU.COM

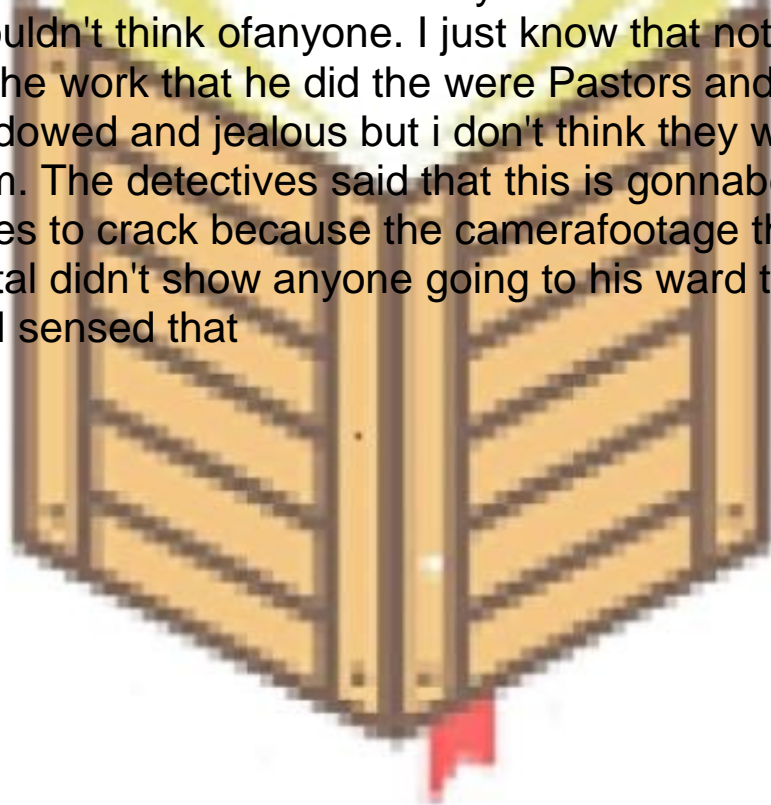
Her: Good ill go and pack his things

She went and packed Blessing's things, while i got a few of my things then Simon and i made our way to my new home..

.

. #ZAINÉ

We were back at home now from the hospital, my mother was greatly affected by my Father's death, i was too but i had to be strong for her. The detectives were around they questioned us and asked if my father had enemies or anyone who has a motive to kill him and i couldn't think of anyone. I just know that not everyone was happy with the work that he did the were Pastors and prophets who felt overshadowed and jealous but i don't think they would go as far as killing him. The detectives said that this is gonna be one of the hardest cases to crack because the camera footage they obtained at the hospital didn't show anyone going to his ward that looked suspicious. I sensed that



NOVELSGURU.COM

this was gonna be a cold case there's no evidence implimenting anyone, basically they don't have any personof interest.
I looked at one of the detectives..

Me: How did you guys conclude that it was murder?He opened a file and handed me a picture.

Him: those were the pictures taken at the crime scene, wefound a pillow covering his face and red marks around hisneck, that spells out foul play to us. This is now a murder case, and i suspect it was premedited murder

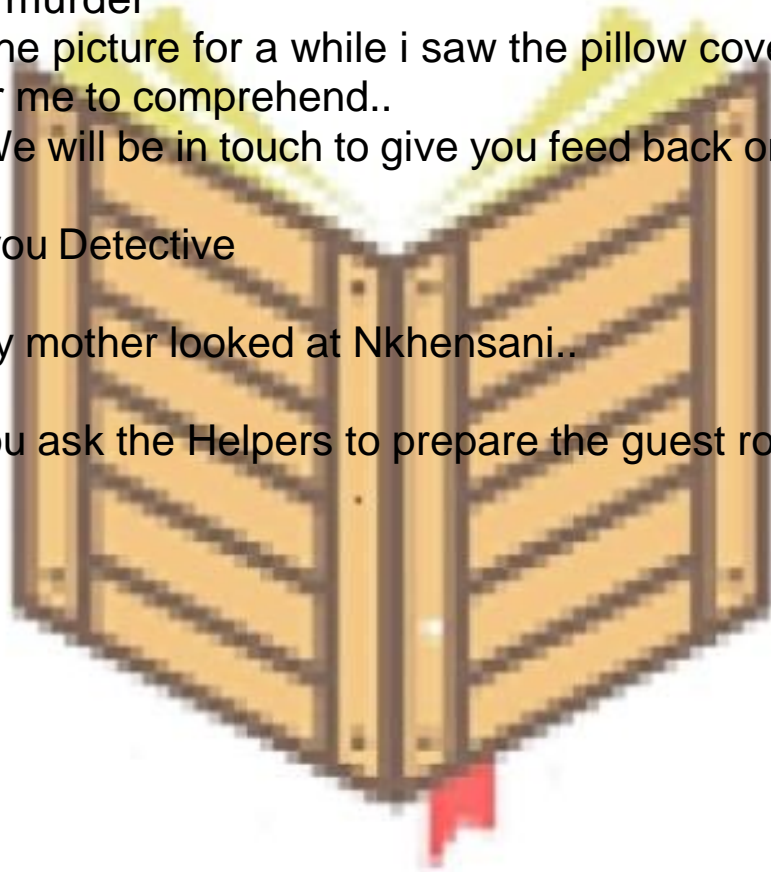
I looked at the picture for a while i saw the pillow coveringhis face it was hard for me to comprehend..

Detective: We will be in touch to give you feed back on theprogress of the case

Me: Thank you Detective

They left. My mother looked at Nkhensani..

Mom: did you ask the Helpers to prepare the guest rooms



NOVELSGURU.COM

for the Radebes? Nkhensani: ill get right to itShe stood up..
Her: Excuse me

Nkhensani left and my mother looked at me..Mom: did you call your
father's family?

Me: Leighton said he will call themHer: Where is he by the way?
Leighton entered.. Me: speak of the devil
He was holding the house wireless phone..

Him: i just got off the phone with Aunty Ruth they will becoming
some time this week
Mom: Thank you Leighton

Something wasn't right with Leighton, since from the hospital
everytime i seen him, i see this black shadow



NOVELSGURU.COM

following him, it was attached to him.

The presence of the shadow was very dark and heavy i could feel it..

Leighton: uhm i know this might not be the right time toraise this topic up but

We looked at him as he cleared his throat and sat on theedge of the couch..

Him: i think i should preach in Tonight's service

Is he serious? We just found out that our father was murdered and he still wanna continue with the service?

Me: i thought we were gonna cancel the service

Him: How? This is not like one of your concerts were you can cancel this is a church service

He looked at his wrist watch..

Him: people are already preparing to come

Me: We have to cancel Leighton plus i don't think thatmom is up for it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leigh: God's work cannot be neglected like this. Yes we heart broken, Yes we mourning but we need the church to comfort us they are our family after all

Me: Leighton

The maid interrupted us..

Her: Im sorry to interrupt but Prophet Badru and his wife are here

Me: You can show them in Her: Yes Sir

Leighton looked at me..

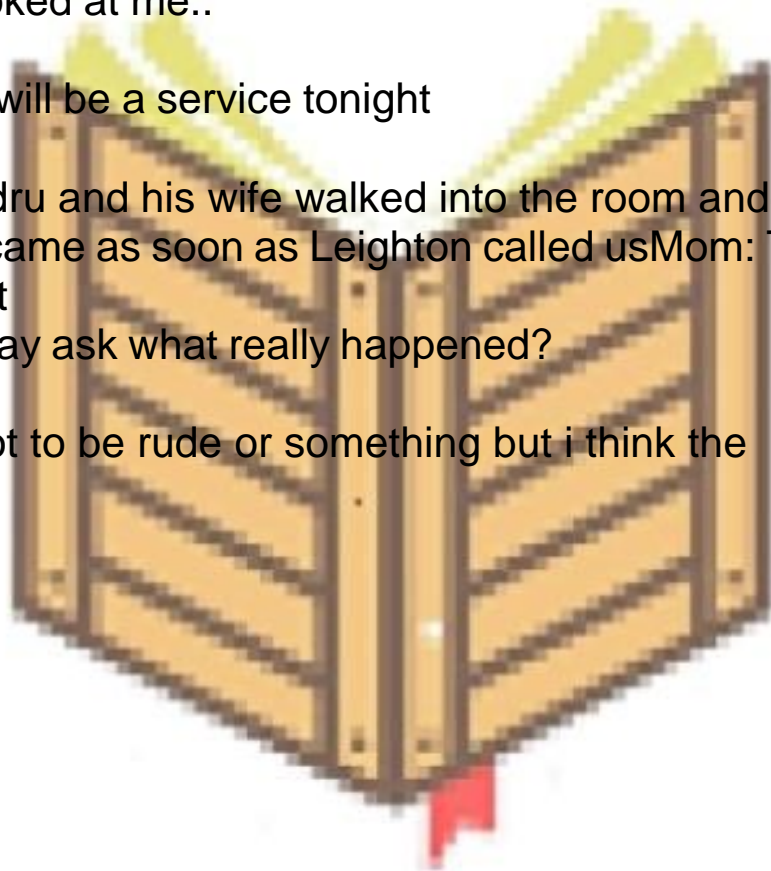
Him: There will be a service tonight

Prophet Badru and his wife walked into the room and greeted us..

Badru: We came as soon as Leighton called us Mom: Thank you for your support

Mercy: if i may ask what really happened?

Leighton: not to be rude or something but i think the



NOVELSGURU.COM

details will deepen the wounds, we bleeding as it already is
Mercy: i am very sorry i didn't mean to upset anyone Prophet Badru held his wife's hand..

Mom: Its fine Mercy you can come with me to my bedroom and ill tell you what happened

Mercy: You don't have too i..

Mom: You know loss than anyone of us here, i could do with your words right now

She looked at her Husband.. Badru: Its fine amor

He kissed her on her cheek and then Mercy stood up and went with my mom...

Me: Your wife is still beautiful

Leighton: for how long have you guys been married now? Badru: over 10 years

Leighton: i wish that for me and my wife too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Badru: i wish that for you tooLeighton stood up..

Him: unfortunately i have to go and prepare for the servicetonight

Badru: There's gonna be a service tonight?

Leighton: Prophet you out all people should know that youcannot put God's work aside because of death. We cry, wemourn, and we continue serving the Almighty God. Death is part of us, God gives and God takes

Me: Amen (sarcasm)

Him: i will be in the study if anyone needs me He walked out with his shadow following him..Badru: i hope he won't say that line at church Me: What line?

Him: God gives and God takes, God doesn't takeI shrugged my shoulders..

Him: Anyway how are you holding up?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: What can i say

Him: You have to be strong especially for tonight's service
Me: Why?

Him: although he thinks the service is gonna be ran by himbut Its gonna be owned by you

Me: i am not following

Him: Your journey as a prophet begins today or tonight rather. You will see things that you have never seen beforeand experience things that you have never experienced before. Are you ready?

Me: i don't know

Him: i will be there with you to guide you as your spiritualfather
I stood up and went to check myself in the mirror. I wasnot ready for whatever is gonna happen tonight or whatever awaits me



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

December 4, 2016 at PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥42 #BONOLO

The flat Simon got was a bit small. I am used to big places, like at the Purgatory our house was big and Zaine's house is small but not as small as this flat. I looked around while holding Blessing who was sleeping in my arms. There wasn't a lot of furniture either, just a bed, Tv, and a long couch..

Simon: Its the best i could do! turned and looked at him...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Its perfect

I didn't wanna belittle him and make him feel like he isn't trying because he is..

I put Blessing down on the bed..

Me: i have to go and call my Grandmother to tell her that we have arrived safely

Him: Okay

I walked out to the balcony to make that phone call. I didn't call my Grandmother right away, i first called Zaine and his phone was on voicemail. It has been hours now and i haven't spoken to him, it hurt big time. It was almost as if like my heart was ripped out of me.. I then called my Grandmother, she answered on the second ring as if like she was already waiting for my call...

Her: Hello

Me: Grandma Its me

Her: Bonolo i have been waiting for your call, did you arrive



NOVELSGURU.COM

Safe?

Me: Yes we did

Her: How is the place?Me: Just a small flat

Her: at least that's somethingMe: Yes Simon is trying

Her: listen to me, this is the last chance that life isaffording you
don't mess it up

Me: i won't Grandmother

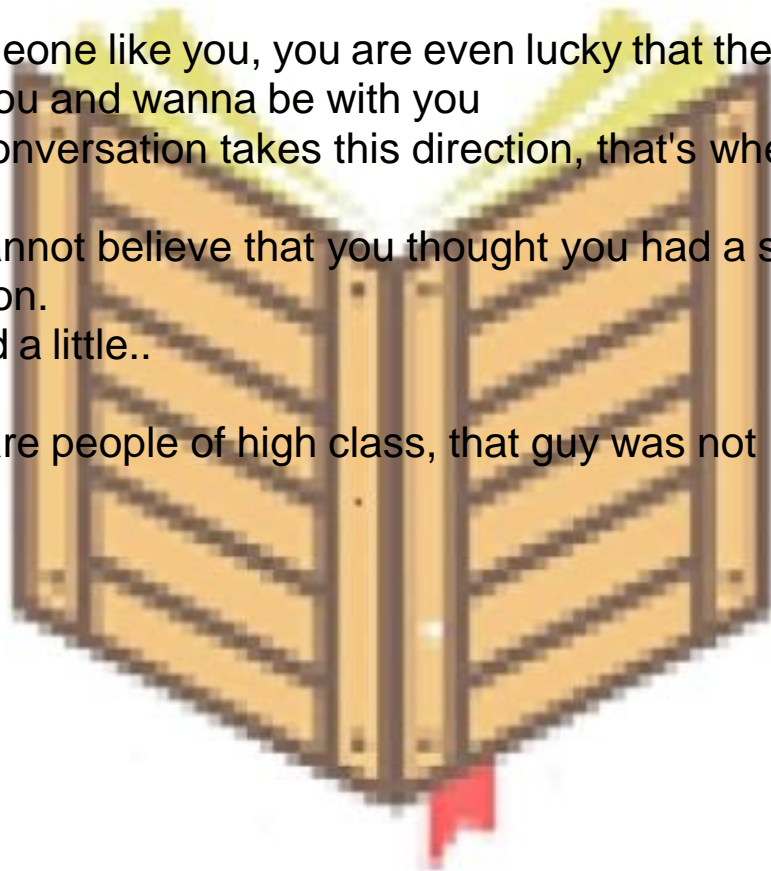
Her: for someone like you, you are even lucky that there'ssomeone
who loves you and wanna be with you

When the conversation takes this direction, that's when ilike to
keep quiet..

Her: i still cannot believe that you thought you had a shotwith the
Prophet's Son.

She laughed a little..

Her: those are people of high class, that guy was not



NOVELSGURU.COM

gonna marry you maybe he was only gonna use you sleepwith you and then leave you. People like that want educated girls, well mannered, and girls who don't drink and you don't fit that profile. When i was talking to Ms Jackson, i saw from her facial expression that she doesn'tlike you for her Son, so before you make a fool of yourselfthan you already did stay away from him i am even sure that you are a laughing stock at church now
Every conversation that i have with my Grandmother always to puts me down than uplift me. She makes it apriority to put me down..
Her: i am going to church tonight so i will call youtomorrow
Me: Its fine GrandmotherHer: bye
Me: Bye

I hung up with my eyes full of tears already. This was notright, Its like everyone is against Me and Zaine..



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINÉ

The service was going well but i wasn't going well. I don't know much about the holy spirit but i could swear that it filled the whole room. Not only did the holy spirit fill the room but it started revealing things to me since the service started. I was having visions that were soo vivid they made me scared a little. What was being revealed tome was very deep and too much for me to take in.. The more the church sang, the more i had this visions off which i was starting to feel dizzy, nauseated, and i had a terrible headache. It was too many pictures and voices going through my head and it was driving me crazy. I wanted the visions to stop, i wanted the voices to stop i couldn't take it anymore.. I felt someone touching me on my shoulder, i opened my eyes and it was Prophet Badru..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Are you alright? I shook my head no..
Him: Let's go out for a minute or two

We stood up and went outside that's where I vomited, I really felt very sick...

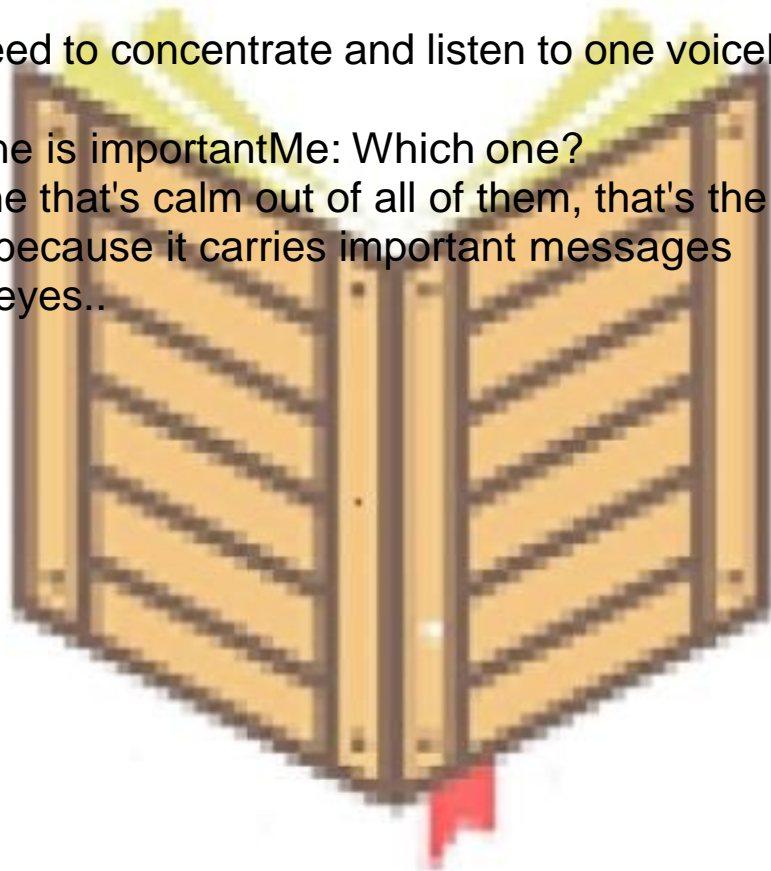
Me: too many voices that I am hearing

Him: You are strong, with me I even fainted when I first heard them
Me: How did you get through them?

Him: You need to concentrate and listen to one voice
Me: They so many

Him: only one is important
Me: Which one?

Him: The one that's calm out of all of them, that's the one you need to focus on because it carries important messages
I closed my eyes..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Focus on that calm one, then the rest will disappear

There was a lot of voices playing in my head, people screaming it was just a mess but in all the mist of that mess i need to concentrate on this faint peaceful one that keeps on calling my name..

"Zaine.. Zaine.. Zaine"

I tried very hard to concentrate on it, and the more i did follow it through the more the others faded away until i was only left with that one voice..

Voice: Zaine Me: Im listening

I stood up straight with my eyes closed and i had this vision were i was sort of like walking at a beach. I was wearing all white and it was a peaceful place. The wind was blowing, i heard the sound that the waves made i have never experienced such tranquility...

I looked behind me and i saw this beautiful place that looked like paradise...



NOVELSGURU.COM

The grass was very green, the trees had all kinds of fruits it was just beautiful i won't lie..

Me: am i in heaven or something? Voice: No

The voice came from this other green tree as i made my way to the forest. The tree was situated in the middle and it was different from other trees, Its fruits were also different from the other fruits that other trees had, Its fruits were yellow Gold, even Its leaves.. There were all sorts of Animals, from lions, tigers, Elephants and they were all peaceful...

I walked closer again.. Voice: That's close enough

The voice sounded familiar, but it was calm than how i heard it the last time....

Voice: bear in mind that you will not come here forever, this is for you to trust me

Me: Who are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: i am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. I am who i am..

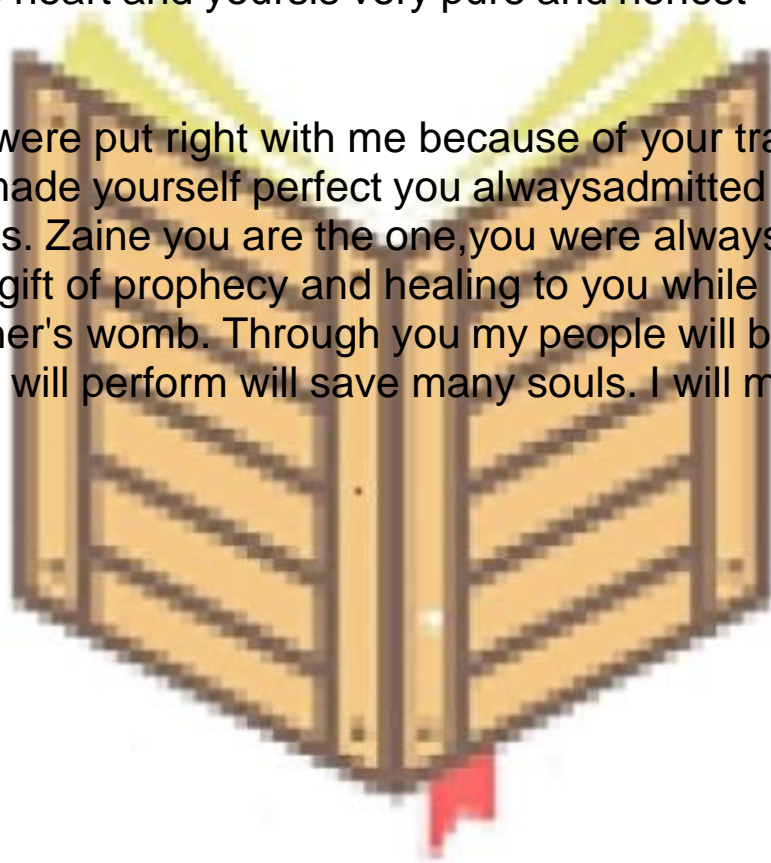
Me: but why me?

Him: Just like David, you are the one closest to my heart
Me: my Brother Leighton is better than me

Voice: i am not like human beings, i am not taken by the outward appearance or how people try to make themselves look perfect before me while they do evil and shameless things in hiding, i examine the heart and yours is very pure and honest

Me: but...

Voice: You were put right with me because of your transparency. You never made yourself perfect you always admitted to your sins and mistakes. Zaine you are the one, you were always the one. I instilled the gift of prophecy and healing to you while you were still in your mother's womb. Through you my people will be healed, the miracles you will perform will save many souls. I will make you



NOVELSGURU.COM

successful as long as you obey me and my word

This was my calling and i will no longer run away from It..

Him: The road will not be easy but i will always be with you.I will be there for you as i was with Moses, David, and Joseph

Me: i am ready

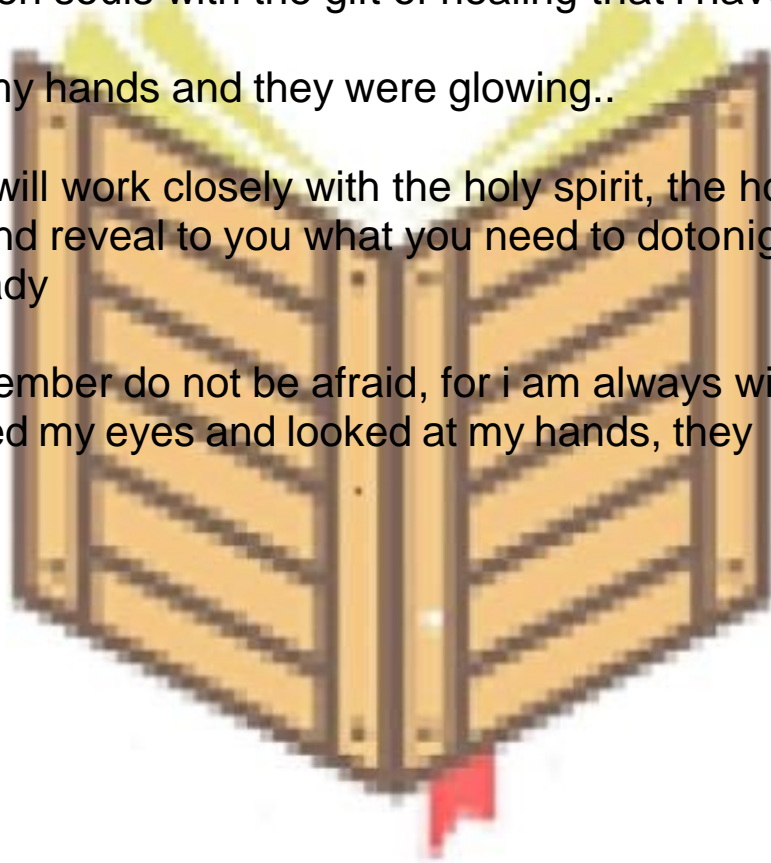
Voice: You will be anointed a Prophet, you will give hope and restore faith to broken souls with the gift of healing that i have instilled in you

I looked at my hands and they were glowing..

Voice: You will work closely with the holy spirit, the holy spirit will guide you and reveal to you what you need to do tonight

Me: i am ready

Voice: Remember do not be afraid, for i am always with you
I then opened my eyes and looked at my hands, they



NOVELSGURU.COM

weren't glowing i wasn't in what looked like paradise anymore but i was back outside the church premises..

Badru: Are you alright?

Me: Yes i am, i.. I think i am readyHe looked at me...

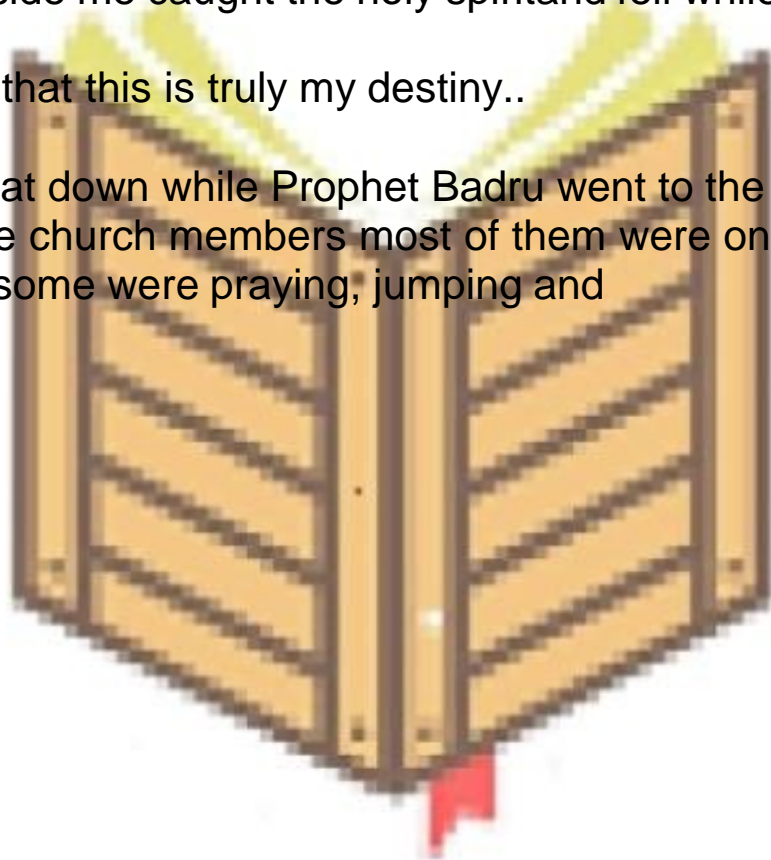
Him: Are you certain?I nodded..

We approached the entrance and the words that kept onplaying to me deep in my heart were "use me Lord i am ready"

We entered and i made my way to were i was sitting. Everyone that i passed beside me caught the holy spiritand fell while screaming on the ground..

I knew then that this is truly my destiny..

I went and sat down while Prophet Badru went to the front,when i looked at the church members most of them were on the floor screaming, some were praying, jumping and



NOVELSGURU.COM

making noise...

Prophet Badru looked at me, i stood up and made my way to him.. Before i could say anything the holy spirit went before me and manifested, i even saw Angels all around the church. I wish everyone could see what i was seeing..

As much as there were Angels, there was also a presence of evil spirits which i knew that i had to do away with..

Everyone was on their feet except for my brother Leighton, i found out now that the Shadow was actually an evil spirit clouding his heart..

I looked at him and he looked at me with eyes full of anger..

He stood up and walked to the door, i attempted to go after him but Prophet Badru stopped me..

The evil spirit that was controlling my brother was very powerful than i had imagined, it was the spirit of jealousy.

Prophet Badru started singing and the church followed... "Lord whatever you are doing in this season, please don't do it



NOVELSGURU.COM

without me. Lord if you healing, healing in this season please don't do it without me, don't do it without me"

I made my way to the crowd, i would put my hand on certain individuals and the power in me would be transfered to them that they would even fall, i have never experienced such in my life..

.

To be continued

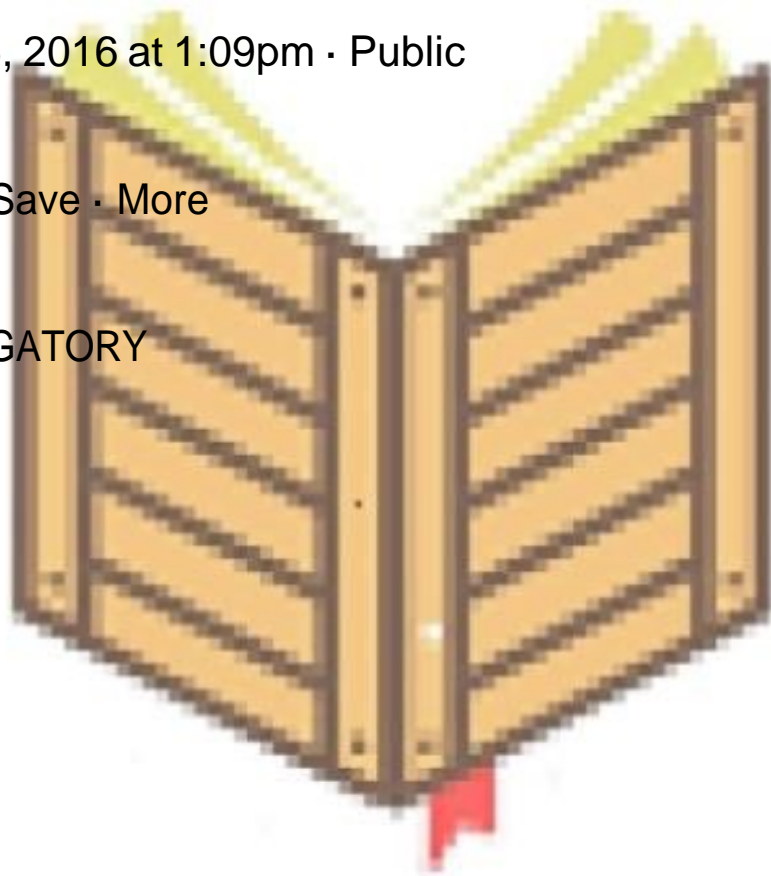
December 5, 2016 at 1:09pm · Public

Like Page · Save · More

 Like PURGATORY

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥43 #BONOLO

I woke up earlier the following morning and prepared myself together with Blessing he would be coming to work with me since Simon is also going to work and we have no one to look after him. Simon's work environment is dangerous there's machines and having a baby around would be a great risk, so that leaves me to take Blessing with me..

Simon: Are you guys ready? Me: Yes we are
Blessing was in his car seat sleeping.. I took the car seat while Simon took Blessing's bag and everything else that I will need for the day..

We locked the door and then went to his car. I was very hurt over the fact that last night I have been trying to get hold of Zaine and his phone still took me straight to



NOVELSGURU.COM

voicemail, i seriously don't know why he doesn't want to talk to me..
The ride to his place was very quiet, i was in my thoughts and
Simon was concentrating on the road..

He dropped us off at the gate, and told me to call him later when im
done so he can fetch me..

He hugged me and then kissed me on my forehead..Him: see you
later, i love you

Me: i love you too

I took the bags and the car seat then went to sign us in and the
security guards let us through..

It was very quiet, i think i had arrived early than other maids..

I got to the door and rang the bell, Zaine opened the door after a
while...

Me: Good morning



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Morning

He let me in and closed the door behind me..Me: You were still sleeping?

Him: ya had a long night last nightI put Blessing on the counter..

Me: Okay...

Him: ill go and lie down againHe walked to his bedroom..

Me: Zaine..

He stopped and looked at me.

Me: i am sorry about what happened yesterday, i know youwere trying to help and i shouldn't have snapped like that

Him: Its all cool

Me: i am just scared that if you go after Abdul you mightget hurt, we might get hurt both of us he is dangerous

Him: i understand and i am sorry too for pushing



NOVELSGURU.COM

I smiled..

Me: i brought my Son along hope you don't mind there's noone to look after him

Him: i don't mind at all Me: Thank you

Him: so Simon doesn't have a problem with you working for me?

Me: No he doesn't, we need the money Him: tell me something

I looked at him..

Him: Why are you with Simon because clearly you don't love him or inlove with him rather, why are you entertaining him?

Me: Simon has been there for me through and through Him: That's the reason you guys are still together?

Me: i.. Its not really like that

Him: then where does that leave us?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i don't know

Him: You need to make a choice because i am not gonnaspend my whole life waiting for you

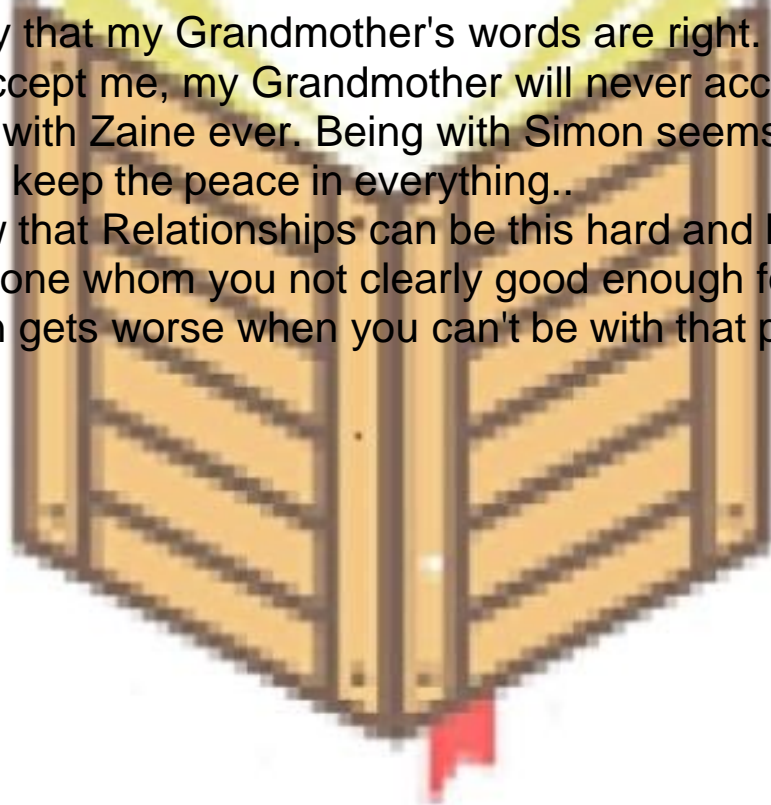
If only he knew how many people are against ourrelationship..

Me: Okay

Him: ill go and lie down

He walked away. I love Zaine, i wanna be with him but withall that my Grandmother has said to me and Ms Jackson'sactions towards me i can say that my Grandmother's words are right. The Radebe's will never accept me, my Grandmother will never accept my relationship with Zaine ever. Being with Simon seems like a better choice it will keep the peace in everything..

I didn't know that Relationships can be this hard and hurtlike this, loving someone whom you not clearly good enough for is painful and the pain gets worse when you can't be with that person..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my things and as i was about to go and change the door bell rang, i put everything down and went to open. It was maZondi and her Daughter...

maZondi: Ahhhhhh usesela wena? (you are still here) I didn't know what that meant so i kept quiet..

She slightly pushed me off and they entered.. maZondi: We are here to see the Prophet Me: Prophet Radebe doesn't live here They looked at each other..

MaZondi: konje she doesn't go to church she doesn't know what's happening

Me: What is happening? MaZondi: call Zaine for us please That was off and confusing, their presence is always confusing.. I went to call Zaine for them and he came..

MaZondi: Prophet God bless you! The service last night



NOVELSGURU.COM

was uplifting

Zaine: ummmmmm i haven't been anointed a Prophet as yet
Prophet? What is everyone talking about?

MaZondi: i am very sorry about your Father, he was a goodman
Zaine: Thank you

I folded my arms and listened to everything that was taking place..
Zaine: Can i help you with anything? MaZondi: Yes please
She looked at her Daughter..

MaZondi: This is my daughter Refiloe and we are here to ask for your help
Zaine: i am listening

MaZondi: my daughter Refiloe she has err.. She has these painful
and disturbing period pains. Yazi when she has this



NOVELSGURU.COM

period pains she even miss school she can't even cleanshe cannot do anything!

Zaine: has she tried drinking pain killers?

MaZondi: ukuthi nje i thought the Pains were demonicZaine looked at Refiloe..

Zaine: unfortunately they are not demonic

MaZondi: bengithi umbeke isandla (please put your handson her)

Zaine: Mama i am led by the holy spirit, and right now idon't see her period pains being demonic

MaZondi: Ohhh that's disappointing..Zaine: She just needs pain killers

Disappointment was written in maZondi's face..Refiloe: Thank you Prophet

Zaine: You welcome just drink pain killers and you will befine

Refiloe: Ofcause.. Mom lets go



NOVELSGURU.COM

They went out and i looked at Zaine..Me: Prophet?

Him: soon to beMe: Wow

Him: is there a problem?

Me: i thought it would be nice if i was told

Him: Sorry for not telling you but the last time i checkedwe weren't in a relationship

Me: and after this we won't beHim: What?

Me: Prophets are evil, they use the name of God to hurtother people

Him: Just because of your bad experience with one youthink that all Prophets are the same?

Me: They all are the same!!! Him: so all of them raped you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i meant they the same because they use good to doevil
He laughed..

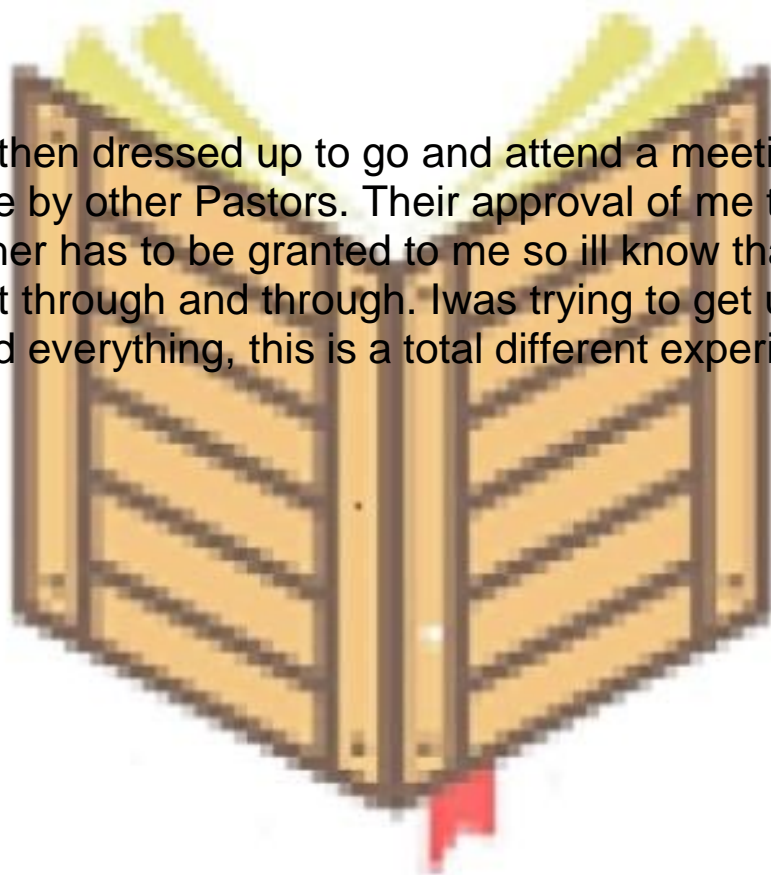
Him: You unbelievable Bonolo, i would really like to entertain this
argument further but i have to attend to animportant meeting
He walked to the bathroom.....

Zaine is soon to be a Prophet that changes everything...

.

. #ZAINE

I bathe and then dressed up to go and attend a meeting that was
called for me by other Pastors. Their approval of me taking over
from my father has to be granted to me so ill know that i will have
their support through and through. Iwas trying to get used to all this
changes and everything, this is a total different experience for me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When i was done with everything i took my keys and phonethen went to my car. I have had a lot of missed calls from Chichi but i can't deal with her right now i have a lot going on and on the other hand there's Bonolo who stresses me a lot..

I arrived at home just in time, everyone was already present even Leighton was around the only person thatwas missing was Prophet Badru..

I greeted them and then i sat down.. Pastor 1: Thank you for coming Zainel nodded..

Pastor 1: as we already know that we are gathered here todiscuss the possible future of Zaine as far as the church isconcerned. Last night we saw the miracles you performed at church and it was no doubt that you are the one with a gift and the chosen one to take over

Leighton wasn't very happy with that statement..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Pastor 1: to be a leader and a great one for that Matterthere's traits that one has to have and necessary procedures to be followed

Me: Okay

Pastor 1: first of all you need to have a wife. Behind every leader there has to be a strong woman and you need that

Me: uhm with all due respect i don't think that i am ready for marriage

They looked at each other....

Pastor 2: then unfortunately we cannot let you run the church or be a leader. Yes you might have the gift but your gift alone is not sufficient enough to earn you that spot of being a Reverend like your Father

This was too Complicated and it was starting to be a mess...

Pastor 1: if you don't follow the rules then your Brother will be appointed a Reverend and a leader of the church

Leighton is going all out to force the issue of taking over



NOVELSGURU.COM

and its now turning him evil because that much hunger for power can be sinister and diabolical.

.

To be continued

December 6, 2016 at 11:16am · Public

Like Page · Save · More PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥44 #ZAINÉ

After the whole meeting i was left to sit and keep my mother company for a few minutes until Nkhensani comes



NOVELSGURU.COM

back from getting a few things in town. With all that's happened, i don't like my mother to be alone one tends to think a lot about bad things when they alone and she's carrying a lot of pain, she is confused, she is hurt and for her to be alone can be deadly i am not ready to loose both parents...

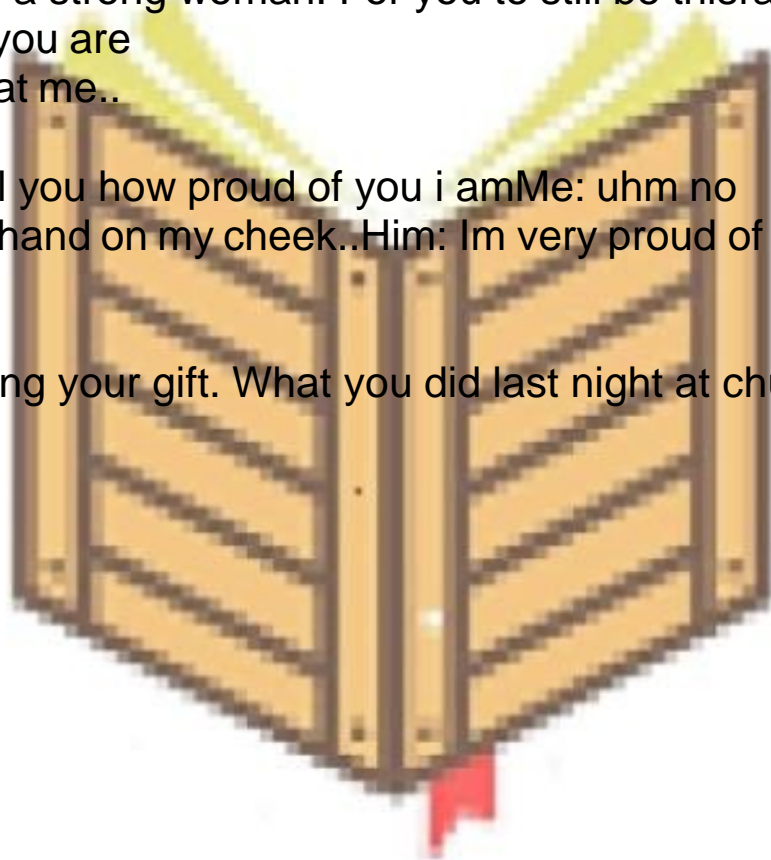
Me: How are you feeling today?

Her: i am hanging in there, i am trying to be strong

Me: You are a strong woman. For you to still be this rational shows how strong you are
She looked at me..

Her: did i tell you how proud of you i am
Me: uhm no
She put her hand on my cheek..
Him: Im very proud of you
Me: for?

Her: accepting your gift. What you did last night at church



NOVELSGURU.COM

was amazing. A lot of people got healed, and a lot of people were blessed you were truly amazing Prophet Zaine, the church is very blessed to have you
I chuckled..

Me: Yeah i am not a prophet yet
Her: but you will be soon
I leaned to the coffee table and got her, her cup of tea
Me: before it gets cold

Her: Thank you, you also a gentleman the girl who is gonna marry you is gonna be blessed too

Me: i hope so

Her: Leighton told me about the meeting, that you have to get married before you can be appointed a Reverend

Me: That's true

Her: pick one of the girls at church they seem decent
Me: more like an arranged marriage?

Her: Its not gonna be an arranged marriage



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ms Jackson i am not going to marry a girl that i don'tlove
Her: Not everything is about love Zaine

Me: What do you mean? I am sure that you and Dad werevery much
in love
She put the cup back on the coffee table..

Her: Look, to a woman Yes love is important but with menIts
different you can marry a girl and learn to love her as time goes on
Me: Ms Jackson...

Her: baby listen to me all you need is just a decent girlMe: i am not
going to marry a girl that i don't love
Her: Why is love so important to you?

Me: because i won't feel good waking up every morning next to
someone i don't feel anything for, it would be unfairto her too
knowing that i am in love with someone else
Her: in love with someone else?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kept quiet.. Her: Melissa?

Me: definitely notHer: Then who?

Telling her will only start an argument..Her: Its that girl Bonolo?

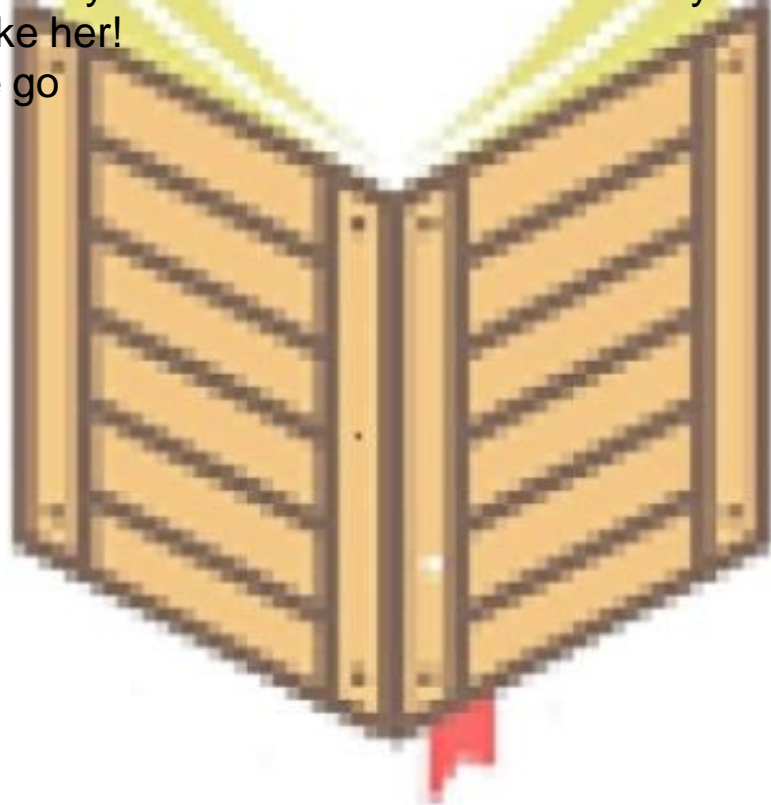
Me: i don't wanna argue with you Her: What is with you and that girl?I am not gonna argue with her..

Her: Zaine you are about to be a Reverend you need someone who will stand by you and not a stupid kid!

Me: She is not stupid

Her: she is your maid! She has a baby out of weddlock, shelies on Prophets! Sweety her Grandmother told me everything about her and i don't like her!

Me: here we go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i love you soo much and i want you to be happy
Me: Who said i am not happy?

Her: Stop this madness! I don't want it coming to you having to choose between me and her. And now i see it coming to that

She stood up and took her tea with her..

Her: Excuse me
This is a messed up situation, very messed up.. Leighton came in as my mother made her way out..

He sat down opposite me..

Him: so what's gonna happen now?
Me: i don't know

Him: give up Zaine, just let me be the leader. I have more potential than you

I ignored him and walked away..



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

After cleaning the house i chilled on the couch and started playing with Blessing. He was growing up soo fast, soon he will be crawling and then walking....

The door bell rang again, i hope that Its not Ms Jackson..I stood up and went to open with Blessing in my arms..

Melissa was standing at the door step looking all kinds of dirty. Its like she never slept for years, she was in a state that was very disgusting and she was smelling. I could even tell that she had been crying, her tears even dried off..

I let her in and she made her way in walking very slow..Me: uhm.. Are you okay?

She looked at me and started crying, she sank down on the floor i didn't know what to say or do she looked broken..



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINÉ

I drove straight to Prophet Badru's office, he is the only person who understands me right now..

His assistant let me in, lucky for me he was not busy..Him: Look whose here

Me: hey

I went and sat down..

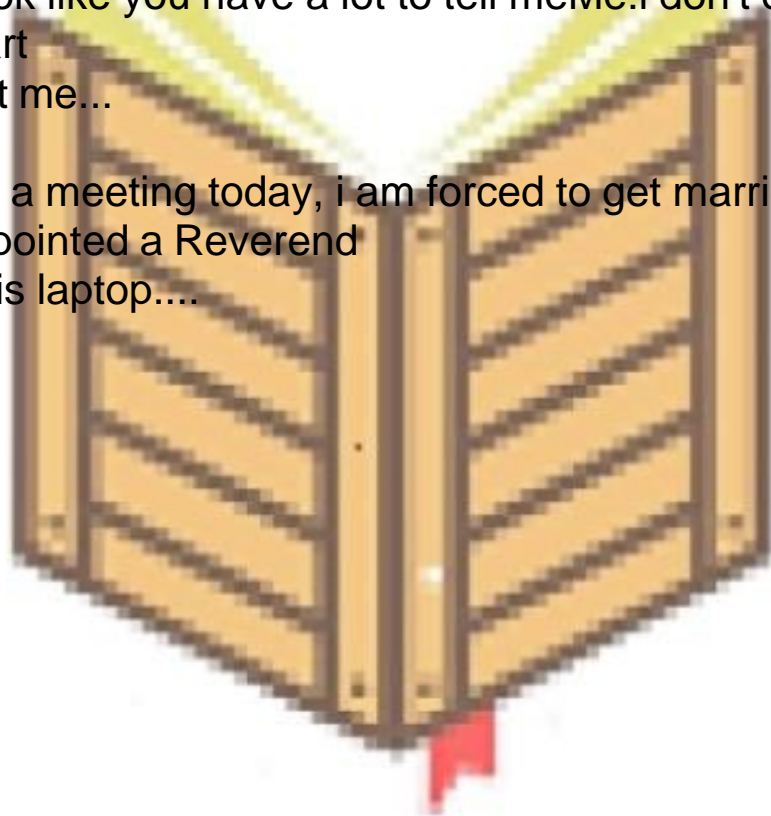
Him: want something to drink?Me: Im fine thanks

Him: You look like you have a lot to tell meMe:i don't even know where to start

He looked at me...

Me: We had a meeting today, i am forced to get married before i could be appointed a Reverend

He closed his laptop....



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: do you have a girlfriend?

Me: No i just have a girl that i am madly in love with
Him: she feels the same way?

Me: i think so, she just doesn't like Prophets

Him: i think i once had a run in with her at the hospital she was pretty honest about her hate and feelings towards Prophets

Me: That's what i mean

Him: Why does she hate Prophets soo much?

Me: one hurt her very bad and now she thinks we all the same

Him: then you have to convince her otherwise
Me: i am trying

Him: have you been honest with how you feel about her?
Me: Not really

Him: Maybe try talking to her be honest with her



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: She is very stubborn

Him: i am sure that she is better than my wife, the first day i met my wife she was in another state

Me: state?

Him: she came to one of my Sermons drunk Me: Are you for real?

Him: Im telling you Me: That's messed up

Him: There's a lot of things that i had to go through before we perfect our relationship the key was to not give up on her

Me: Sounds so easy Him: believe me Its not

Me: but a lot of people are against our relationship, i don't wanna loose my mother but at the same time i don't wanna marry someone that i feel nothing for

Him: i understand you, rather be straight and upfront with



NOVELSGURU.COM

this girl or spend your whole life regretting it
Me: Yeah you right, i need to get her

I really need to be honest with Bonolo and i hope that she will agree to give our relationship a chance

Me: Thank you for the talk
Him: go get your woman! PURGATORY

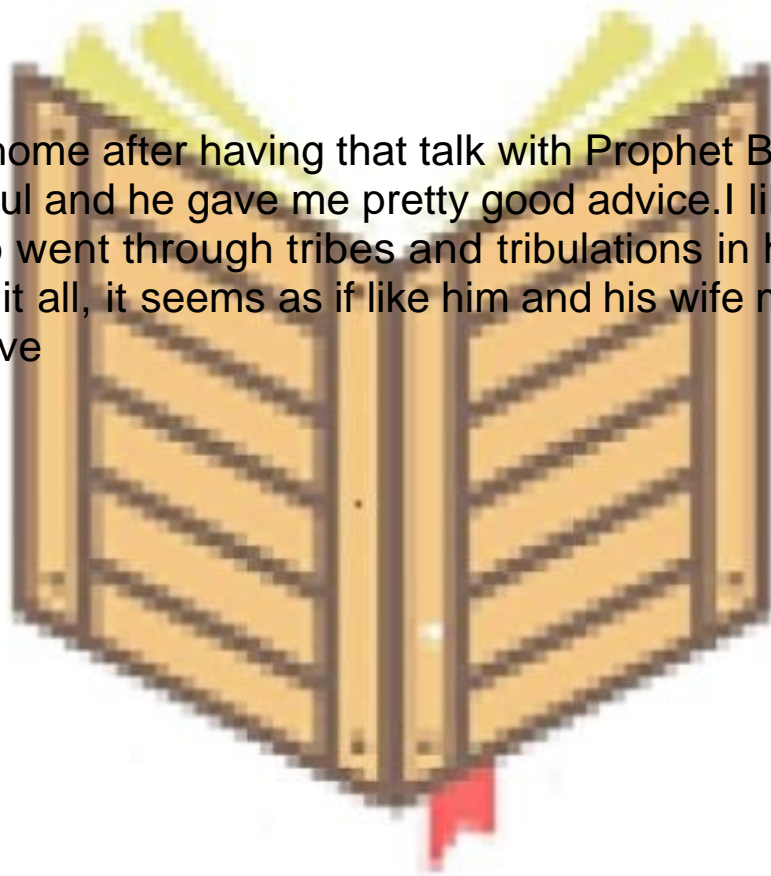
.

.

.

¥45 #ZAINE

I arrived at home after having that talk with Prophet Badru. he was very insightful and he gave me pretty good advice. I like the fact that he also went through tribles and tribulations in his relationship but through it all, it seems as if like him and his wife made it hence why they have



NOVELSGURU.COM

been married for this long. The house was very quiet when i got in, i wondered where Bonolo was until i bumped into her in the passage.

Me: heyHer: hey

Me: is everything okay ?Her: i hope so

Me: what's wrong? Her: Melissa is here

Me: what do you mean that Melissa is here?

Her: she arrived a few hours ago, and she is not in a goodstate i seriously don't know why Melissa would always show up in moments like this, everytime when Bonolo and i have totalk about the nature of our relationship Melissa comes off as a barrier....

Me: what is she doing here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

i said that while walking to my bedroom with Bonolo following me behind....

Her: really Zaine are you asking me?

i opened the door and she was laying on the bed. what stunned me was how she looked like. she didn't look good at all, she looked like she has been through a lot...

Me: what happened to her?

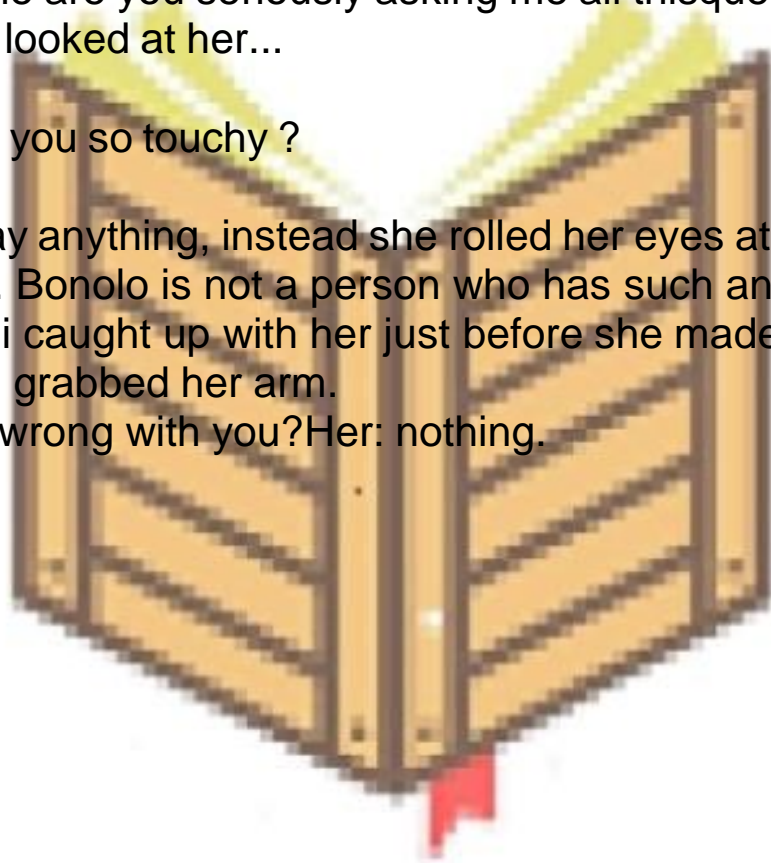
Bonolo: Zaine are you seriously asking me all these questions?

i turned and looked at her...

Me: why are you so touchy ?

she didn't say anything, instead she rolled her eyes at me and made her way out. Bonolo is not a person who has such an attitude i followed her. i caught up with her just before she made it to the lounge and i grabbed her arm.

Me: what is wrong with you? Her: nothing.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: it looks more like something than nothingshe kept quiet...
Me: talk to me

Her: not so long ago you were telling me that i must choose
between you and Simon because you cannot waitforever, and now
what do you know your tramp of a girlfriend is here

i gently hit her on her lips...Me: do not cuss

Her: so tell me Zaine had i chose you what was gonnahappen?

Me: then we would officially be a coupleshe clicked her tongue...

Me: you didn't strike me as the jealous type of personHer: i am not
jealous Zaine

i folded my arms and looked at her...Her: maybe just a little



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: why?

Her: because the type of girls you date are not like me
Me: so now you know my type?

Her: have you seen Melissa?

Me: yeah maybe the old Zaine would be phased by Melissa but not anymore
she folded her arms too..

Her: you have really changed haven't you?

Me: you can say that

i tried touching her but she stepped back..
Me: what is wrong now?
she kept quiet..

Me: are we still on the issue of me being a Prophet?

she looked down..i went to sit down on the arm of the couch.

Me: come here



NOVELSGURU.COM

she shook her head no..

Me: come here and stop giving me attitudeshe finally came and i held her hand.

Me: there's things in life that we have no control over, andthere's two things in my life that i have no control over. one is being a Prophet and the second one is falling for you. those are two things that fate cannot even change only God can.

Her: it's not that i don't wanna be with you it's just that...Me: talk to me

She looked down...

Me: Bonolo i am 24 years old do you think i woke up one day and said i wanna be a Prophet? No i fucken had different dreams. I wanted to be the most sought after music producer both international and National.. I love youBonolo and if im gonna do this then i cannot do it alone, i need you

I put my hand around her waist and pulled her closer to



NOVELSGURU.COM

kiss her..

Our little romantic moment was interrupted by someone clearing their throat. We broke the kiss and she moved away from me.. Melissa was standing at the corner.. Bonolo: ill go and check up on Blessing

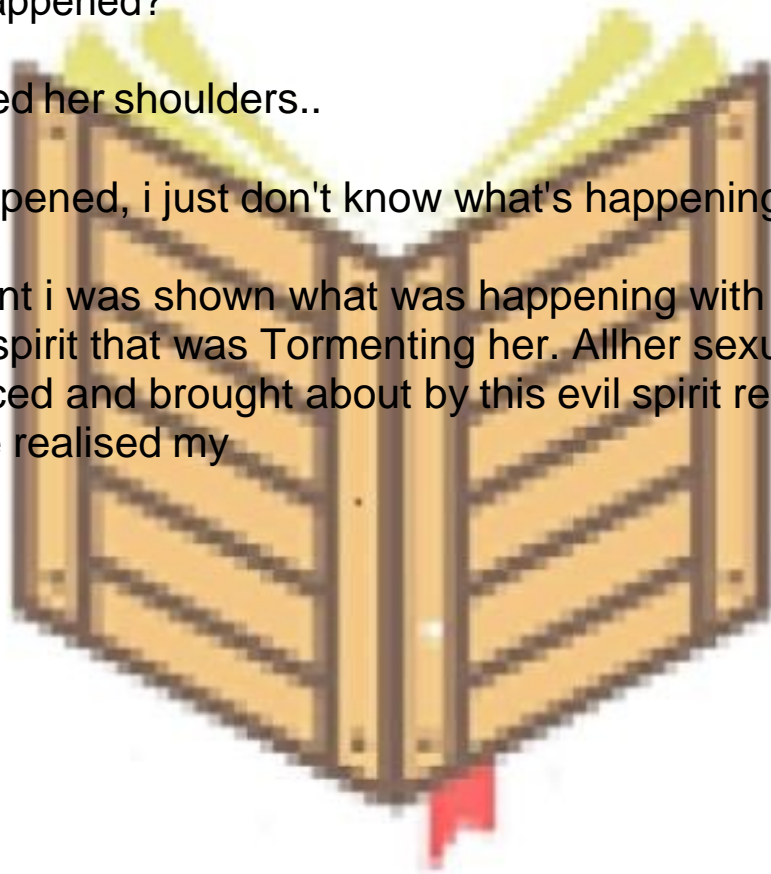
She left the room and Melissa came to sit down..Her: So i lost you? I looked at her...

Me: What happened?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: life happened, i just don't know what's happening with my life lately

At that instant i was shown what was happening with Melissa, she had an evil spirit that was Tormenting her. All her sexual ways were being enforced and brought about by this evil spirit residing in her. Since i have realised my



NOVELSGURU.COM

Gift, driving out demons/evil spirits is something i haven'tdone and i didn't know how to go about with it so i will have to discuss it with Prophet Badru..

My phone vibrated, i took it out and it was a message fromChichi she wanted me to come to the studio right away...

Me: look i have to goHer: Ohw

Me: ya have to attend to something at the studioHer: Okay ill see you later

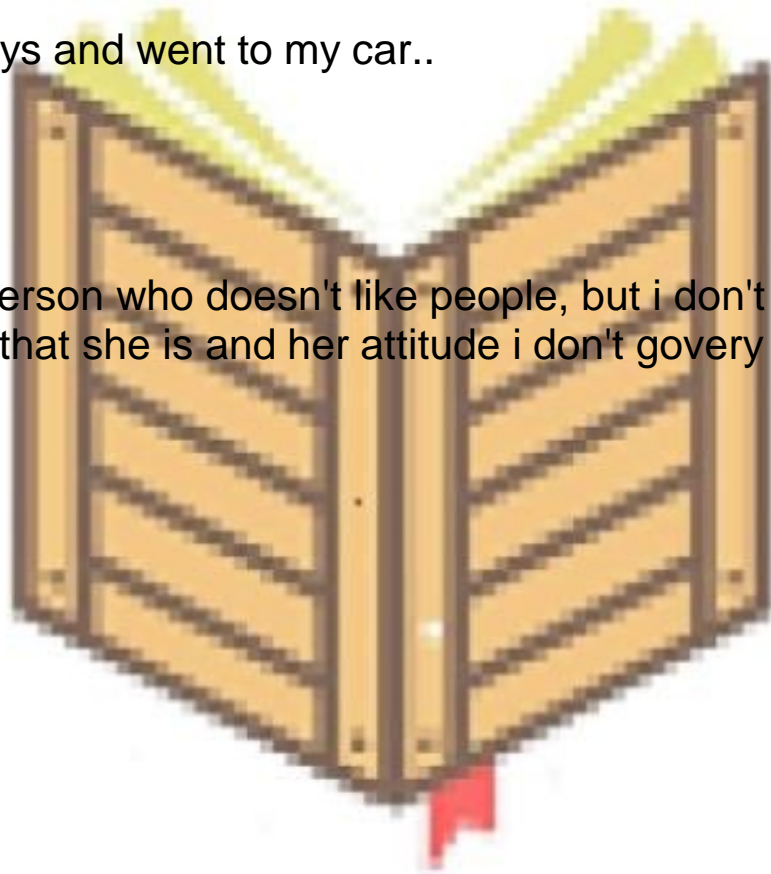
Me: later it is

I took my keys and went to my car..

.

. #BONOLO

I am not a person who doesn't like people, but i don't like Melissa. The person that she is and her attitude i don't govery well with it.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my phone and called Simon so he can come and fetch me. I was gonna go home early because i was already done with my chores.

Surprisingly Simon's phone was answered by a girl..Her: Hello

Me: hi.. can i speak to Simon? Her: Simon is a bit busy right now

It was noisy where she was and she kept on sniffing...Me: tell him that Its Bonolo

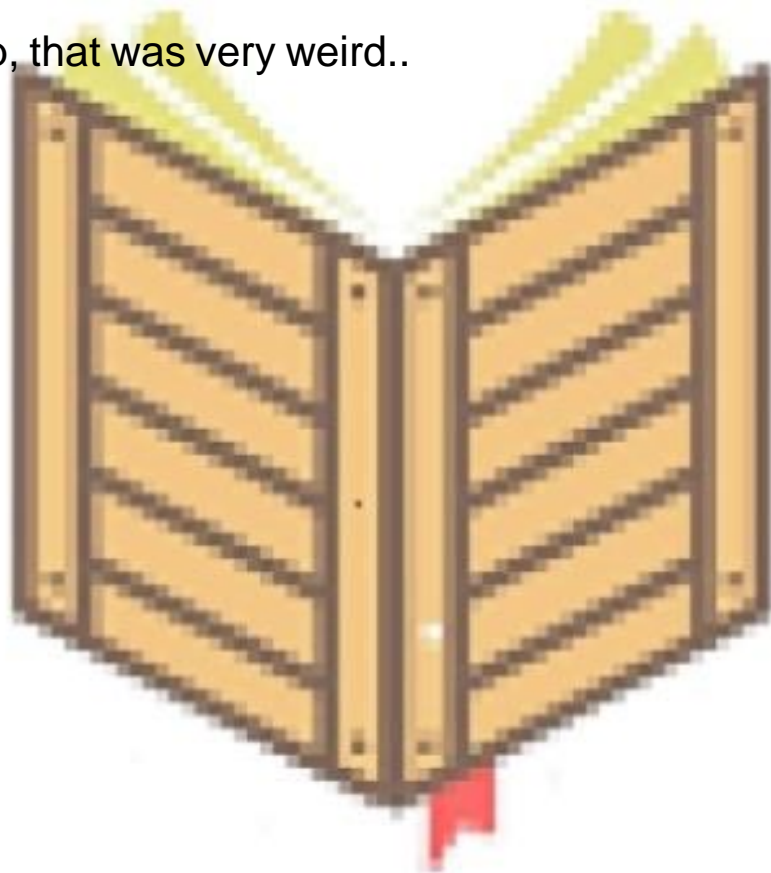
Her: can you at least call later, he is not in a state to talkMe: Ohw

Her: Yes so bye

She hung up, that was very weird..

.

. #ZAINE



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got to the studio and Chichi was already waiting for me, she was with Blake..

Chi: Im glad that you could make it this time around
Me: Sorry i have been busy

Her: busy for almost two weeks? Busy to even attend to your artist?

Me: i know that i have neglected you and i am sorry

Her: too late for that.. I just want you to know that i will be joining Ambitiouz entertainment

Me: i already figured that out

Her: because clearly i am wasting my time with you
Me: Im sorry that you feel that way

Blake looked at her..

Blake: Welcome to Ambitiouz entertainment baby
Her: looking forward to it

Blake: i will talk to the team



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Can't wait! stood up..

Me: Are we done? They looked at me..Chi: i think so

Me: security will show you out

Blake: You might as well just close the studio, you have lost two great artists

I didn't answer to that, they made their way out busily laughing..

I sat on the chair and just thought about my life now that i no longer have a career what is the next step? How will i make a living?

.

. #BONOLO

I have tried calling Simon again and this time around he



NOVELSGURU.COM

wasn't answering. I had already packed my things and i was ready to go. I was standing at the kitchen with Blessing in my arms and Melissa was standing by the door just looking at me, i found that very creepy.. And we have been standing like this for quite a while now..

Me: if you wanna say something rather say it than starring at me
She giggled..

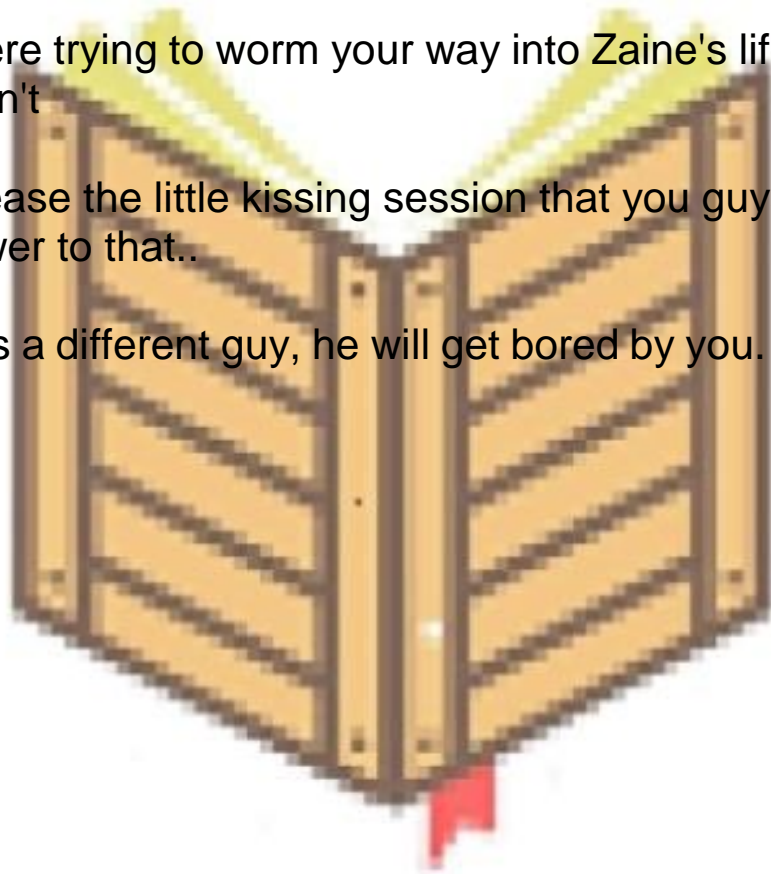
Her: You know i underestimated you
Me: What are you talking about?

Her: You were trying to worm your way into Zaine's life didn't you?

Me: No i didn't

Her: ohh please the little kissing session that you guys had earlier?
I didn't answer to that..

Her: Zaine is a different guy, he will get bored by you. I told



NOVELSGURU.COM

you before you have no style, you are dull
Me: i already know that
Her: Good because..

The door opened and Zaine walked in..

I was relieved to see him.. He looked at us.
Him: is everything alright?

Me: Yes, uhm can you please drive me home i tried calling Simon but he is not answering?

Him: Ofcourse ill drive you home

He took the bags and we went to his car..
Him: did Melissa try anything?

I shook my head no..

Him: if she did you know you can tell me right?
Me: i know
He started the car and we went..



NOVELSGURU.COM

We arrived at the flats, and he parked next to the entrance..
Me: Thank you for driving us

Him: No problem, ill walk you to your flatMe: That's unnecessary

Him: You can't hold this bags and the little fella at the same time

Me: Thank you, you are so sweetHim: i try to be

He got the bags and i was still holding Blessing. We made our way to the flat and something was off..

Zaine: Are you sure we at the right flat?I nodded..

Music was being played very loud and i heard a lot of voices..

Zaine opened the door and we walked in what i saw really left me with no words. There was half naked girls, bottles



NOVELSGURU.COM

of alcohol were laying around looked like a mess...Zaine: Wtf??
I looked around and this was not a good environment for Blessing to be at.

Zaine: Are you sure you wanna stay here? Me: Let me find Simon
I looked around and i didn't see him. I went to some girl who was sniffing some white powder, i went to ask where Simon was and she said Bathroom. I made my way to the bathroom what i saw after opening the door made my jaw drop, Simon was having sex with two girls...

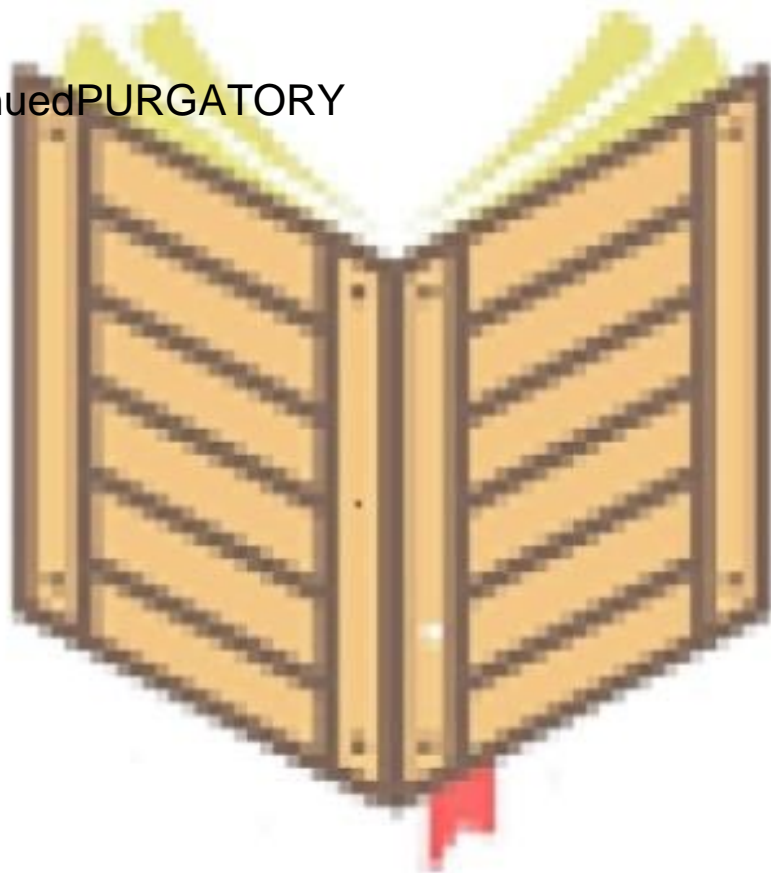
.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

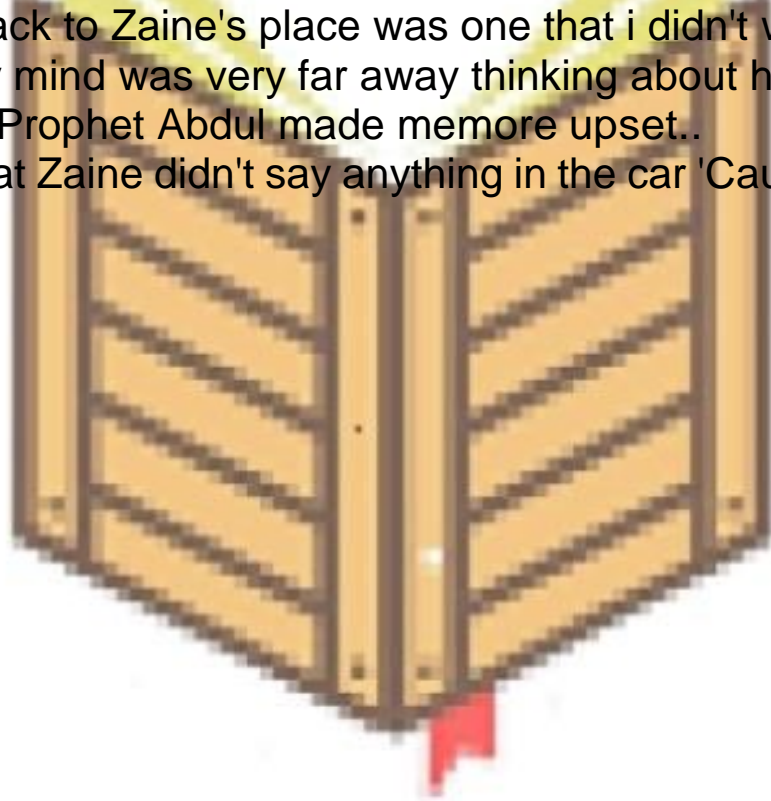
¥46 #BONOLO

Witnessing such filth and shame really made me upset. I have never imagined Simon out of all people doing such filthy things. He has lived his life right, he knows the consequences of living such an immoral life but why he did that i would never know and i don't think i wanna know because there's no excuse in the world that will justify what he has done...

I stormed out of that flat to Zaine's car in a matter of minutes, i didn't wanna hear his explanation or see his face that's how disgusted i was.. I had this person around my Son and this is the kind of role model that he set himself out to be? what a disgrace!!!

The drive back to Zaine's place was one that i didn't witness because my mind was very far away thinking about how similiar Simon is to Prophet Abdul made memore upset..

I am glad that Zaine didn't say anything in the car 'Cause i



NOVELSGURU.COM

wasn't in the mood for talking, especially about what happened..

When we arrived at the house, i went straight to the guestroom to put Blessing down Zaine followed me with the bags..

Him: so are you gonna talk about what happened?Me: i am trying not too

Him: You have too, what happened...

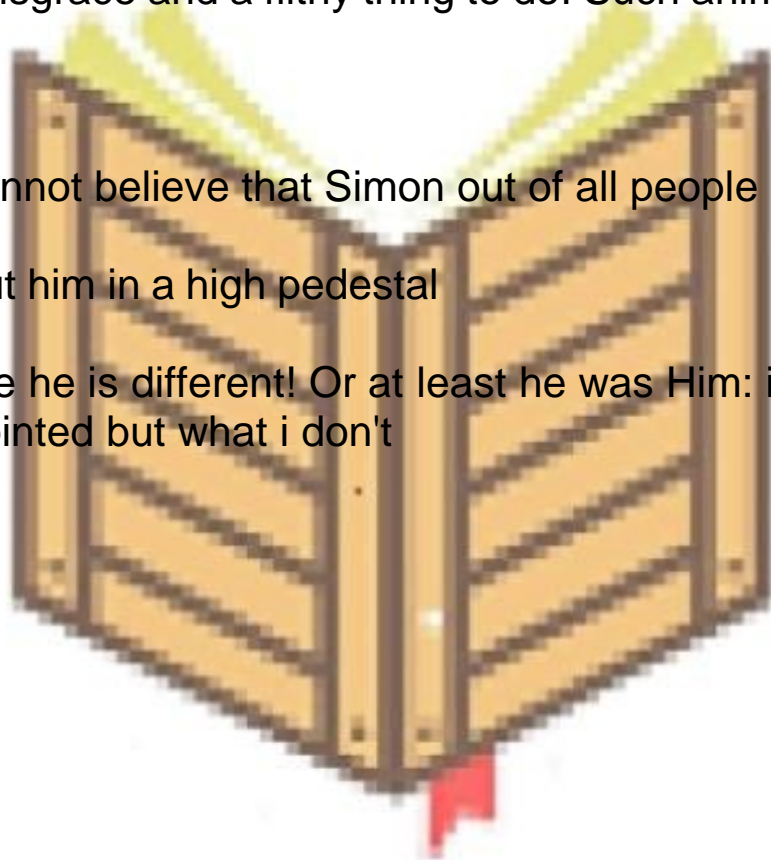
Me: was a disgrace and a filthy thing to do! Such an immoral life to live!

Him: Wow..

Me: i just cannot believe that Simon out of all people could do such a thing

Him: You put him in a high pedestal

Me: because he is different! Or at least he was Him: i understand you disappointed but what i don't



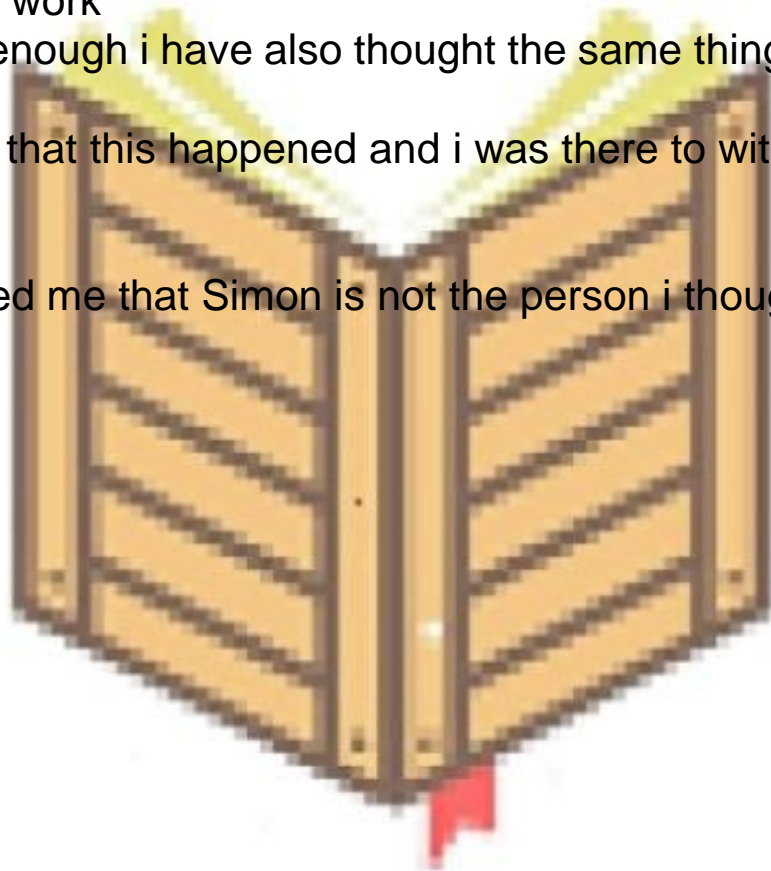
NOVELSGURU.COM

understand is your anger towards this situation I looked at him..
Him: i thought you felt nothing for the guy, that's why i have always
contributed your relationship as just being amere Brother and sister
relationship
I sat down on the bed...

Me: Maybe it was, if it wasn't he wouldn't have done whathe did
He came and sat next to me..Him: Im sorry
Me: Its not your fault, i have always known that Simon andi we
would never work
Him: funny enough i have also thought the same thing

Me: Im glad that this happened and i was there to witnessit
Him: Why?

Me: it showed me that Simon is not the person i thought



NOVELSGURU.COM

he was

Him: quite Frankly i didn't expect this from him he came across to me as this fool who didn't even know how a pussy looked like. I thought he was a virgin

Me: worse he is in love with two girls

Him: ohh no babe, he doesn't love those girls Me: How do you know?

Him: it was just a..He looked at me..

Him: You know what it had more to do with sex than love Me: Ohw

Him: Yes

Me: speaking from experience? Him: Well...

He cleared his throat..

Him: this topic is not about me, Its about Simon don't turn



NOVELSGURU.COM

me into a person of interest

At least my Grandmother will also see that Simon is not good for me or anyone for that matter..

Zaine: ill go and make you something to eat
Me: Thank you
He kissed me on my forehead and then went. I had put my phone on silence because i didn't wanna hear anything coming from that guy, i was over disgusted by his ways..

I got up from the bed and went to bath, then after bathing i put on my leggings and Tshirt because i didn't take my clothes from Simon's place so i had no Pjs..

When i was done clothing i made my way to the kitchen..
Zaine: i had ordered some piz...

He looked at me...
Me: What?

Him: Nothing at all

His phone started ringing, he just looked at it and let it ring



NOVELSGURU.COM

without answering..Him: Its My mother
I even forgot about his mother for a second that she doesn't want
me..

Me: Maybe you should answer before she comes here

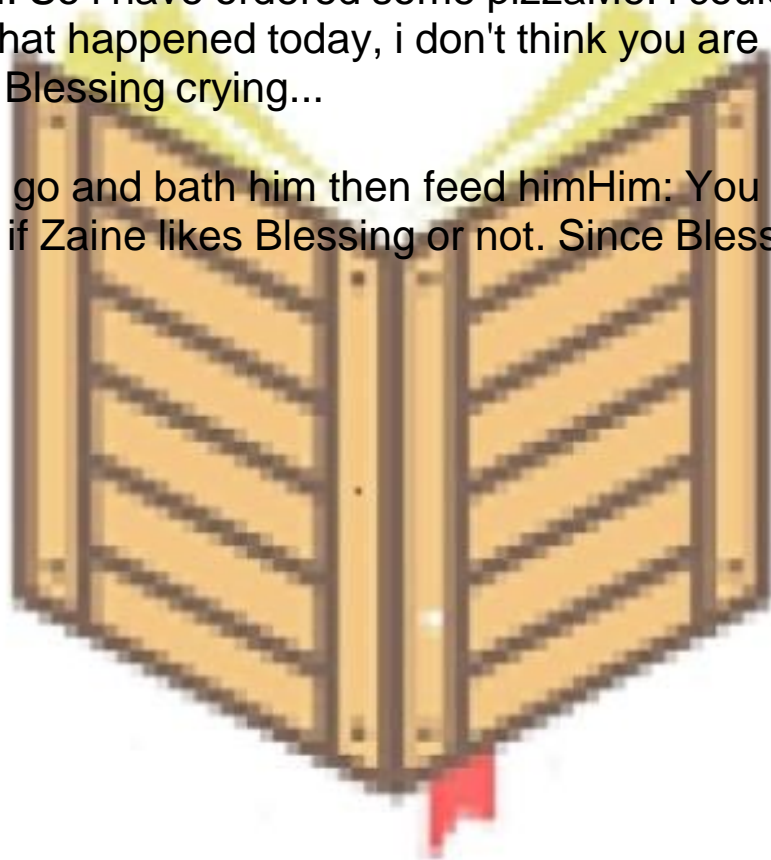
Him: she won't come, my father passed on so she can't really leave
the house for now

Me: Im sorry to hear that about your Father, i know you guys were
close

Him: Its fine.. So i have ordered some pizza

Me: i could've cooked
Him: after what happened today, i don't think you are up for that
I then heard Blessing crying...

Me: i should go and bath him then feed him
Him: You go and do that
I don't know if Zaine likes Blessing or not. Since Blessing



NOVELSGURU.COM

has been here i haven't seen Zaine having any interest at him..

.

. #SIMON

I know that people will call me a dog or a jerk for what i did, but what you don't know is that i did it to save and protect Bonolo. Since from yesterday i have had this guys following me, checking my every move making notes and making calls i knew very well that they were sent by Abdul. I didn't tell Bonolo because i didn't wanna worry her so her seeing what she saw earlier i knew that it was gonna

anger her to the point where she wouldn't even think of staying here anymore...

My plan worked perfectly, but i think that i over did everything and i probably have lost her forever..

I was throwing away all the empty bottles of alcohol, the girls had left and i was all alone..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I saw my wallet on the bed, i went and checked it all my money was gone this girls are smarter than i thought theyrobbed me but what did i expect from a bunch of prostitutes i got for the night...

The door bell rang as i was busy tidying up and before i could make my way to the door, it opened and Abdul walked in with this two guys. I looked at the guys and theylooked exactly like the ones who had been following me..

They closed the door and Abdul made his way to me..Him: Where is she?

Was i scared? Yes i was there's no telling what this mancan do...

Me: i don't know

He chuckled and then gave me a death stare...

Him: my guys say that they have seen her coming in andout of this flat been 2 days now

Me: She does visit



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked around, and looked at his guys.. They came to me and started beating me up..Him: Where is she?
Me: i don't know

Him: should i just go to Granny's house and ask, she will spill the beans after all i am a Prophet of God

Me: Fuck you! If you touch Bonolo again, i will kill you!He looked at me..

Him: i guess we have to do this the hard way gentleman..

He turned around and made his way to the door while his goons continued beating me up..

.

. #ZAINÉ

Bonolo and i we were sitting in the lounge watching a movie together with Melissa and i wasn't feeling well .. I had this feeling that something bad is gonna happen but i



NOVELSGURU.COM

just didn't know what it is..I looked at them..
Me: Can i be excused? Melissa: Are you okay?
Me: Yeah just need to make a phone call

I went to my bedroom and closed the door, i called for Helena but she didn't come through. This feeling was starting to get intense that i had a vision of this man wearing all black even a black hat and sitting at the backof a car..

What brought me chills was the fact that this man's heartwas cold, he was very heartless..

I didn't know who he was and i didn't know why i washaving this vision of him..

I was disturbed by the door opening, and Bonolo stoodthere..

Her: Zaine



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at her and she had this light shining on her..Me: ohh my word

Him: What? What's wrong?Me: i think that...

Her: think what?

Me: Your life is in dangerHer: What?

Me: You have to get your Son, i have to drive you out of here!

Her: What do you mean?

I stood up and went to her...Me: do you trust me?

Her: Yes i do

Me: then let me take you to a place where you would be safe, no questions asked

She looked me in the eye for a while..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Okay.. Ill get BlessingMe: Thank you.. And hurryHer: Okay
She went to fetch Blessing while i went to get my keys..

.

To be continued

December 8, 2016 at 1:51pm · Public

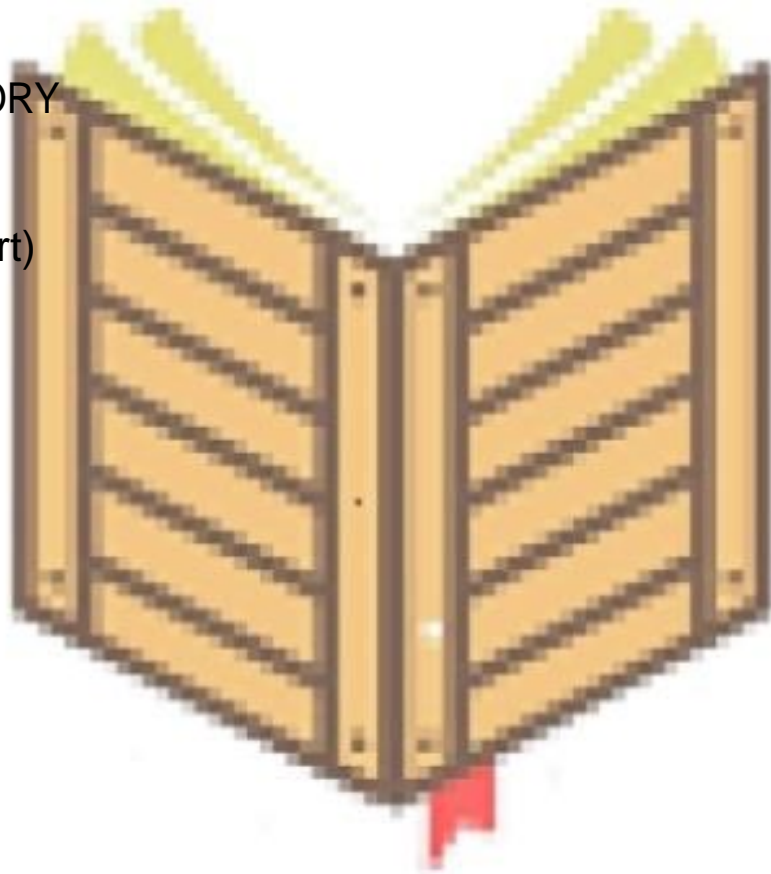
Li PURGATORY

.

. (short insert)

.

¥47 #ZAINÉ



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bringing Bonolo to my Mom's place may seem crazy considering how my mother feels about her, but this is the safest place i know right now and that is Home.

We were standing at the door looking at each as Fate decided who was gonna open the door. She was holding Blessing close to her shoulder and covered him with a Mini blanket. I looked at her and this girl has been through it all, she has been through hell and she's just only 17 years old..

I extended my hand to hold hers, she looked at me and Smiled my look was more off "whatever awaits us from here on we will get through it together"...

The door opened slowly and Nkhensani was standing there, im thankful Its her and not my Mother. She pulled the ropes of her night gown and fasten them tight hiding off her short Night dress..

Her: Zaine? Me: Hey



NOVELSGURU.COM

We walked inside, still holding hands..She looked at Bonolo..
Nkhensani: Bonolo right?Bonolo nodded..
Nkhensani: Its 23:00Me: i know, i know
I looked around and it was quiet, only the kitchen light wason...
Me: Where is Mom?

Her: I think she is sleeping

I got Blessing's bag back on my arm as it was falling..Me: Let's go
to my room

We started walking to the stairs..Nkhensani: Zaine
I looked at her and she looked like she had alot to sayabout me and
Bonolo..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: We will talk in the morning
Her: Good night
Me: Night

She looked at Bonolo..

Her: i will bring you hot water to prepare the baby's bottle
Bonolo:
Thank you

I held her hand again and we made it to my room safely without anyone busting us..

I put the bag away, and Bonolo went to lay Blessing down..

I then locked the door making sure that no one is gonnaburst in on us..

Bonolo looked very worried, she was sitting at the edge of the bed while biting her nails. I sensed a lot of fear from her, she's lived with fear soo much that even when there'sno point or reason for her to be fearful she still remains fearful..



NOVELSGURU.COM

A soft knock on the door made her jump..Me: Its probably Nkhensani
I walked over to the door, i unlocked and then opened itwas Nkhensani..
I let her in and she was holding two small water Flusks..Her: The other water is cold and the other water is hot She put them on the dressing table..
Bonolo: Thank you soo muchShe smiled at us..
Her: Let me go before Leighton notices that im goneI went and hugged her..
Me: Thank you for your good heart

Leighton has been blessed with a woman who has a heartof an Angel..
Her: ill see you tomorrowMe: Thank you again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Don't you want something to eat?

I looked at Bonolo.. Then i looked at Nkhensani...Me: No thank you, we will be fine

I locked the door and looked at Bonolo..Me: What do you do when you scared?Her: i pray

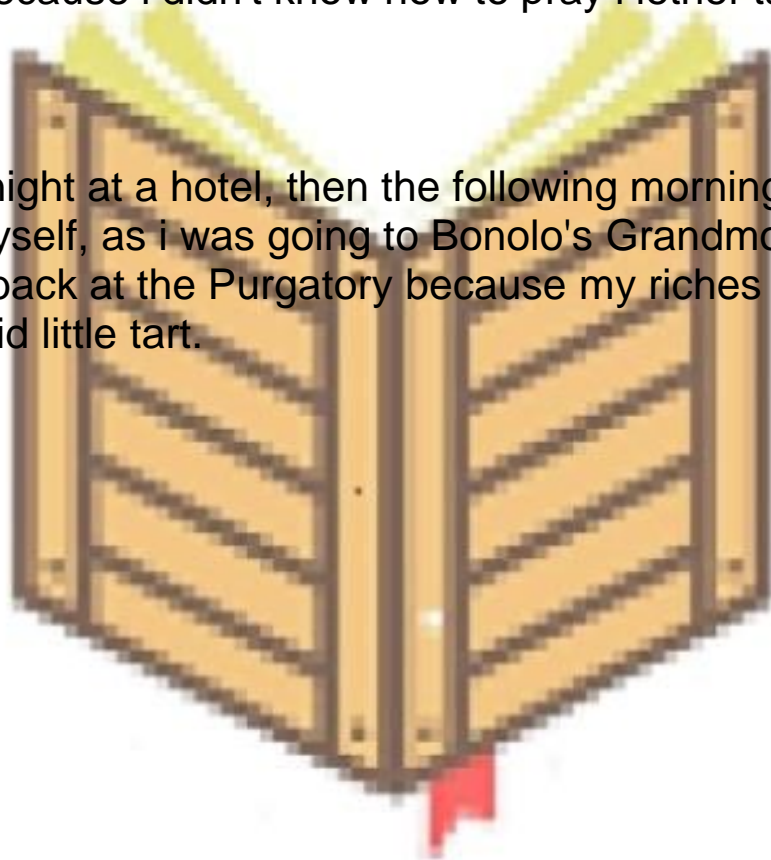
Me: lets pray then

I walked up to her and we both held hands, she started praying. I kept quiet because i didn't know how to pray i lether take the lead.

.

. #ABDUL

I spent the night at a hotel, then the following morning i woke and prepared myself, as i was going to Bonolo's Grandmother. I have to get Bonolo back at the Purgatory because my riches and power lies on that stupid little tart.



NOVELSGURU.COM

See i made a deal with the devil in exchange for riches and power. Back in my home country i joined some satanic ritual club before i came to start a new life in South Africa. For me to attain riches i had to start a Cult or church rather where as the power of Darkness is worshiped than the God of heaven. Just because people call the name of God doesn't mean they mean the only living God, there's many gods out there..

Prying on little innocent girls and taking their innocence away was another sacrifice that i had to make. All the girls i have slept with at the Purgatory now belong to the world of darkness expect for Bonolo, her heart has Always been pure we couldn't get through her and we can't give up on her. I have to bring her back so that i still keep my riches and get my powers she has the key for me to make that possible and the key is Blessing. Blessing has to be sacrificed for the greater evil in order for the world of darkness to grant me powers, powers to perform miracles and deceive the whole world so that they can serve my God, so the power of darkness can reign. People are easily



NOVELSGURU.COM

fooled this days, once a Prophet performs great miracles they don't hesitate to follow and believe. When i get those powers i will have a lot of people at Purgatory and nothing is gonna stop me..

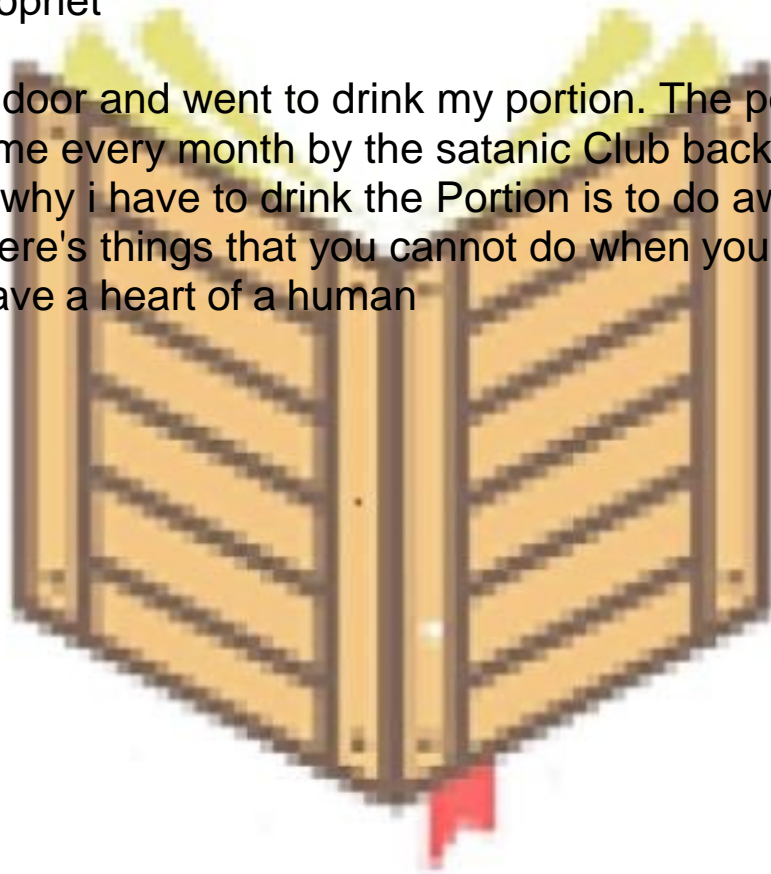
I heard a knock at the door, i put on my necklace that had a cross as a pendant and the cross was upside down indicating that i am anti-christ..

I went to open the door and it was one of my guys..Him: The car is ready Prophet

Me: and im ready, ill be there in a secHe bowed his head a little..

Him: Yes Prophet

I closed the door and went to drink my portion. The portion is brought for me every month by the satanic Club back at home... The reason why i have to drink the Portion is to do away with being a human, there's things that you cannot do when you a human or when you have a heart of a human



NOVELSGURU.COM

being so the Portion helps me not to have mercy or feelings of guilt. After drinking the portion i went out of the hotel to the Mercedes-Benz E-class..the chauffer opened the backdoor for me and i went inside....

He closed the door and got to the driver's seat..Me: do you know where we going?

Him: Yes sir

Me: Let's go then

He started the car and we set off to the Grandmother's place..
PURGATORY

·
·
·
¥48 #ABDUL



NOVELSGURU.COM

We got to this woman's place and it was better looking than what i anticipated. Her house was big enough to attract eyes and the neighbourhood wasn't so disappointing...

The chauffer opened the door for me and i got out, while wearing my clerical collar outfit what i didn't like was all the eyes on me.

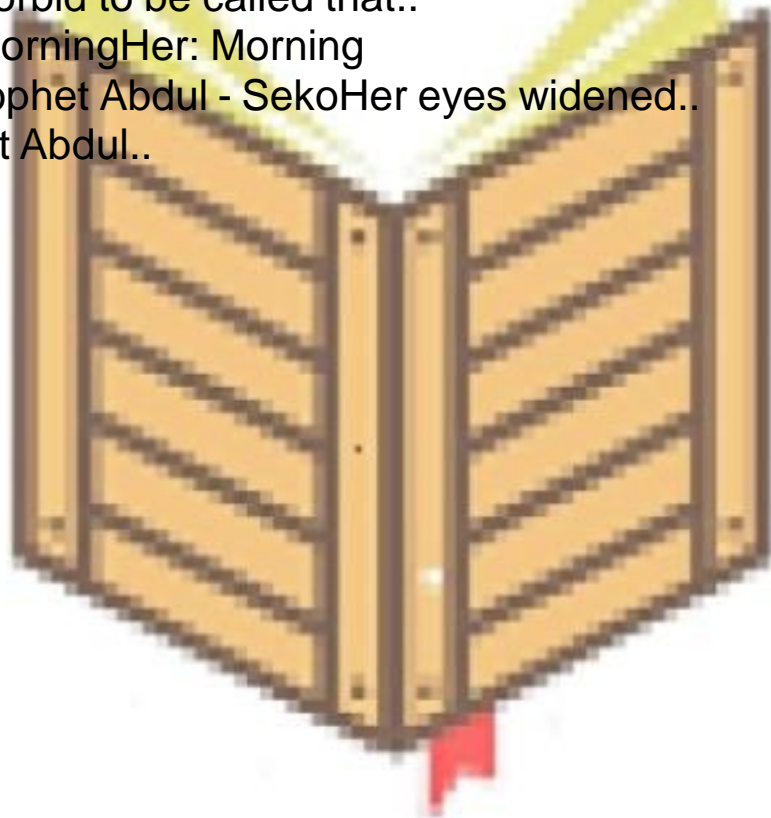
We made our way to the door and knocked, a few minutes later this old woman opened, i am assuming that's the Grandmother. She doesn't know me face to face although i had Married her Daughter a few Years ago..

From my clerical outfit she could already tell that i might be a Pastor although i Forbid to be called that..

Me: Good morning Her: Morning

Me: i am Prophet Abdul - Seko Her eyes widened..

Her: Prophet Abdul..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes, i am the man who married your Daughter a fewYears ago

Her: Wow finally i get to meet youI looked around..

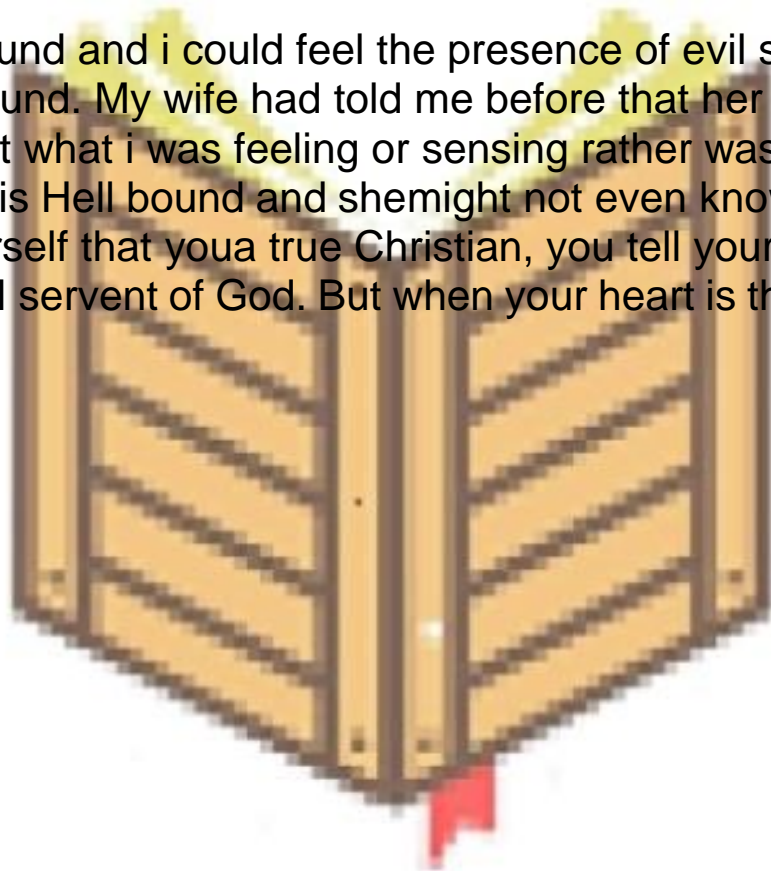
Me: Can you please allow us to get inside the house, because quite Frankly all this eyes are starting to make meDizzy..

She got the keys and unlocked the security door then letme and my driver inside...

Me: Thank you

Her: such an honour to have you in my home

I looked around and i could feel the presence of evil spiritsjust roaming around. My wife had told me before that her Mother is a Christian but what i was feeling or sensing rather was the opposite, this woman is Hell bound and shemight not even know. Sometimes you tell yourself that youa true Christian, you tell yourself that you are a faithful servent of God. But when your heart is this Evil then you



NOVELSGURU.COM

cannot be put right with the Heavenly God instead you belong to us..
She touched her uncovered head that had grey hair..

Her: Excuse me Pastor, please allow me to go and cover my hair
I bit my lower lip in frustration she just called me a Pastor..She went
to cover her hair and then came back again..

Her: i was very hurt when i didn't get an invite to my Daughter's
wedding

Me: i understand and im sorry, but it was a secret wedding
Her: How is my daughter doing this days Pastor?

Me: Please call me Prophet
Her: i apologise, Prophet
Me: Your daughter is fine

Her: i would like to see her some time
Me: ill arrange that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Who am i kidding? Her Daughter doesn't want anything todo with her. I don't know what happened between them but there's a lot of bad blood there..

Me: Anyway i am here because of BonoloShe exhaled...

Her: Eyy Bonolo

Me: is there something wrong?

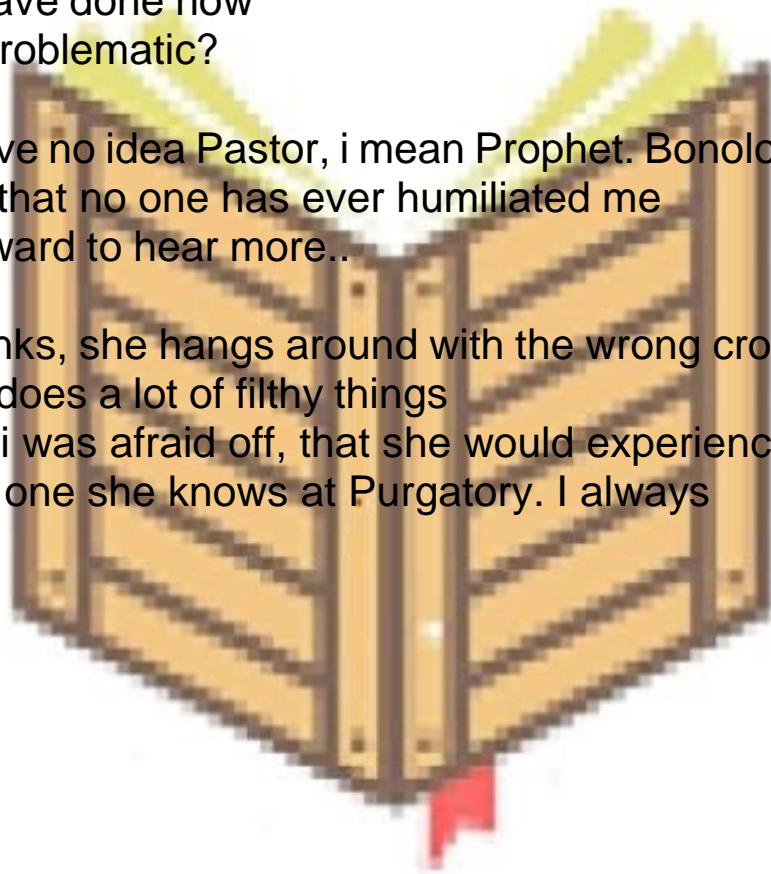
Her: everytime when someone mentions her name, iwonder what she might have done now

Me: is she problematic?

Her: You have no idea Pastor, i mean Prophet. Bonolo hashumiliated me in ways that no one has ever humiliated me
I leaned forward to hear more..

Her: she drinks, she hangs around with the wrong crowd.She sleeps around she does a lot of filthy things

That's what i was afraid off, that she would experience a different life than the one she knows at Purgatory. I always



NOVELSGURU.COM

brainwash my people at the Purgatory, they are my slaves they worship me and my God. I chose a life for them, one that they will have to abide by forever...

Me: is she around?

Her: No Simon came to the rescue and took them, such a sweet boy God bless him

Me: unfortunately i went to Simon's flat and she's not there

Her: What do you mean she's not there? Me: Simon says she up and left

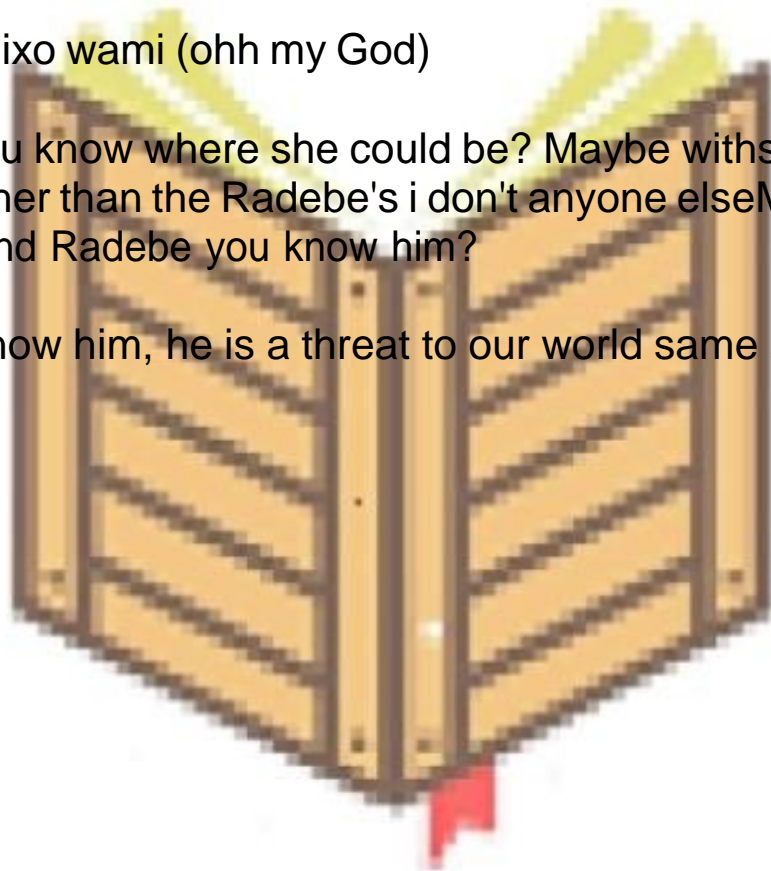
Her: Ohh Thixo wami (ohh my God)

Me: don't you know where she could be? Maybe with someone else?

Her: Well other than the Radebe's i don't know anyone else Me: Radebe's?

Her: Reverend Radebe you know him?

Of course i know him, he is a threat to our world same as



NOVELSGURU.COM

Prophet Badru. Most Powerful Prophets of this lifetime. Although Prophet Radebe passed on i know that because the world of Darkness rejoiced that day while all heaven broke down into tears.. The tears of all the Angels became a celebration to us in hell..
Me: didn't he pass on?

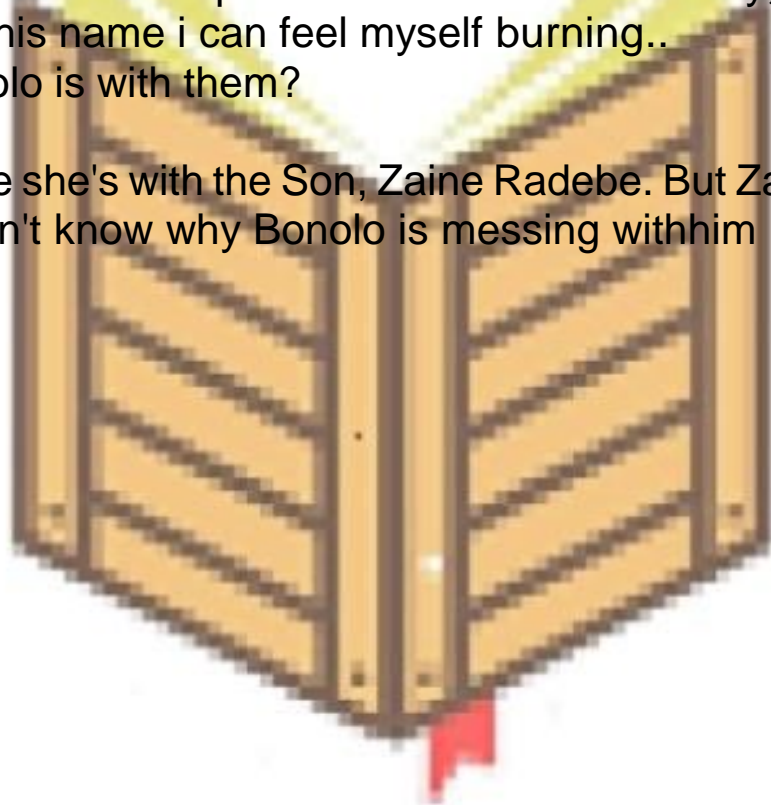
Her: he did, he was murdered

Whoever did the job must earn a throne in the world of Darkness..

Her: The whole church is in mourning
Me: my deepest condolences
I wish the talk about Prophet Radebe can end already, because even mentioning his name i can feel myself burning..

Me: so Bonolo is with them?

Her: i believe she's with the Son, Zaine Radebe. But Zaine is now a prophet i don't know why Bonolo is messing with him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Zaine is the Prophet's Son? Her: Yes?

If he is a prophet then he cannot be a powerful one like his father, because we cannot feel his strong presence..

Me: do you know where this Zaine stays?

Her: i can get you his Address from my Neighbour

Me: Thank you
She went to get the address. For a moment there i was scared, im thankful that Prophet Radebe is no more or else i wasn't gonna be able to get Bonolo..

She came back with the Address and we made our way to this Zaine's place...

The drive to his house wasn't that long, we arrived there in an hour or so..

I got out of the car and made my way to the gate. Before i could even open the gate flames started lingering all



NOVELSGURU.COM

around..

I looked at my Chauffer Votex, unfortunately he cannot see what i was seeing. Only i can see this flames i have an eye to see what other humans cannot see so i can be well aware of my enemies.. I walked closer again and the flames got stronger, WarriorAngels surfaced too..

I started stepping back..Me: it cannot be

When Prophet Radebe passed on we thought that his eldest son would get his gift which was gonna be easy for us to manipulate him and have him be our type of Prophet Because his heart is not pure. Leighton allowed his heart to be clouded by jealousy, Anger, and hate making him vulnerable to the world of Darkness....

How things are taking place right now, shows that we might have to deal with another powerful Prophet, this Zaine person it seems as if like he is more powerful than



NOVELSGURU.COM

his father...

I saw Helena coming from the flames..

Helena is a powerful Guardian Angel, all her charges are either Powerful Prophets or those that are pure at heart..

Her: Didn't expect this did you? I looked at her..

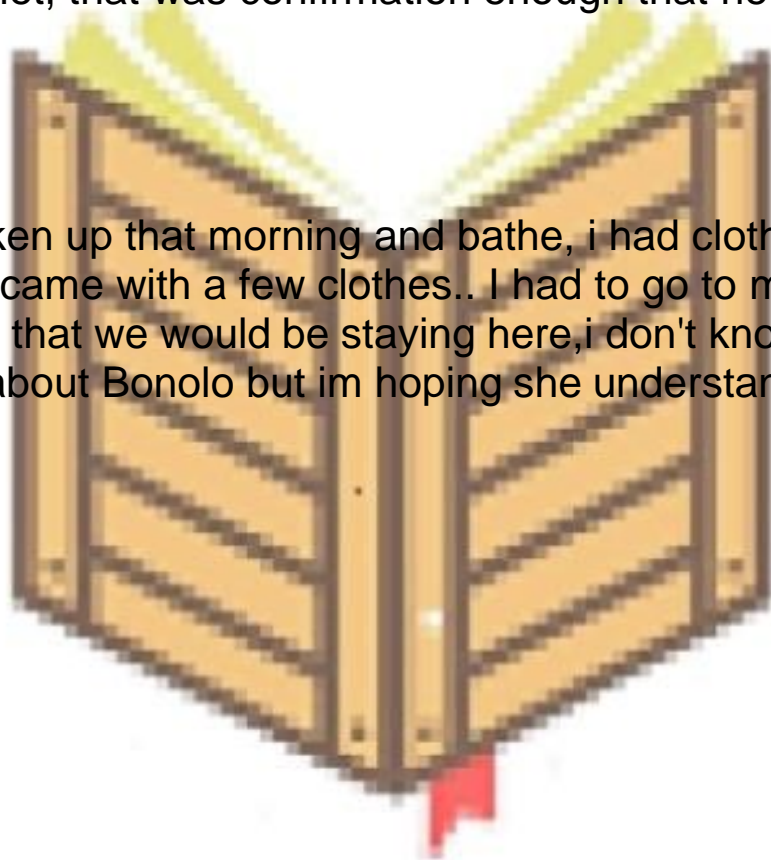
Me: does he know how powerful he is?

She kept quiet, that was confirmation enough that he doesn't know....

.

. #ZAINE

We had woken up that morning and bathe, i had clothes at home and Bonolo came with a few clothes.. I had to go to my mother and let her know that we would be staying here, i don't know how she's gonna feel about Bonolo but im hoping she understands..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at Bonolo...

Me: ill be back just stay here

She nodded.. I made my out to the dinning room where everyone was having breakfast..

Me: Good morning

Mom: Zaine i didn't know that you were around, when did you arrive?

Me: last night

Her: Its good to have you herel sat down opposite Leighton..Me:

Leighton

Him: Zaine

Leighton still had Demons of his own...

Leighton: did you find a girl that you gonna marry? Tomorrow we meeting again

Me: Not yet



NOVELSGURU.COM

He chuckled..

Mom: is everything okay?Me: everything is fine Nkhensani looked at me..

Me: i would like to make an announcementThey looked at me..

Me: i...

This was harder than i thought..Mom: What is it?

Me: if i ever have to get married, i want everyone to know that i will be marrying Bonolo. Matter of fact we are datingnow and she's here

The table went dead silence for a few minutes..Mom: She's here in my house?

I nodded..

Leighton: Who is Bonolo?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: You went out of your way to disrespect me this much?

Me: i didn't mean tooShe hit the table...

Her: Now i am starting to believe that the gift went to the wrong Son. Leighton is more deserving than you. God is perfect in all ways and he doesn't make mistakes, but giving you the Gift i am starting to think that he made a mistake

She stood up and took her tablet and went...Leighton: ouch!

To be continued

December 9, 2016 at 8:24am · Public

Like Page · Save · More



NOVELSGURU.COM

PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥49 #BONOLO

Zaine went out later that morning, said he had some errands to run leaving me behind with his family that hates me to death and back. I was confined in one place until Nkhensani suggested that we go and sit outside in the garden. Have some drinks and just get some fresh air.

This was not a healthy environment for me to be in, it has only been one night and i am already living like a rat hiding off from everyone and only moving when everyone is out of sight. I just wish that Zaine can find us a place or we go back to his place because i won't be able to deal with Ms Jackson at all.. My life is way confusing, one moment it seems like there's hope then the next its total darkness



NOVELSGURU.COM

again..

Nkhensani: should i pour you more juice again?Me: Thank you but im fine, my glass is still full She looked at Blessing..

Her: Such a cute baby boy you have thereMe: Thank you very much We continued drinking our juice and i noticed Ms Jacksonmaking her way to us and that's when fear took over. I amnot ready for whatever she is gonna say, but most of all what if she kicks me out?

When she got to us she looked at Nkhensani...

Her: i am going out for a while to fetch the Radebe'sNkhensani:

Okay

She then looked at me and Blessing as if like we disgusther. You know that look when you see something disgusting and you feel like vomiting? That's the type of look she gave me, there is no doubt in my mind that this



NOVELSGURU.COM

woman hates me and my presence annoys her to the core..
After saying that she walked away...

Nkhensani: ill be right back, just wanna inform the maidsto do a thorough job when it comes to cleaning

Me: No problem

She smiled at me and then went. Nkhensani is by far the only sweetest person to me.. My phone rang and it was Siya, i didn't wanna answer because i was very emotionalbut i have been avoiding him a lot lately and he is the onlyfriend i have..

I answered..Me: Mmata

Her: are you now a Celebrity Mmata?Me: Why?

Her: You are mad scarce

Me: Sorry Mmata i have just been dealing with a lot lately



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Its okay, when are you gonna come and visit me?Me: i don't know Mmata ill let you know

Him: You sound so depressed like someone died what'swrong Mmata?

Me: it just hurts when someone hates you and you don'teven know why they hate you

Him: Who hates you?

Me: someone i truly admire

It was no lie that i Admire or Admired Ms Jackson. She is a phenominal woman and i was starting to look up to her..

Him: Don't you wanna come and just visit me for a while?Me: ill see

Him: Okay ill call you later and do answer pleaseMe: i will

Him: bye

Me: bye Mmata



NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up and looked at Blessing. Shame he didn't even know what was going on, or even the hardships that we were facing right now.. I looked up to the sky.

Me: When is this gonna come to an end God?

.

. #ZAINE

My Father's lawyer Mantwa had called me to meet her up at some restaurant, said there's something important that we had to talk about before my Father's funeral.

She has always been a punctual lady, she was already sitting with a virgin mojito..

Me: Mantwa She stood up.. Her: Zaine
She hugged me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After the hug, i sat down opposite her..

Her: Thank you for meeting up with me in such noticeMe: Its okay

Her: would like something to drink?Me: Im fine thanks

She opened her laptop and then looked at me..Her: Don't look so stressed relax

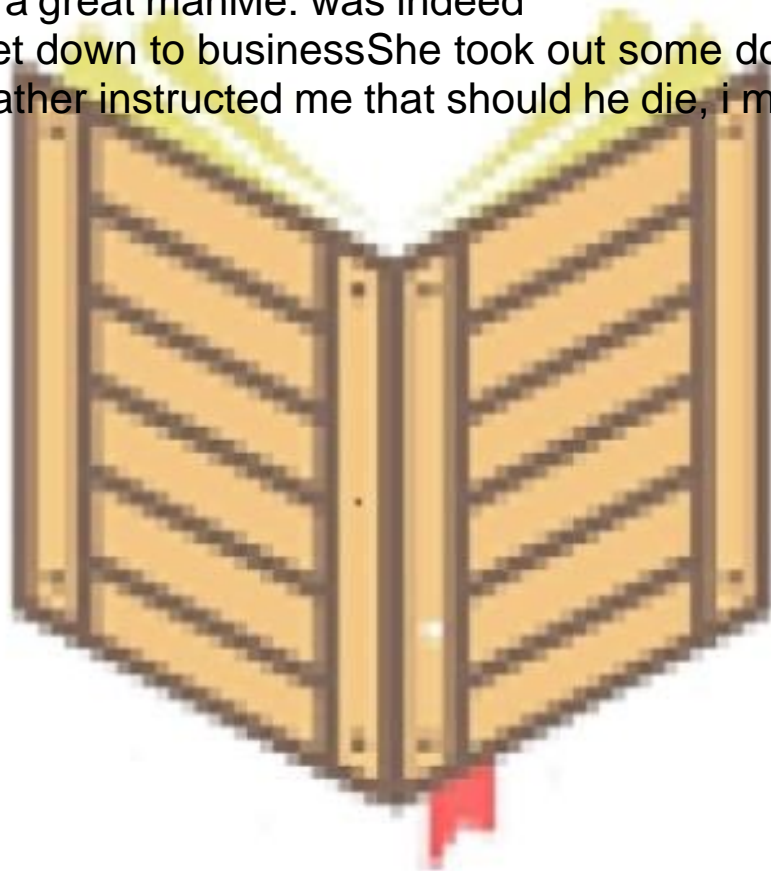
Me: Can't relax with what's been happening latelyShe slightly closed the laptop..

Her: i am sorry about your FatherMe: Thank you

Her: he was a great manMe: was indeed

Her: Let's get down to businessShe took out some documents..

Her: Your Father instructed me that should he die, i must



NOVELSGURU.COM

have this talk with you before his funeral
Me: Im all ears

Her: You know your Father had a lot of accounts where he kept his money right?

Me: joined accounts that he was Sharing with my mother

Her: true that but there's one account that Ms Jackson doesn't have knowledge off and that account your Father made it for you

Me: uhm okay

Her: The account has R500 000
Me: Excuse me 5..what?

Her: You heard me very loud and clear, he said that money will help you when the going gets tough

Me: Wow that's a lot of cash
Her: Not only that

Me: What else?

Her: his last motivational book Sold about 2million copies



NOVELSGURU.COM

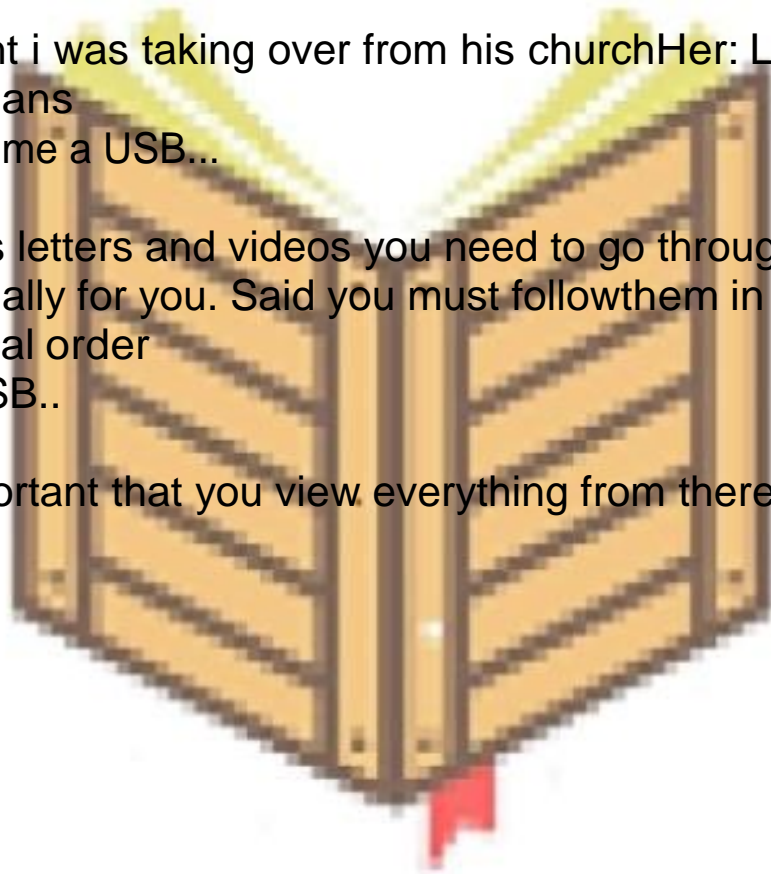
both National and international
Me: i am aware of that
Her: There's one book that has to be published in 3 months time.
He had signed the rights of that book to you meaning all the profit
made is gonna come to you
Me: Wow

Her: Don't get too excited he said the profit should be used for you to
build a church auditorium, start your own
church

Me: i thought i was taking over from his church
Her: Looks like he
had other plans
She handed me a USB...

Her: There's letters and videos you need to go through there, made
them especially for you. Said you must follow them in their
chronological order
I took the USB..

Her: Its important that you view everything from there



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i will

Her: right now ill need your signature here, so the 500 000can be transfered into your account within 24 hours. Do comfirm and make double sure that the Account number is correct

Me: Okay

I signed the documents, and went through everything. I was still using the same bank.. After confirming d everything i handed her back the documents...

Her: Thank you

Me: and the rights of the book book? Where are the documents?

Her: sweety that you will sign in your mother and brother's presence at the reading of the will, Daddy's orders

Me: Ohw

Her: This is your copyMe: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

She packed everything and then drank a bit of her virginmojito...
Her: ill see you after the funeral, at the reading of the will
Me: see you then

Her: bye
Me: bye

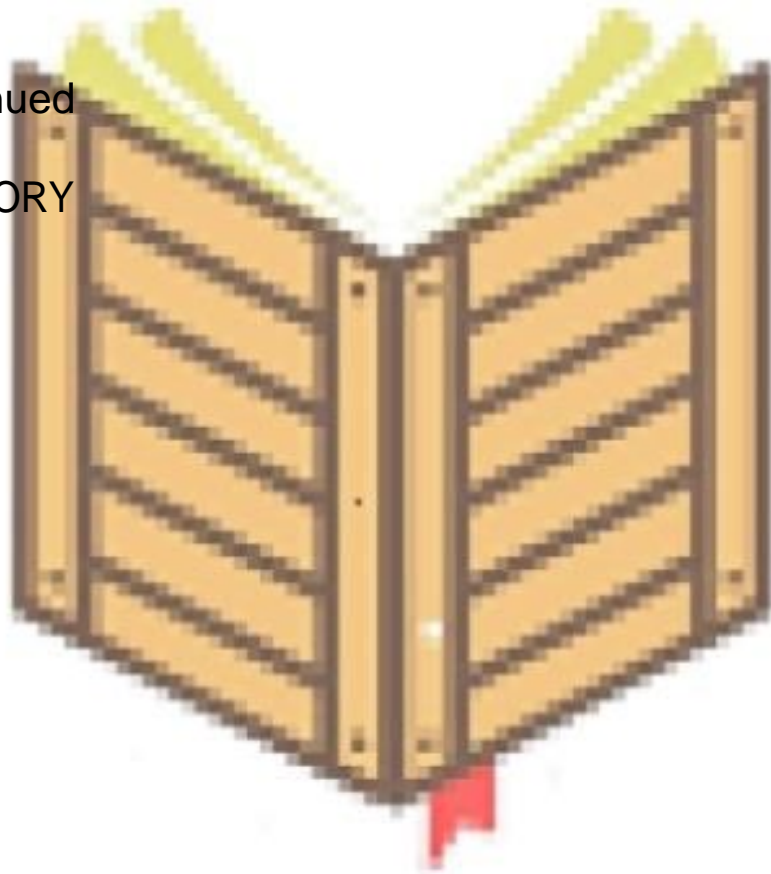
I sat there looking at the document, now what's left is for me to sell my house and then Ill buy a new house for me and Bonolo, one that her step father and no one else will be able to know about.. My mother hurt me alot by what she said earlier and now i know that she won't be there forme when i follow my Gift of being a Prophet..

.

To be continued

.... PURGATORY

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥50 #ABDUL

I was back at the Purgatory since my journey wasn't fruitful. Now that Bonolo is with what seems like a powerful Prophet it is gonna be very hard getting to her. I took the liberty to do a research of my own on this "Zaine Radebe" and i must say that the Internet had an interesting revelation of the person that he is and what he does. It is said here that he is a music producer, tackling both hip hop and R&B Generes. He runs with a net worth of R300 000 not bad considering the rubbish of music he is in.

Checking his pictures too, most of them show him being inclubs having a good time with Artists and friends. I can conclude now that he is wild and has a lot of freedom, for a Prophet's Son he is living a life of his own. I am even surprised that he is the one who recieved the gift, i mean he has had several encounters with forces of Darkness



NOVELSGURU.COM

because of his lifestyle but i am more surprised that he accepted and Embraced the gift.

I have hope and i am very sure that he is gonna get bored soon by the life of being a Prophet. Having to give up his lifestyle to read and preach for a bunch of people who won't even give him R50 000 combined. He will have to give up everything and all that he knows, his cars, his freedom and everything that once meant something to him for poverty. Churches are mostly filled with poor people who have faith to be rich one day, and they won't provide him with a life that he knew and has built for himself. What's R300 000 to a 24 year old who is used to having flashy things? It will be finished in a few months time..

A knock on the door disturbed me, i closed my laptop. I was at the study..

Me: Come in

My first wife Lucia walked in

Her: Forgive me Prophet i didn't mean to disturb you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: nonsense, come in dear

She closed the door and then came to sit on the chair across me..

Her: i didn't think that you were back

Me: i came back a few hours ago, the house was quiet when i came in

Her: How was the trip, did you find Bonolo? I sighed..

Me: unfortunately no, i didn't.

I never reveal everything to anyone.. Her: Palesa is coming tomorrow
Palesa is my little Daughter that i have with my second wife,
Veronica. Bonolo's mother..

Me: i cannot wait to see her, Its been a while. The boarding school
has made her a Stranger.

I have 3 kids all in all. I have two by Lucia my first wife, and one by
Veronica Bonolo's mother. My Son Brad, he is the



NOVELSGURU.COM

first born. Followed by Lucy, and then Palesa. Brad is studying abroad, Palesa is in a boarding school and the reason why i have kept Lucy from Sharing in my riches like her siblings is that i resent her a lot. She is my daughter and all but i don't love her like how i love Brad and Palesa that is why i am now having sexual relations with her since Bonolo left. Being in a satanic Cult they don't care about "flesh&blood" so sleeping with Lucy is not considered wrong or filthy..

Me: How is Lucy? Her: she is in pain

Me: She will be fine, first times are always a bit uneasy Her: i just don't know how Go..

She kept quiet and looked down..

Me: Are you questioning my ways and how i do things? Her: Of course not Prophet, that would be way out of line Me: That's right! You would be way out of line!



NOVELSGURU.COM

She stood up..

Her: Can i get Prophet Abdul anything to drink?Me: my portion please

Her: ill bring it for you

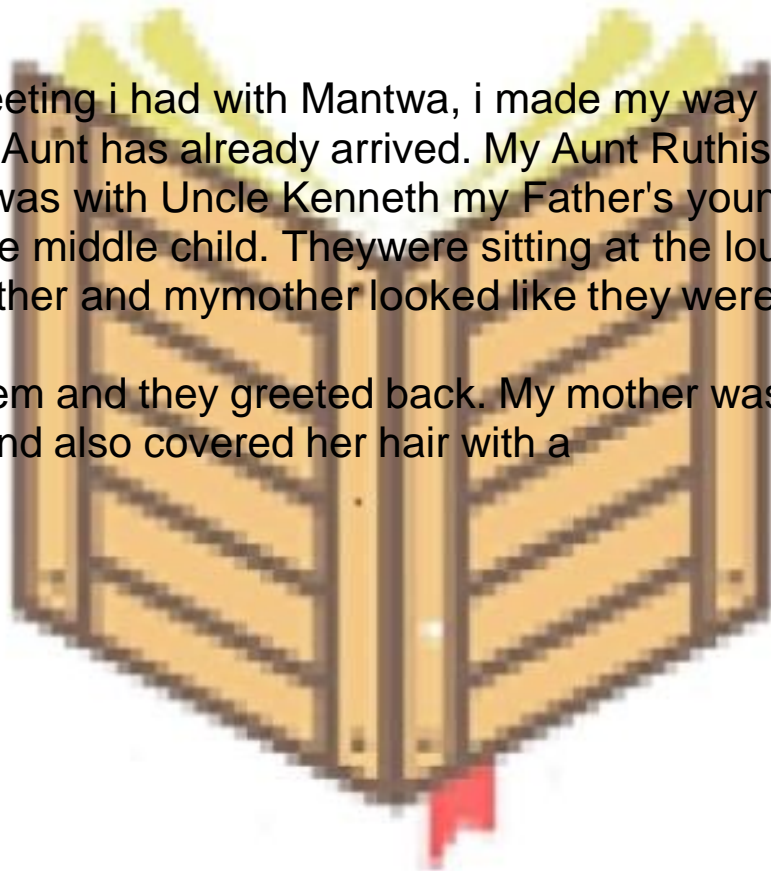
She turned and made her way to the door, i opened mylaptop again and continued with what i was doing..

.

. #ZAINE

After the meeting i had with Mantwa, i made my way homeonly to find that my Aunt has already arrived. My Aunt Ruthis my Dad's big sister. She was with Uncle Kenneth my Father's younger Brother, my father the middle child. Theywere sitting at the lounge together with my Brother and mymother looked like they were waiting for me..

I greeted them and they greeted back. My mother waswearing all black now and also covered her hair with a



NOVELSGURU.COM

doek..

Mom: Please sit down Zaine I went and sat down.

Aunt: how are you Zaine?

Me: I'm fine Aunt Ruth and you? Her: I'm well thank you

Uncle: How is everything going Son? Me: I am hanging in there uncle

Him: I'm glad to hear that, your Father would.. My mother looked at my Aunt..

Aunty: Kenneth can we stick to the topic please My uncle cleared his throat...

Him: Your mother told us a few things I looked at my mother..

Me: I bet she did

Uncle: Zaine you are having sexual.. Umm a relationship



NOVELSGURU.COM

with a girl who is considered a problem Me: problem?

Him: her way of living is a bit somehow Me: Uncle you will have to be more specific

Words failed him, and were words failed him my mother came to the rescue..

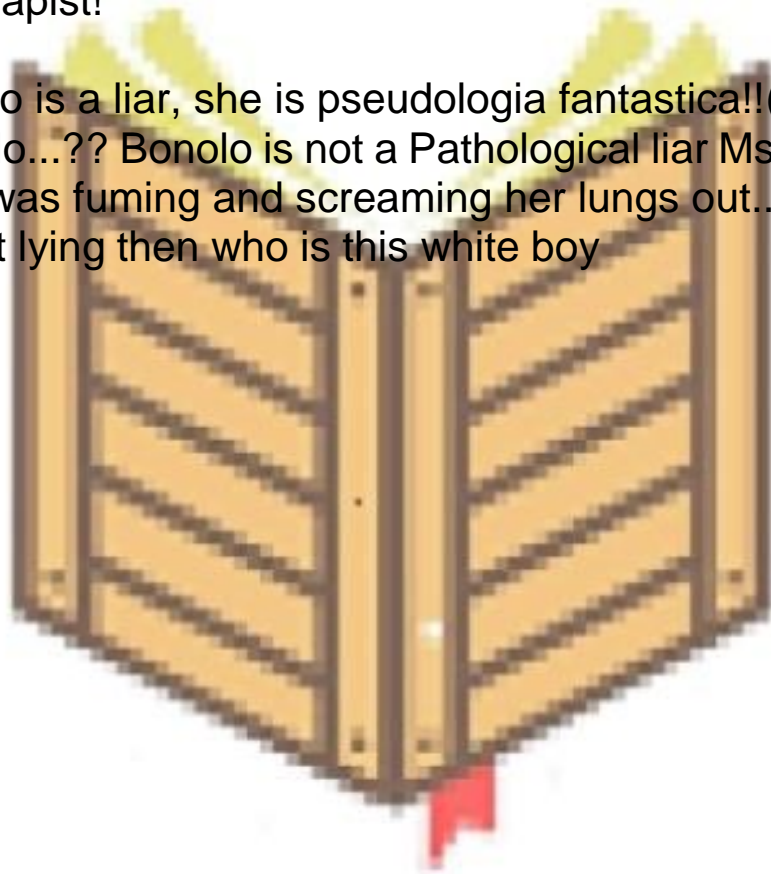
Mom: She is a drunk! She is promiscuous and her Promiscuous ways ended her up with a baby that she is nailing on her step father who is a.. And please hinder what i am going to say he is a Prophet a God fearing man!

Me: he is a rapist!

Mom: Bonolo is a liar, she is pseudologia fantastica!!(shouting)

Me: pseudolo...?? Bonolo is not a Pathological liar MsJackson

My mother was fuming and screaming her lungs out... Her: she is!!!
If she wasn't lying then who is this white boy



NOVELSGURU.COM

claiming to be the father of her baby?

I kept quiet because talking to her when she is like this was useless!

Her: her grandmother told me everything!

She closed her eyes and started breathing in and out..

Her: Zaine do you know how crazy all of this is! You sleeping with a minor she is 17 years old for heaven's sake!!

Leighton: she is what?

Me: Ms Jackson you don't want us in your house that is clear, so I will do you a favour by leaving with Bonolo

Leighton: should I tell him or you will? My uncle looked down..

Mom: We spoke as a family and decided that Leighton will take the responsibilities of being a Reverend! He will be appointed a

Reverend after Daddy's funeral

Me: You cannot do that!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: already done! What Reverend are you gonna make?

Leighton: imagine if the church could find out that you involved in Statutory rape?

I turned and looked at him..Me: What makes..

Before i could finish i saw my father standing by the door..He was wearing the hospital gown and he had Angels around him. He was surrounded by soo much joy and peace. The two Angels with him where full of peace, love,and joy i could sense it..

I looked at him and he put his finger on his lips..Him: Shhhhh

I continued starring at him until he disappeared with theAngels..

Mom: Zaine!!! (yelling)

I looked at them, and stood up..Mom: Where are you going?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I ignored them and started walking upstairs.. Mom: Zai.. See this is what i am talking about!Aunty: yadelela uZaine! (he is disrespectful)
Uncle: Maybe we were too hard on him
Mom: No Kenneth that was necessary!!

I got to the bedroom and Bonolo was laying on the bedwith Blessing busy singing..

Me: Get his things we leavingHer: leaving?

Me: going back homeHer: Home?? Zai...

Me: Just get the fucken clothes will you? (shouting)

I didn't realise that i was loud until Blessing startedcrying..

Bonolo picked him up...Bonolo: Im sorry baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: ill get the bags
Her: No..
I looked at her..
Me: Pardon?
Her: No, we not leaving!

Me: This is no time to be stubborn

Her: Zaine you upset, how are you gonna drive all upset? I cannot put my baby's life in danger like this!

Me: i have never had an accident before

Her: There's always a first time for everything
Me: Bonolo..

Her: No Zaine calm yourself down first and then we will leave

Me: i am fuc... I am calm

Her: We will be in Nkhensani's room
She went out..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Bon...

I sat down on the bed all pissed..Me: Fuck!!!

My face was buried in my hands when i remembered thatMantwa gave me a USB..

I got it out of my pocket and made my way to my Dad's study to use his laptop. I locked the door behind me when ientered..

. PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥51 #ZAINÉ

I played the first video that appeared in the USB, and it wasmy father he was in the hospital bed when the video was



NOVELSGURU.COM

taken and i heard Mantwa's voice in the background..Dad: is it on?
Mantwa: Seems so, and its recording

Him: Please close the door i don't want anyone coming in while im recording, this is highly confidential

Her: Of cause Rev Radebe, ill stand in the corridor and make sure that no one comes in

Him: Especially my wife and my other Son Mantwa: Yes Rev

I then heard the door closing and my father concentrated on the screen.

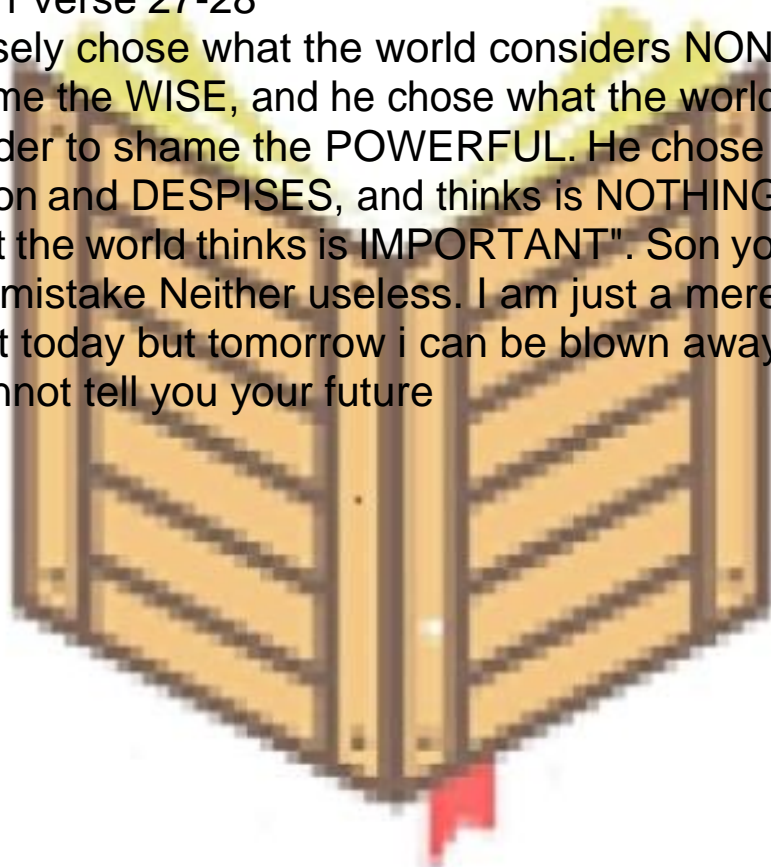
Dad: Zaine my Son, if you watching this then that means i am no more. There's things that i want you to know before i go to the world of the dead. First thing i want you to know is that i am very Proud of you, i am proud of the fact that you always stood for what you believed in. You never allowed us especially your Mother to turn you into someone that you not, you have always stood true to who



NOVELSGURU.COM

you are and because of that i am very proud of you. That day when you realised your Gift and how your big brother reacted i knew that he wasn't gonna be happy with everything, i knew that the Devil would easily get to him and influence him. Leighton and your mother have always been close, Your mother loves Leighton and she would do anything to support him in everything he does because he portrayed himself as this perfect son. I am not saying your mother hates you, i am just saying that she would find Leighton a better Candidate than you when it comes to matters of Religion. 1 Corinthians 1 verse 27-28

"God purposely chose what the world considers NONSENSE in order to shame the WISE, and he chose what the world considers WEAK in order to shame the POWERFUL. He chose what the world looks down on and DESPISES, and thinks is NOTHING, in order to destroy what the world thinks is IMPORTANT". Son you having the Gift is not a mistake Neither useless. I am just a mere human being, i exist today but tomorrow i can be blown away like a puff of smoke. I cannot tell you your future



NOVELSGURU.COM

because i don't know it only God does but i know that it will be one that God perfectly planned for you. All i know is that you are meant to be powerful than i. You are meant to heal the sick both physically and Emotionally and give hope to the broken. You are meant to give hope to those who don't believe God exists, because of how they get hurt over and over. You are meant to renew the strength of those who have given up on life, you supposed to make them see that as long as they keep on waking up every morning despite what they going through, that's a promise that God is alive. I can go on the whole day about everything but some other things you will figure out on your own. What i want is for you to be true to yourself, you have a very sought After gift that not even a billion can buy but it is rewarded to those who are pure at heart. Speaking about the matters of the heart, i hope you marry a girl that you love. Seeing you and Bonolo together even a blind person could see the love that exist between you too. I wish my marriage was like that, but it wasn't that's what happens when love only exists between one person and



NOVELSGURU.COM

the other party only married for the benefits that marriage provides. It is not gonna be an easy road son but always seek strength from the Lord. Leighton might be chosen over you to take over in being a Reverend because they go with "Perfection" that's why i want you to build your own legacy. Start your own church that will stand for the truth. Make your church a success by being true to them, be true to yourself and mostly be true to the Almighty God. I then heard Mantwa's voice..

Mantwa: Rev your wife is coming, I cannot stall her

Dad: Okay thank you for the heads up, come take my laptop
He looked at the screen once more before the laptop was taken away from him..

Him: whatever happens never think you alone, you have Prophet Badru's support he will mentor you, you have my support and the whole of Heaven's support. Always remember that you are powerful.



NOVELSGURU.COM

The laptop was then taken away. That that was one powerful message it really renewed my strength and mademe wanna carry on from here. I ejected the USB and then made my way to Nkhensani's room. I knocked.

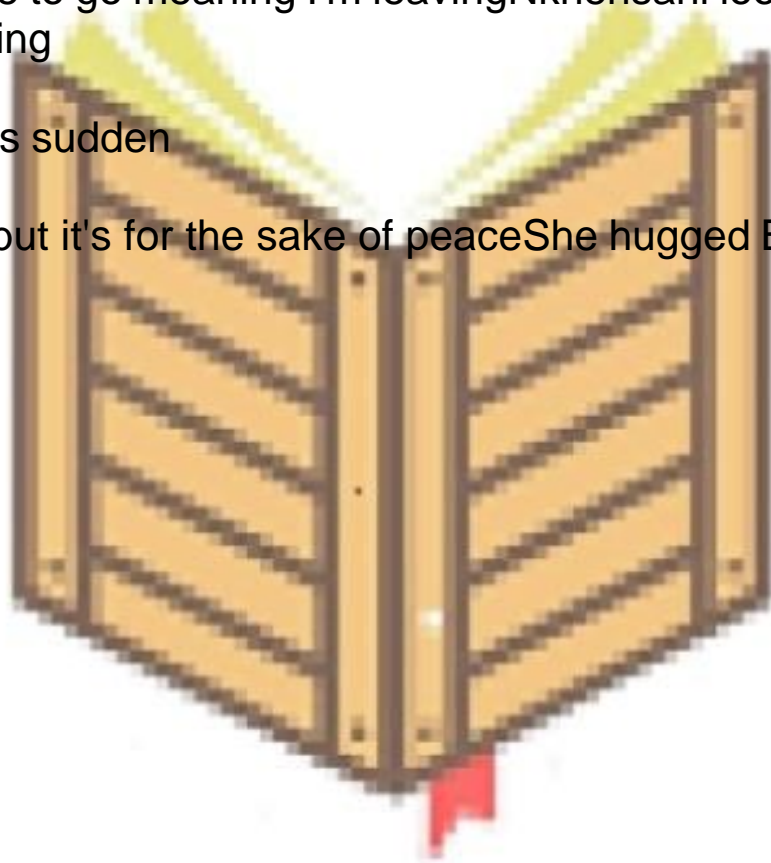
Nkhensani: Come in

I opened and walked in, I looked At Bonolo..Me: I'm calm
She looked at Nkhensani..Her: I have to go Nkhensani: See you later

Bonolo: have to go meaning I'm leavingNkhensani looked at me..
Me: we leaving

Her: that was sudden

Me: I know but it's for the sake of peaceShe hugged Bonolo..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I am soo gonna miss you and the little one

Bonolo: you can always come to visit us if Zaine doesn't mind

Me: it's alright Her: I'll come

Bonolo stood up and picked up Blessing.. Bonolo: bye

Nkhensani: bye

I went and hugged Nkhensani... Her: stay good

Me: I will, remain always having a good heart. Don't let those two taint you

Her: I wouldn't dare allow Me: bye

Her: bye

We walked out of her bedroom, I went and got all the bags



NOVELSGURU.COM

and we made our way downstairs. On our way out my mother and Aunt Ruth were in the kitchen cooking..

Aunty: and you?

Me: we are leaving, we are going back home

The look that my mother gave Bonolo was very diabolic and I didn't like it at all.

Mom: let me guess you choosing her over us?

Me: I am not choosing anyone over anyone. You guys are the ones who don't want to be a part of my life

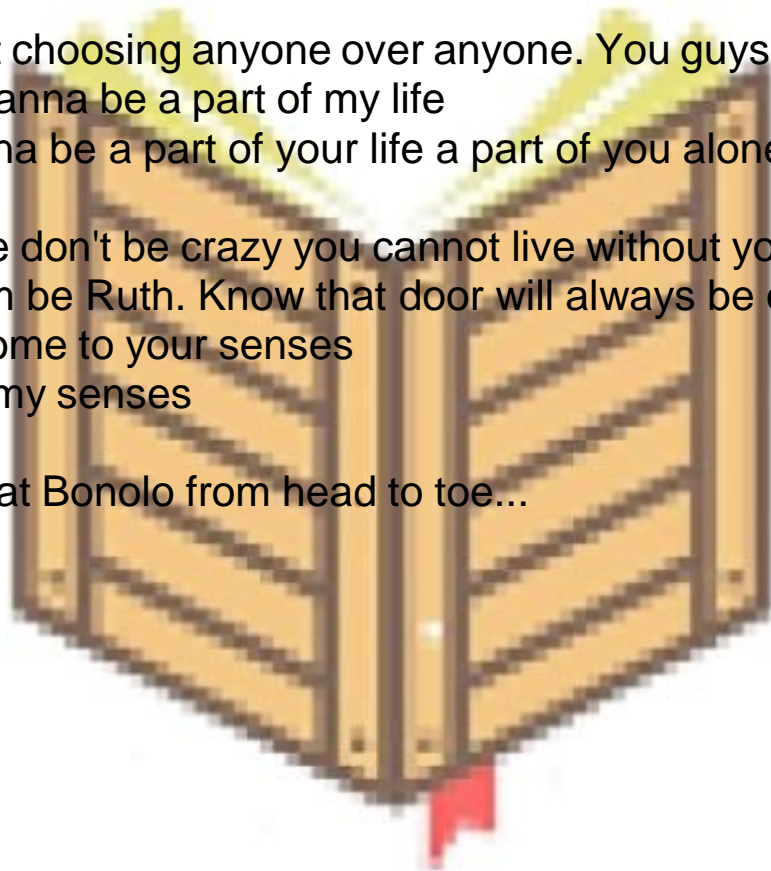
Mom: I want to be a part of your life a part of you alone
Me: but I am not alone

Aunty: Zaine don't be crazy you cannot live without your family

Mom: let him be Ruth. Know that door will always be open for you when you come to your senses

Me: I am in my senses

She looked at Bonolo from head to toe...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: we will see about that I looked at Bonolo..

Me: let's go

We walked out to my car and finally I could breath, I really wanted to be out of there..

Bonolo: it's like she's waiting for our relationship to fail held her hand..

Me: then we won't prove her right Her: I hope so

I started the car and we drove back home

.

. #BONOLO

We got home and I put Blessing down. He wasn't sleeping so I put him down on the couch while I got started with dinner.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: you are domesticated

Me: I have to cook what else are we gonna eat?Him: we can always order something

He pecked my lips after saying that..Me: we can't live on take aways Him: yeah but..

I heard Blessing crying..

Me: let me go and check himHim: it's fine I'll do it

Me: Really?Him: Yes

Me: hmmmHim: what?

Me: nothing

He walked halfway and then stopped..Him: can you slice a lemon for me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Why?

Him: I like lemons

I got the lemon and sliced it for him, he took one slice of the lemon.

Him: Thank you Nolly
Me: you welcome

He walked away while I was thinking of what I was gonna cook. Stir fry and chicken breasts seem like a quick meal to prepare so I took them out..

Halfway through my cooking I heard Blessing crying, this time he was more louder. I quickly made my way to the lounge and Zaine was laughing his lungs out..

I attended to Blessing..

Me: are you serious right now Zaine!!! What did you do to him?

Him: Relax I didn't do anything to him
Me: he wouldn't be crying like this!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at Blessing..

Me: what did he do to you? Zaine: Come and see this
He played a video from his phone where he made Blessing taste
Lemon for the first time..

Although I was mad but Blessing's facial expression after tasting the
lemon made me laugh a little it was that funny..

Him: I'm telling you this is going on YouTube Me: my baby is not a
toy

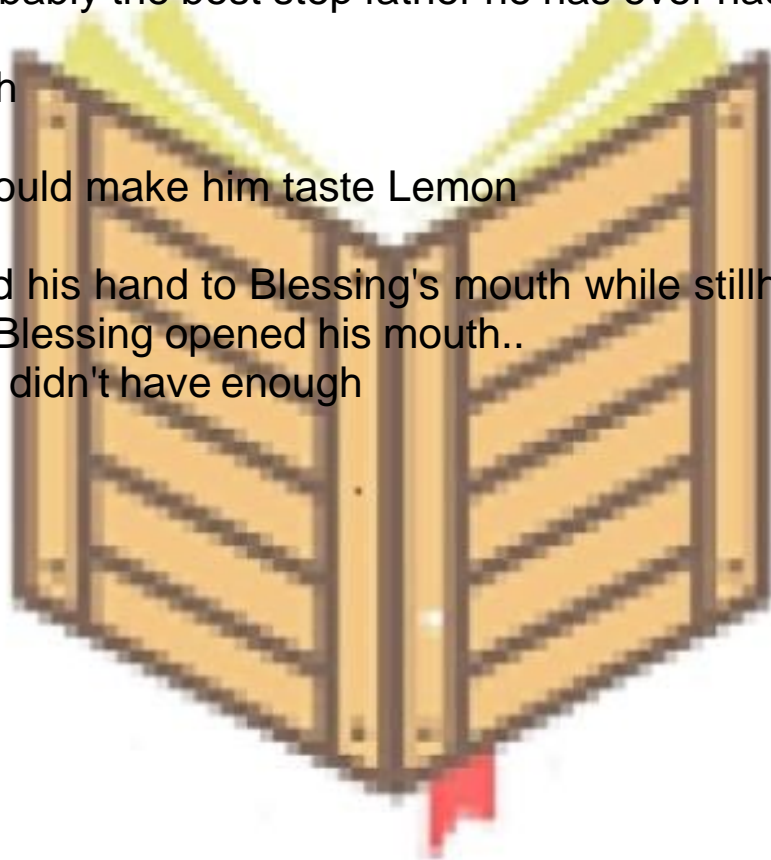
Him: I'm probably the best step father he has ever had compared to
Simon

Me: you wish

Him: who would make him taste Lemon

He stretched his hand to Blessing's mouth while still holding the
lemon, and Blessing opened his mouth..

Him: See he didn't have enough



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: stop it, his a baby he doesn't know that this is a lemon, and stop making him taste Lemons

Zaine: was the last time

Me: let me see the video again

He took Blessing from me while I watched the video, it was very funny I won't lie..

Zaine: we will be checking the pots for you so long
Me: don't burn him

Zaine: yeah right

They disappeared to the kitchen, can't believe Zaine is making my baby his toy..

.

To be continued

-no edits

Dec 12, 2016 · Public · in Timeline Photos



NOVELSGURU.COM

[View Full Size](#) · [Send as Message](#) · [Report](#)PURGATORY

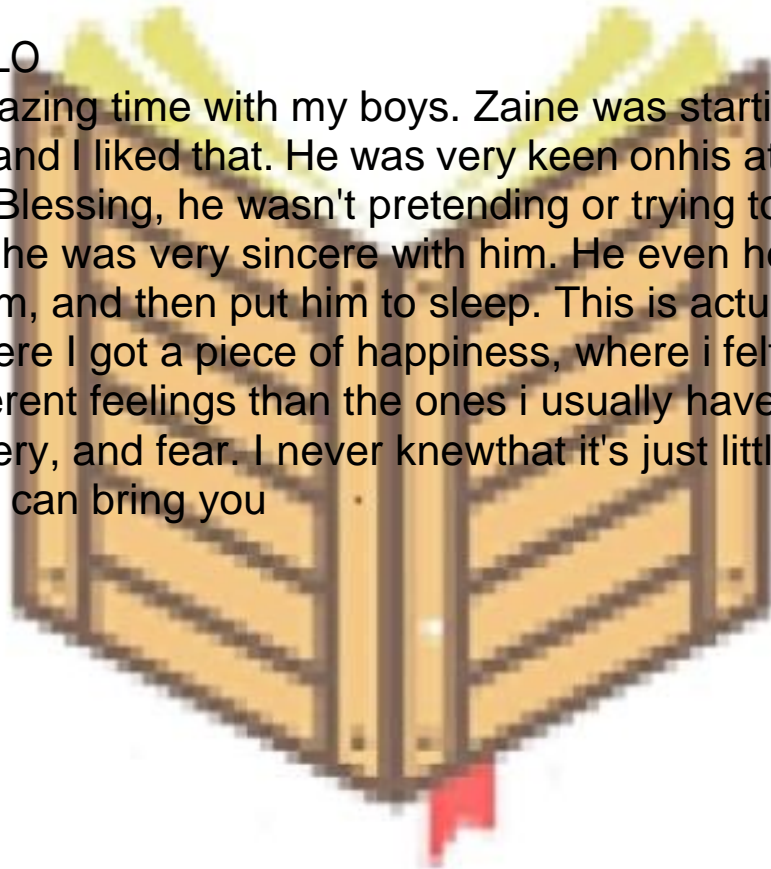
.

.

.

¥52 #BONOLO

I had an amazing time with my boys. Zaine was starting to be drawn to Blessing and I liked that. He was very keen on his attraction and feelings for Blessing, he wasn't pretending or trying to score points with me but he was very sincere with him. He even helped me bath him, feed him, and then put him to sleep. This is actually one moment where I got a piece of happiness, where I felt how it is like to have different feelings than the ones I usually have which is Pain, sorrow, misery, and fear. I never knew that it's just little moments like this that can bring you



NOVELSGURU.COM

complete joy. After bathing we got dressed in his room instead of the guest room, we didn't wanna wake Blessingup...

He was a gentleman, he was respectful. He gave me my own space and privacy, I am very uncomfortable being naked around anyone....

I was wearing my pjs, and he was wearing nikey shorts, with a nikey tank top and sneakers. I am well familiar with the label because Abdul's Son wears that a lot when he comes to visit from overseas.

I looked at Zaine, we were in the kitchen drinking hot chocolate. I was sitting on top of the counter and he was standing right in between my legs but with his back against me.

Me: don't move a lot i might spill the hot chocolate on you
Him: I'm trying not too

I slowly and gently put the mug next to me..

Me: i saw how you were with Blessing today, thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

He turned around and looked at me..Him: i wasn't doing it for you
Me: Really? I thought you were trying to impress me, tryingto score
some points
He chuckled..

Him: never i just enjoyed spending time with himMe: ohw really?
Him: for real

He came closer and kissed me. Kisses with him alwaysmake my
heart jump and my knees to grow weak..
He pulled out after a few seconds.Me: What's wrong?
He looked down..

Me: did i do something wrong?He looked at me and smiled..
Him: you didn't do anything wrong



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: then what's wrong? Him: i am a guy
Me: i know that

Him: guys are different from you girls Me: Zaine tell me something i don't know

Him: i haven't been intimate with a girl in a very long timeso this kissing is getting a bit steamy for me

Me: Steamy? Him: Down therel glanced down..

Me: ohw.. Ohw my word.. I.. I am very sorryHim: it's fine

Me: i didn't realise i mean..

Him: it's fine don't worry about it

Me: so since you are.. Ca.. Should we call it a night?

Him: i have a better idea, why don't we do something that i



NOVELSGURU.COM

like for a couple of minutesMe: what do you like?

Him: ballMe: ball?

Him: Yes, Ill teach you Me: Okay then i can't wait

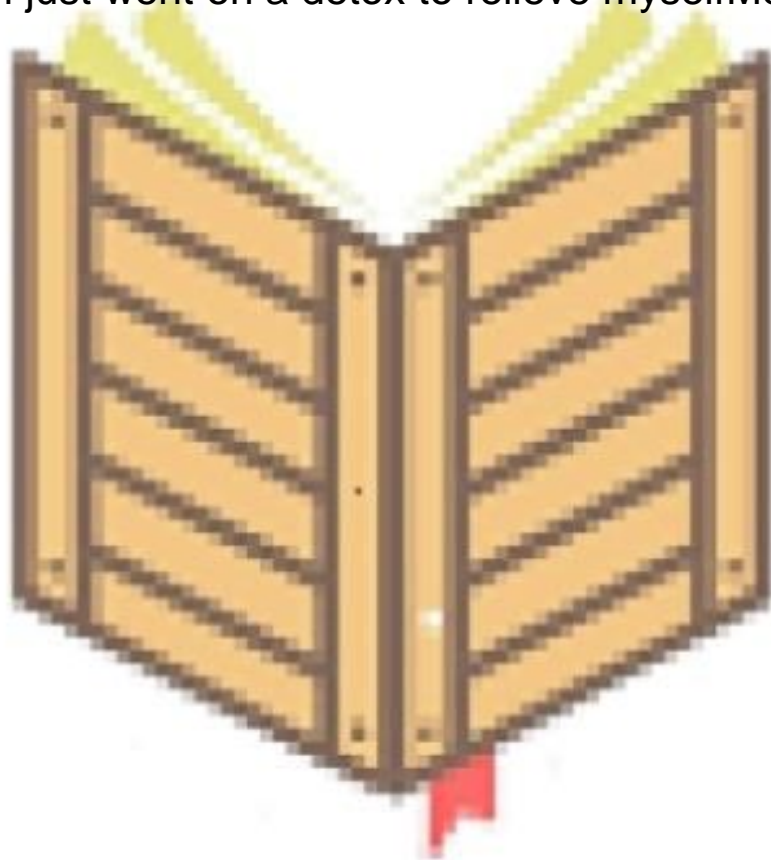
Him: just give me a couple of minutes aloneI nodded..

Him: ill get you in the court at the backMe: Okay then

I got down and walked out to the court, he came in after a few minutes..

I looked at him down there and he seemed fine..Me: you look fine now

Him: i know i just went on a detox to relieve myselfMe: ohw



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: it's good that you don't know what that is Me: i guess so..How do we do this ball of yours?

He went and took the ball, then threw it at my butt..Me: Ouch!

Him: we supposed to shoot hoops, if i score you must takeoff one item of your clothing

I looked at him and laughed..Me: now that was funny

He wasn't laughing..

Me: wait are you serious?He nodded..

Me: Zaine i am not gonna take off my clothes for you!Him: if not for me then for who?

Me: forget it Him: it'll be funMe: No



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: other girls do it for money

Me: they take off their clothes for money? Him: it's called stripping
Me: it's filth

I went and sat down, he got the ball and sat on it..Me: i really thought you wanted to see me naked I looked at him..

Me: how sure are you that I'm gonna win? Him: it's a very easy sport

He stood up and i stood up too..Me: Okay let's ball

He threw the ball at me..Him: try to shoot it

Me: Okay

I tried to get it through that net thing but it didn't go through...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: shoot me!

Me: the ball is heavy, can we get a lighter one?

Him: there is no lighter one.. It's okay you'll do better as we go along
He got the ball and started bouncing it..Me: do i have to take off my clothes?

Him: not now, only when i scoreMe: Okay

Him: you have to prevent me from shooting the ball through

Me: Okay

He bounced the ball, i tried to block but he was quick on his feet and he got the ball through the net..

He started dancing while singing..Him: "Hey babo, chin
Yin'khaloko, chin



NOVELSGURU.COM

Tsela b'yala renwe bo"He looked at me..
Him: you can do the honours

I peeped through my pj tshirt and i realised that i wasn'twearing a bra..

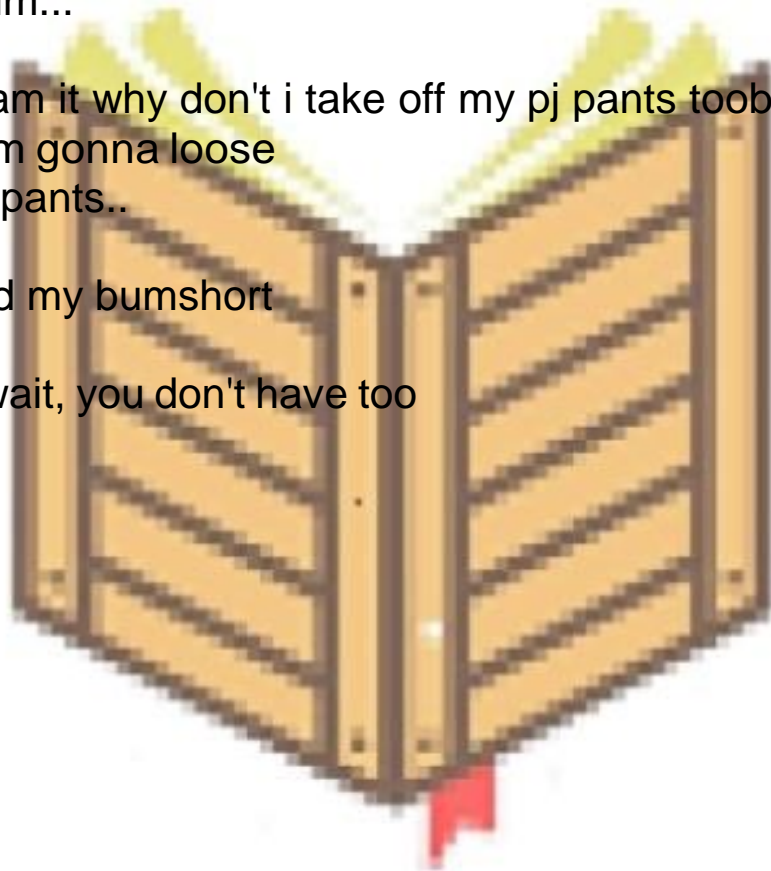
Me: i.. I am not wearing a braHim: do the honours please
I took off my tshirt..

He just froze and looked at me..Me: happy?
Him: ummmm...

Me: while i am it why don't i take off my pj pants toobecause
obviously I'm gonna loose
I took my pj pants..

Me: ohw and my bumshort

Him: Okay wait, you don't have too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: are you sure?Him: yeah i am Me: checkmate
I put my pjs on...

Him: wait you tricked Me?Me: you did it first
Him: you sleek like thatI moved backwards..
Me: i learned from the best

He started chasing me, and when he caught me we fell.. Itwas very nice..

I was all laughing in a way that i have never laughedbefore..
He was ontop of me and looking at me..Me: what?
He cleared the hair off from my face..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I've never seen you this happy Her: I've never seen me this happy too looked at the sky..

Me: oh oh oh Him: What?

Me: looks like it's about to rain Him: i can feel the rain drops He got off from me..

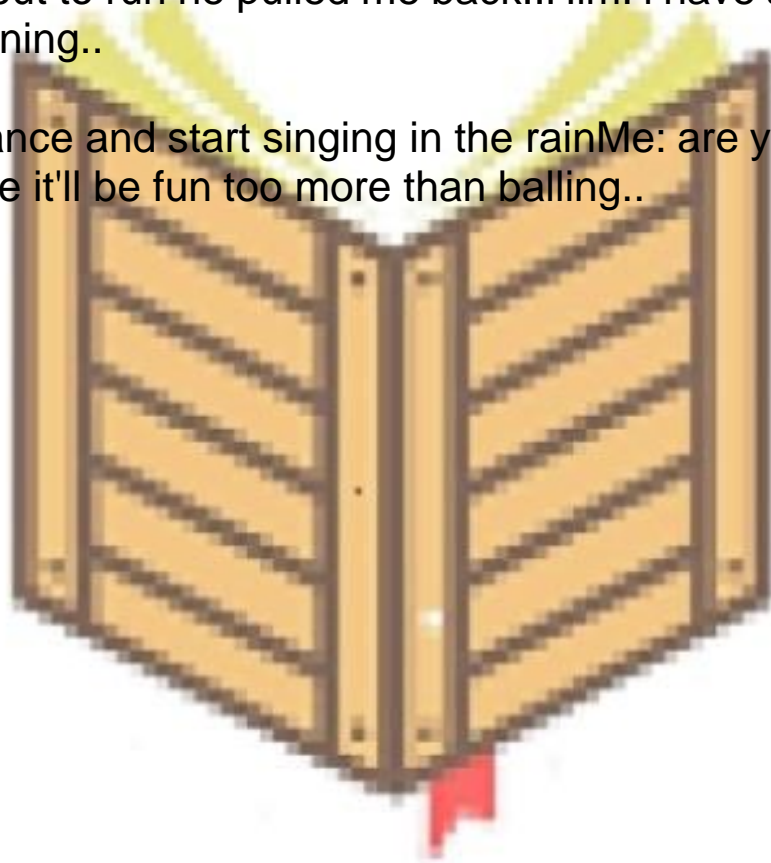
I got up..

Me: let's run inside for cover

As i was about to run he pulled me back.. Him: i have a great idea It started raining..

Him: let's dance and start singing in the rain Me: are you mad?

Him: I'm sure it'll be fun too more than balling..



NOVELSGURU.COM

He took off his tshirt..

Him: you don't have to take off yoursIt started raining hard..

Me: Why is it raining so hard all of a sudden?

Him: i think heaven is happy to witness this momentMe: uhm okay

Him: you can start a songMe: errrrr

Him: Come on

Me: Okay ummm... "Time can never mend "

Him: keep going

Me: "the careless whispers of a good friend"

He joined in and we sang our lungs out, that i ended uptaking off my shirt too..

It was really fun and we kissed when we finished singingand the rain poured more harder..



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

....

Need to get a new App was hard typing with Google docscrashing

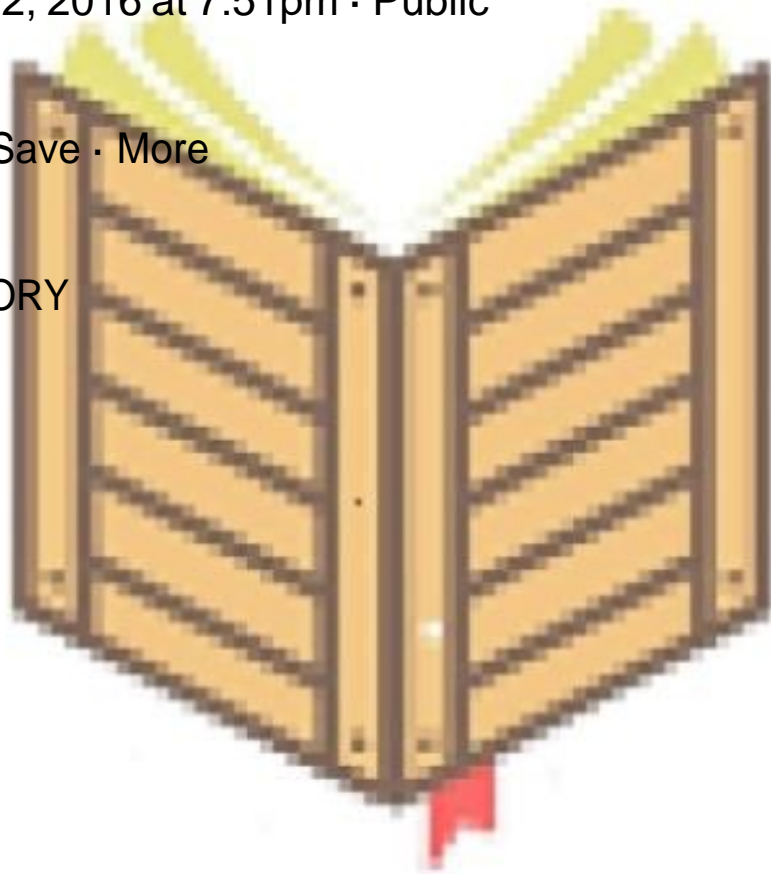
December 12, 2016 at 7:51pm · Public

Like Page · Save · More

PURGATORY

.
. .
. .

¥53



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

I woke up the following morning with a sore throat, it didn't matter because it was all worth it. Last night i had a good time dancing and singing in the rain with Zaine, while sharing endless kisses. I wish that I could have this joy, I wish it could last forever and ever.

I brushed my teeth and then washed my face, when i was done i made my way to the kitchen. I found Zaine feeding Blessing.

Blessing was sitting in his high chair, i didn't interrupt i just admired the moment until i got to see what Zaine was feeding Blessing.

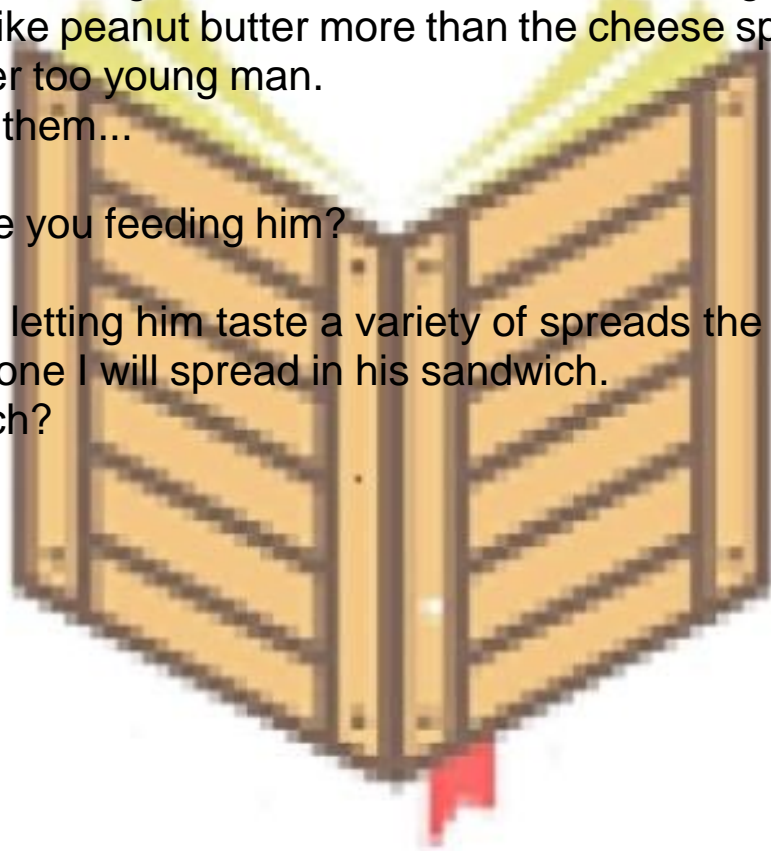
Zaine: You like peanut butter more than the cheese spread? I like peanut butter too young man.

I went up to them...

Me: what are you feeding him?

Zaine: i was letting him taste a variety of spreads the one he likes more is the one I will spread in his sandwich.

Me: sandwich?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zaine: don't worry about him not having teeth he can eat the soft part and we can do away with the crust

I looked at Blessing and he was manipulating whatever was in his mouth in between his gums..

Me: Zaine, Blessing can't eat bread Him: Why not? He is human

Me: Yes but a baby human, his intestines are small he won't be able to process bread

Him: That's sad

I went and took out Blessing's baby food from the pantry.. ~~Me: that's what he eats~~

He put the bottle of cheese spread away... Him: well then i have to go, i am almost late He was all dressed up..

Me: Where are you off too? Him: McCarthy Bible school



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Ohw

Him: Ya I need to take the classes, then be annointed aProphet.
After that i can be able to start my church

Me: Well good luck thenHim: Thank you

He went to his bedroom while i prepared something to eatfor
Blessing..

Me: looks like its just gonna be me and youThe door bell rang.

Me: i wonder who that can be

I went to open and it was Simon, I tried closing the doorbut he
blocked it...

Him: just hear me out

Me: i don't wanna hear anything from you

Him: Okay then open the door because i am not here tosee you
I opened and looked at him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'm here to see Zaine

Me: what do you wanna see Zaine for?Him: it's private

He pushed me off and walked inside..Him: is he here?

Me: Yes he is... Zaine walked in...

Me: Speak of the devil

He was also surprised to see Simon..Zaine: what are you doing here?

Simon: Came to speak to youZaine: about?

Simon looked at me, and then looked at Zaine..Him: it's private

Zaine looked at me too...Zaine: fine follow me



NOVELSGURU.COM

That was unexpected, I really thought Zaine was gonna let Simon talk in my presence..

.

. #ZAINÉ

Simon and i we went off to stand by my car, i found it weird that he came all this way to talk to me i mean we noteven close...

I looked at my watch.Me: you have 10min

Him: remember that day you and Bonolo came to myplace?

Me: yeah when you were having a 3 sum and doing drugswith a couple of bitches? I remember that day like it was yesterday!

That was very embarrassing for him that he looked down..I folded my arms and leaned against my car..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: don't worry, i am not judging you

Him: the following morning Abdul showed up at my place with his people and started beating me up asking where Bonolo is

Me: did you tell him?

Him: No but he went to Bonolo's grandmother to ask

Me: Shit!
Him: as long as Abdul knows where Bonolo is, he will come after her..

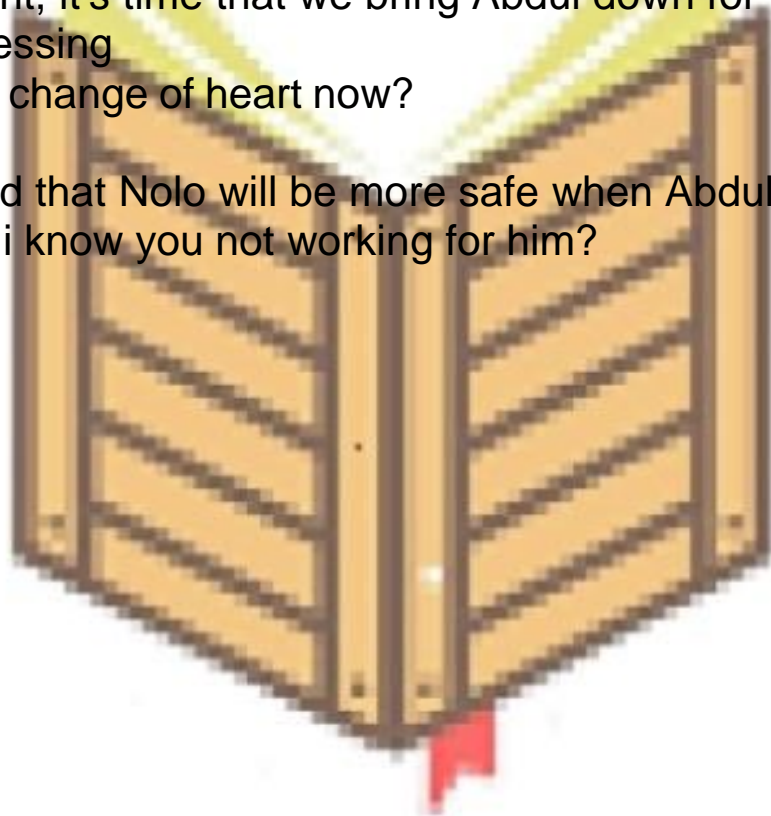
Me: i still don't know why you here
He put his hands in his pockets...

Him: you right, it's time that we bring Abdul down for the sake of Nolo and Blessing

Me: why the change of heart now?

Him: i figured that Nolo will be more safe when Abdul is locked up

Me: how do i know you not working for him?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: don't you think i would've told him about where Bonolo is? And do you think i would've helped her escape the Purgatory?

He has a point there but still i don't trust him. I went close to him..

Me: if this is your plan to lure Bonolo to Abdul, i will hunt you down and i will make sure that you die a slow painful death are you reading me up?

He looked at me and swallowed, then he nodded..

Me: good, today i am very busy so tomorrow morning at around 8am we will be going to Abdul

Him: ill see you then

Me: you can now see your self out of my yard He didn't say anything he just left..

.

. #LEIGHTON



NOVELSGURU.COM

I still cannot come into terms with the fact that Zaine got the gift than me. It just doesn't make sense, that's why i don't see him or will never see him as a Prophet. It doesn't suit him and i feel like God has made a mistake because Zaine is gonna keep on disappointing him over and over again like he always did with my Parents. Even though i didn't get the gift, but i got a church with at least 500+ members, something Zaine with his Gift couldn't get. The day of me being appointed a Reverend was slowly approaching and i couldn't wait. I am sure that my father didn't even leave him much on his will...

My wife and I we were going out for breakfast and i was getting dressed, while she was putting on make up. Last night i lost my cool and accidentally raised my hand on her, i don't know why but this days i cannot seem to be able to control my anger... I walked up behind her...

Me: that looks better, i didn't know that make up can work well in hiding off bruises..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I tried to kiss her but she walked away, that was cold..

I sat down on the bed and just thought about what happened last night. It was almost as if like something had taken control over me, i wasn't myself at all. I had this heavy darkness clouding my heart and i just don't know how to do away with it..

My phone rang, and i went to get it. I didn't recognise the caller ID...

Me: Leighton Radebe

Voice: Mr Radebe how are you?

Me: I'm good and who am i speaking too?

Voice: I'm sorry about that let me introduce myself. I am Prophet Abdul-Seko

That was a new to me, i don't know any Prophet by the name Abdul-Seko

PURGATORY

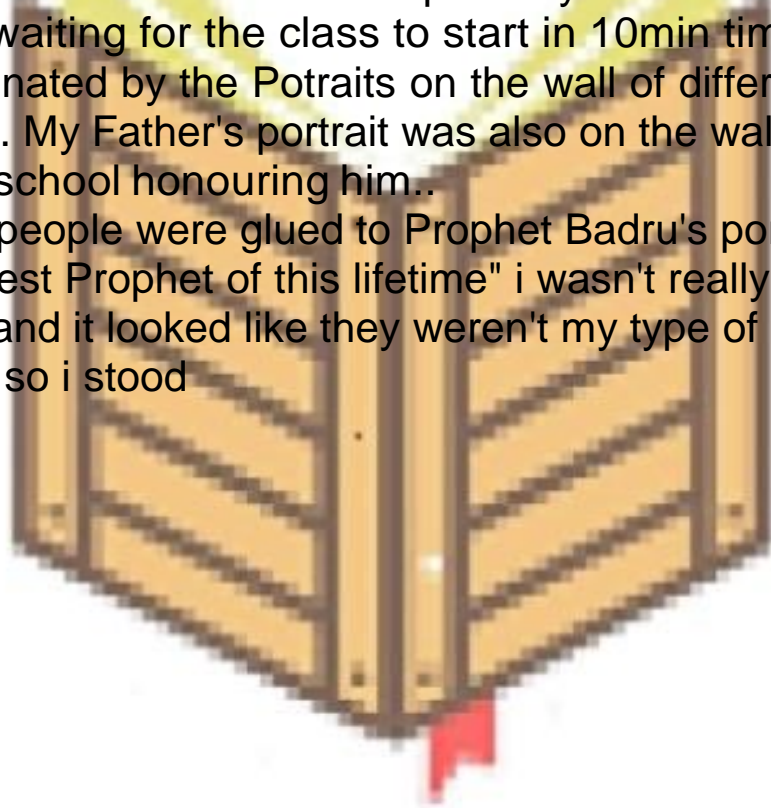


NOVELSGURU.COM

¥54 #ZAINÉ

The McCartney Bible Ministries building was bigger than I had imagined it was almost as if like i was walking into Princeton or a college of some sort. Judging from how the building looked, i could tell that it existed for at least more than 20 Years. Our class was small it was about 15 of us, i prefer things being like that i hate crowded places unless it's a turn up. Everyone was up doing their own things waiting for the class to start in 10min time, i was mostly fascinated by the Potraits on the wall of different Prophets and Pastors. My Father's portrait was also on the wall, it's amazing seeing this school honouring him..

Most of the people were glued to Prophet Badru's portrait it was titled "Greatest Prophet of this lifetime" i wasn't really familiar with this people and it looked like they weren't my type of people to fuck around with so i stood



NOVELSGURU.COM

against the wall and kept myself busy with Facebook until the class starts..

After a few minutes a soft voice disturbed me. Voice: Prophet Radebe

I took my eyes off my phone and looked at whoever was standing in front of me. It was this pretty yellow blonde with grey to green contact lenses. She had blonde hair or a blonde weave rather. She didn't look like a future Prophetess or pastor, she could be more of a Model or actress or even a video vixen. Her smile was a bit shallow but beautiful..

Me: Pardon?

She pointed at the wall.. Her: Prophet Radebe

I turned around and i didn't realise that i was standing against my Father's portrait.

Me: Ohw Prophet Radebe



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood next to her as we looked at my Father. Her: he was a great man

Me: indeed

Her: im so sorry for your loss Me: huh?

Her: Come on Zaine Radebe

I turned and looked at her while squinting my eyes...

She turned and looked at me too while folding her hands, i got a better look of her cleavage. Wasn't big, wasn't small, and it wasn't forced either..

Her: Zaine Radebe best Music Producer in the Hip hop Genre, badest boy of the game Preferred to be called Zee. Best artist you had was Blake, went Gold in just two weeks of his album being released. Rumors had it that you guys parted ways and his signed to Ambitiouz Entertainment now..

I put my hands in my pockets.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i am impressed

Her: the question is what are you doing here?

Me: i was about to ask you the very same question, aren'tyou supposed to be dancing in Kwesta or AKA's music video? I mean.. I looked at her from head to toe...

She giggled with her hand covering her mouth...

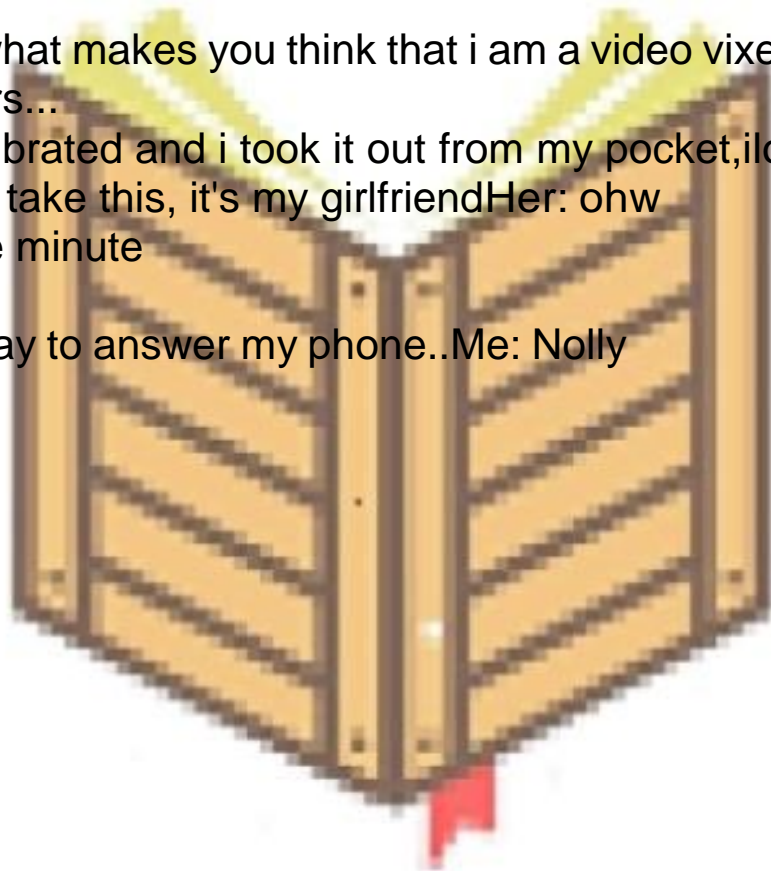
Her: Okay what makes you think that i am a video vixen?I shrugged my shoulders...

My phone vibrated and i took it out from my pocket,i looked at her...

Me: have to take this, it's my girlfriendHer: ohw

Me: just one minute

I walked away to answer my phone..Me: Nolly



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: hey hope I'm not disturbing I looked at my watch..

Me: i have 5min

I turned and my eyes landed on the blonde girl..Her: so you won't believe what happened?

Me: What happened?

She was giving me all kinds of looks, trying to flirt with hereyes and what not..

Her: since Blessing tasted the peanut earlier, he has been crying for it

I was fully concerntrating on whoever that girl was..Her: Zaine are you still there?

Me: umm ya im still here

I turned around and faced the wall...

Her: so are you ready for your first class?

Me: i think so although i am the only one without a bible



NOVELSGURU.COM

She laughed..

Her: im sorry about that

Me: ill survive, look let me go I'll see you laterHer: Okay i love you

Me: i love you too

I hung up and when i turned around the blonde girl wasstanding behind me..

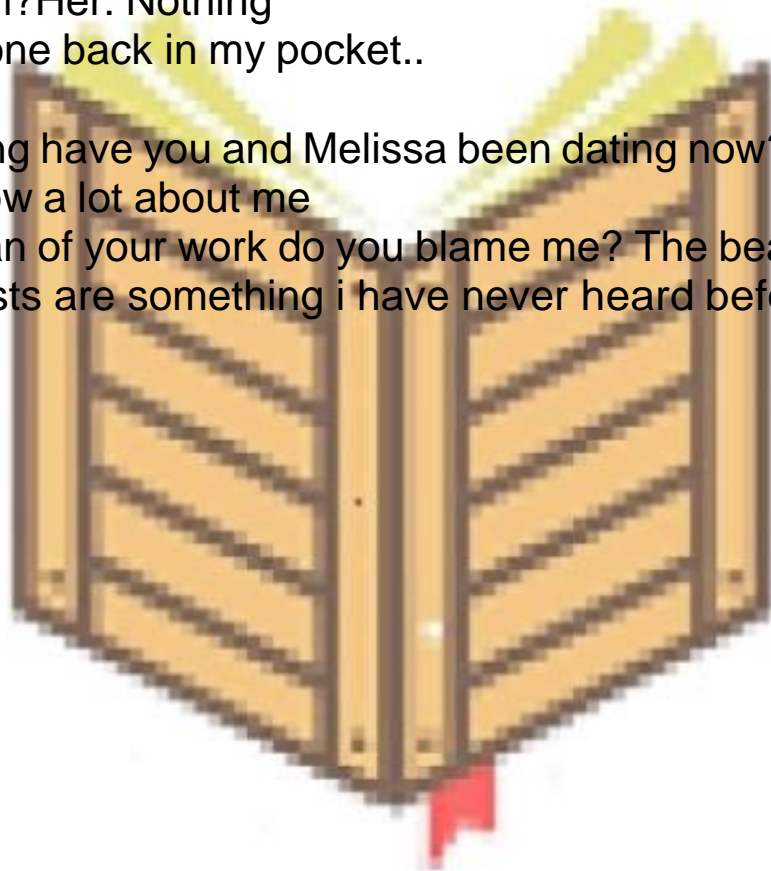
Me: and then?Her: Nothing

I put my phone back in my pocket..

Her: how long have you and Melissa been dating now?Me: you seem to know a lot about me

Her: huge fan of your work do you blame me? The beatsyou create for your artists are something i have never heard before

Me: i see



NOVELSGURU.COM

She extended her hand with long nails..Her: Amaza but they call me Amy

I gave her a handshake..Me: nice to meet you She smiled..

Her: Same here

.

. #ABDUL

Leighton invited me to his house so we can talk. If i canform some sort of alliance with Leighton then it will be easy to get to Bonolo..

I passed by at Zaine's place first and this time around Bonolo was outside, she was sweeping the pavement andBlessing's stroller was next to the door..

Me: stop

The driver stopped while i looked at them..



NOVELSGURU.COM

The house was still protected, i couldn't get close or dream of getting close..

After a while she noticed me, she knows my car, she freaked out and took Blessing inside..

Me: drive

The car started moving. It's good that she saw me, i want her to live in fear knowing that I am coming for her anytime....

.

. #BONOLO

I was at the kitchen pacing up and down, i had locked all the doors and i won't lie i was scared. That was Abdul's car parked on street, he has found me and he is coming for me that i know. What surprised me with this whole situation was that he didn't come out of the car to come and get me, I found that really strange, knowing Abdul he can jump at any opportunity available for him to come and



NOVELSGURU.COM

get me....

I took my phone and tried to call Zaine but his phone was on voice mail now..

I thought of calling Simon but i figured that Abdul might have gotten to him first..

Me: think Nolo.. There has to be one person that Abdul hasn't gotten to

Siya immediately came to my mind and i called him.. Him: Mmata

Me: Thank God you answered

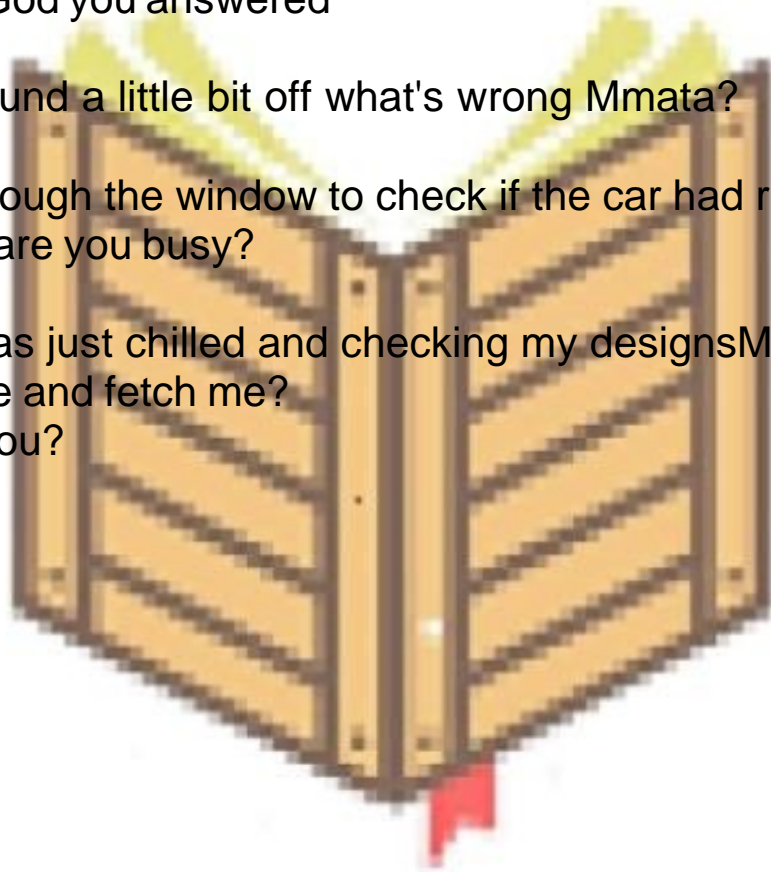
Him: you sound a little bit off what's wrong Mmata?

I peeped through the window to check if the car had really went..

Me: Mmata are you busy?

Him: No i was just chilled and checking my designs Me: can you please come and fetch me?

Him: fetch you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Yes please

Him: is everything alright Mmata?Me: Please Mmata

Him: Okay where are you?

Me: Lakeside guest house not that far from carnival cityHim: Where you work?

Me: Yes

Him: Okay i am on my wayMe: Thank you
I hung up and went to Blessing...

.

. #ZAINE

Our class was on session the man himself Bishop Mccarthy was the one giving us our first lesson. He wasteaching us about the name "Jesus Christ" and how



NOVELSGURU.COM

important it is to include it in our prayers. Everything was going fine when the class began but as it was proceeding i had this feeling that something was not right, just had this bad aura..

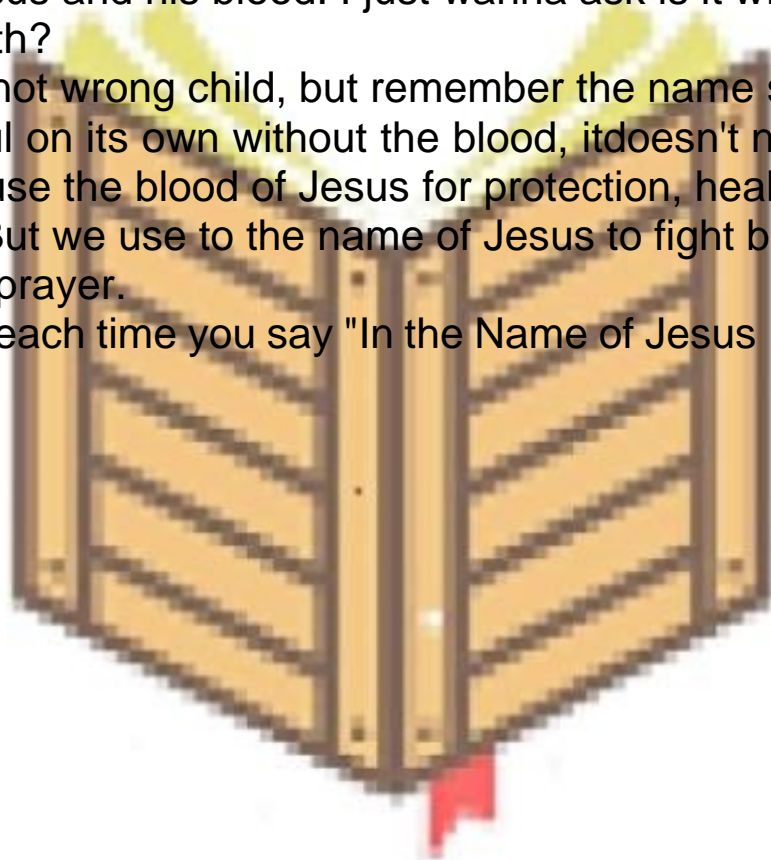
Bishop: this days i hear people praying and saying "in the name of Jesus and In the blood of Jesus" it's almost as iflike they don't trust this name alone to work wonders so they call the blood of Jesus for back up..

One of the students raised up their hand...Bishop: Yes miss Queen?

Queen: Bishop in regards to what you have just mentioned with the name of Jesus and his blood. I just wanna ask is it wrong to mention both?

Bishop: it's not wrong child, but remember the name stands alone. It is powerful on its own without the blood, it doesn't need back up. We mostly use the blood of Jesus for protection, healing, and cleansing. But we use to the name of Jesus to fight battles, and seal off our prayer.

Remember each time you say "In the Name of Jesus



NOVELSGURU.COM

Christ" all heaven, earth, and hell is bound to listen to what you have to say

Another student raised up their hand..Bishop: Yes Mr Kumar

Him: i just wanted to ask why is it important for Christians to say "Jesus Christ" why can't we just say "In the name of Jesus" and live it there?

Bishop: you not only say In the name of Jesus Christ, you need to specify which Jesus Christ you calling upon? What if hell has Jesus Christ too of their own? That's why it's important to specify which Jesus Christ you calling upon.

And us Christians we call upon Jesus Christ of Nazareth, don't just leave at "Jesus Christ" say it in full "Jesus Christ of Nazareth".

I was trying very hard to ignore the feeling, but the harder i tried to ignore the more it was getting intense that even Bishop Mccarthy noticed..

Him: Mr Radebe is everything well with you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked around and all eyes were on me..

Bishop: can everyone take a 10min short break, except for you Mr Radebe

The Whole class went out and he pulled a chair to sit opposite me..

Him: what are you seeing? I closed my eyes..

Me: great evil making its way to my house, great evil consuming my brother

Him: do you know why you have this visions? Me: No Sir

Him: the holy spirit is working with you in revealing the Devil's plans, and what's supposed to happen.. You having this visions to stop what's supposed to happen

Me: how do i stop what's supposed to happen? Him: the power of prayer

Me: i don't know how to pray



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: you do know, everything is deep inside of you and the holy spirit is here to help and guide you.. Allow the holy spirit to take over pray according to how the holy spirit guides you

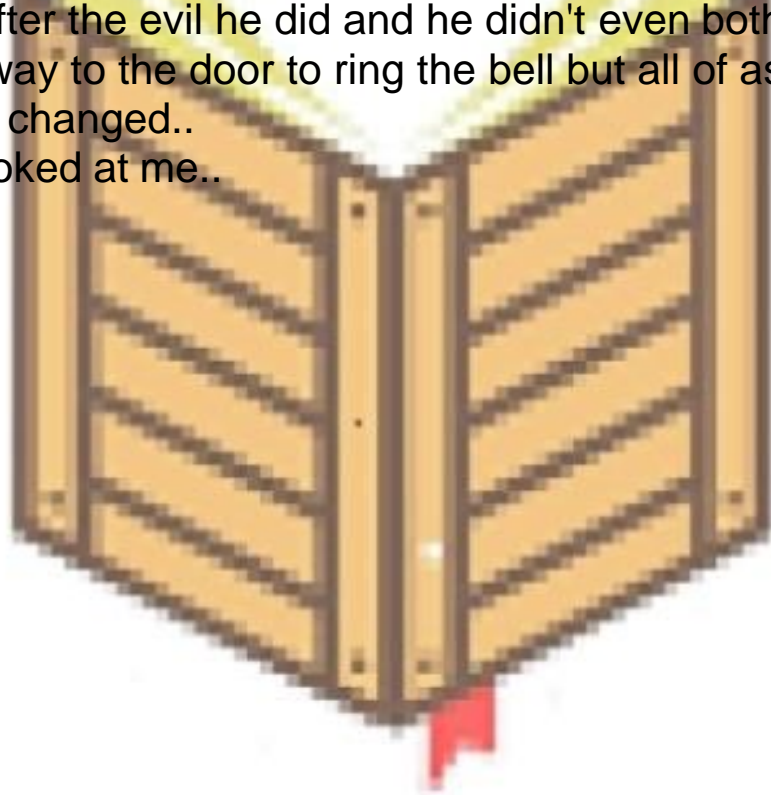
. #ABDUL

I arrived in the Radebe Mansion and i was allowed In bysecurity after they had learned who i was and also after finding out that the family is expecting me Leighton in particular.

I was surprised to see the Mansion not heavenly protected, but what can i say Leighton doesn't have it in Him to carry out this work especially after the evil he did and he didn't even bother repenting..

I made my way to the door to ring the bell but all of a sudden the atmosphere changed..

My driver looked at me..

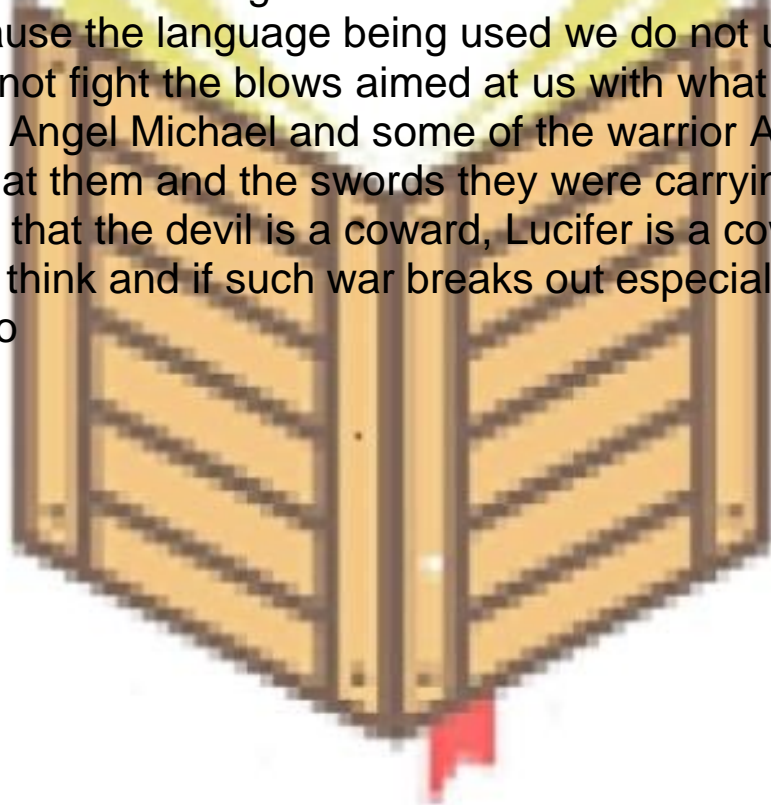


NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: are you alright Prophet? I looked around..
Me: something is not right

After saying that i found myself flying across and i fell on the ground a bit far from the door.. It was almost as if like a Tornado or something with great force blew me away..

I heard a voice praying but the language used i wasn't familiar with it. Sometimes Christians, Prophets, pastors, Reverends pray in tongues. That's a language only understood by heaven not even hell understands it. It was difficult for hell to come to my rescue, it was hard for Even the toughest Demon Belzebub to come to my rescue because the language being used we do not understand it, so we cannot fight the blows aimed at us with what we don't understand. Angel Michael and some of the warrior Angels showed up. i looked at them and the swords they were carrying. One thing about hell is that the devil is a coward, Lucifer is a coward more than people think and if such war breaks out especially with Angel Michael Who



NOVELSGURU.COM

fought with him and won then threw Him out of heaven down to earth like a lightning? He wouldn't dare go against him again. He still has the wound where his Righteousness was ripped off him when he was kicked out of heaven to always remind him of what Angel Michael did to him. So where Angel Michael is involved Lucifer doesn't dare show up..

When Angel Michael sent me flying across and when i came in contact with the ground i think i broke my leg, my whole left side felt paralysed..

He approached me and i couldn't even move.. Him: *הלש אבצה ה*? I could tell he was speaking Hebrew, that's the language Angels mostly use for communication. Whoever summoned the warrior Angel Michael is powerful. They very powerful for this Angel to obey their word and there's only person who can summon warrior Angel Michael like this, it must be Zaine Radebe.. He still made his way to me when the door opened and



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leighton stood there..

Him: Prophet Abdul? Is that you? I looked at him..

Him: what are you doing on the ground?

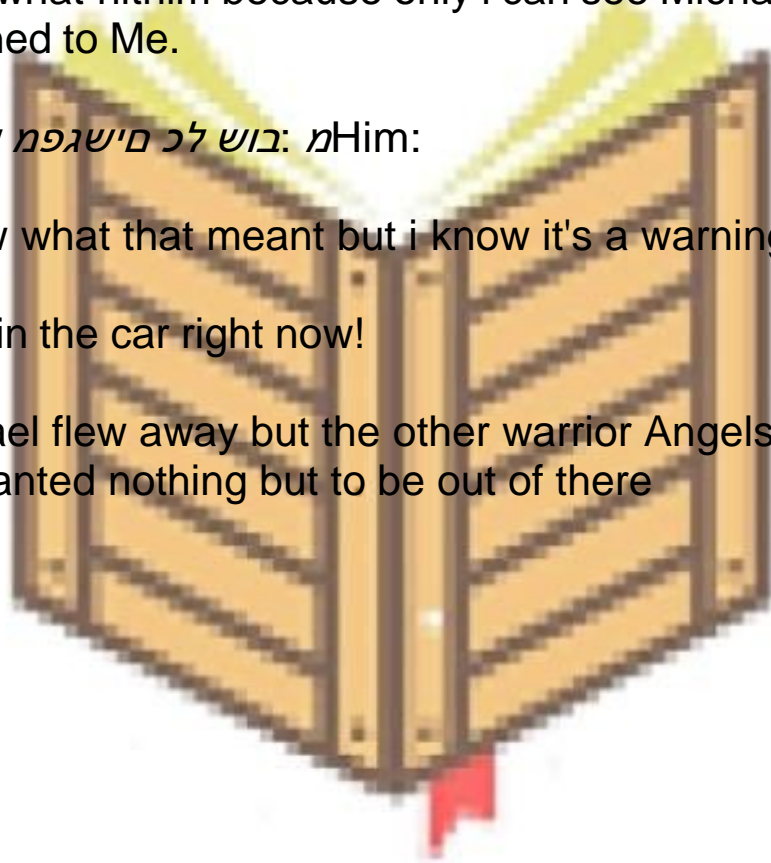
He made his way to me but stopped halfway.. He just froze there and as soon as Angel Michael turned to face Him, he did to him what he did to me.. When warrior Angel Michael is at work, he fights off every evil standing in his way the saddest part with Leighton he won't know what hit him because only i can see Michael.... He then turned to Me.

Him: *בּוֹשׁ לַכּ מִיִּשְׁגָפִם וְנֹל נִיא אֶתִּי י' ?*

I didn't know what that meant but i know it's a warning.. I looked at my driver..

Me: get me in the car right now!

Angel Michael flew away but the other warrior Angels stayed behind.. I wanted nothing but to be out of there



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

- no edits

Dec 14, 2016 · Public · in Timeline Photos

[View Full Size](#) · [Send as Message](#) · [Report](#)

[OBJ:OBJ:OBJ]

5.8K PURGATORY

¥55



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

Siya came to fetch me and Blessing, then we went to his flat. The whole time while we were on our way to his flat i would turn around to check if there's no car that's following us, there's no telling what Abdul can do or how far he would go to get what he wants. There's a lot of other girls at the Purgatory who he can mess with, why does he want me in particular? it really doesn't make sense at all..

Siya's flat was bigger than Simon's. He had a balcony and it had a great view. For a student to afford such a high class life was a bit questionable. I was standing at the balcony just starring at the neighbouring flats, they were very beautiful and sophisticated i have never seen anything so amazing.

Siya walked in holding two glasses of wine..Him: here you go

Me: i don't know if i should be drinking



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at Blessing who was on his car seat..

Siya: it will calm down your nerves, best way to relaxMe: still...

Him: just one glass Mmata ungazobhora (don't be boring)I took the glass and started drinking..

Him: manje are you sure that your crazy step father won'tfind you here?

Me: he doesn't know about you hopefullyHim: what does he want with you?

Me: exactly my point Mmata what does he want with me?I took a sip of the wine..

Me: Just remind me to call Zaine later so he doesn't getworried when he doesn't find us in the house

Him: so tell me about Mr ZaineMe: what do you wanna know?

Him: look at how your face lits up when i talk about him,



NOVELSGURU.COM

can't stop smiling and blushing
Me: stop it will you!
Him: he has swept you off your feet
Me: you are a Scream!
Him: have you guys done the deed?
Me: the deed?
Him: umsikelile? (did you cut it for him)
Me: what?
He rolled his eyes and then looked at Blessing..
Him: have you given it to him?
Me: ohw that.. Uhmm no

I drank from my glass again..

Him: i don't blame you though, after what you have been through
Me: i just hope that he doesn't go and seek it somewhere else, like that Bastard Simon!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I clicked my tongue..

Him: who are you and what have you done with my friend Bonolo..
I looked at him a bit confused..

Him: Bastard? Clicking your tongue? Who are you?

Me: I'm just tired of people playing with me because I'm quiet

Him: quite sweet

I looked around again..

Me: how did you manage to rent such a place, while you a student?

He looked at his glass, then looked at my glass.. Him: refill?

I looked at my glass.. Me: why not

He took my glass and went..



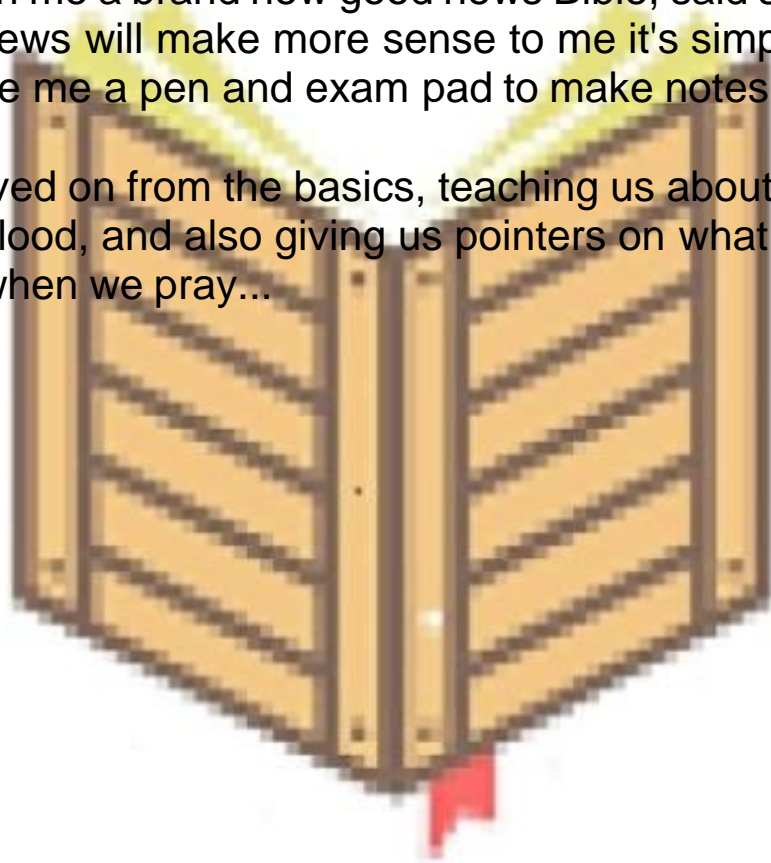
NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINÉ

After praying i got this overwhelming sense of peace like i had just defeated great evil. It was a great feeling even although i didn't remember half of my prayer because I allowed the holy spirit to take over and i ended up speaking in a language that i didn't know... Bishop Mccarthy allowed me to have my own 5min break, get some fresh air and something to drink then the class proceeded.

He had given me a brand new good news Bible, said since its my first time good news will make more sense to me it's simplified English. He also gave me a pen and exam pad to make notes as he was teaching..

We had moved on from the basics, teaching us about the name of Jesus, his blood, and also giving us pointers on what we should remember when we pray...



NOVELSGURU.COM

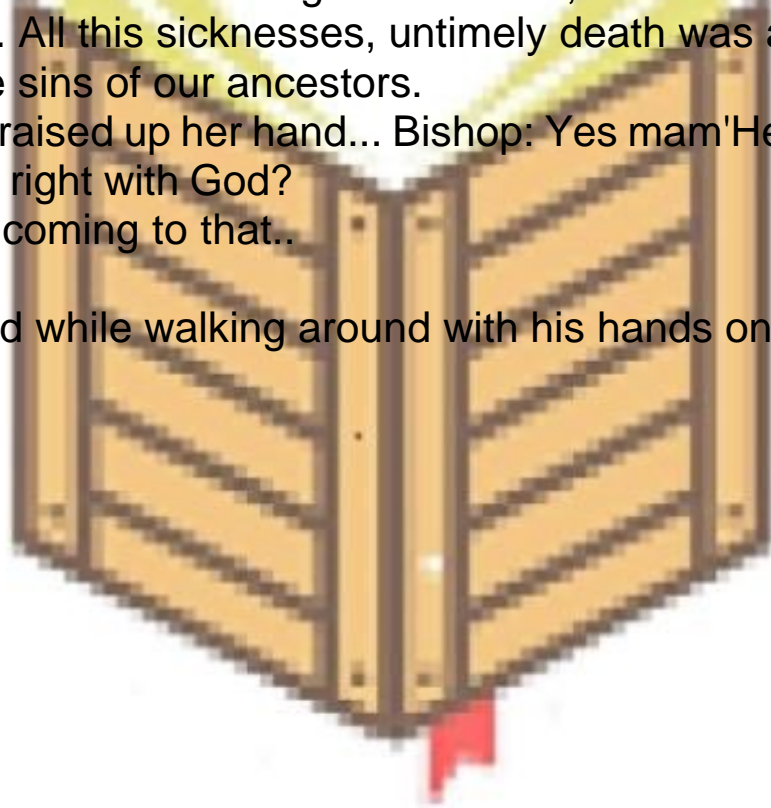
He was now talking about how Sin once separated human beings from God, he started off from the Old testament and brought it back to the new testament..

Him: after Adam and Eve sinned against God, Sin took over for the next years in the whole of the human race. Notonly did Human beings become wicked, but when the human race spread and daughters were being born The heavenly beings saw that these young women were beautiful, so they took the ones they liked. Where do we find that? We get that in Genesis 6 vers 1. When God saw what was happening he was soo filled with regret that he said he will never let human beings live forever, and that is when death came about. All this sicknesses, untimely death was all brought about by the sins of our ancestors.

Another girl raised up her hand... Bishop: Yes mam' Her: how then were we put right with God?

Bishop: still coming to that..

He continued while walking around with his hands on his back..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Bible scholars went to research and they found out that there was no communication between God and human beings for 400 years because of Sin

Everyone was stunned at that statement, we all made noise..

Him: ohh yes, for 400 years God turned his back on human beings We were all attentive, we were so eager to find out what happened next and how God ended up forgiving the human race..

Him: because God's love for human beings is so deep he came up with another way on how human beings can ask for forgiveness, anyone know what it is?

We all shook our heads no..

Him: in the old testament or centuries ago when you Sin or when the community sins, all of you will have to slaughter an animal. Be it a goat, sheep, or even a bird. Then you take the blood of the animal in a bowl and go to the



NOVELSGURU.COM

temple where you as a community or people residing in that area had to ask an appointed high priest to go and ask for forgiveness from God on your behalf. The high priest will take the bowl which has blood in it and he will have a chain around his ankle whereas when he walks inside the temple to the alter you sinners will stand by the door. The sound that the chain will make, it will still give you hope that the priest is still alive, but once you can no longer hear the sound of the chain it means the priest had died at the alter...

Me: and why is that?

Him: if the high priest sinned and didn't ask for forgiveness before asking for forgiveness on behalf of the community he will die at the alter

Amaza: that's very deep, why were things so harsh like that in the olden days?

Bishop: because then God had verbal communication with human beings, unlike today

Another girl asked a question..

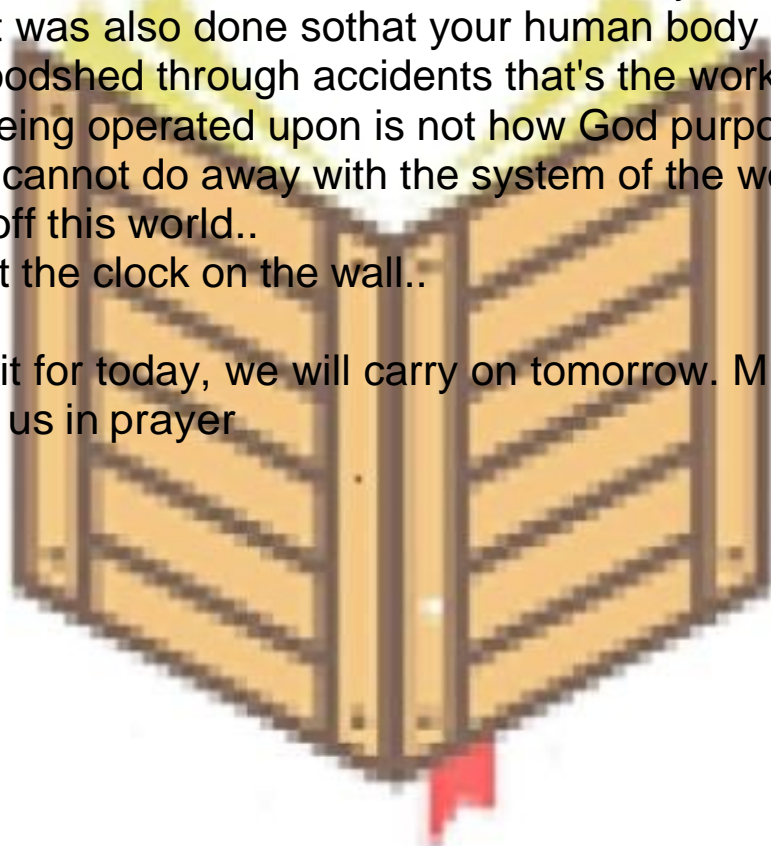


NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: so how were we so lucky?

Bishop: Jesus Christ of Nazareth came to the rescue. The coming of Jesus Christ to die for our sins didn't only do away with Sin, but it also did away with the old testament hence why we have the new testament. Because of the selfless act of Jesus Christ we can personally come before God through his Son to ask for forgiveness ourselves. we don't need the blood of animals to come to God. One Lamb was slaughtered for our sins, his blood was shed so yours cannot be shed. When he was beaten so brutally and his skin was peeling off it was also done sothat your human body cannot be tortured. Bloodshed through accidents that's the work of the devil, your body being operated upon is not how God purposed things for you, but we cannot do away with the system of the world after all we are not off this world..
He looked at the clock on the wall..

Him: that is it for today, we will carry on tomorrow. MrKumar please lead us in prayer



NOVELSGURU.COM

We all stood up..

.

. #ABDUL

I was hospitalised when i got to the compound because i was in soo much pain, my whole left side was paralysed, our Personal Doctor said I suffered a stroke due to shock,he was surprised i didn't suffer a heart attack too. My speech was also impaired, the Archangel Michael did a number on me. I sent a word out to my wife that she has to contact the satanic brotherhood and let them know about what had happened, If Zaine thinks this is the end?He has another thing coming. This is not the end, not by along shot.

. PURGATORY

.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

¥56 #ZAINÉ

After the class i went to get me something to eat at the Canteen first before making my way home. I had been trying to get hold of Bonolo for a while now but her phone keeps on ringing, and then after it goes straight to voicemail. Even the house phone rang unanswered and i was starting to get very worried. I couldn't sense any danger that could come her way, but still i was very worried that she wasn't answering. When i was about to stand up and make my way out, Amaza catwalked her wayto my table she was holding a salad.. My plans of leaving had to be put on hold.

Her: can i sit? Me: be my guest

She pulled the chair and sat down..Me: is that gonna make you full?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: it's supposed to hold off my hunger, not make me full just looked at her lost for words..

Her: im trying to watch what i eat so i don't mess up my flat tummy I sent out a mocking laugh..

Me: you know Bonolo eats whatever her hands land on, she doesn't care or take much consideration in what she eats..

Her: she must be fat

Me: actually she has the most beautiful slim body my eyes have ever come across

She gave me a side smile..

Her: Bonolo? Someone special to you? I looked at the time and it was 17:00..

Me: I have to get going i don't wanna be late for my son's bed time

Her eyes widened..



NOVELSGURU.COM

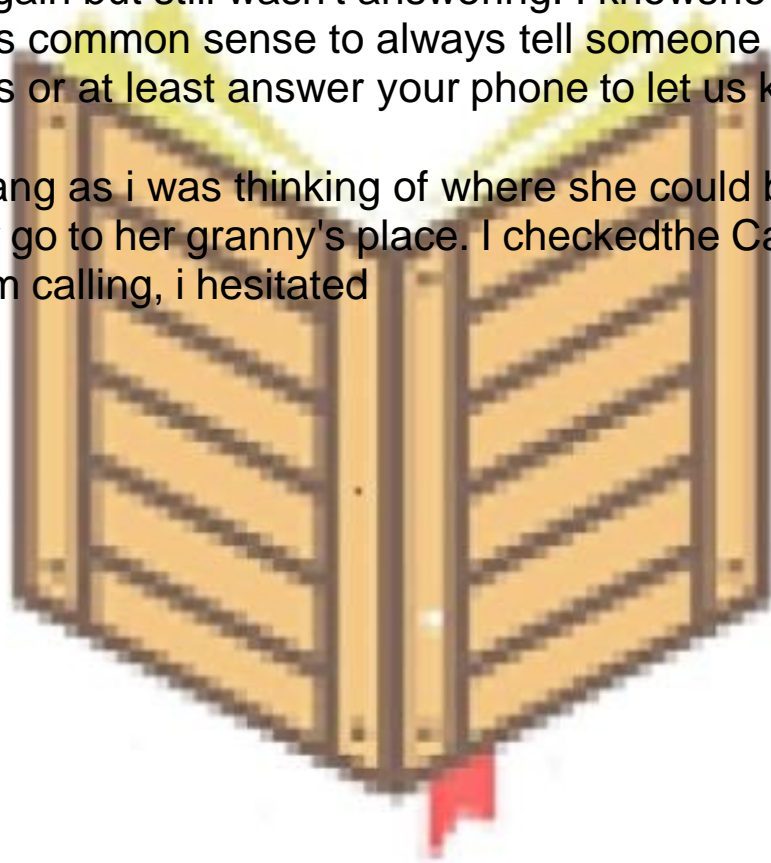
Her: you have a Son? Why di... Why didn't it make headlines?
I stood up..

Me: not every part of my life should be "headlines" I took my things...
Me: bye Amaza

Her: it should be see you tomorrow! let that slide and left..

I arrived at home after a few hours and there was no sign of Bonolo, i called her again but still wasn't answering. I know she's 17 and a bit slow, but it is common sense to always tell someone about your whereabouts or at least answer your phone to let us know that you safe..

My phone rang as i was thinking of where she could be, i know she would never go to her granny's place. I checked the Caller ID and it was my Mom calling, i hesitated



NOVELSGURU.COM

answering at first but eventually i did.Me: Ms Jackson
Her: Zaine!!

She was sniffing and sounded distressed.Me: are you alright?
Her: no.. It's.. Its LeightonMe: what about Leighton?Her: he... he..
I started getting a bit scared...

Me: what happened to my Brother Ms Jackson? Her: he is in
Hospital, was admitted this afternoonMe: what?
Her: he suffered a minor stroke

Me: What do you mean he suffered a minor stroke? Her: he was
found on the ground by the security guardsMe: what happened?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I really don't know, get to the hospital the one wheredad was admitted

Me: on my way

I remembered that i can't leave just yet because Bonolo is wherever God knows where, i called the only person whomi thought might help in this situation...

Simon: this is an unexpected callMe: i know, but I need your help

Him: talk to me

Me: Bonolo

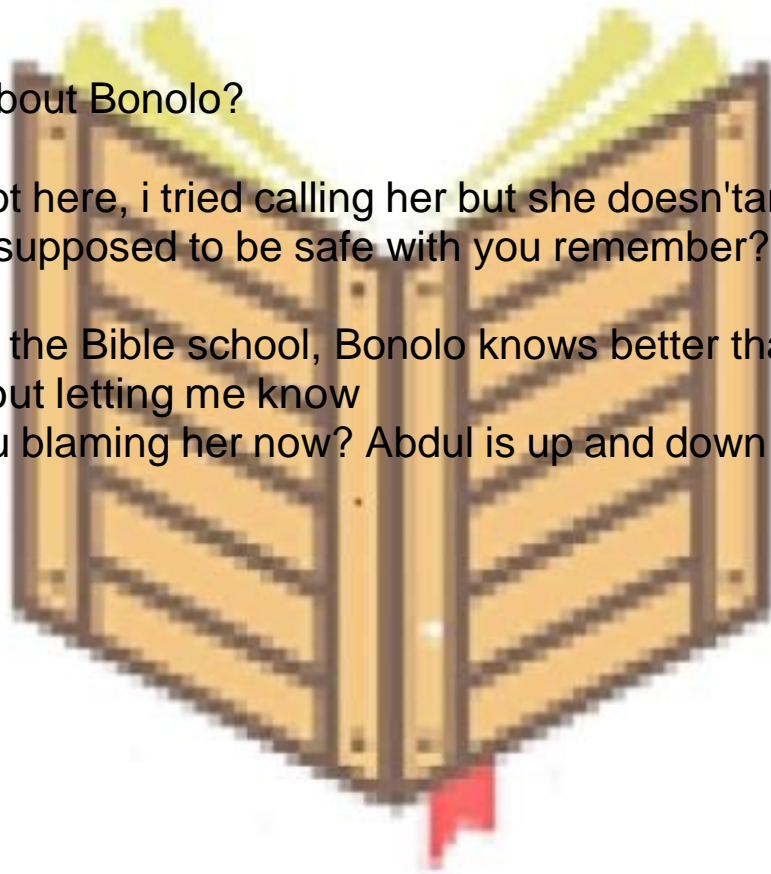
Him: what about Bonolo?

Me: she's not here, i tried calling her but she doesn'tanswer

Him: she is supposed to be safe with you remember?

Me: i was at the Bible school, Bonolo knows better than toleave the house without letting me know

Him: are you blaming her now? Abdul is up and down



NOVELSGURU.COM

looking for her, what if?

Me: don't think like that, if she was In that kind of danger iwould know

Him: are you God now? You can forsee future events? Me: Simon I will not argue with you, find me my girl please

Him: you act like i am your bodyguard or your skuivvy, I amneither

Me: i forgot to say Please thenHim: i will try my best

Me: and Simon?Him: Yeah?

Me: Bring them home, my homeHim: i will do so

Me: bye

I hung up and went to my car, Simon better find Bonolobecause if i do I will murder her..



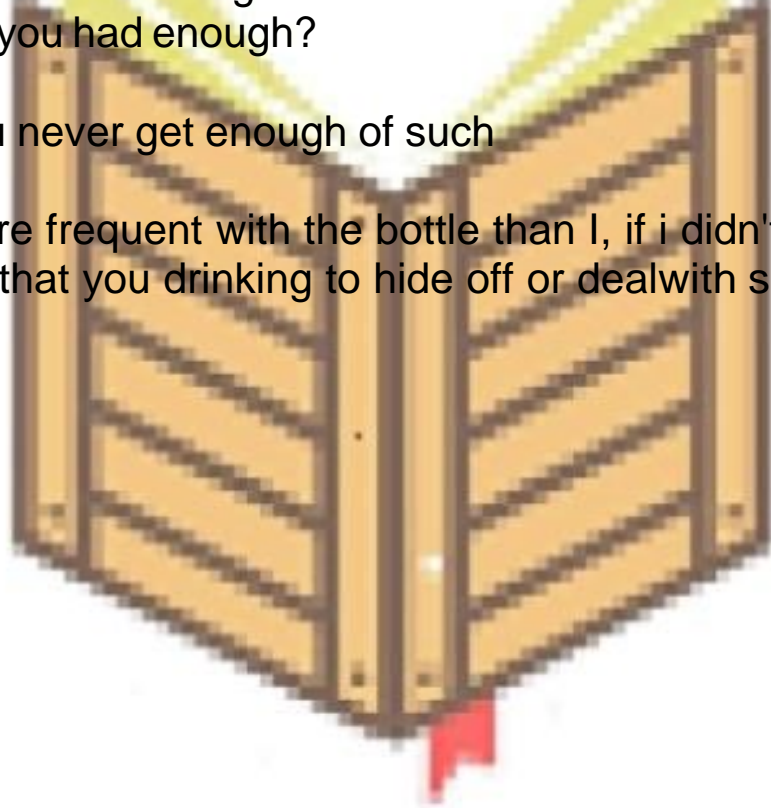
NOVELSGURU.COM

. #BONOLO

I was intoxicated and very scared to go back home. It just dawned on me that if i show up this drunk, then Zaine might think that the accusations made by my Grandmother are true. I didn't mean to get lost in the bottle, but sometimes alcohol gets you in the moment that one glass turns into two glasses, then three, then before you know it you dead drunk. Blessing was sleeping, Siya fed him and after that he passed out.. Siya came with the Last glass and sat next to me.. I looked at him..
Me: haven't you had enough?

Him: girl you never get enough of such

Me: you more frequent with the bottle than I, if i didn't know well i would think that you drinking to hide off or dealwith something



NOVELSGURU.COM

He didn't say anything but looked down..Me: Mmata what's wrong?
He looked at me...

Him: when is your person gonna come and fetch you?

Me: yeah about that, I was thinking that i could spend anight here.
That's if you okay with it?

He started coughing and then put the glass down...Him: okay with
it?

He faked a smile..

Her: ofcause i am okay with it, why wouldn't i be?He was lying
through his teeth..

Him: again, why would you wanna sleep here?

Me: i just want Zaine to think otherwise of me, I don't wanthim
thinking my Grandmother is right that I am a drunk

Him: then don't act drunk to him

Me: why do I have a feeling that you don't want me



NOVELSGURU.COM

sleeping over?

Him: all im saying Is that avoiding his calls might makehim worry

Me: i can't answer his callsHim: Why?

Me: he might sense that I am drunkHim: how?

Me: he will

I got a call from Simon, was unexpected considering ourcurrent fall out...

Me: what do you want?

Him: and your phone works, wonder why Zaine didn't callit

Me: what is it that you want Simon? Him: your boyfriend is worried about youMe: so he called you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yes!

Me: yeah Zaine would call you wouldn't he? Him: just go back home!

Me: you are not my Father!

Him: incase you haven't noticed there's people who are highly concerned about your safety

Me: ohw

Him: where are you? I looked at Siya..

Me: a friend's place

Him: give your friend the phone I gave Siya my phone...

Siya: who is it? Me: Some dude He took it..

Him: Hello



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINE

I got to the hospital and I was directed to Leighton's ward where I found my mother and Nkhensani Pacing up and down all worried..

Mom: Zaine I'm glad you here

One moment she's cussing at me, the next moment she's happy to see me..

I went over to Leighton and he couldn't even speak, he looked like he was in pain and scared..

Me: what happened?

Mom: no one knows, and Leighton cannot speak

Nkhensani: please heal him Zaine, I saw how you healed people in the church

Me: I'll try

Mom: it has to be some Demonic attack, one cannot



NOVELSGURU.COM

stroke just like that!

I put my hand on His shoulder and spoke healing to him in the name of Jesus of Nazareth. I called upon Jehova Raphah the God my healer, but my prayer didn't go higher than the ceiling... I kept on praying but nothing happened..

Mom: what's wrong? Me: i can't heal him

Nkhensani: what is that supposed to mean?

Mom: you can heal strangers but can't heal your Brother?

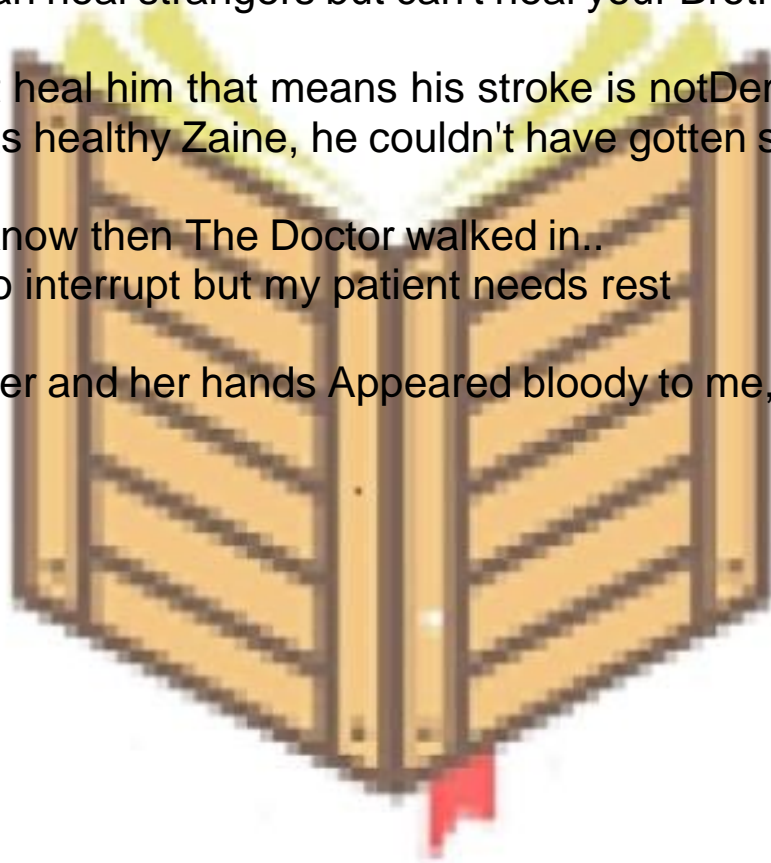
Me: if I can't heal him that means his stroke is not Demonic

Mom: he was healthy Zaine, he couldn't have gotten stroke just like that

Me: i don't know then The Doctor walked in..

Doc: sorry to interrupt but my patient needs rest

I looked at her and her hands appeared bloody to me, was



NOVELSGURU.COM

something that i couldn't comprehend. The Holy Spirit wanted to reveal something to me but the atmosphere wasn't peaceful and healthy..

.

To be continued

...

Amaza

D PURGATORY

.

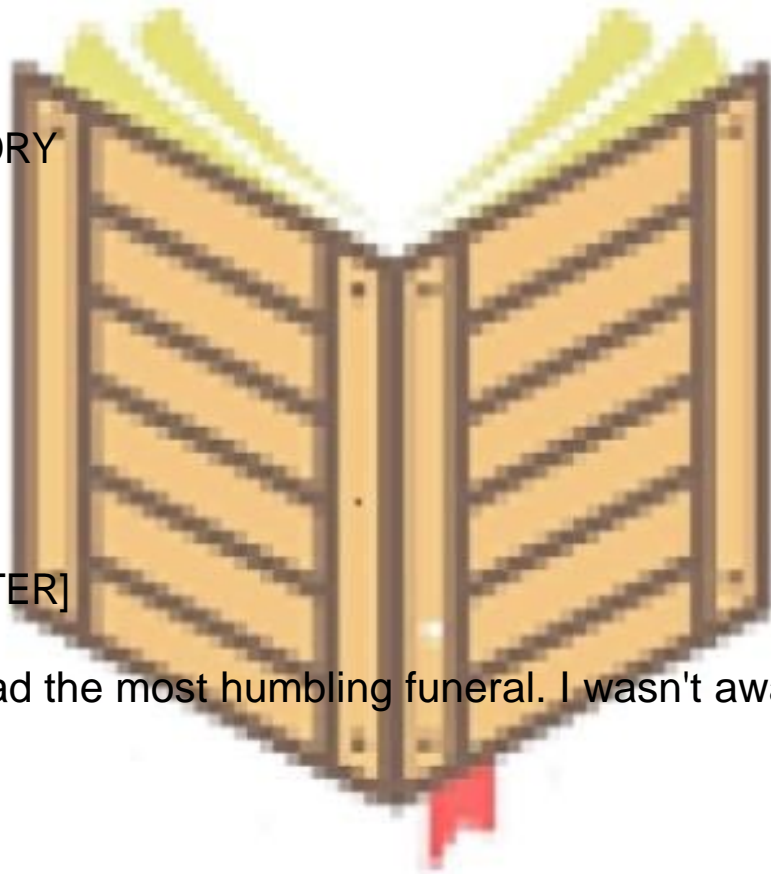
.

.

¥57

[5 DAYS LATER]

My father had the most humbling funeral. I wasn't aware



NOVELSGURU.COM

that people admired him this much all around, Pastors board the Planes from overseas to come and attend his funeral. His funeral was also Televised, was just beautiful despite the fact that we were still torn from losing him.

Leighton was in a wheelchair, he was attending Physio too but he wasn't getting better Doctors even started raising false hopes that if he attends physio regularly then he will recover and that it is still early days for him to fully recover but my relationship with heaven showed me otherwise.

The Holy Spirit made it clear to me that Leighton won't be healed until he confesses and repents, i was a bit lost at what was revealed to me what sin could Leighton have possibly done that heaven as a whole is not happy about? I mean Prof Ayo told me that no matter how deep your sin is but God can forgive but in Leighton's situation heaven was forbidding, and heaven as a whole had turned its back on him until he repents. The will was not read after the funeral service because no one had time to sit down for anything we were up and down thanking Pastors and other guests for attending my father's funeral so we scheduled it

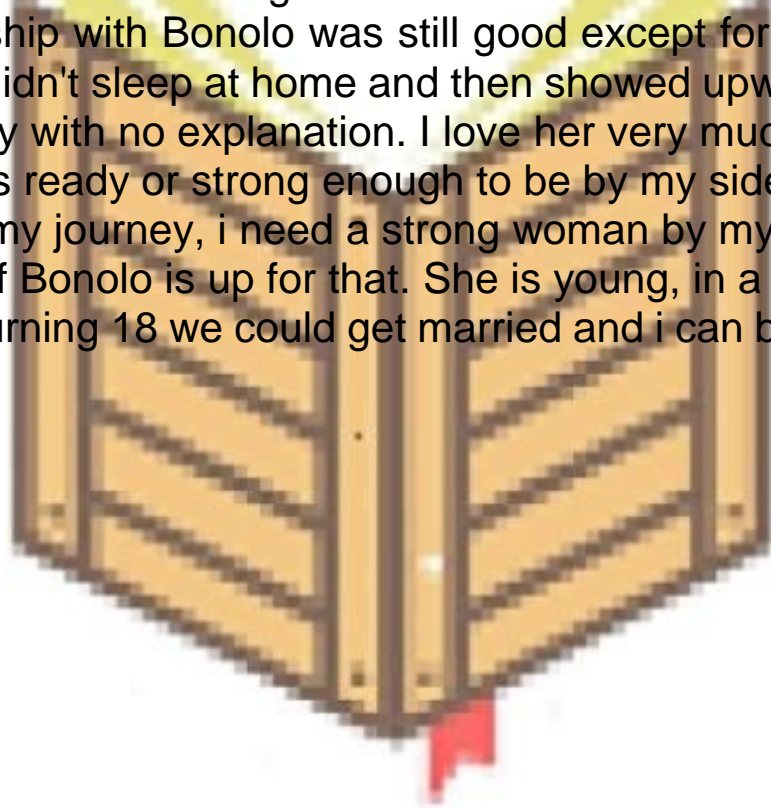


NOVELSGURU.COM

for some other time...

I can say that from hereon my life has changed a lot than how it was previously. I wasn't anointed Prophet yet, i was supposed to after my Father's funeral but I refused. I felt like i still had a lot to learn before I am officially fit to lead God's people to the truth. I am embracing my gift and i am moving forward into carrying out everything that is expected of me, I am more frequent at the Bible school i have even started preaching there. Its just soo funny how my life has changed, from being a music producer and living wild to being humble and believing in what I didn't think existed..

My relationship with Bonolo was still good except for that night where she didn't sleep at home and then showed up with Simon the following day with no explanation. I love her very much but i am not sure if she is ready or strong enough to be by my side while i embark on my journey, i need a strong woman by my side and i don't know if Bonolo is up for that. She is young, in a Month's time she will be turning 18 we could get married and i can be



NOVELSGURU.COM

anointed a prophet but i don't wanna tie her down in what might seem a burden to her. I don't want her to feel like she's obliged for this life because it won't be easy, but i want her to be spiritually, emotionally, and physically ready for it. There's still a lot that she needs to learn and some growing up to do because more girls will be looking up to her as a prophet's wife. I am totally putting this situation in God's hands, for his will alone shall and will be done. I want him to choose the best woman for me to embark on this journey with, even if it means someone else but Bonolo..

Simon and finally decided to take that trip to see "Prophet" Abdul. We have been Procrastinating a lot but today after the short service we had at the Bible school i hit him up and he was down for it. I let him drive, it was safer for him to drive than i because my visions come unexpected and i couldn't handle getting one while driving... It was a very hot Friday afternoon as we were on our way



NOVELSGURU.COM

to the purgatory with Simon driving my BMW m5. I couldn't wait for whatever we were gonna uncover there, i had prayed for this journey for the holy spirit to reveal whatever is hidden so we can bring this man to justice for all the innocent souls that he has broken and abused..

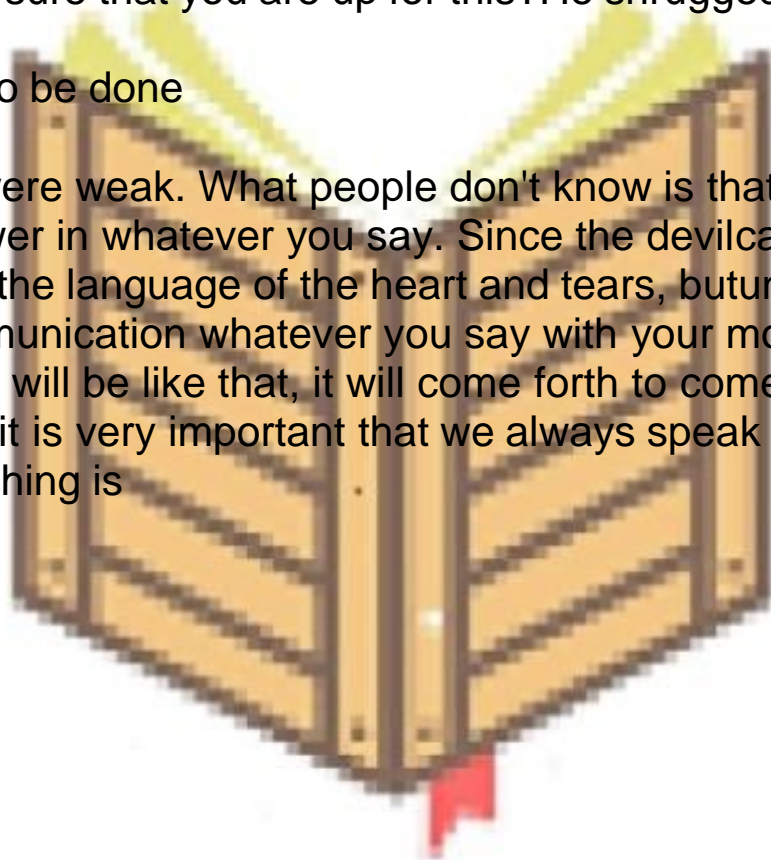
Simon was very nervous and fearful, his fear was strong that i could even feel it..

I looked at him..

Me: are you sure that you are up for this? He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: it has to be done

His words were weak. What people don't know is that there's actually power in whatever you say. Since the devil cannot understand the language of the heart and tears, but understands verbal communication whatever you say with your mouth whether good or bad will be like that, it will come forth to come true. Sometimes it is very important that we always speak positivity even when everything is



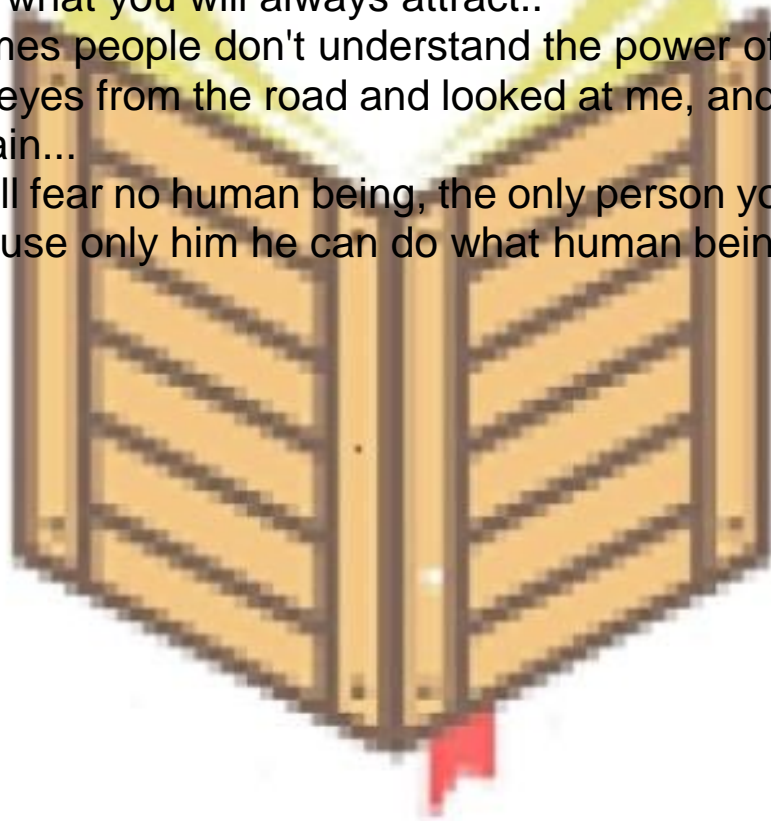
NOVELSGURU.COM

dark. If you sick just thank God for your health, say it "Godthank you for the life and healing i had received today.

Thank you that i got up from this bed and went to make myself breakfast then walked around to get fresh air" while knowing very well that you cannot get up from your bed. That will confuse hell, the devil will ask himself "how can this person say such while they can't even get out of bed. She didn't even have anything to eat, but how can he/she thank God for the breakfast they had?" exercise your mind and your whole being to think positively, after allyou attract what you think. If you always thinking negatively then negativity is what you will always attract..

Me: sometimes people don't understand the power of the tongue He took his eyes from the road and looked at me, and then looked at the road again...

Me: you shall fear no human being, the only person you should fear is God because only him he can do what human beings cannot do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i don't have fear

Me: I'm just saying, be like David. You don't need to be strong to defeat a Goliath in your life you just need God by your side

Him: Bonolo told me about you being a Prophet, its amazing how things turn out.

Me: indeed, you always live your life focused only on one thing but you don't know that God has big plans for you

Him: we have had numerous encounters with Prophets who hide their evil deeds with the name of the Lord so they can hurt and oppress those that are beneath them, hope you won't abuse the power given to you

Me: i am not a back door Prophet, I was chosen
Him: i was just saying

Me: so was i



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

Zaine's attitude towards me has been questionable this past few days, i don't know if its because of that night that i had slept over at Siya's place without saying anything to him but i could definitely feel that things were a bit tense between us..

I couldn't bring myself to tell him the truth, i can't tell him the truth not especially since he is in too deep with being a Prophet that might ruin things between us. I am not perfect, and i don't wanna be perfect. I have spent a few years of my life with Abdul trying to turn me into being his perfection but now its time i live for Bonolo. I wanna experience wrongs as much as i experienced the rights, i needed to know that life is not one sided but you can also do wrong things then learn from them..

I don't know if my destiny lies with Zaine anymore, because the life he has chosen or rather the life that has chose him seems too hard to follow. I don't wanna be fake, but i wanna be real.. I don't want people seeing me as this



NOVELSGURU.COM

perfect being while I am not, I want them to accept me for who I am and with all my mistakes..

I had an unexpected visitor this Friday afternoon, it was Ms Jackson after everything we have been through I truly didn't see us sitting down and having tea..

We were sitting at the table having English breakfast tea with Ginger biscuits. She has been very humble ever since she got here which made me more nervous..

Her eyes wondered around..

Her: you are really taking good care of this house, it has never been this clean.

Me: thank you, I try Him: I can see that

I can feel that this was not a friendly visit, there's more to her coming here and having tea with me...

Her: I didn't expect to see you at the funeral Me: Zaine wanted me to accompany him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i figured that out She put her cup down...

Her: i am sure you a bit confused about what's happening. One moment i am going off at you and then the next we sharing a kettle of tea

Me: i am confused

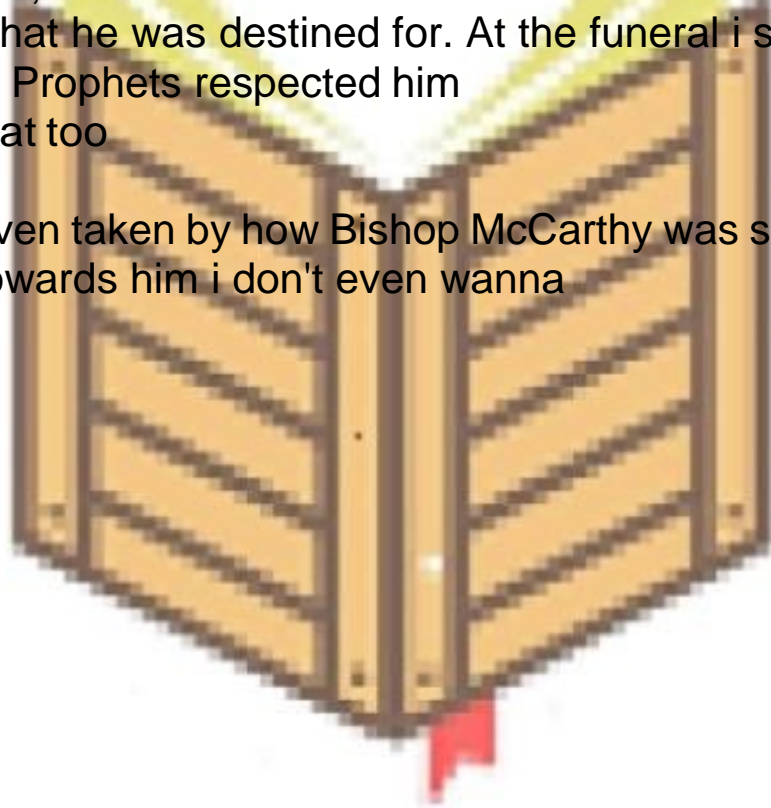
Her: i will cut to the chase and hopefully not waste much of your time

I looked at her, waiting for whatever she was gonna throw at me..

Her: Zaine is at the point of his life whereas he is about to become a great Prophet, I carried him for 9 months and i could feel that he becoming what he was destined for. At the funeral i saw how other Pastors and Prophets respected him

Me: i saw that too

Her: i was even taken by how Bishop McCarthy was so humble and respectful towards him i don't even wanna



NOVELSGURU.COM

mention Prophet Badru

Me: they did hint that he is the greatest and young Prophet of these days

She picked up her cup and drank from it..Him: you love Zaine i assume?

Me: i do

Her: and I am sure that you wish nothing but good for him?Me: yes

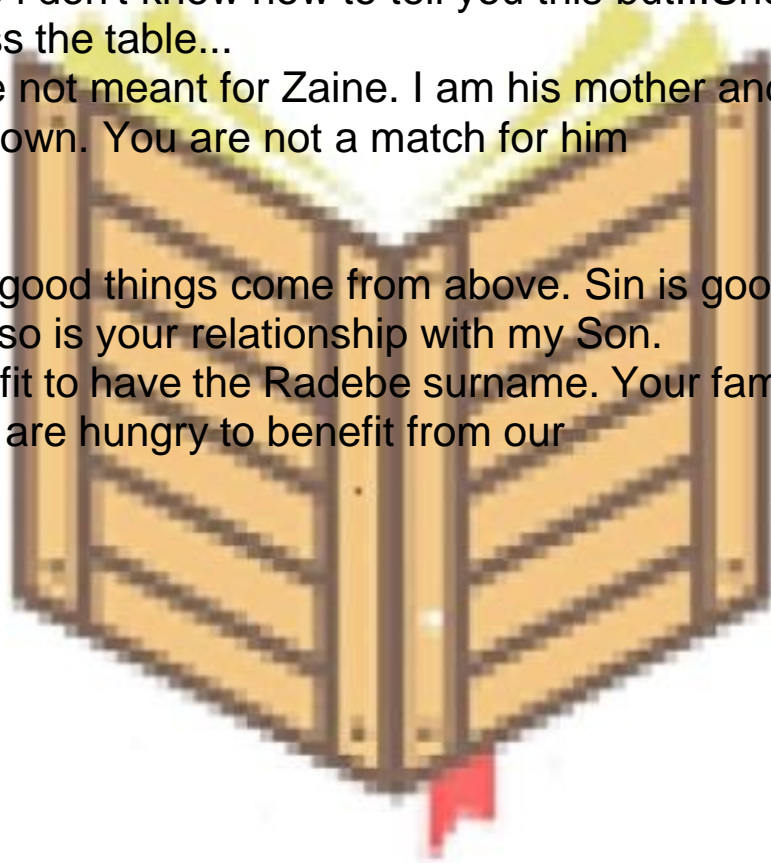
Him: Bonolo i don't know how to tell you this but...She laid out her hands across the table...

Her: you are not meant for Zaine. I am his mother and i can feel it from deep down. You are not a match for him

Me: ohw

Him: not all good things come from above. Sin is good but its not from above so is your relationship with my Son.

You are not fit to have the Radebe surname. Your family seems like People who are hungry to benefit from our



NOVELSGURU.COM

family, look at your Grandmother she doesn't even have one nice or good thing to say about you. If your own family cannot say good about then you truly are not good. You 17 and already have a baby you know how bad that is gonna make our family look? Don't even get me started on Education. What qualifications do you have? How many graduates come from your family?
She paused and exhaled...

Her: its like the only good thing that came from your family is that your mother married a Prophet and that's all.. All i am saying is that there's no way Zaine is gonna marry you has he even hinted on marrying you?

I shook my head no... Her: i have a way out! looked at her..

Her: i know a person who can help you get a lot of money and you can be able to afford a better life for you and your Son



NOVELSGURU.COM

My eyes were already filled with tears, i don't know why I was even crying because I have heard such words over and over again..

Her: Agnes she is a uhm..She cleared her throat.

Her: she runs a brothel and pays her girls good money Me: brothel?

Her: Bonolo the only thing you gonna be good at is seeing how beautiful the ceiling is. Its a the only way you gonna be able to make good money

Me: Ms Jackson i don't understand what you trying to tell me

Her: i am saying you good being a Prostitute Me: Selling my body?

Her: don't think of it that way.. Look I am not asking you to do something that you have never done before

Me: i have never been a Prostitute



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: Bonolo...

Me: i don't mean to be rude but I think you should leaveShe stood up and spat on me..

Her: listen here you piece of garbage! I have been trying sohard to be patient with you but now my patience is becoming thin. You will be what i tell you to be!!

This woman was breaking me..

Her: you are a cunt! A piece of trash and that's what youwill always be! You will never Get the Radebe surname orlet alone be part of my family!

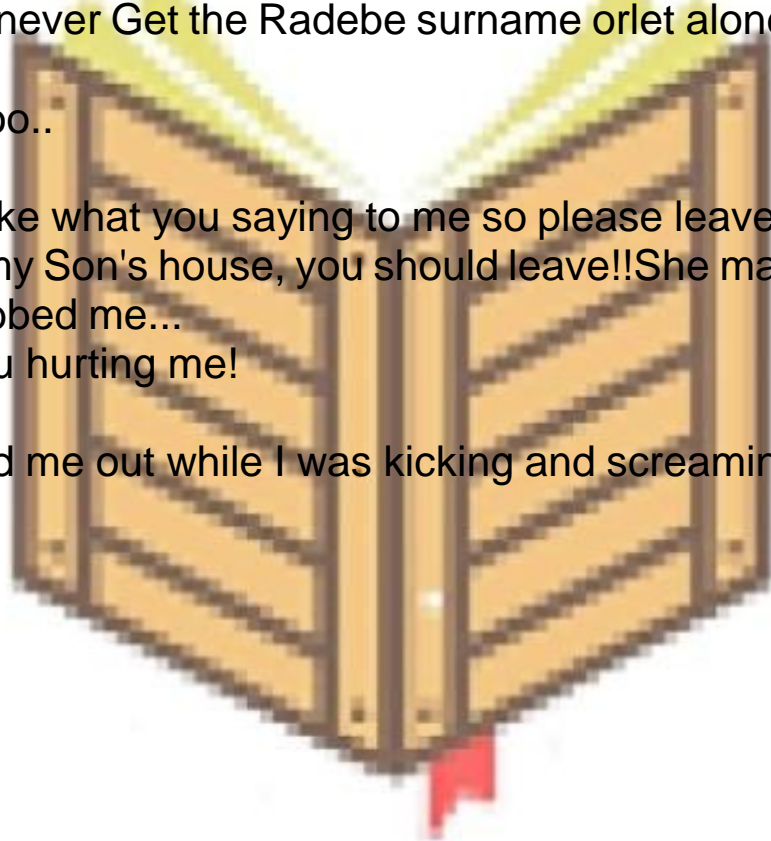
I stood up too..

Me: i don't like what you saying to me so please leaveShe laughed..

Her: this is my Son's house, you should leave!!She made her way to me and grabbed me...

Me: stop you hurting me!

She dragged me out while I was kicking and screaming..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: there's a better girl coming to live here, she will be Zaine's wife and i can't have her finding you here!
I cannot even begin to explain how shattered I was..

She literally threw me out on the house to the pavement, i laid there crying..

Her: ohw ya before I forget, your trash of a bastard Sontoo!
She went back Inside the house..

I have been through breaking situations in my whole life, but this was taking the cup.. I looked up with tears in my heart and a heart deeply wounded..

Me: if heaven hears me now, God please intervene, enough is enough!!

I laid my head down while still crying like that. There's only a limit to what a human being can take, and this was my limit..

as I was laying there crying i heard what sounded like thunder and the sky changed, dark clouds formed with



NOVELSGURU.COM

lightning flashing across the sky as if like it was going to rain...
She came back with Blessing, but when she laid her eyes on me
she she came to a stand still, she literally froze and she looked
stunned like she was seeing a ghost or something..
Her: it can't be

I don't know what was happening, or what she was seeing but
whatever it was, was ready to to make her heart stop..
I raised my head and looked at her..Me: Ms Jackson?
She collapsed with Blessing in her Arms, when they came in contact
with the ground Blessing cried..
I got up and limped my way to her to get blessing, she looked at me
while pointing behind me but I wasn't seeing whatever she was
seeing...



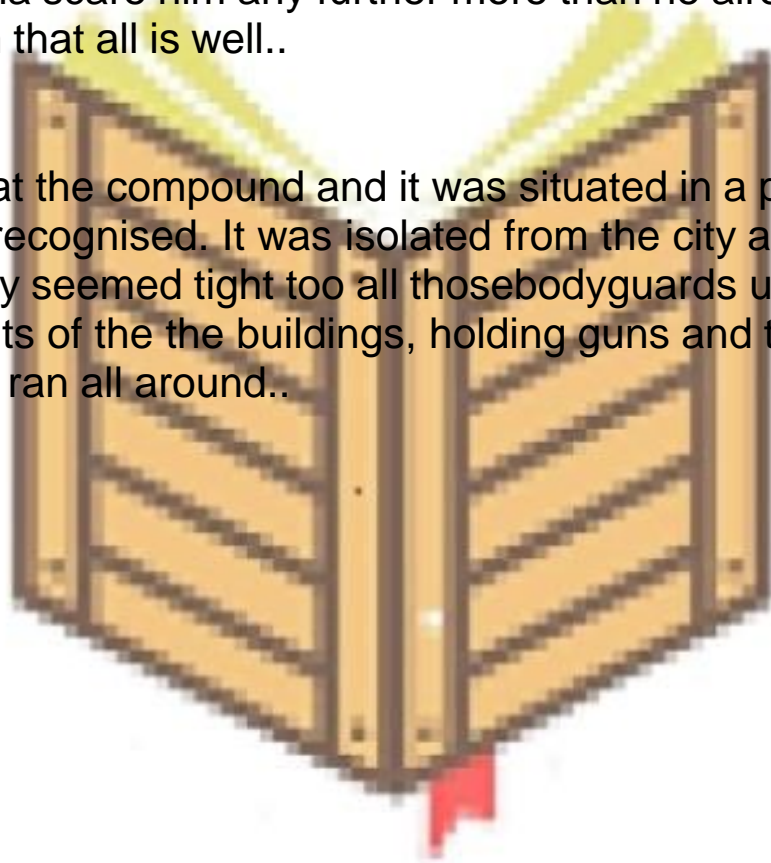
NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINE

We were almost reaching our destination and something was not right. As we were driving the Holy Spirit kept on whispering Bonolo's name in my ear so i took it upon myself to pray for her mainly praying for protection, after praying i felt like everything was back to Normal but i still felt some heavy pain in my heart. I tried calling her after praying but she wasn't answering as always...
Simon: is everything alright?

I didn't wanna scare him any further more than he already was, i assured him that all is well..

We arrived at the compound and it was situated in a place where it couldn't be recognised. It was isolated from the city and everyone else, security seemed tight too all those bodyguards up in the highest points of the buildings, holding guns and the electric fence which ran all around..



NOVELSGURU.COM

As we approached the gate the words "PURGATORY" were written in capital letters. I lowered my head and prayed in my heart for the whole of heaven to enter with us..

Security came to our car and Simon rolled down his window..

Simon: Afternoon sir

The security guard greeted him back and then looked at me..

Simon: i know that we don't have an appointment or anything, but uhm Prophet Abdul is expecting us...

He stood there looking at me without saying anything.. Simon: is everything alright Sir?

After a while the security guard came back to the world of the living..

Him: y... Yes.. Please.. Go through

He signalled that the gate must be opened and Simon drove in..



NOVELSGURU.COM

The tension of this place was too much for me, too much presence of dark and evil spirits wondering about. This whole place was hell bound..

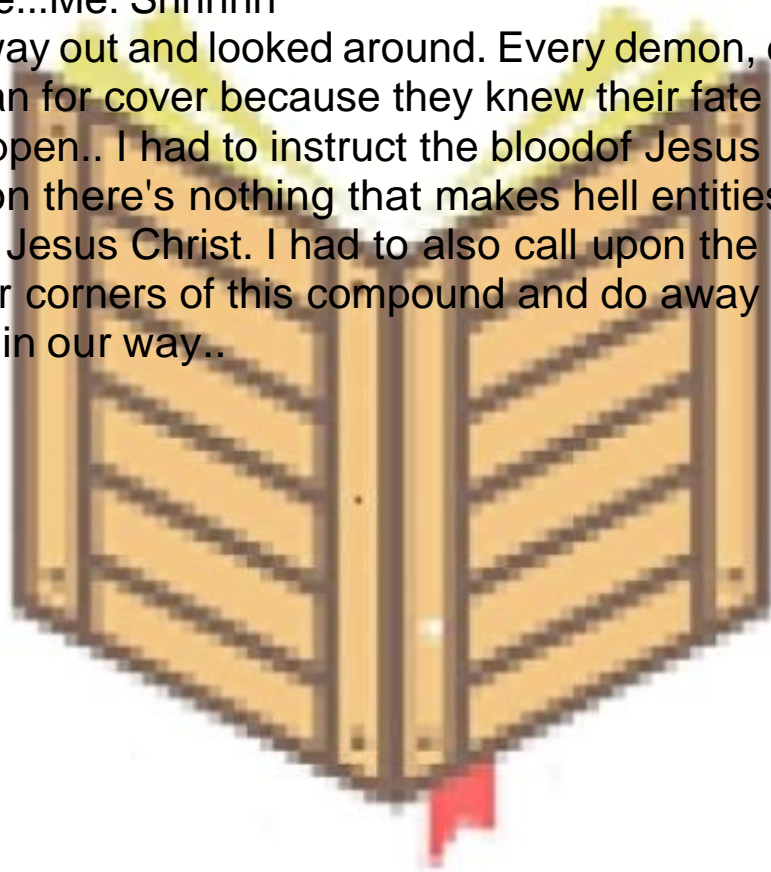
Me: stop

He stopped the car..

I got out and as soon as my foot touched the ground all demons present there froze..

Simon: Zaine...Me: Shhhhh

I made my way out and looked around. Every demon, every devil worshiper ran for cover because they knew their fate and what was about to happen.. I had to instruct the blood of Jesus to cover us for protection there's nothing that makes hell entities scared like the blood of Jesus Christ. I had to also call upon the Angels to stand at four corners of this compound and do away with whatever could stand in our way..



NOVELSGURU.COM

To be continued

December 16, 2016 at 4:09pm · Public

Like Page · Save · More

[OBJ] PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥58 #SIMON

For some strange reason Abdul only requested me to come inside the house and talk to him, he didn't want Zaine setting his foot inside which made me very nervous



NOVELSGURU.COM

to talk to him alone. No one knows what he can do to me behind those closed doors.

I was very surprised to see the state he was in, his left side seemed not to be very functional like his right side it was stiff even how he talked was funny. His wife Lucia brought us some drinks and cookies as we sat at the porch, he had a walking stick with him...

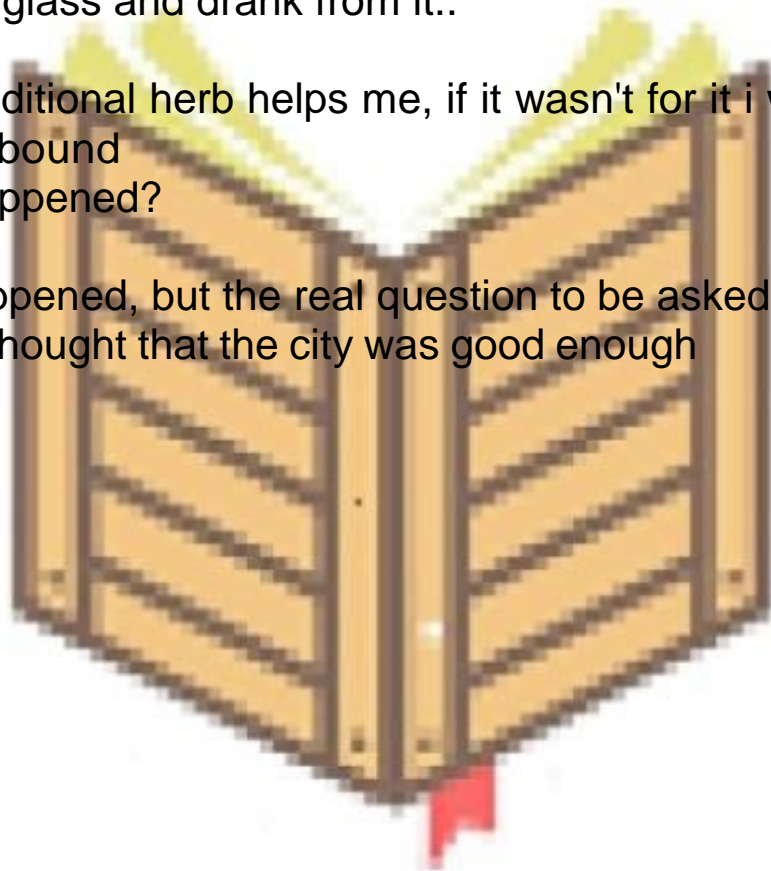
Him: it's stroke, but i am getting the hang of everything Lucia brought in some red drink in a glass too..

Lucia: here you go Abdul: Thank you
He took the glass and drank from it..

Him: this traditional herb helps me, if it wasn't for it i would still be wheelchair bound

Me: what happened?

Him: life happened, but the real question to be asked is why are you here? Thought that the city was good enough



NOVELSGURU.COM

for you Me: it is

He looked down at my glass.. Him: haven't touched your drink
I looked at my glass it was still full.

Him: when a guest doesn't drink what is offered to them, that's very
rude

Something deep inside of me didn't want me to touch or even drink
that orange juice...

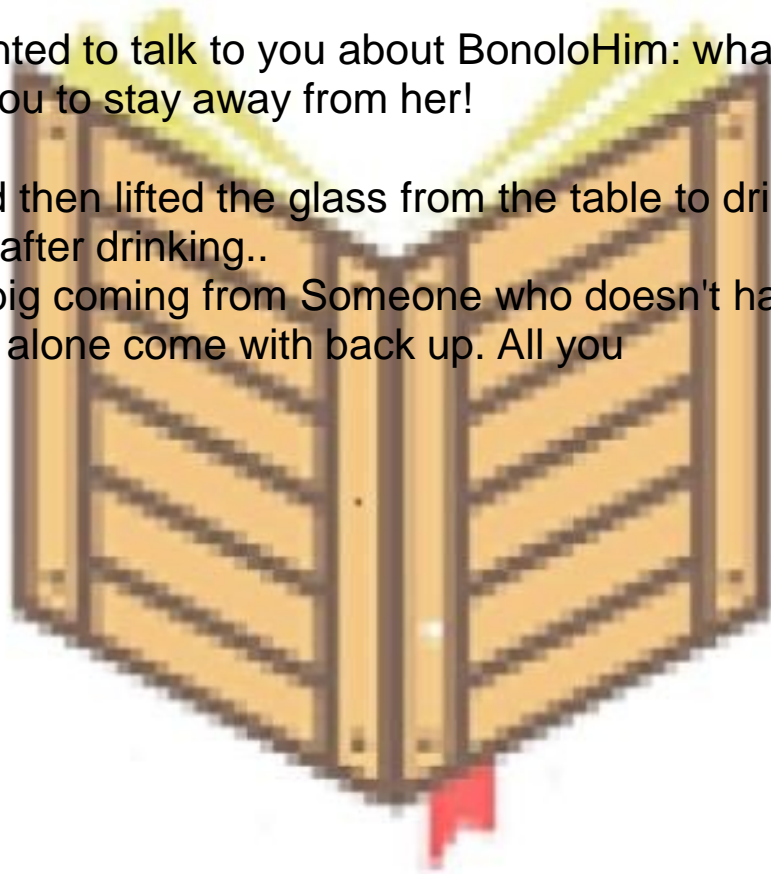
Him: Why are you here?

Me: just wanted to talk to you about Bonolo Him: what about her?

Me: i want you to stay away from her!

He chuckled then lifted the glass from the table to drink, he put it
down again after drinking..

Him: that's big coming from Someone who doesn't have back up
with him, let alone come with back up. All you



NOVELSGURU.COM

have is the Radebe boy who won't even raise a finger to protect you
Me: are you gonna have me beaten again? Or maybe killed this time around?

He chuckled again, I don't know if the chuckle was an involuntary human reaction to a non humorous statement, or just a mockery to my statement...

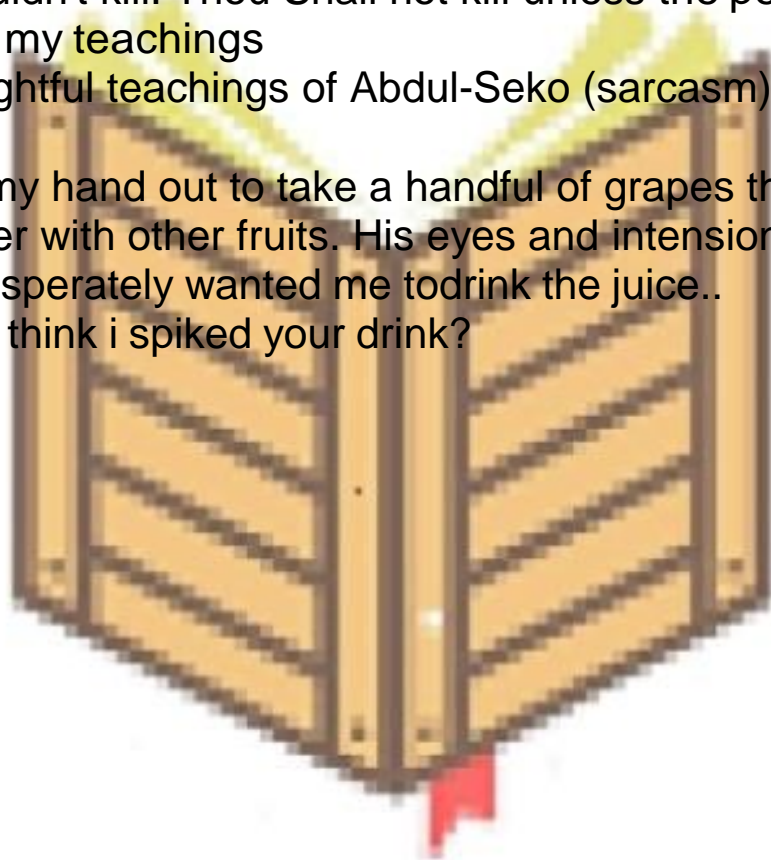
He swallowed and put the glass back on the table, he seemed to be enjoying this traditional herb of his..

Him: Please you are giving me way too much credit, i am a pure man of God i wouldn't kill. Thou Shall not kill unless the person is evil so says one of my teachings

Me: the insightful teachings of Abdul-Seko (sarcasm)

I stretched my hand out to take a handful of grapes that were in a bowl together with other fruits. His eyes and intensions were on my glass, he desperately wanted me to drink the juice..

Him: do you think i spiked your drink?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I started eating the grapes...Me: i didn't say
He looked at me and called his wife, she came in after awhile.
Her: did Prophet call for me?Me: Yes
She stood at the table..

Abdul: Please drink from Simon's glass, for some strangereason he
thought we spiked his drink
Her eyes widened, she reacted in a shocked way but not tomy
refusing to drink but to Abdul commanding her to drink..
Her: ohw

Abdul: Please drink

He took the glass from the table and handed it to her. Shewas
terrified, i could almost see her heart beating from herdress..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Abdul: if she collapses and dies, then congratulations you would have saved your own life

Evil doesn't even come close to describing the kind of person that Abdul is, who would do that? Why would he keep on hurting his wives like this..

After drinking, Lucia put the glass down and we looked at her waiting for a reaction..

Abdul: Been 5 min now and no death He looked at his wife..

Him: Thank you darling She walked out...

Me: how is Bonolo's mother?

Him: Why don't you go and find out for yourself He looked at the stairs..

Him: she in her room

I stood up and made my way to her bedroom...



NOVELSGURU.COM

. #ZAINE

I really didn't understand why Abdul refused for me to enter his house, i didn't expect him to be a coward about this..

The Whole compound had Angels, Abdul wouldn't do any spiritual attack to me or Simon because we were under the protection of Heaven...

I walked around in the yard just looking around when i bumped into some girl sitting on the grass crying. The closer i got to her, the more i could sense her pain, her will to escape the heaviness that resided in her heart. She was wounded, and her pain seemed no different to Bonolo's...

Me: Hello

She turned and stood up..

Me: I'm sorry i didn't mean to freak you out

I looked down at her and her dress had blood, that made her to be a little embarrassed..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She crossed her legs and tried to hide off the blood stain with her hands.

Her: i can't stop the bleeding

Me: for how long have you been bleeding? Her: weeks

She wiped her tears..

Me: shouldn't you be dead by now with all this heavy bleeding?

Her: i have medication

Me: what causes the bleeding?

When i asked that, tears formed again in her eyes....

The holy spirit kept on repeating that her bleeding will stop if i could just touch her hand..

Me: i am Zaine

I stretched my hand out to her, she stretched hers to me and i believe her bleeding did stop reading from her facial expression..



NOVELSGURU.COM

She quickly let go of my hand...Her: i have to go inside
Not only did her bleeding stop but somehow she was also another
person to help us bring Abdul down..

Me: i didn't get your name

I heard someone calling out..

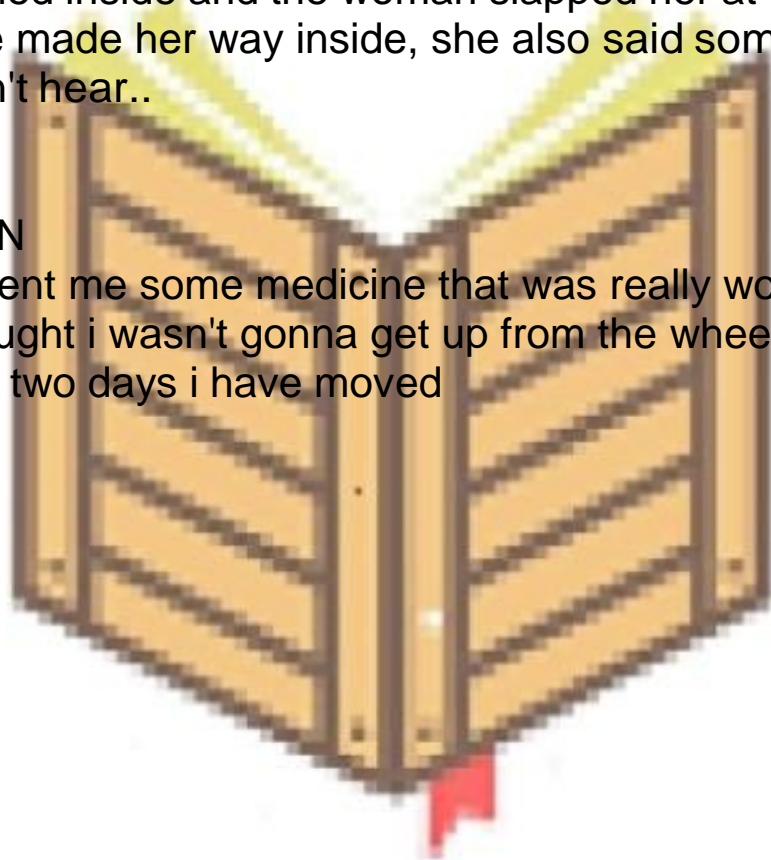
I turned around and it was some woman..Her: get back inside!!!
(shouting)

The girl rushed inside and the woman slapped her at the back of her
head as she made her way inside, she also said something to her
that i couldn't hear..

.

. #LEIGHTON

Abdul had sent me some medicine that was really working it's
magic. I thought i wasn't gonna get up from the wheelchair but after
drinking it in two days i have moved



NOVELSGURU.COM

from the wheelchair to a walking stick or a cane rather..

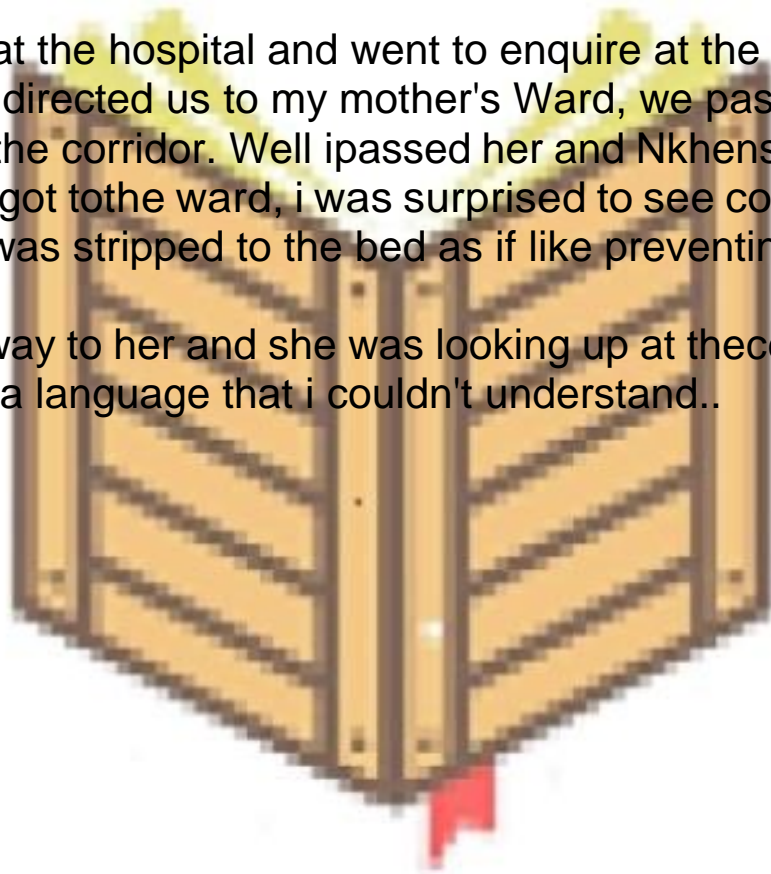
I am not 100, but i am sure to fully recover as i keep ontaking the meds, it was a red liquid....

My wife and i we drove to the hospital after Nkhensani received a call from Bonolo saying my mother is at the hospital. I wondered what happened she was fine whenshe left, unless she encountered an accident ahead..

We arrived at the hospital and went to enquire at the reception. The receptionist directed us to my mother's Ward, we passed Bonolo standing in the corridor. Well ipassed her and Nkhensani went up to her. When i got tothe ward, i was surprised to see cops too..

My mother was stripped to the bed as if like preventing herfrom escaping...

I made my way to her and she was looking up at theceiling while speaking in a language that i couldn't understand..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Mom

Her: Allah mēni bağışla, Allah mēnim günahlarınızıbağışlayar i mēnim ər öldürmək demək deyil

Me: Mom

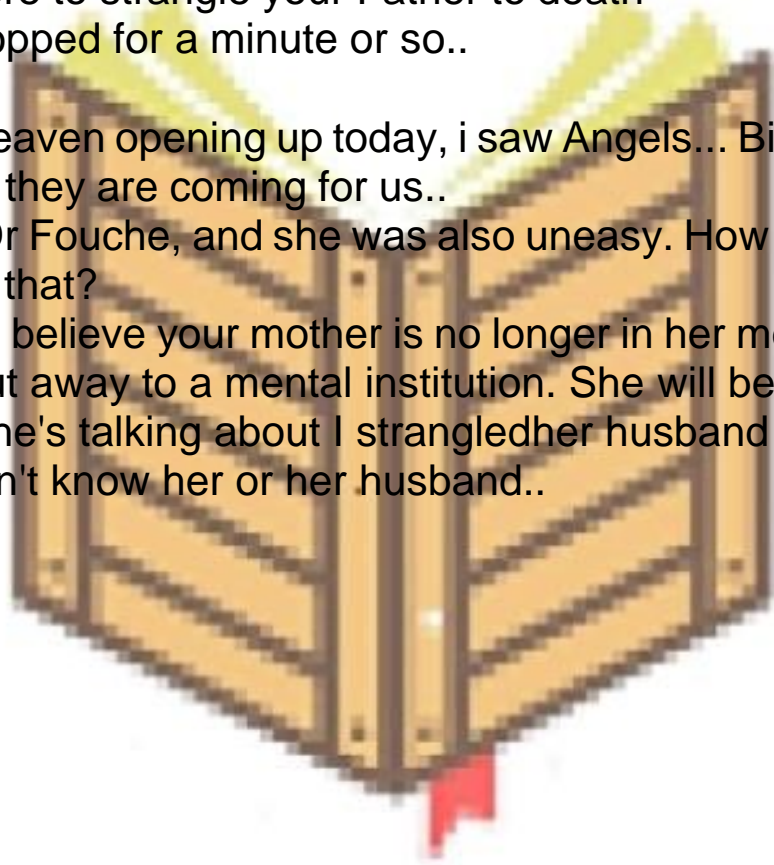
She turned and looked at me..

Her: Tell them Leighton, tell them how we hired a Doctorthe one standing there to strangle your Father to death
My heart stopped for a minute or so..

Her: i saw heaven opening up today, i saw Angels... Bigscary ones with swords they are coming for us..

I looked at Dr Fouche, and she was also uneasy. How canmy mother blast us like that?

Dr Fouche: i believe your mother is no longer in her mentalstate, she has to be put away to a mental institution. She will be well taken care off... She's talking about I strangledher husband and funny enough i don't know her or her husband..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at my mother and i think a mental institution will do because now she is busting us out but it's gonna be hard, because Zaine will also have to sign the forms that we should put our mother into a mental institution, i don't think he will when Mother keeps blabbing that we killed myDad, i know how Zaine loved our father

.

To be continued

December 18, 2016 at 12:34pm · Public

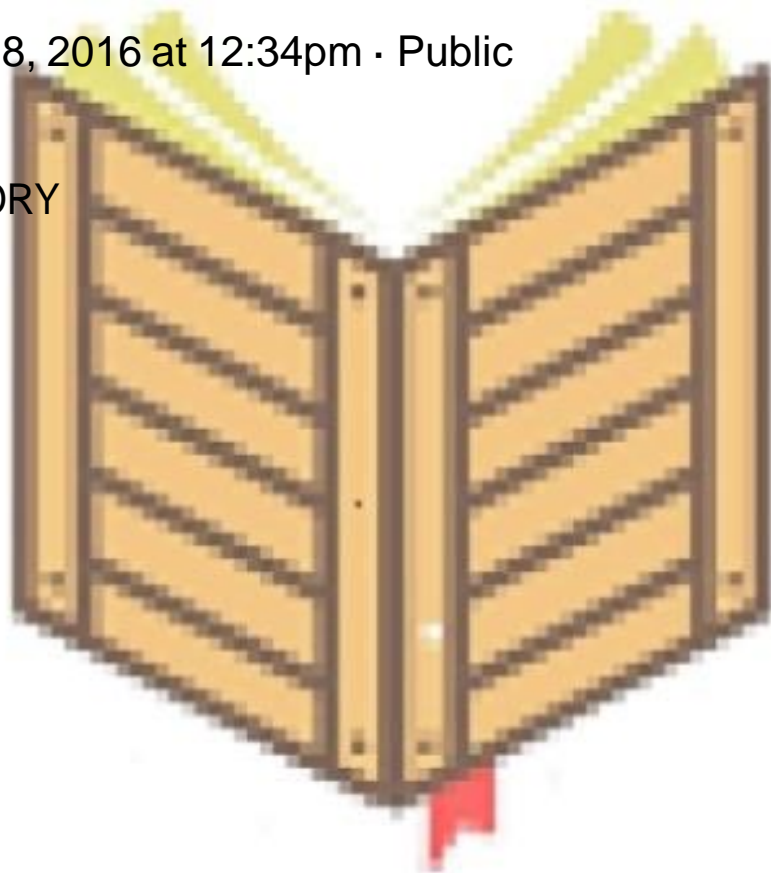
Li PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥59



NOVELSGURU.COM

#ZAINÉ

I got a call from Bonolo that she is at the hospital with my mother. It was odd that both of them are at the hospital together, i kept on asking myself what happened...

The drive back to the city was fast, i dropped off Simon where he could get a taxi home because i wanted to rush to my mother and Bonolo..

Simon: call me and tell me how Bonolo is
Me: i will

After dropping him off, i drove straight to the hospital.. I didn't even know how i arrived there, i was speeding that's how worried i was...

I was about to go up to the receptionist when i spotted Bonolo and Nkhensani sitting at the waiting area which was not far from the reception desk..

I went up to them..
Me: girls



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bonolo stood up and hugged me, while crying..Me: it's alright i am here

I looked at Nkhensani while still hugging Bonolo who was very emotional and i mumbled the words "what happened"she just shrugged her shoulders..

I broke the hug and wiped her tears..Her: i was soo scared

Me: what happened? And where is Blessing?

Her: he is at the kids ward, they still checking himMe: are you alright?

Her outfit was a bit dirty and she had no shoes on..Me: what really happened Nolly?

Her: maybe go check on your mom firstMe: which ward?

Nkhensani: walk straight, first one from your leftMe: Thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

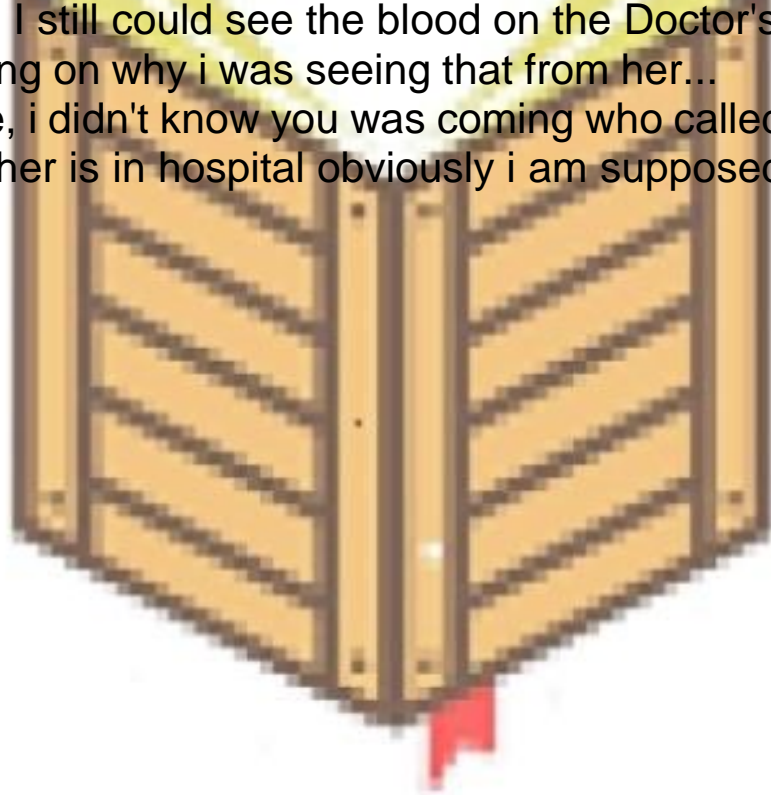
I kissed Bonolo on her forehead..Me: ill be right back
Her: Okay

I left them and made my way to her ward..

The ward, it was just the Doctor and Leighton. I was even surprised to see Leighton on his feet and not wheelchair bound anymore.. I attempted to walk inside but there was a barrier of evil blocking me or preventing me from going inside. I looked at Leighton and a dark cloud was shading Him. He was under the influence of great evil, his heart and his whole being was embedded in evil. I wonder what he did. I still could see the blood on the Doctor's hands, that was confusing on why i was seeing that from her...

Leigh: Zaine, i didn't know you was coming who called you?

Me: My mother is in hospital obviously i am supposed to come



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leighton and i grew up fighting and everything, but our brotherhood bond has always been tight. Despite our fights and not seeing eye to eye but we always remembered that we brothers and the brotherly love that exists between us always kept our bond strong.... I wish i can still the same today, but unfortunately things have changed because of a "gift". We supposed to be tighter than before seeing that our parents are no longer gonna be with us... I think something was also happening to him because he started sweating as soon as our eyes locked... I was put in a situation that i didn't know how to handle, i sense this great evil from Leighton and it seems like i won't be able to fight him on this after all he is my Brother no matter what happens he is my blood...

Leighton: excuse me

He came to the door, before he could exit i grabbed his arm..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: Leigh

Something unexpected and unexplainable happened. Leighton caught fire where i had grabbed his arm..

Him: Ahhhh!!!

Dr: ohh my goodness

He stepped back as i tried to approach him.. Him: stay away from me!!

The Doctor went to him and checked the burn.. Her: I'll get a nurse to treat this for you

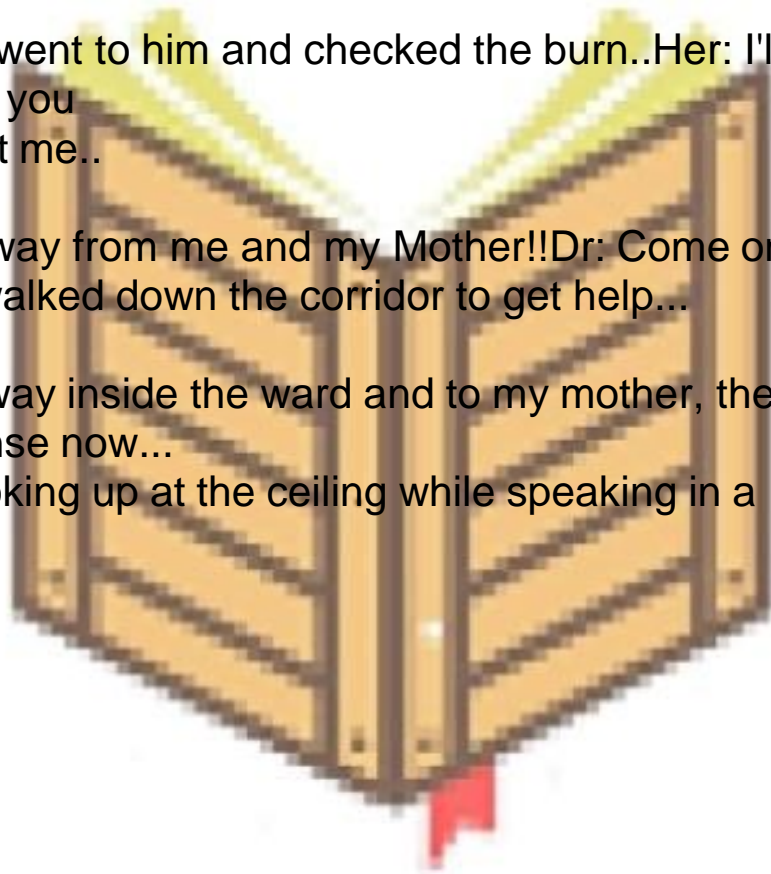
He looked at me..

Him: stay away from me and my Mother!! Dr: Come on

They both walked down the corridor to get help...

I made my way inside the ward and to my mother, the atmosphere was less tense now...

She was looking up at the ceiling while speaking in a



NOVELSGURU.COM

foreign language..

Her: Allah bütün bu günah canımı t̄emizl̄eyir (God cleanse my soul from all this sin)

I went closer to her bed. She was stripped to the bed, i was greatly confused..

Me: Mom

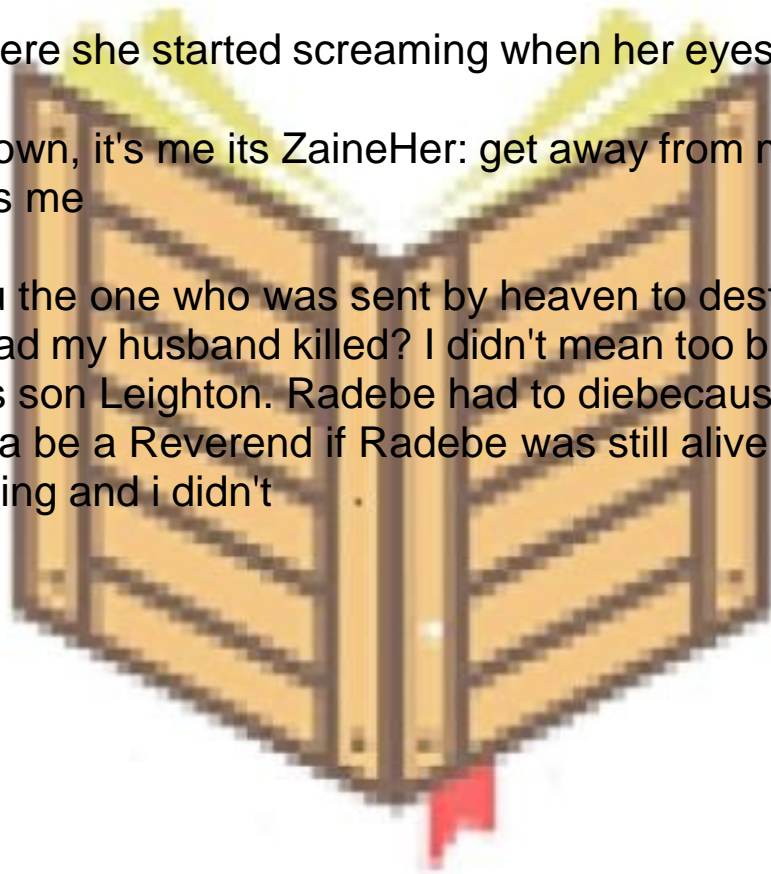
She turned and looked at me..

Out of nowhere she started screaming when her eyes landed on me..

Me: settle down, it's me its Zaine Her: get away from me!

Me: Mom it's me

Her: are you the one who was sent by heaven to destroy me Because i had my husband killed? I didn't mean too but i had too for my Precious son Leighton. Radebe had to die because Leighton wasn't gonna be a Reverend if Radebe was still alive. I suggested the whole thing and i didn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

mean to involve my son in my sinister plan, i love Leighton spare
Him please punish me alone!

I was beyond shocked, i couldn't believe the words that were
coming out of her mouth...

Me: what did you just say? She started crying...

Her: i am sorry, ask for forgiveness on my behalf

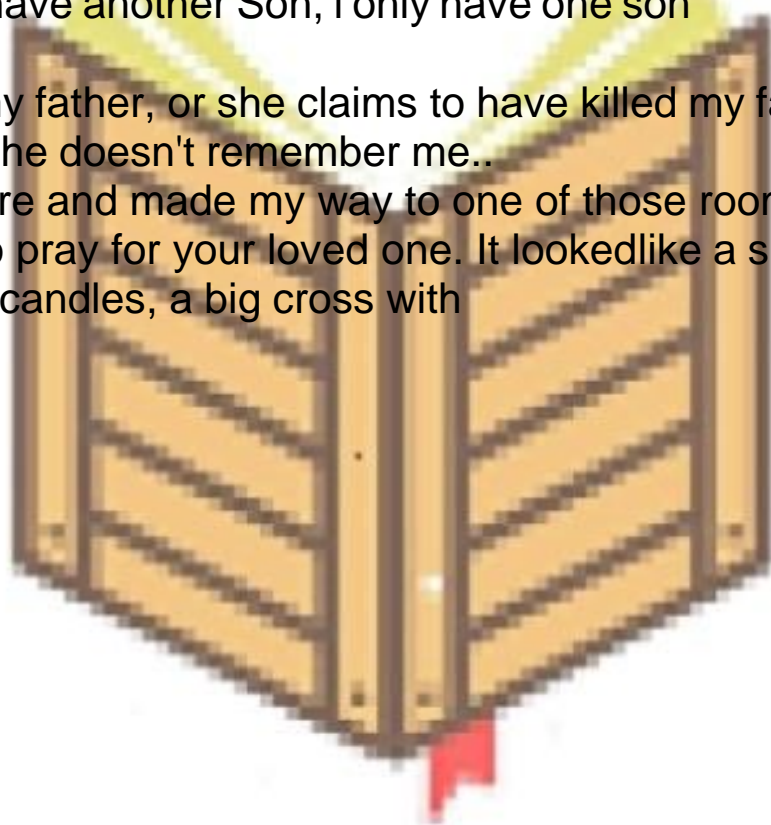
Tears were already at the verge of falling from my side too because
her tears vowed to what she was saying...

Me: did you think about your other Son? How this would affect Him?

Her: i don't have another Son, i only have one son

She killed my father, or she claims to have killed my father on top of
everything she doesn't remember me..

I left her there and made my way to one of those rooms where you
can come to pray for your loved one. It looked like a small church
with Bibles, candles, a big cross with



NOVELSGURU.COM

Jesus in it. I walked over to sit down and tears just started falling.. I was hurt, i was confused...

Me: God why? I did everything required of me to do but why would you do this to me? My whole family? This is unfair what's happening?

It is hard to believe that we were once a happy family....

Me: why are you separating me from my family? Aren't you supposed to be the God of peace or something? Why you let so much sinister and evil shelter my family? My own mother doesn't even recognise me? She's talking about..

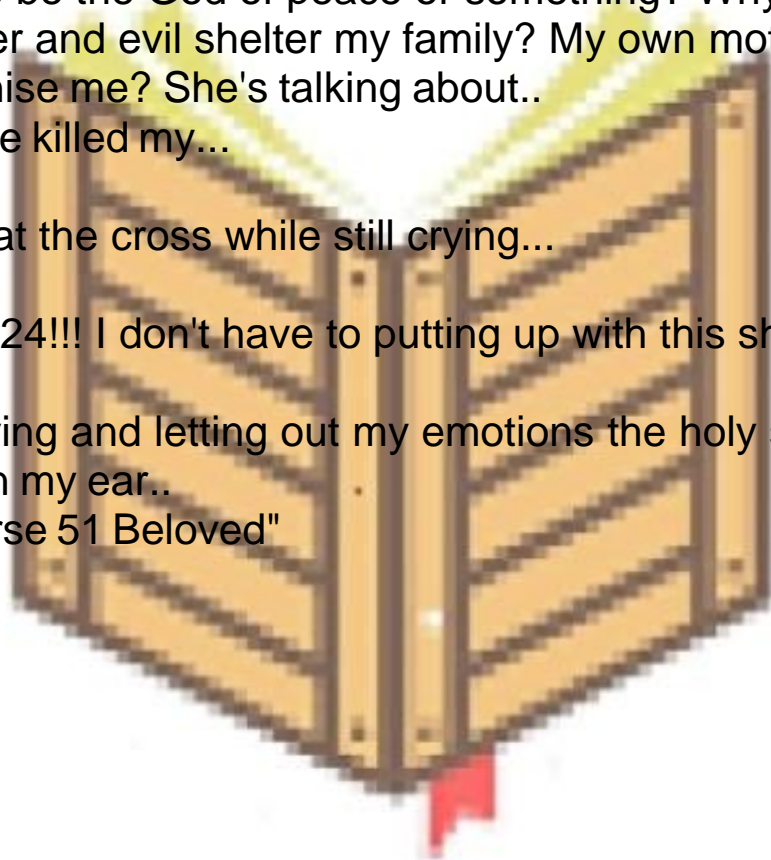
She says she killed my...

I looked up at the cross while still crying...

Me: I'm just 24!!! I don't have to putting up with this shit!!

As i was crying and letting out my emotions the holy spirit whispered in my ear..

"Luke 12 verse 51 Beloved"



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood up and got one of the bibles to read the scripture..

Me: "do you suppose that i came to bring peace to the world? No, not peace but DIVISION. From now on a family of five will be divided, three against two, and two against three. Fathers will be ag..."

I couldn't finish the verse because it was making me angry. I threw the bible against the wall..

Me: go to hell!!!!!! (shouting)

I went and took down the cross then banged it on the floor...

I tore those Bible pages, i went about to express the anger and pain my own way...

Me: take your gift i don't want it anymore you hear??? I want my family back!!!!!! I want my Family!!!

It was quiet, the holy spirit wasn't talking to me anymore...

I made my way to the door and went out.. I was done with all this Christianity, being a Prophet and everything..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I made my way to Bonolo, she was still sitting with Nkhensani...
Me: let's go

She looked at me..

Her: is everything alright?

Me: everything is fine let's just go

She looked at Nkhensani then back at me...Her: Zaine..

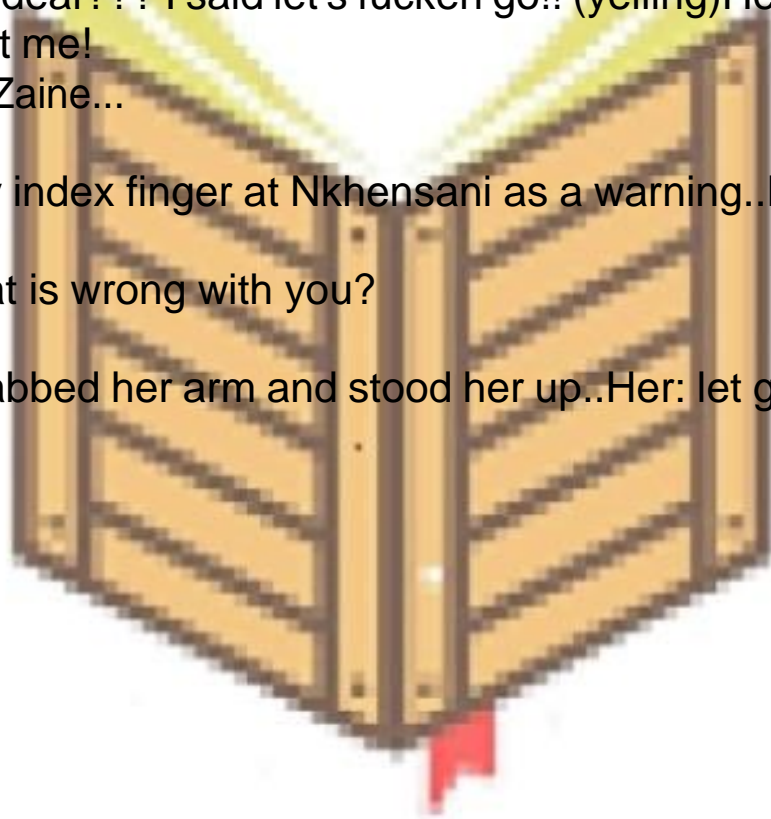
Me: are you deaf??? I said let's fucken go!! (yelling)Her: do not raise your voice at me!

Nkhensani: Zaine...

I pointed my index finger at Nkhensani as a warning..Me: stay out of this!

Bonolo: what is wrong with you?

I roughly grabbed her arm and stood her up..Her: let go of me!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i will drag you out kicking and screaming if i havetoo!!
I pulled her to the door..Her: Security!!
I stopped and looked at her, i gave her a death stare...Me: stop it or i will hit you!!!!
The security guard made his way to us..Him: sir step away from the lady pleaseMe: this is my girlfriend
Him: Sir i am asking you nicely

I walked with Bonolo and he stopped me..Me: better get out of my way
I didn't even see Nkhensani coming to us..Nkhensani: Zaine what's gotten into you?
I saw Leighton making his way through and i lost it..I let go of Bonolo and made my way to him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I started punching Him senseless..

People were watching and screaming.. The security guard made his way to him, he tried grabbing me but i pushed him..

I continued punching Leighton who couldn't defend himself..

Me: I'm gonna kill you!!!

My hands were bloody, his face was bloody...

I then felt a great force that pushed me i was literally sent flying across the room and came in contact with the wall.. While i was down i looked at what attacked me, I expected to see a creature that once attacked me at my house but i saw this big Angel. Wasn't as the other Angels, this one had big wings and was holding a sword. It looked like a warrior Angel and it did not look happy at all...

Me: fuck!!!

To be continued..



NOVELSGURU.COM

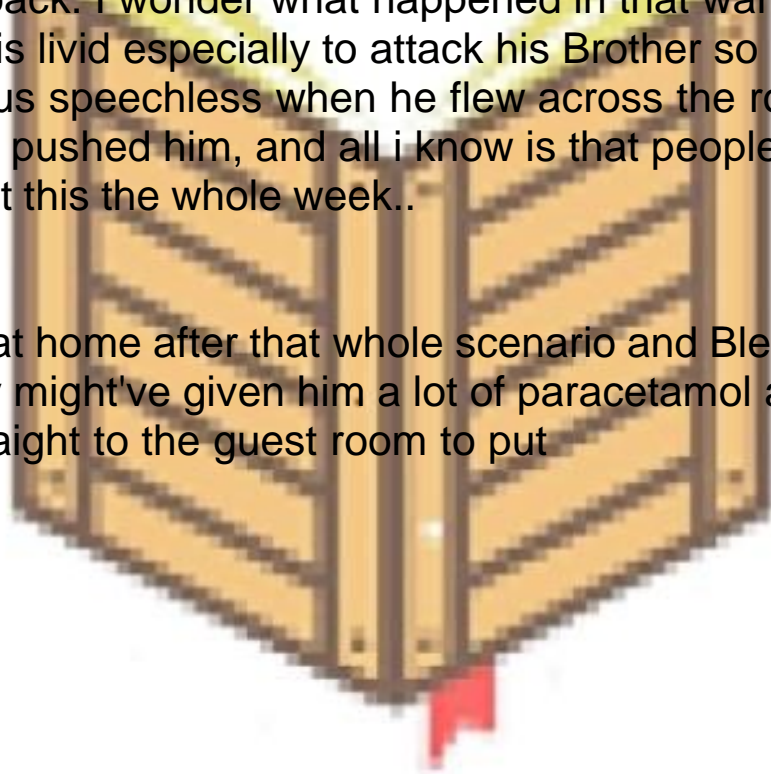
PURGATORY

.
. .
. . .

¥60 #BONOLO

Zaine caused a lot of drama at the hospital. I have never seen that side of him and truthfully speaking it scared me a lot, he scared me to hell and back. I wonder what happened in that ward that made him to be this livid especially to attack his Brother so senseless like that. He left us speechless when he flew across the room without us seeing what pushed him, and all I know is that people are gonna be talking about this the whole week..

We arrived at home after that whole scenario and Blessing was asleep, they might've given him a lot of paracetamol at the hospital. I walked straight to the guest room to put

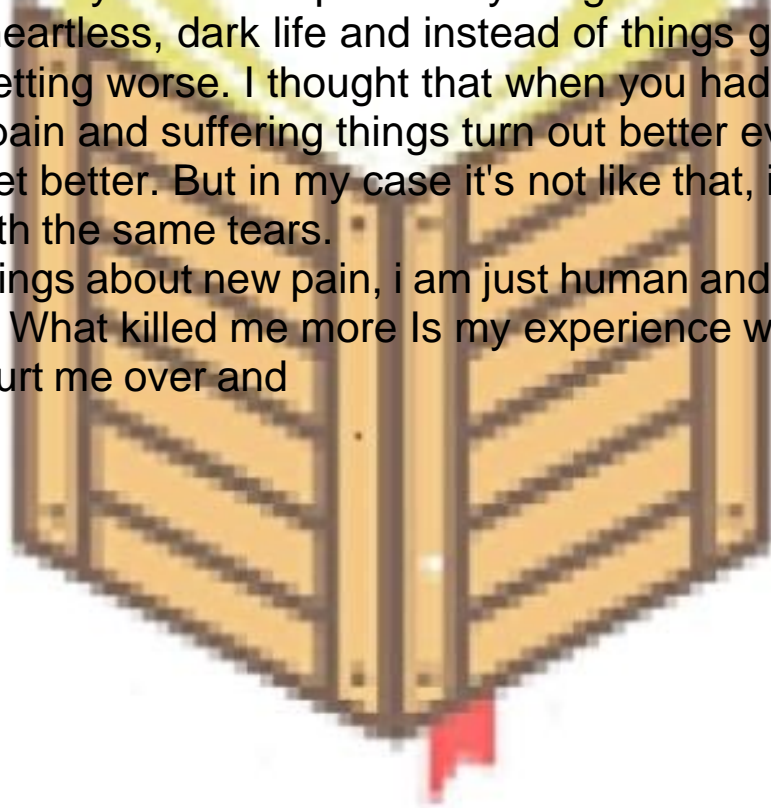


NOVELSGURU.COM

him down.. Zaine has been quiet ever since and I am planning on avoiding him for a while just until he gets his act together, he is even lucky that they didn't call the police on him. I looked at Blessing for a while as he was sleeping peacefully and I kept on asking myself what am i doing?

Why am I putting him through soo much pain and suffering while he is just a baby. When words are lost, and the heart is too wounded to speak tears become the best way to tell your pain. I wish I wasn't a mother, i wish i miscarried or something while i was pregnant because how do I expect to raise a baby if i wasn't even mothered well myself? Ontop of everything i am stuck in this confusing, heartless, dark life and instead of things getting better they busy getting worse. I thought that when you had a lot of heartache, pain and suffering things turn out better eventually, things will get better. But in my case it's not like that, i wake up everyday with the same tears.

Everyday brings about new pain, i am just human and i cannot take all of this in. What killed me more is my experience with Prophets, Abdul has hurt me over and



NOVELSGURU.COM

over in the name of God and Zaine is doing exactly the same. His attitude and everything has changed ever since he became a Prophet. I gave him a chance, i thought he was different he gave me his word that he was different but he is exactly the same as Abdul if not more.. A knock at the door disturbed me, i wiped my tears..

Me: Come in

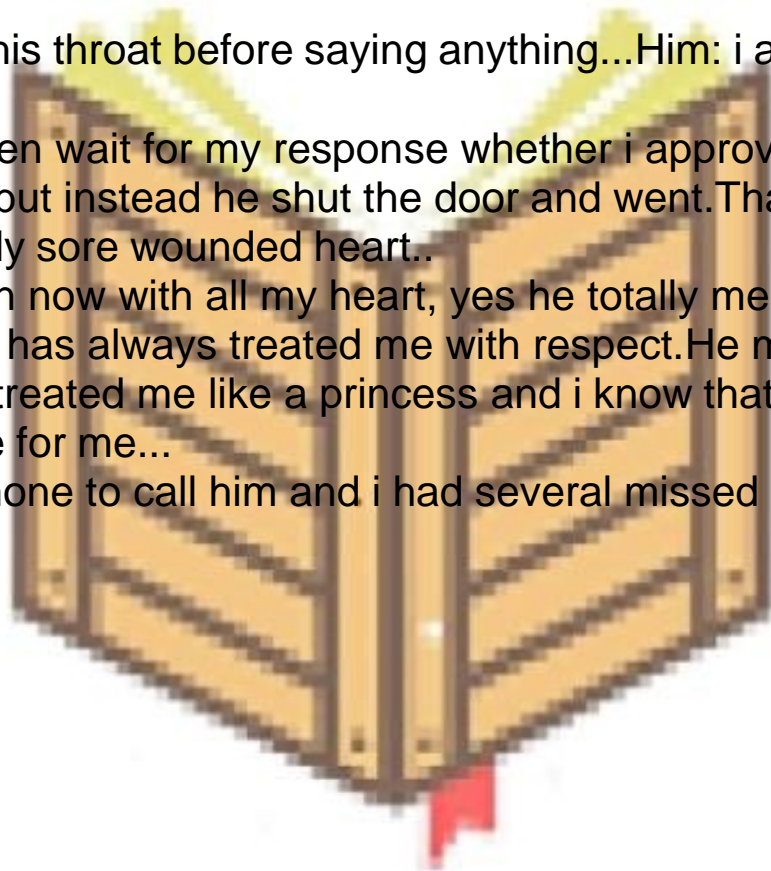
The door opened and Zaine walked in..

He cleared his throat before saying anything...Him: i am going out for a while

He didn't even wait for my response whether i approve of what he said or not, but instead he shut the door and went. That was like salt to my already sore wounded heart..

I miss Simon now with all my heart, yes he totally messed up but at least Simon has always treated me with respect. He made me feel wanted, he treated me like a princess and i know that he would lay down his life for me...

I took my phone to call him and i had several missed calls



NOVELSGURU.COM

from my grandmother. I am not gonna call that woman back, i am at my worst and there's nothing she's gonna say but break my spirit more and more. I called Simon and he answered..

Me: Simon Him: hey

I closed my eyes and hoped not to break down..Me: how are you?

Him: I'm good and you?Me: im fine

My voice was breaking while saying that. Have you ever tried to restrain yourself from crying but then the harder you try the easier tears start falling? That's what was happening to me at that moment...

Him: What's wrong?

I tried to compose myself... Me: i think i made a mistake



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: what mistake?

Me: choosing Zaine over youHe kept quiet..

Me: im sorry Simon Him: what happened?

Me: Zaine is not good for me, we just not meant to beHim: What happened? Did you guys fight?

Me: No we... I just wanna come back to the flatHim: No

Me: Simon..

Him: No Nolo, you love Zaine you know it. That's why ithurts soo much when you fight with him, that's why youcrying this much

Me: Simon you don't understand

Him: i understand very well.. Bonolo i am trying so hard toaccept the fact that you in love with some other dude while i love you. I am trying to accept that you happy with



NOVELSGURU.COM

someone else

Me: but i am not happy, i was happy with you!

Him: you are happy with him you just overshadowed by pain to see it. Take a minute to think about the good and the bad he did, I am sure that the good will outweigh the bad
I let him talk..

Him: you need to talk to him, tell him how you feel and how much he hurts you. If you can't be honest with him then who are you gonna be honest with?

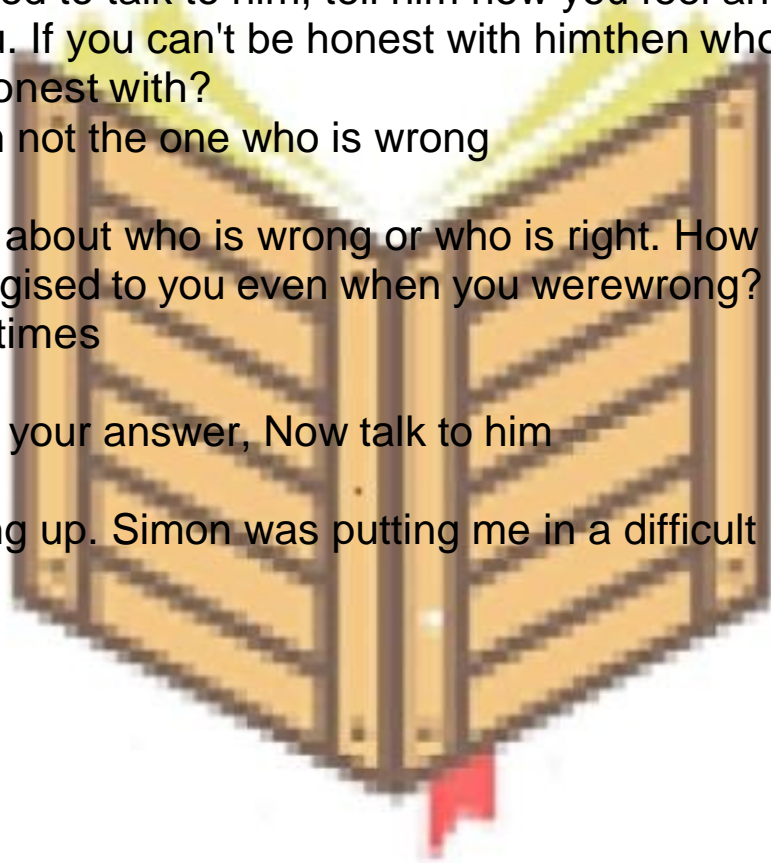
Me: but i am not the one who is wrong

Him: it's not about who is wrong or who is right. How many times have i apologised to you even when you were wrong?

Me: a lot of times

Him: there's your answer, Now talk to him

He then hung up. Simon was putting me in a difficult



NOVELSGURU.COM

situation..

.

. #ZAINE

A part of me wanted to drive to a club, get drunk, smoke weed, and fuck a few bitches. I wanted my old life back so bad that I felt like claiming it back tonight but at the same time another part of me was against it. I felt like i came farto just give up on everything. It doesn't feel right to give up,my conscious doesn't allow me too but then the hurt angry part of me, that part that reminded me of my being alone wanted me to just give up on everything. The song that i was listening too also made my situation seem worse, the words were hitting really deep:

"it's just me myself and i, solo ride until i die cause I gotme for life"
It was true i only have me now since my whole family turned against me...



NOVELSGURU.COM

I didn't go to the club as intended but Instead i went to Badru's house to talk to him. He probably can give me better advice... Prophet Badru's life seems perfect i don't even know how he reached that point in his life. He has a beautiful wife, their marriage is perfect and they seem very happy. He is one of a few Prophets i know that have a perfectly good life..

We sat outside on the porch just having drinks. His house was bigger than my father's house, and his suits together with his watch collection don't come cheap...

Me: how does a Prophet get to be this rich? Not even the best rap artist is this rich?

He laughed...

Him: sometimes when God blesses you it's like he is showing off I put my glass down...

Him: i thought as a Prophet you would embrace that



NOVELSGURU.COM

comment?

I wiped my lips...

Him: What's eating you up? I sighed..

Me: my mom confessed to killing my father, together with my Brother

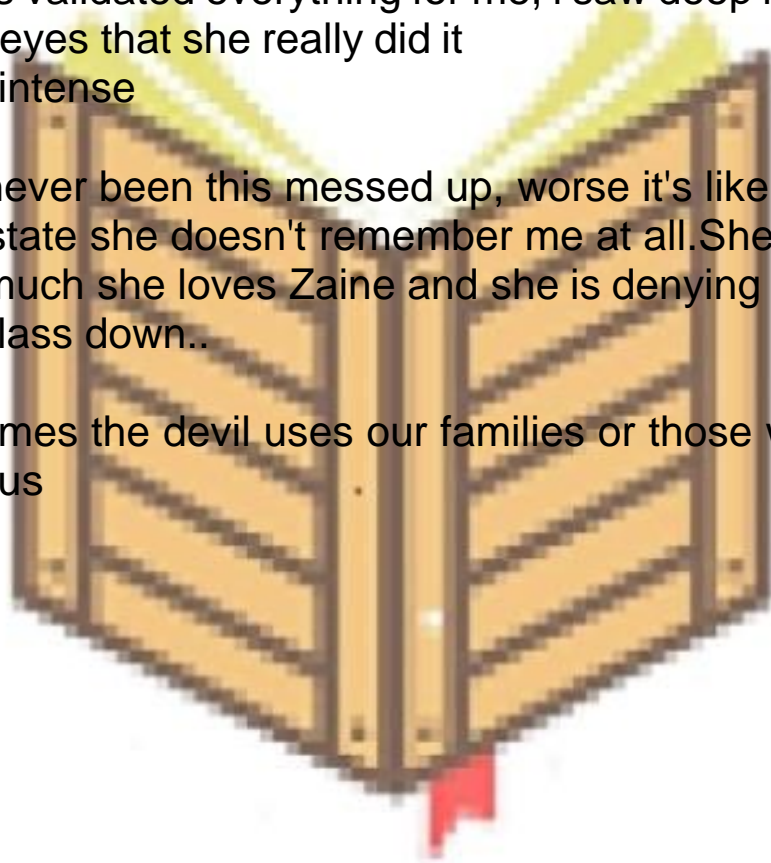
Him: that's deep

Me: her eyes validated everything for me, i saw deep in her heart through her eyes that she really did it

Him: that is intense

Me: i have never been this messed up, worse it's like she has lost her mental state she doesn't remember me at all. She is only talking about how much she loves Zaine and she is denying my existence
He put his glass down..

Him: sometimes the devil uses our families or those we are close with to hurt us



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i doubt the devil was at work hereHe looked at me...

Me: people do fucked up things and blame the devil

Him: do you think that God has intended for your family tohurt you?

I shrugged my shoulders..

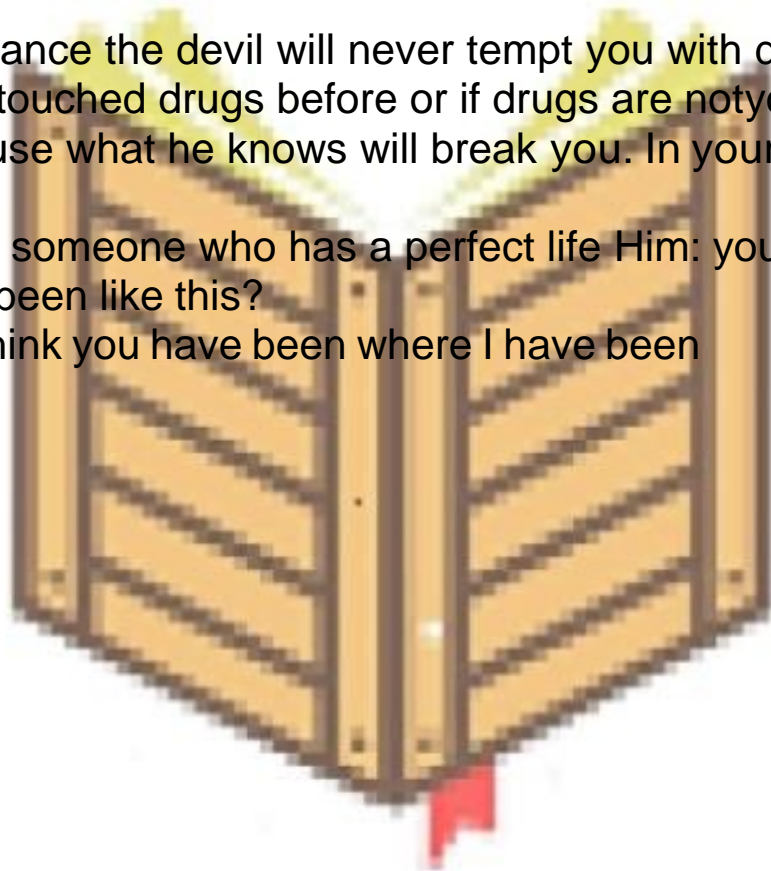
Him: Zaine you need to understand one thing. The devil will never use something that doesn't matter to you to hurtyou with

Me: elaborate

Him: for instance the devil will never tempt you with drugsif you have never touched drugs before or if drugs are notyour thing, he will always use what he knows will break you. In your case your family

Me: so says someone who has a perfect life Him: you think my life has always been like this?

Me: i don't think you have been where I have been



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i had to marry a girl who came from a family of witches. She was cursed that when she sleeps with the aguy, the following day the guy will wake up dead and in soo doing her family gets more and more successful.

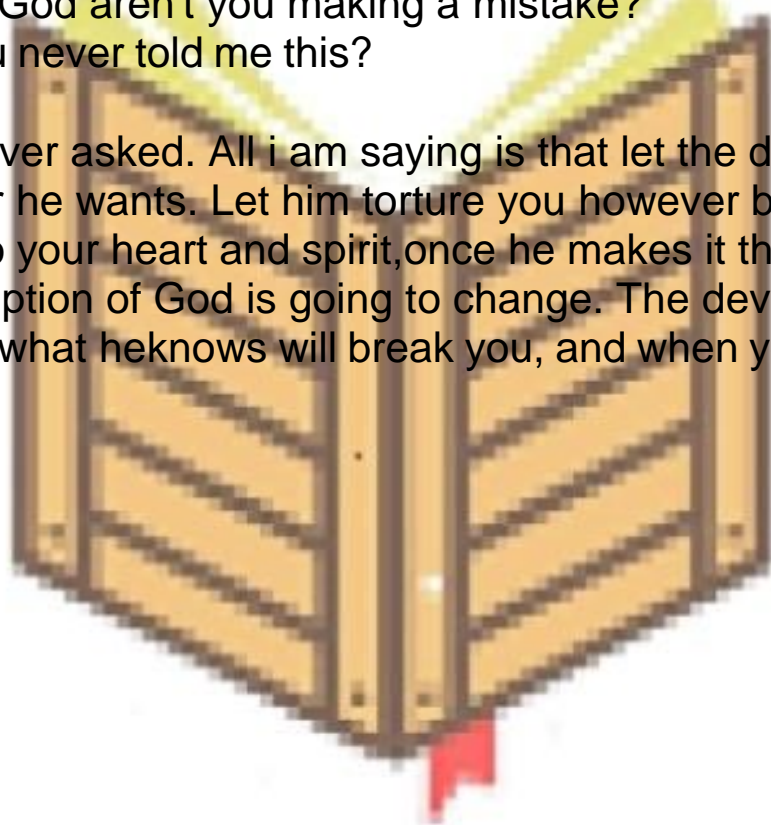
When i got her she was madly in love with some popular rapper Kush, you know how hard it is that i had to competewith a rapper?

Me: What?

Him: the first time i met her she was drunk, when God said"this is the girl you are going to marry" don't you think i went back and prayed that God aren't you making a mistake?

Me: why you never told me this?

Him: you never asked. All i am saying is that let the devil beat you up how ever he wants. Let him torture you however but never allow him to get to your heart and spirit,once he makes it there your whole perception of God is going to change. The devil will always hit you with what heknows will break you, and when you broken you are



NOVELSGURU.COM

stripped off your strength and that's where he gets to you and confuses you more because you are defenseless
That made a lot of sense, after what happened at the hospital i gave in to Anger and pain...

Him: always guard your heart, the devil cannot read the heart when he hits you he waits for your reaction and that's where he will see if he got you or not. And once you get to that point you will no longer be aligned with the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit is peaceful it cannot communicate with you while you angry and everything. Once you no longer feel the presence of the Holy Spirit you will no longer be let known about the devil's plans and that's when he is gonna attack you left right and center

I am glad i decided to come to Badru, when you at the lowest point of your life you need people who can talk to you like this and about this, people who will motivate you and give you strength again..



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

I was done bathing, i had put on my Pjs and i was preparing to go to bed. I thought Zaine was probably gonna walk in through that door but he didn't, i wanted usto talk and just come to a conclusion if we wanna make this work or not..

The door bell rang, i went to open thinking that it's Zainebut it was the police..

Police 1: Good evening mam'Me: Evening
He was holding a paper with him..

Him: we are looking for a Zaine Radebe, does he live here?I
nodded...

Police 2: is he here?Me: No

Police 2: where can we find him?Me: this is In connection to what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Police 1: we have a warrant for his arrest
Me: Arrest him for what?
Police 1: statutory rape and assault
This was not happening..

To be continued

December 19, 2016 at 8:29pm · Public

Li PURGATORY

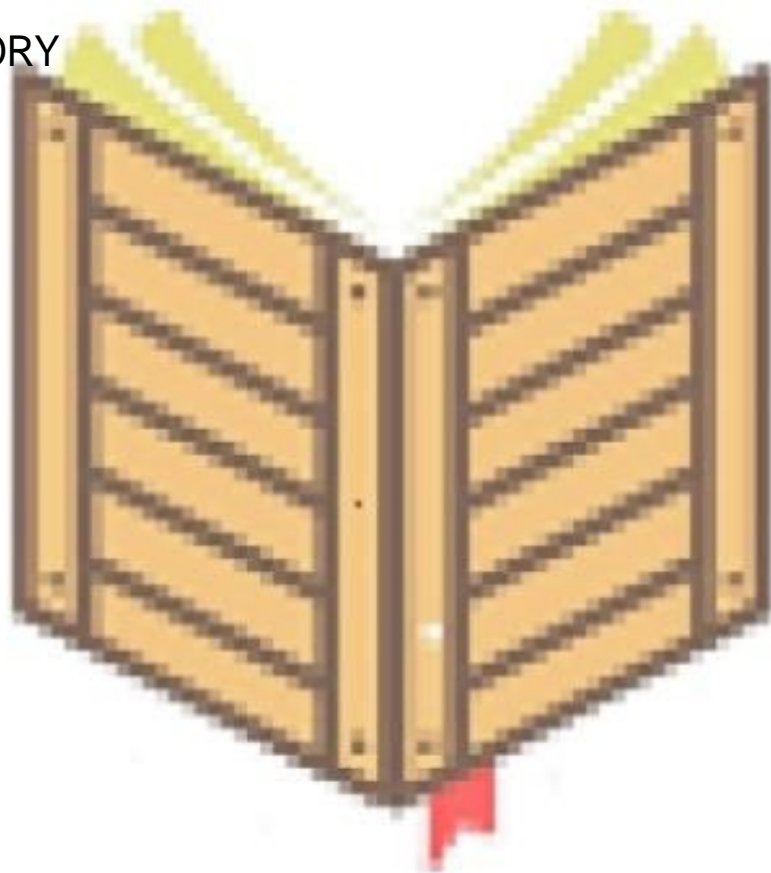
.

.

.

¥61

ZAINE



NOVELSGURU.COM

Prophet Badru opened up my eyes to things that i wasn't aware of, a lot of things are happening in my life that i cannot explain or understand hence that is why I tend to react in a more emotional way when emotions are involved...

I don't know where my life is headed, i cannot comprehend or even begin to explain what is happening to anyone only those who have been in my shoes would understand my pain. The pain of having to give up your dreams to follow a dream that you don't understand, the pain of being a "Prophet". Yes i call my gift a pain because the more i try to understand and accept it, the more i become an enemy to everyone. The more I become an enemy to my family too...

I was driving back home and listening to the radio when i heard Blake's song being played. It's totally new material than the one that we have previously recorded. It wasn't his style but it wasn't bad either, surely Ambitious entertainment is gonna make a lot of money from him money i gave up on to follow something that i am not even



NOVELSGURU.COM

sure that is gonna pay off at the end of the day... How am i gonna be able to support myself or Bonolo as a Prophet?

Where will I get money from by ministering the word of God to poor souls?

Those are the things i always think about when i try tounderstand everything...

I arrived at home and i was a bit stunned to see Police cars parked next to the gate,did something happen to Bonolo and Blessing as i was gone because she was upset when i left.. I quickly made my way inside to find outwhat was happening and they were standing in the kitchenwith Bonolo..

One of the cops looked at me..Him: are you Zaine Radebe?

Me: yes

He approached me with handcuffs..

Him: Zaine Radebe you are under arrest for the assult ofLeighton Radebe. Claims of you living with a minor and



NOVELSGURU.COM

having a sexual relationship with her were also brought forward therefore you have the right to remain silent, anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of Law. You have a right to an attorney, if you cannot afford one, one will be appointed to you Being merendised made me realise that shit is real, i wasgoing to jail for a long time...

Bonolo: Zaine has never slept with mePolice 2: are you the minor?

Bonolo: i am not a minor. My son is a minor, i am not a minor

Police 1: how old are you? Aren't you 17?Me: Yes Sir i am

Police: don't you have a parent or legal guardian that we can take you too?

Me: i don't need to be taken anywhere, i am perfectly fineand happy here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Hearing her say those that she is happy here, gave me hope that at least i am not always doing wrong by her..

Her: officers you have got the wrong person, Zaine hasn't done anything. The person you need to be looking too is..

She paused..Police 1: is?

Her: you just have the wrong personMe: are the handcuffs necessary?

Police 2: we following procedure

Me: i am not resisting arrest, so please take them offThey looked at each other and uncuffed me..

Can i have a moment with my girlfriend?Police 1: we cannot leave your sight

Me: fine

I walked over to Bonolo..

Her: this cannot be happening to me. What am I gonna do



NOVELSGURU.COM

without you?

Bonolo has her tears always ready to reveal her broken heart. No matter how much she tries at times to hold back, but she has been hurt a lot so her heart gives in easily..

Me: i just need you to do me one favor She looked at me...

Me: where is your phone? Her: I'll get it

She went to get it... Police 2: we have to go

Me: this will only take one second, i need to make sure that my girlfriend and my step son are fine before i leave

Bonolo came back with her phone and i punched in Badru's number...

Me: call him he will come and get you, he is the only person that can protect you right now. It's important that you call him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i will

I hugged her as she cried..Her: i don't want you to go Me: i don't
wanna go eitherPolice 2: it's time to go sir

He came to me and separated us, Bonolo was clinging onto me for
her life while crying...

Me: it's okay just call the number, he is a friendThey walked me out
to the police car..

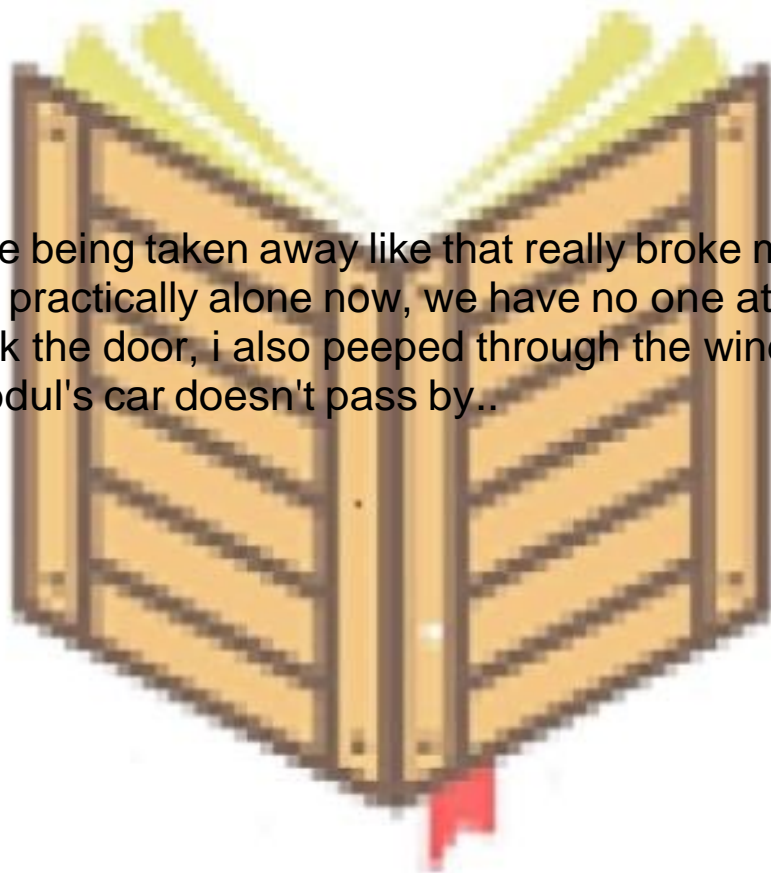
.

.

BONOLO

Seeing Zaine being taken away like that really broke me.Blessing
and i we are practically alone now, we have no one at all...

I went to lock the door, i also peeped through the windowmaking
sure that Abdul's car doesn't pass by..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my phone and looked at the number before calling it. It was only written "Badru" what am i gonna say to him?

Hey my boyfriend has just been arrested for statutory rape and i need you to come and get me while i am the cause of his arrest?

I didn't have a choice though but to call the person, and a male voice answered..

Him: Hello

Me: i.. Can i please talk to Badru? Him: Speaking

Me: Badru uhm.. You speaking to Bonolo.. Za.. Zaine just got arrested

Him: for what? Me: Stat.. Assault

Him: which station is he at? Me: i am not sure

Him: are you alright? where are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that's why I'm calling. Someone is after me and i can'tstay here alone with my Son, Zaine said you can help
Him: tell me where you are

Me: Zaine's place at lakeside guesthouseHim: pack a few clothes i am on my way Me: thank you
I don't know if i should trust this person but, Zaine trustshim so i probably should too..

. #ZAINE

When i got to the police station i was asked to write down a statement my own version of what happened at the hospital. I am not in Prison yet, but this is a place that a person shouldn't find themselves in. Even when you innocent but there's this little fear that you get everytime when you at the police station..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When i was done with my statement i was taken down to the holding cells. I am gonna share a temporary cell with possible murderers, robbers, and so forth. Was i scared? Yes i was scared i was very scared. I made my way to sit on the bench with all eyes looking at me, only God knows what they were thinking of doing to me

. #BONOLO

Badru showed up together with his wife, i didn't think it was the same guy i had met at the hospital. His wife was very beautiful, she also had a beautiful smile and looked like a kind person but aren't they all? until they show you their true colors like Ms Jackson. She introduced herself to me as Mercy and i introduced myself too... I was sitting at the back seat with Blessing while Badru took the wheel, i was listening to their random conversation..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mercy: i really thought you were gonna go for a moredarker colour
Him: red is a darker colour

Her: No honey, and it's very weird for a Prophet to bedriving a red
golf 7

Him: Why? All my cars are big i just wanted a smaller carHer: but a
golf?

Him: What's wrong with it?Her: spells out "player"
He laughed..

Her: its not funny imagine when girls go crazy over thissituation
they will think you a blesser

Him: so you jealous of my car because it's going to attractgirls?

Her: i bet Bonolo is already attracted

My mind was far away until she touched my knee. I was admiring
their moment thinking of how lucky they are why



NOVELSGURU.COM

can't some of us be this lucky? Me: im sorry you were saying? Her:
are you worried about Zaine?Me: a lot
Her: everything Is going to be alright

Pssshhh how can she relate to my problems or even saythat when
she has a perfect life and perfect everything including marriage...
Badru: you know Bonolo you have the power to set Zainefree
Me: huh?

Him: Zaine will be set free by youMe: how?
Him: the answer lies deep inside of you

Me: if i knew how to set him free i would've long set himfree
Him: pray for the holy spirit to give you insight and when



NOVELSGURU.COM

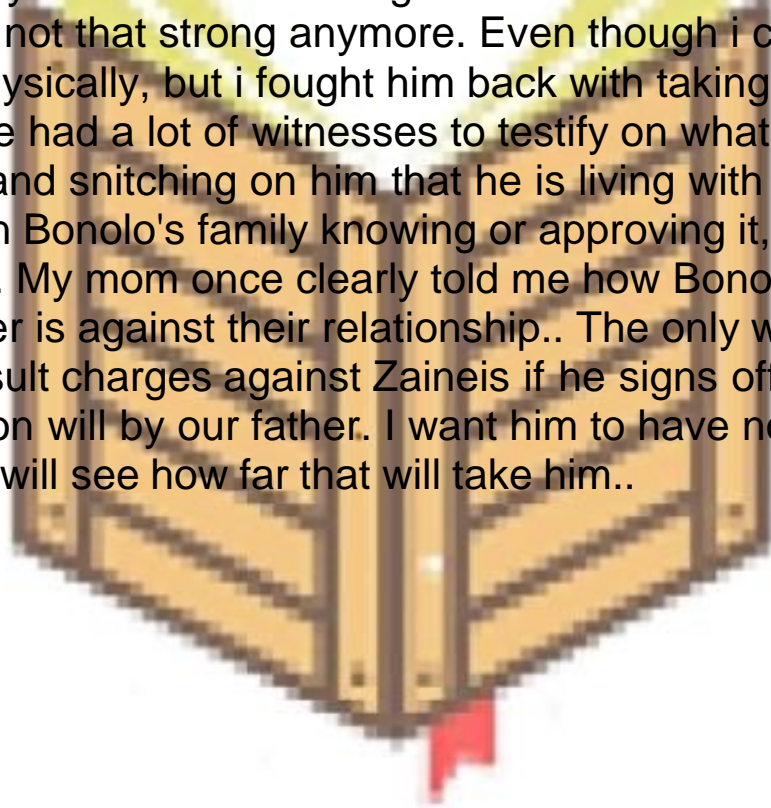
you wake up tomorrow you will have your answer

.

.

LEIGHTON

I was admitted, the Doctor said he wanna keep me here for a couple of days because Zaine did damage to my already damaged self. The only reason I couldn't fight back was because of the stroke, i am not that strong anymore. Even though i couldn't fight him back physically, but i fought him back with taking away his freedom. We had a lot of witnesses to testify on what had happened, and snitching on him that he is living with a minor without even Bonolo's family knowing or approving it, that was icing on the cake. My mom once clearly told me how Bonolo's Grandmother is against their relationship.. The only way I am gonna drop the assult charges against Zaineis if he signs off everything left for him on will by our father. I want him to have nothing but his Gift and we will see how far that will take him..



NOVELSGURU.COM

it will be hard following his gift while he is homeless and angry..

.

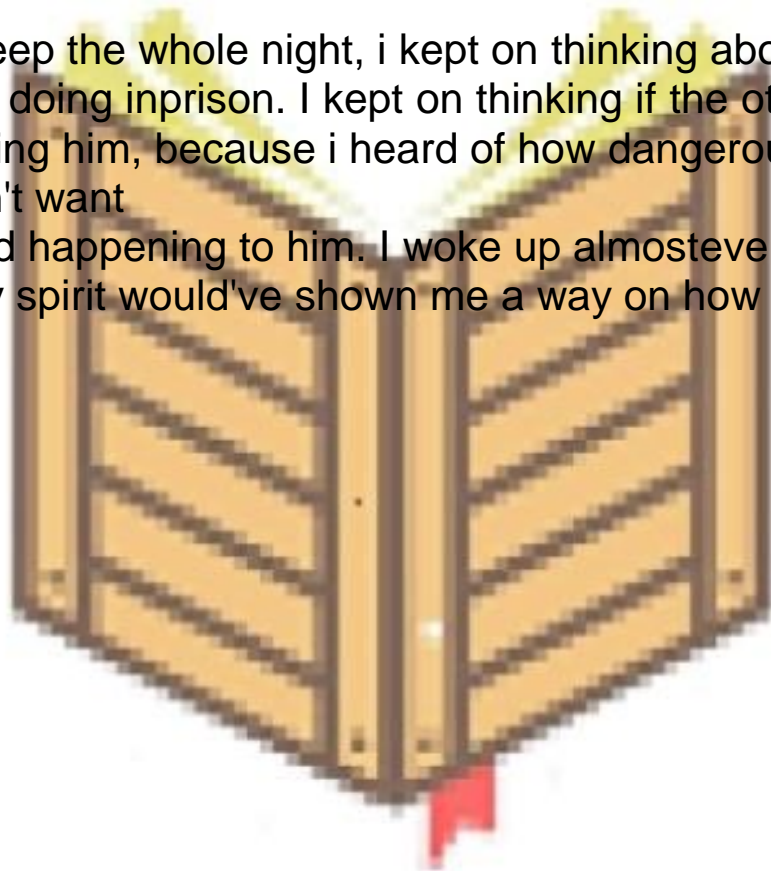
To be continued 1 hr · Public

.

¥62

BONOLO

I couldn't sleep the whole night, i kept on thinking about Zaine and how he was doing in prison. I kept on thinking if the other prisoners weren't hurting him, because i heard of how dangerous prisons can be and i don't want anything bad happening to him. I woke up almost every hour hoping that the holy spirit would've shown me a way on how to set him free since his



NOVELSGURU.COM

freedom lies in my hands somehow. I was hurt, iwas very hurt that he was in jail because of me and all he tried do was to just help me and give me a better life than all of those people who promised me a better life but ended up hurting me.

I don't think that I will survive without him, he

is my strength. Simon was right on his statement i do love Zaine and i really wanna be with him. I mean i thought i loved Simon but my heart belongs to Zaine...

I woke up the following day and i sat up straighton the bed thinking for a while. A part of me was broken I really wanna help Zaine but i can'ti really feel helpless and my mind is blank...

My phone disturbed me from my deep thoughts



NOVELSGURU.COM

when it rang. I took it and checked, it was a number that I didn't recognize..

I answered...Me: Hello

A familiar voice replied... Voice: Bonolo it's me, LuciaMe: Lucia?

I was a bit surprised getting a phone call from Lucia, i don't recall her having a phone or even knowing my number...

Me: how did you?

Her: Simon left his number that i can call him, i called him and he gave me your number. I hope you don't mind

Me: mind? Are you crazy? You like the only sister i ever had



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: how are you? How is the city treating you?Me: it's good, it's treating me good

Her: what's the nicest thing that has happened to you?

Me: well i have a bf that i adore, and he adores me back

Her: wow! He Must be a great person

Me: he is a lot. You know after Abd.. After what happened to me i lost all hope, i gave up on everything I hated men I thought that I'll never trust or love any other guy again well except for Simon. But then Zaine came along and...

Her: Zaine?Me: Yes

Her: funny you should mention that name because I met a Zaine too this other day, he was



NOVELSGURU.COM

with Simon
Me: Really?
Her: Yes
Me: Why would Zaine come there?

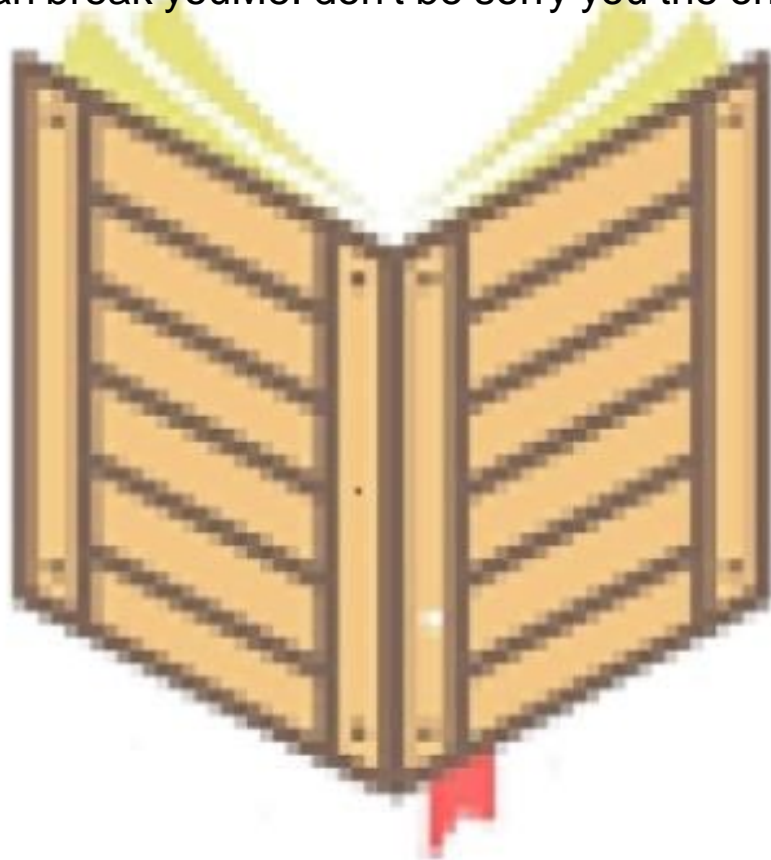
Her: i don't know but they came to see Abdul and he didn't want him entering the house

Me: ohw since when do you call him by his name?
Her: Since..

She paused..
Me: Since???

She exhaled....
Her: i am sorry Bonolo

Me: about what?
Her: everything that Abdul has been doing to you, i didn't know how deep they can break you
Me: don't be sorry you the one who understood



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i know but i didn't know how deep they were. I would see you crying sometimes but i never really knew how deeply hurt this can leave

you, the mental, emotional, and physical pain thatyou went through

Me: you speaking like you have experienced suchShe kept quiet...

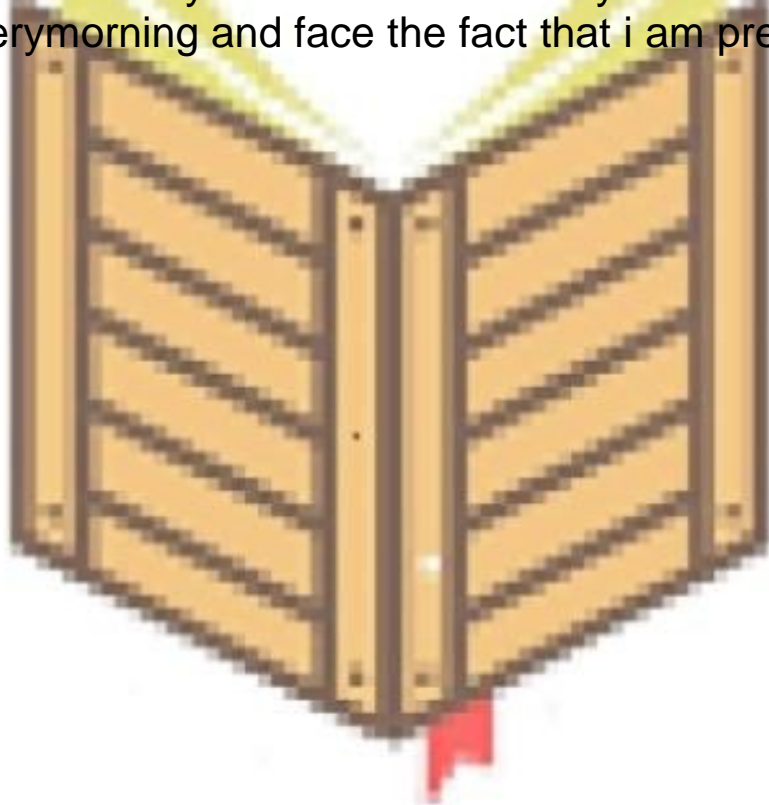
Me: Lucia, is there something you not tellingme?

I heard her sniffing..

Her: when you left Abdul replaced you with meMe: what?

Her: i am not strong like you, i don't think that i can survive.

Everyday i think of ways on how i can Kill myself because i cannot wake up everymorning and face the fact that i am pregnant by



NOVELSGURU.COM

my father.

Hearing Lucia breaking like that really killed me inside, it brought back all the pain that I have tried to bury deep down...

Her: i just wish there's something i can do to bring him down, Abdul has to pay for everything that he has done to all the poor souls out there I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Someone is at the door i have to go Her: okay I'll call you later

Me: which phone are you using?

Her: Simon gave me a phone the last time he was here

The person kept on knocking... Me: come in

The door opened and Mercy walked in, she stood



NOVELSGURU.COM

at the door waiting for me to finish with the call..

Me: Simon brought you a phone?

Her: Yes so i can call him, we talk though i always hide the phone from Abdul

Me: that's very nice, look we will talk later Her: bye

Me: don't do anything stupid Her: i won't

Me: bye Her: bye

I hung up and wiped my tears...

Mercy: such an emotional call i anticipate? Me: something like that
She made her way to me..

Mercy was very beautiful. Not only was she



NOVELSGURU.COM

beautiful but she also had a beautiful curvybody...
Her: how are you feeling? I shrugged my shoulders...
Her: i am sure that Zaine is finel looked down at my phone...
Me: probably

She kept quiet, i looked at her...Her: im sorry but...
Me: but what?

Her: i don't know but i feel like there's this vibebetween us
Me: vibe?

Her: like you don't like me Me: why wouldn't i like you? Her: i don't
know. You tell me



NOVELSGURU.COM

She was right I don't like her. The reason being is that i envy her life, i wish i had this perfect everything of hers. Her perfect marriage, her big house, just her everything....

Her: i was just here to let you know that breakfast is ready

Me: ohw I'll be down thank you She made her way to the door...

I stood up while thinking what Simon and Zaine went to see Abdul about??? Just at that moment the holy spirit revealed to me on how i can help Zaine...

.

.

ZAINE

One can never sleep in such Conditions, i never



NOVELSGURU.COM

slept not even a little. I took a lot of time and thought about my life and everything else until it hit me that this is real I might be going to jail for a long time. I prayed in my heart the whole night asking for forgiveness and also striking a deal with God that if he gets me through this I will never ever abandon my gift or let alone swear at him. Deep down from the deepest core the Holy Spirit talked to me that I should also ask for forgiveness from Leighton, before I can continue with my journey I must make things right between me and my brother... At around 09:00am I asked if I could make a phone call and I was allowed.. I called Leighton and he answered.
Me: it's Zaine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: what do you want?

Me: i just wanted to apologize man, i lost my cool and acted on my feelings

Him: Why did you do what you did? Me: i..

Maybe i shouldn't tell him about what Ms Jackson told me..

Him: after seeing mom like that and her talking about she loves you more than me, i lost it

He chuckled..

Him: Zaine.. Zaine.. I understand my brother, Jealousy is not an easy thing to experience Me: yeah kind of

Him: Since you have admitted to your mistakes, i will drop the charges

Me: you will?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Yes, only in one condition
Me: let's hear it
Him: if you agree for Mom to be put in a mental institution
I thought about that for a few seconds..
Me: only if i will have visitation rights
Him: Done.. That's not all
Me: what else?

Him: everything that Dad has signed off to you from his will i want it all

Now that was absurd, i cannot sign off my dad's legacy to him..

Me: you cannot expect me to do that, i need to share in my father's legacy

Him: then you will be in jail for a long time. Maybe you will use your Gift to preach to the



NOVELSGURU.COM

prisoners

The Holy Spirit spoke to me, that i should givehim all that he is asking for....

Me: fine you can have it all

Him: i will call the detective to come and see me....the statutory rape charges your girlfriendwill have to help you with that

The cop tapped me on my shoulder and indicatedthat i should get off the phone. That was a bitch because I wanted to call Bonolo and tell her to come and clear me off the charges by telling the cops about the nature of our relationship and that i didn't force her into anything let alone sleep with her..

Police: time to go back to the cell Me: can't i make one last call please?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: no, you only allowed one phone call a day! was taken back to my cell...

.

. #BONOLO

I had asked Badru to drive me to the police station but he was busy, instead Mercy drove me. She was busy making small talk in the car but i was focused on the goal and what is expected of me to do..... When we got to the police station, i quickly got off the car and made my way to the entrance and then the receptionist. When i let them know why i was there, they referred me to a certain detective who took me to some room where it was just me and him so he can ask me questions and



NOVELSGURU.COM

listen to my story...

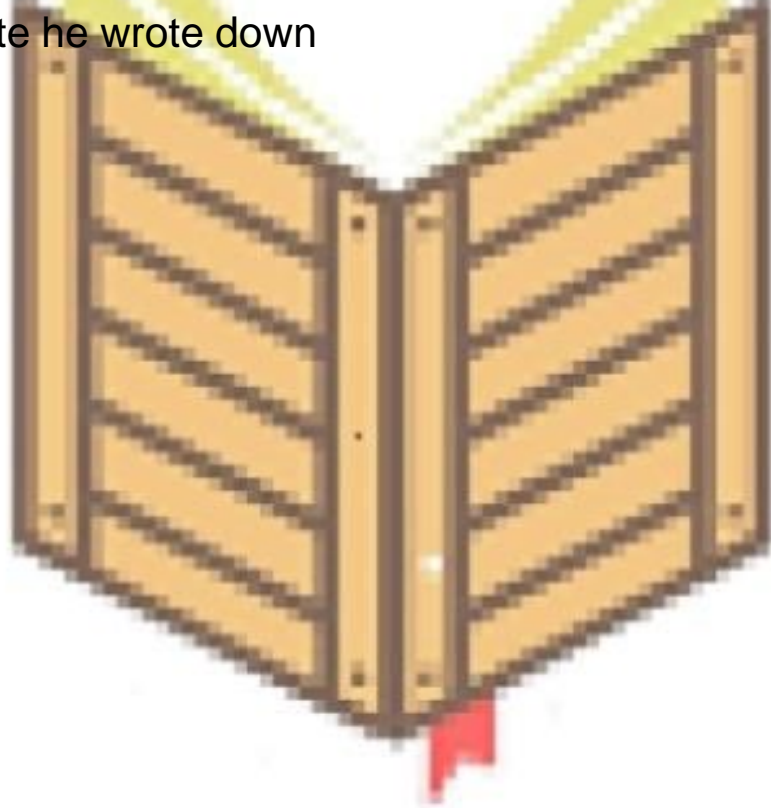
Mercy and Blessing sat at the reception waiting for me..

At first i was scared to talk but deep down i knew i had to do this for me, Zaine and most importantly for Lucia...

I told the detective everything about Abdul and how he used to abuse me sexually. I told him about the purgatory and how things operate there, how people are forced to live under critical conditions, and are being held against their will....

I also went on to give him Lucia's number so he can talk to him..

He walked out to call Lucia then came back after a while.. Since i wasn't literate he wrote down



NOVELSGURU.COM

everything that I said and he also recorded me. Even though I don't know how to write but i had to sign that my statement is true and correct. I just jotted down the first thing that came to my mind which was writing my name since Simon taught me how to write that.. He told me to go wait at the receptionist, and asked if they can do a paternity test will Blessing's DNA match with that of Abdul's? Am i sure that Abdul is really Blessing's father? I answered yes to both questions and then he let me go to the reception..

Mercy: how did it go?

Me: i don't know he didn't say We sat down.. I don't know if he believed me or not but i hope



NOVELSGURU.COM

he did, Abdul has to go down..

The detective surprised me a great deal when he walked into the reception with Zaine...

I stood up...

Detective: you can just sign your release forms He signed the forms that were given to him....

Detective: you are officially a free man, you are cleared from all your charges.

We also got a statement from your brother he dropped the assault charges against you Zaine: thank you

He made his way to me after signing the forms, I was so happy to see him that I couldn't stop the tears...he hugged me tight

Him: thank you

Deep down I felt that I did the right thing...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: you welcome

As we were hugging, i saw a squad of cops beingsummoned by the detective, they were wearing those police vests and carrying guns. The detective was also given the vest. He wore it on top of his shirt and then said a few things to the crew then after they walked out..

He came to me before exiting... Him: it's over, that i promise you

Me: make sure you throw away the key deep inthe ocean

He gave me a side smile and then walked out...Zaine looked at me..

Him: What's going on?

I looked at the cops as they got into the vans..Me: nothing much



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked at him.. Me: let's go home

.

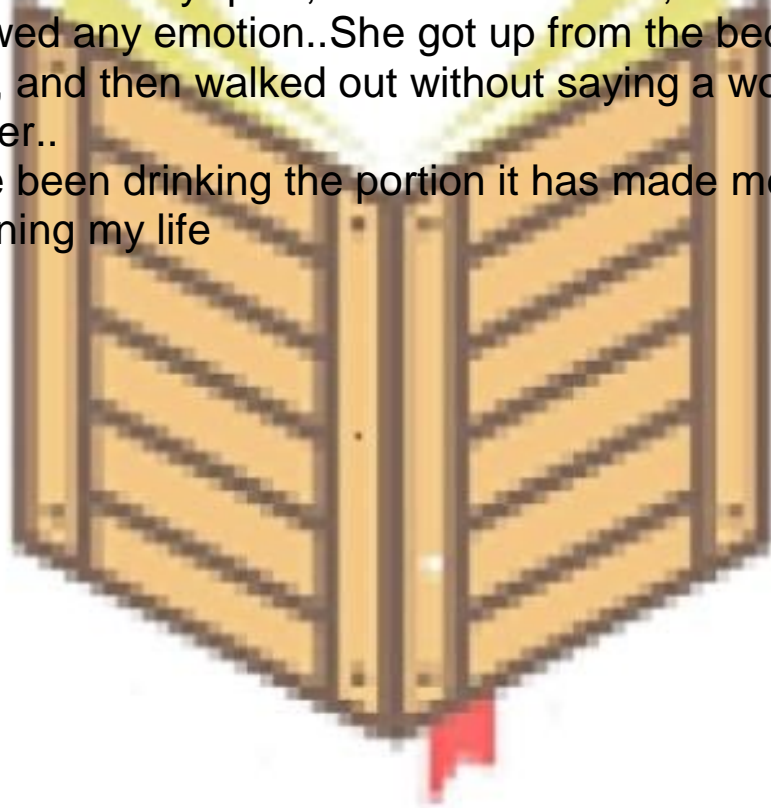
.

ABDUL

I had just finished having sexual intercourse with Lucia. Unlike Bonolo we did it in the house, our family house. I got off her and she laid there with her face turned to the other side..

Today she was awfully quiet, she didn't scream, she didn't flinch in pain or showed any emotion.. She got up from the bed and started dressing up, and then walked out without saying a word.. I went and hit the shower..

Since i have been drinking the portion it has made me strong i was slowly regaining my life



NOVELSGURU.COM

back.

After showering i changed into clean clothes and then made my way to eat breakfast. Bonolo's mother was the one who prepared breakfast today..

Me: i thought you would be sleeping Her: i can't, i need to do something

She hasn't had good health because of my poisoning her..

Me: where is Lucia?

Her: she stormed off and went outside

Me: please go wash the sheets in my bedroom Her: I'll get to that now

She walked upstairs..

I had my breakfast while reading the newspaper, was a very peaceful morning..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After breakfast i went to take my phone then came back downstairs to call Leighton when thekitchen door burst open and cops walked in...

Me: what the??

The way they came in it was almost as if likethey have come to arrest the most notoriouscriminal ever..

One of them came to me with his gun pointed atme..

Him: are you Abdul Seko?Me: Yes

Him: cuff him

Two cops came up to me...Me: excuse me, what it is?

Him: Abdul you are under arrest for having sexual relations with minors and holding people



NOVELSGURU.COM

hostage without their consent. You are... Me: hold right there sir, I think you making amistake

Cop: a certain young girl by the name of Bonolotold us everything

Me: you can't listen to that tart!! As i am

telling you, you making a big mistake. I am a manof God!

Lucia showed up from outside with her eyes fullof tears..

Her: its not a mistake, it's trueThe cop looked her..

Cop: are you Lucia Seko?Lucia: yes sir

Him: the one i talked too over the phone?

She nodded. She was trying to show a brave front



NOVELSGURU.COM

but deep down she was scared... Cop: can i take down your statement?She wiped her tears and nodded..
Cop: would you also testify against him?Her: Yes
I heard another voice talking behind me...Voice: i will also testify
It was Bonolo's mother..Another voice arose...
Voice: me too

That was my first wife Lucia's mother..

Cop: we have a solid case here, take him awayThey dragged me outside..

Me: wait... You cannot listen to them!

I was taken out and led one of the police vansoutside, and everyone was outside. I even saw



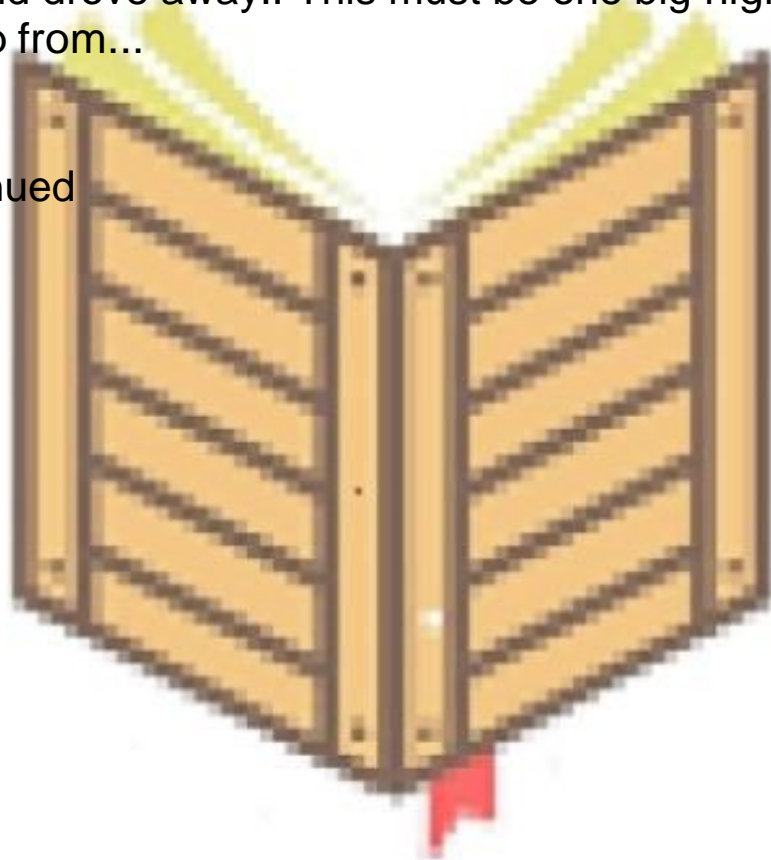
NOVELSGURU.COM

cameras flashing at me with people walking up to me and asking me weird questions like "how do you feel preying on young girls"..." did your church stand for the truth or you just one of those fake Prophets"

I don't know who they were, how they were allowed into the premises with cameras or who even called them...

Some of the residents of purgatory were happy, singing and chanting. Some were spitting on me and throwing me with stones, cops were trying to protect me from the angry mob until we got to the van and drove away.. This must be one big nightmare that I will wake up from...

To be continued



NOVELSGURU.COM

PURGATORY

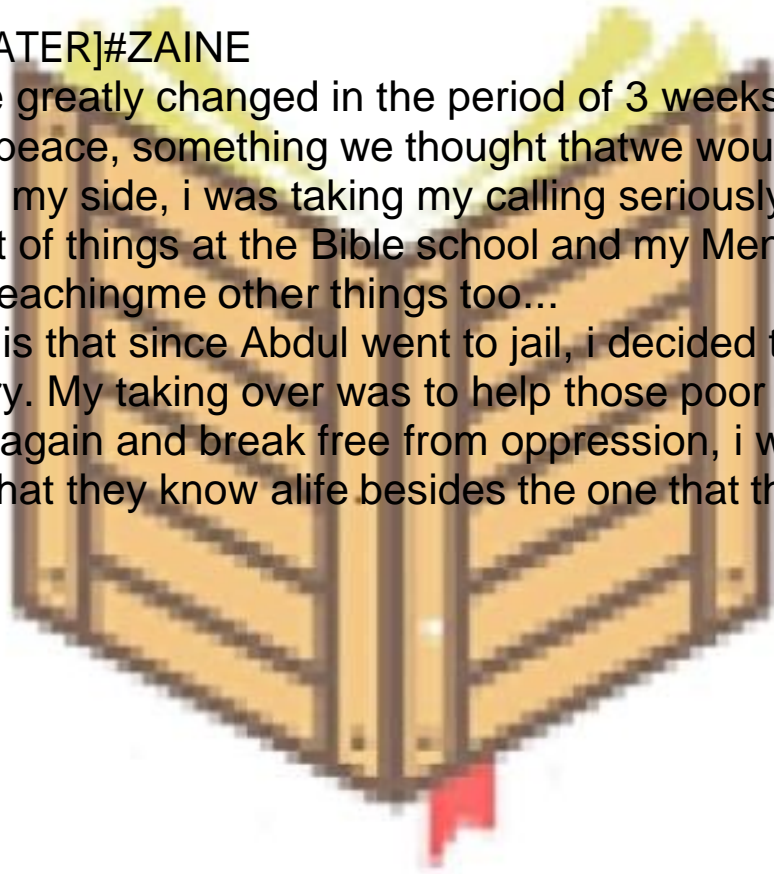
.
. .
. . .

¥63

[3 WEEKS LATER]#ZAINÉ

Things have greatly changed in the period of 3 weeks. There was this Devine peace, something we thought thatwe would never achieve. On my side, i was taking my calling seriously now i have learned a lot of things at the Bible school and my Mentor Prophet Badru was teachingme other things too...

What's new is that since Abdul went to jail, i decided to take over at the purgatory. My taking over was to help those poor souls find their selves again and break free from oppression, i wanted to make sure that they know alife besides the one that they have been living....



NOVELSGURU.COM

What they surprised me with was appointing me as their reverend, i was a bit anxious at first with that i mean those people have been brainwashed how do i begin to change their perception of God and religion as a whole? But the holy spirit was for me leading Purgatory, and having the holy spirit within me i knew that this was gonna be a less terrifying road...

For the first few days it was difficult preaching there, but now they starting to get the hang of everything and that's what I want as long as the Gospel is preached the right way then i am happy and as long as God is shown in a correct way then i am at peace..

Bonolo was more happy than she has ever been, her and her mother's relationship took off from the ground and they became best friends just like that. Past pains and wrong doings were forgiven, her mother still lives at the comp but comes to our house every morning to look after Blessing while Bonolo goes off to school. We have enrolled her at Abet, she didn't have to start from scratch because she knew how to write her name and was familiar



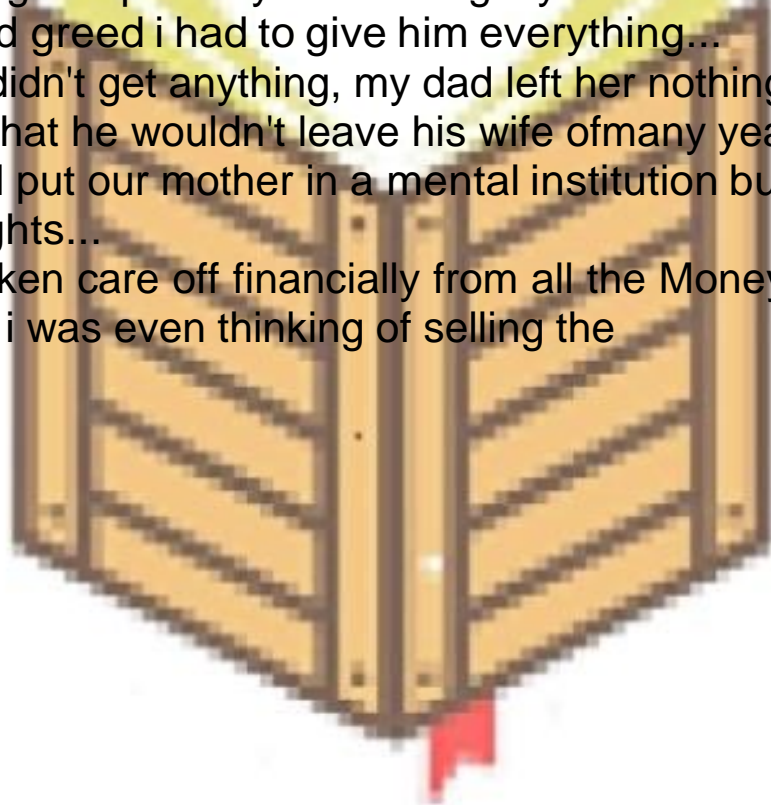
NOVELSGURU.COM

with certain other things thanks to Simon...

Unfortunately my relationship with Leighton remained bruised. I kept my end of the deal too and signed off everything to him, my dad left me his cars and a bit of money apart from the 500 000 i got and the confidential release of his latest book that he worked on, on his last days That wasn't included in the will hence Leighton didn't know about it. Leighton only got a share of his money too together with the share of the house of which i had to sign the rights away to him so he can be the sole owner of everything. It was very painful that i had to give up on my father's legacy like that but for the sake of peace and greed i had to give him everything...

My mother didn't get anything, my dad left her nothing which came as a shock that he wouldn't leave his wife of many years nothing. Leighton did put our mother in a mental institution but I had visitation rights...

I was still taken care off financially from all the Money my father had left me, and i was even thinking of selling the



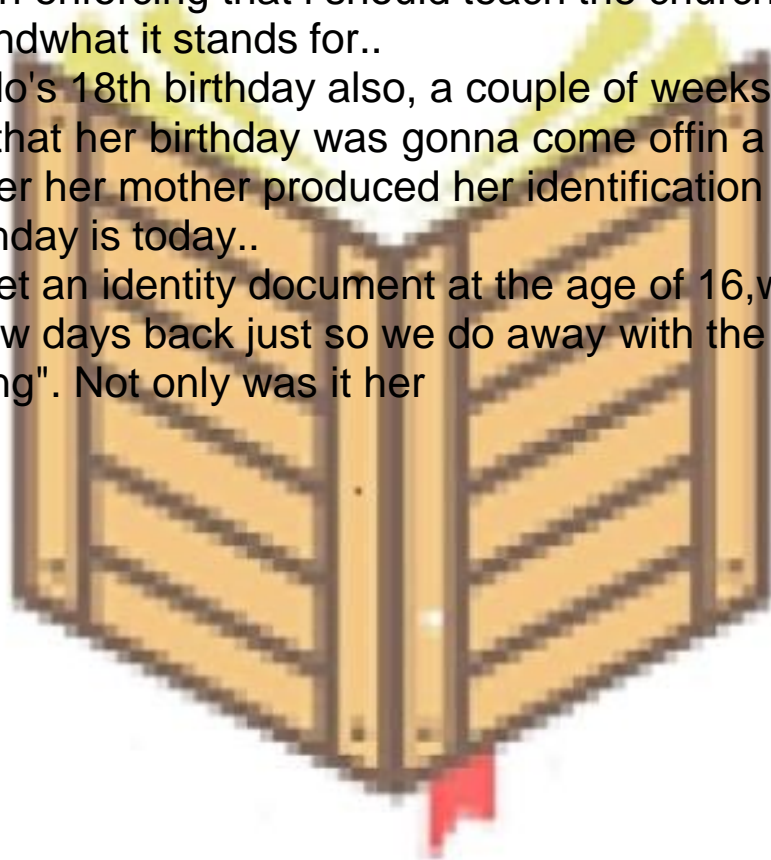
NOVELSGURU.COM

studio to have more money until Bonolo came up with a great idea that she can record a gospel album and we can sell a lot. With her talent and me being a music producer we can go far seeing that Gospel is another successful genre when it comes to music..

Today it was a Sunday morning, we were preparing ourselves to go to Purgatory we were gonna have a service there from 09:00-14:00. The message for today was gonna be about "Purgatory". The Holy Spirit kept on enforcing that I should teach the church about the real Purgatory and what it stands for..

It was Bonolo's 18th birthday also, a couple of weeks ago we kept on thinking that her birthday was gonna come off in a few months time, but after her mother produced her identification we learned that her birthday is today..

Since you get an identity document at the age of 16, we went to get her one a few days back just so we do away with the stigma of "you are still young". Not only was it her



NOVELSGURU.COM

birthday but it was also a big day for us, we are set to get engaged at Purgatory. We thought long and hard about getting married and we both agreed that it's still early we not prepared or ready for that. We still gonna attend Bishop McCarthy's classes every Saturday Afternoon where he teaches about "marriage" and learn from there on what we will be getting ourselves into..

I was done preparing myself, we were waiting for Bonolo as usual she takes forever even though she wakes up early. I was in kitchen with Bonolo's mother, i was drinking coffee while she was feeding Blessing.. She had spent a night here..

Blessing was getting big too, very soon we will be celebrating his 1 year old birthday....

I checked the time and we were really running late..Me: your Daughter takes forever to prepare herselfHer: that's how women are She continued feeding Blessing...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: have you noticed that you getting pretty popular?Me: is it because of the radio station?

Everytime when i preach, it gets aired on the radio allowingus to have a larger crowd at Purgatory. People from around town joins us for every sermon that we have..

Her: i think so

I drank my coffee again..

Her: you truly are gifted, your preaching comes from theheart it shows that you are led by the Holy Spirit

Me: thank you very much Her: today it's deliverance?

Me: yes it is, but still i need to teach the congregationabout something

Her: okay

I checked the time again...Her: I'll go and get her

Me: No it's fine, I'll go and get her



NOVELSGURU.COM

I put my mug down and went to the bedroom. We do share the same bed now but we haven't been intimate as yet, i first wanted her to be legal and i also wanted us to be binded by marriage/engagement first..

I slowly opened the door and she was busy on my phone doing whatever God knows what, i just stood there and looked at her for a while..

Her: Agh what is your Damn password!!!Me: try Zainolo

She freaked out and accidentally dropped my phone..Her: hey...

Me: hi

I looked at her waiting for an explanation..

She picked my phone up and threw it on the bed..Her: i am done we can go

I looked at my phone and then looked at her..Me: what were we doing with my phone?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: huh?

Me: you not deafHer: i..

Me: if you go through my phone it means you don't trust me, and a relationship without trust is useless

Her: it's not like that Me: then it's like what?

She failed to explain herself..

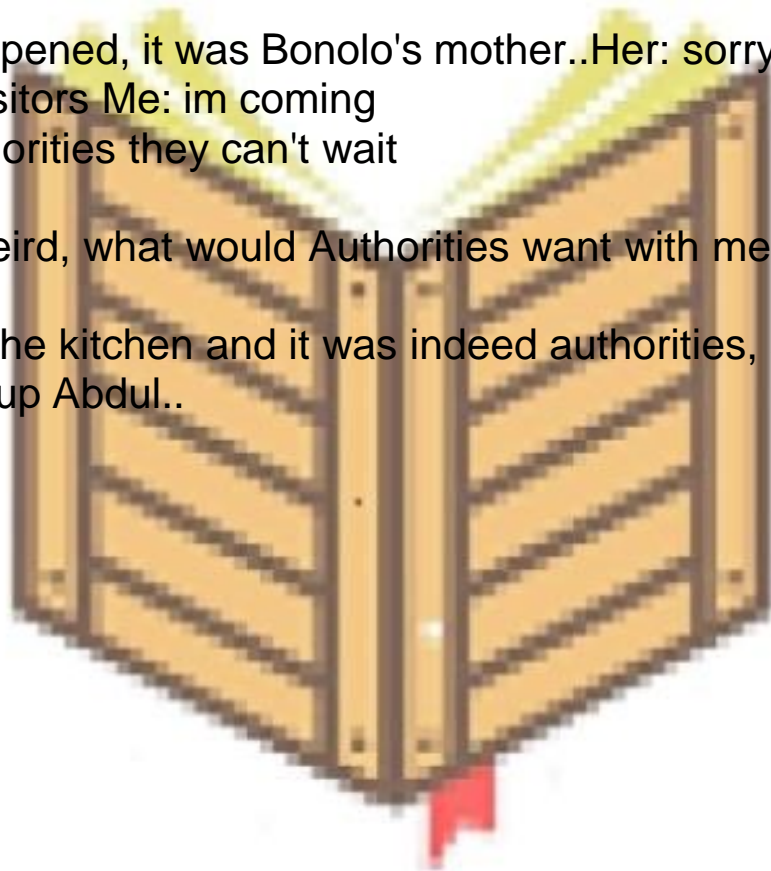
I then heard a knock on the door...

I went and opened, it was Bonolo's mother..Her: sorry to disturb but you have visitors Me: im coming

Her: its authorities they can't wait

That was weird, what would Authorities want with me?

I walked to the kitchen and it was indeed authorities, same detective who locked up Abdul..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Prophet Radebe
Me: good morning
Him: how are you sir?
Me: i was good until i saw you, mind you the holy spirit didn't tell me about your arrival
He chuckled..

Him: don't worry i am here with a different matter
Me: what is it?
They looked at each other, and then looked at me...
Him: we here because of a Melissa, do you know her?
Me: yes she is my ex
Him: when was the last time you saw her?

Me: it's been a while she is a person who disappears a lot

Him: well we were hoping that you could help us find her family since we found your address in her...
He paused..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: detective what is going on?

Him: it is with great sadness that i have to deliver such news to you but...Melissa was found dead early this morning in some bushes

Bonolo: ohhh my God!!

I didn't notice that she was standing behind me..

Detective: she was naked, we assume that she was sexually violated and then brutally beaten to death but we will wait for postmodern results

That was very hard to take in. When the detective was busy saying that in my mind i was picturing her beautiful smile, and everything else. What human being does that to another human being...

.

. #LEIGHTON

The service had started but weird enough the church



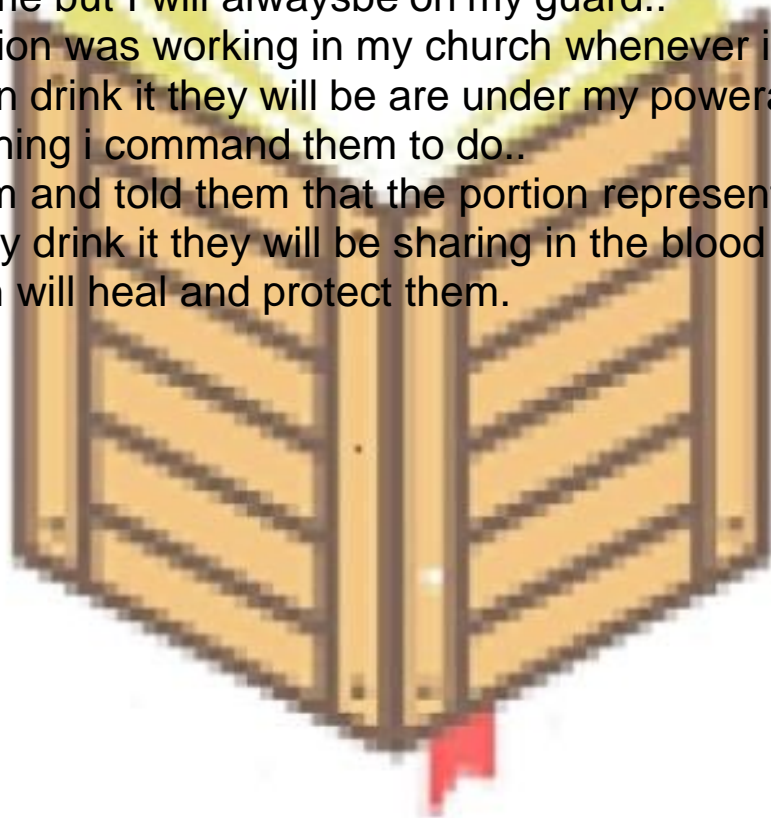
NOVELSGURU.COM

wasn't full like how it had been the past few weeks. It was very surprising, because I was doing a pretty good job when it comes to preaching. I would preach and people would respond in a positive way to my preaching, so what would make them leave like that? As if like life couldn't get any bizarre i learned that Abdul was in prison. It was All over papers about the nature of a Prophet that he was..

I still say he is innocent, this Bonolo was bad news from the beginning and this might be because she wanted Zaine to succeed as a Prophet that she saw Abdul as a threat, i know after they be coming for me but I will always be on my guard..

Abdul's portion was working in my church whenever i let my congregation drink it they will be are under my power and spell they can do anything i command them to do..

I lied to them and told them that the portion represents the blood of Jesus, if they drink it they will be sharing in the blood of Jesus Christ which will heal and protect them.



NOVELSGURU.COM

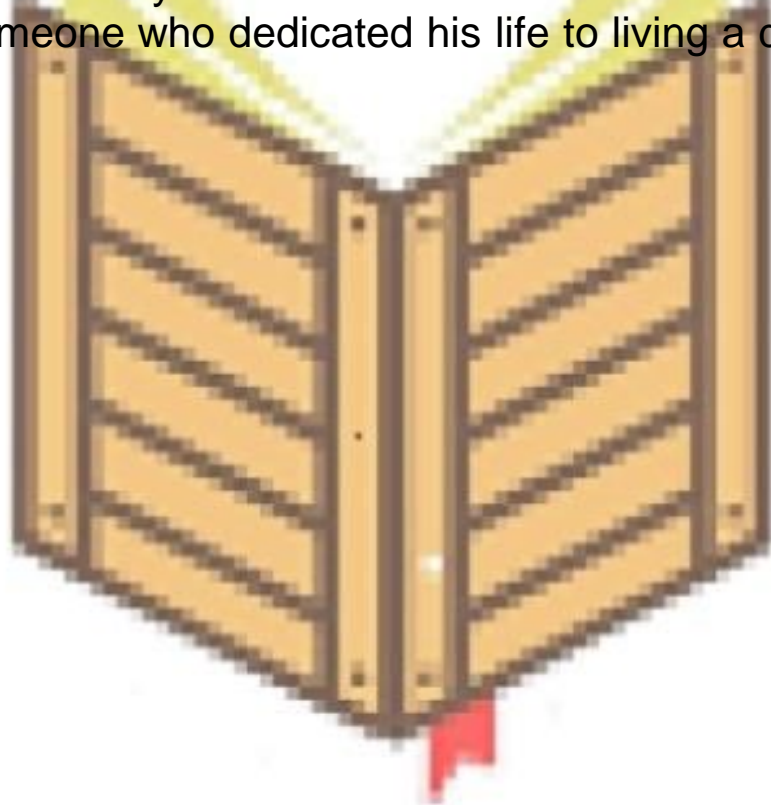
Even though Abdul is behind bars, but i still get the supply from the brotherhood..

I looked at those 80 members sitting waiting to hear what God says today, the church had decreased from +100 members to around 80 members now..

Me: what happened to everyone? They all kept quiet...

Him: did they forget? One member replied... Her: they at the purgatory

When she said that word, something in me wanted to strangle her right there, it is no secret that Zaine is the "itProphet" now, but I will never be defeated by someone who doesn't even know much about Religion, someone who dedicated his life to living a different life from ours..



NOVELSGURU.COM

#BONOLO

We were on our way to Purgatory and Zaine was very quiet in the car. This Melissa issue really hit him deep, deeper than I thought. This days i don't really trust Zaine, since i am going to school and my reading has improved togetherwith my writing i have been visiting social media a lot and he has a lot of girls saying inappropriate things in his pagethat i just don't feel comfortable with.. One girl in particularis "Amaza" the reason why i was on Zaine's phone earlier on is that i was getting her numbers, I really wanna know what her business is with my soon to be fiance.

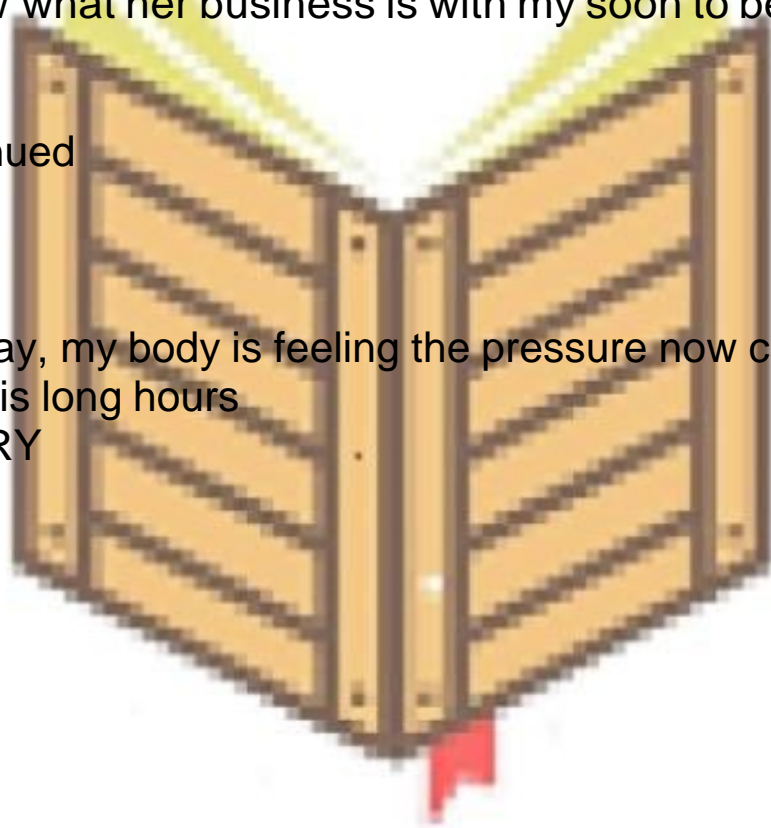
.

To be continued

....

I'm tired today, my body is feeling the pressure now can'twait to be done with this long hours
PURGATORY

.

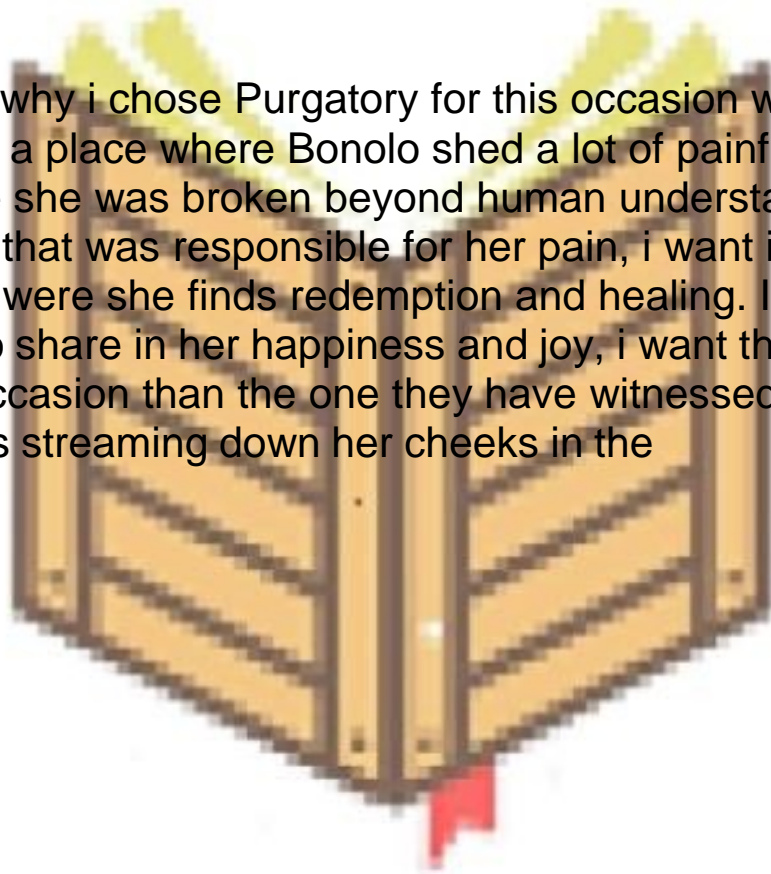


NOVELSGURU.COM

.
.
WARNING: THE FOLLOWING INSERT IS A BIT SCARY ANDMIGHT
BE SENSITIVE FOR CERTAIN READERS. READ WITH CAUTION.
.
.

¥64 #ZAINÉ

The reason why i chose Purgatory for this occasion was mainly because It's a place where Bonolo shed a lot of painful tears, it's a place where she was broken beyond human understanding. The same place that was responsible for her pain, i want it to be the same place were she finds redemption and healing. I want Purgatory to share in her happiness and joy, i want them to witness adifferent occasion than the one they have witnessed all this years. Seeing tears streaming down her cheeks in the



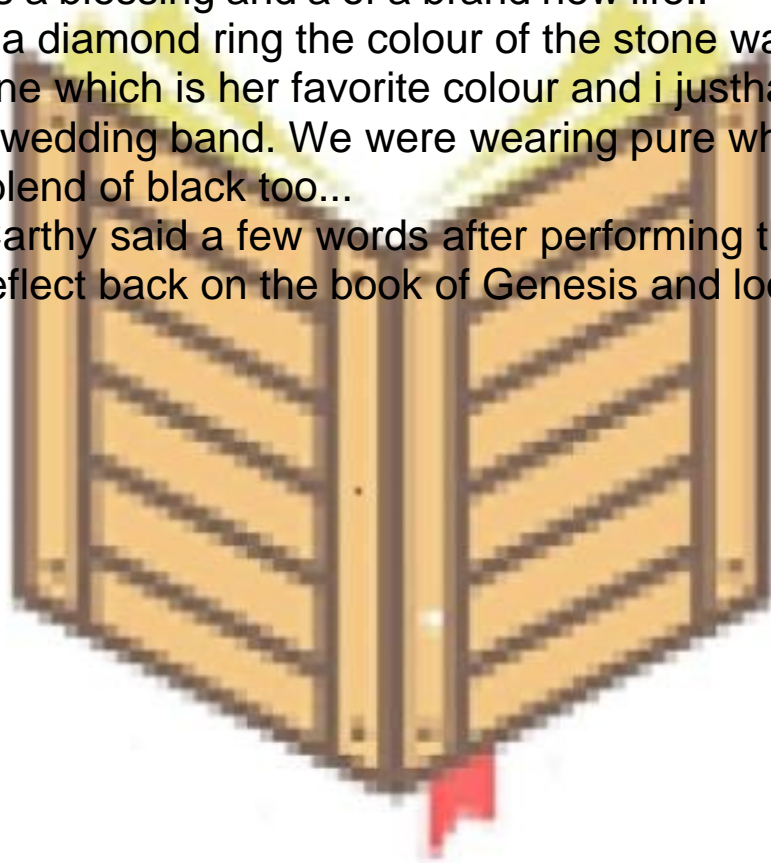
NOVELSGURU.COM

name of joy and peace was an achievement for me and a promise that these are the only tears she's ever gonna have starting from today. I never knew that I can love a broken and wounded heart but God made it possible for me...

Before I could start preaching, we performed the ceremony first. Bishop McCarthy was the one who wedded us, although I refer to it as a pre-wedding ceremony. To have the whole congregation, people who watched her grow up to this beautiful young woman that she is today and also having the whole of heaven witness this moment was a blessing and a of a brand new life..

She had on a diamond ring the colour of the stone was a green emerald stone which is her favorite colour and I just had on a white gold simple wedding band. We were wearing pure white, except for me I had a blend of black too...

Bishop McCarthy said a few words after performing the ceremony... Him: if we reflect back on the book of Genesis and look at



NOVELSGURU.COM

Joseph he was referred too by his brothers as a "dreamer"but i refer to him as "a young dreamer". Joseph was just a boy, the last born when he realised his dream that he can interpret dreams. When we move along and go to David, he was also just a boy when he deafeed Goliath. When we go back to Samuel too, when God first called out to him interrupting him from his sleep and Samuel didn't know how to respond because he had no knowledge of what was happening he was just a boy. Why am i telling you all of this? It is because i want everyone in this place right now to understand that age really doesn't matter when it comes to God. We need to kill the stigma of Prophets and Pastors being Old, we need to understand that God can call you anytime for his work hence in Bonolo and Zaine's situation. I don't want you to look at them and say "what are this kids gonna do for us" but rather ask "what is it thatGod needs to deliver to us through this young generation?"we need to rejoice and be proud that our youngsters are taking in the right direction.. The congregation started clapping...



NOVELSGURU.COM

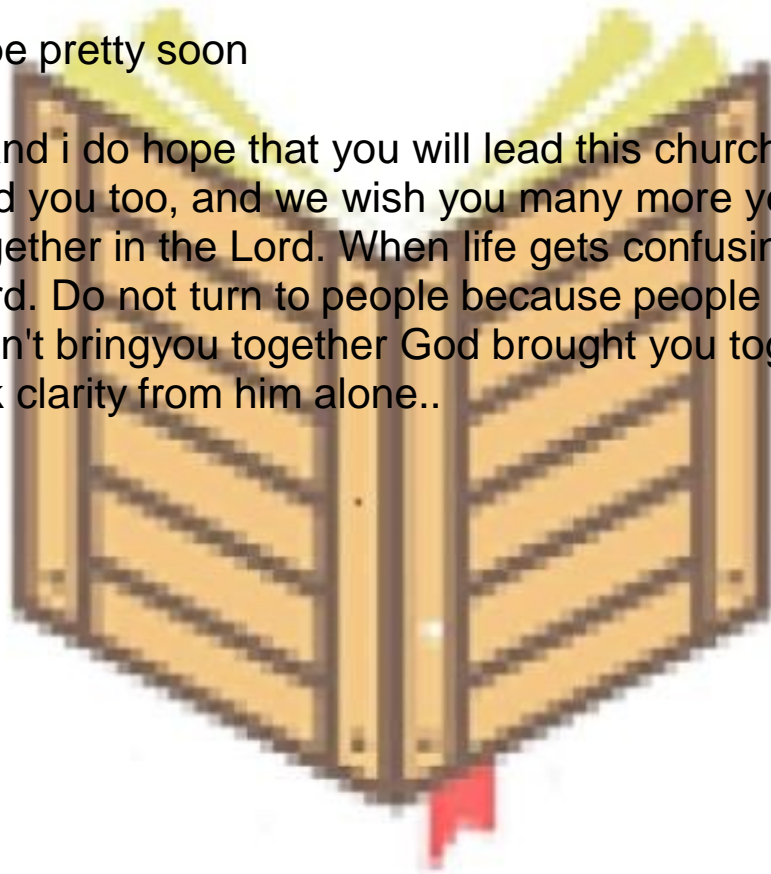
Him: we need to shelter them and help in sharing their gift. We need to support and nurture what God has implanted in them, because I promise you there's a lot of blessings that comes with them.. Is there anyone who has a problem with what God has joined together?

The whole congregation remained quiet...

McCarthy: then I present to you Mr and Mrs Radebe, I do hope we will have a big wedding to celebrate soon because this is just a formality

Me: I do hope pretty soon

McCarthy: and I do hope that you will lead this church the way God has intended you too, and we wish you many more years to come grow old together in the Lord. When life gets confusing seek clarity from the Lord. Do not turn to people because people will mislead you, they didn't bring you together God brought you together, so always seek clarity from him alone..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Never in a million years did i think that i was gonna be practically married, let alone be a Prophet at the age of 24.

I looked around and i realised that i am now the leader of this people, they counting on me to lead them to the right path especially after Abdul's disappointment...

I walked down my Queen to where she was sitting previously with the whole congregation up on their feet clapping their hands honoring us with Blessings from heaven pouring on us...

When she sat down, i went back to the pulpit to preach..

I looked around and everyone was sitting there waiting to hear what i was gonna say..

.

. #LEIGHTON

The church came out an hour earlier than the usual time, but nevertheless we had a very good service. When most



NOVELSGURU.COM

people had left, Nkhensani and i drove home too..

I got a call from Abdul immediately when i made my way in,he calls me from time to time because i am his last hope....

Me: Abdul

Him: have you found a lawyer for me?Me: how are you?

Him: how am i? Maybe come visit me and see how i am

Me: i am still trying to get you a lawyer all the ones i got are telling me that there's no way you gonna get bail

Him: that's bullshit!!!! I cannot be here until my trial!!(shouting)

Me: that's why i need to find you a good lawyer, one that's good and knows what they doing!

Him: better be fast, or i'll tell my people to stop supplying you with the portion

Me: i am trying



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i have to go, i hope that tomorrow you will come and see me with a good lawyer

Me: hopefully Him: see you then Me: bye

I hung up and went to the kitchen. Nkhensani had cooked in the morning before we left for church and now she was heating up the food..

Me: we need a maid

Her: you shouldn't have fired the last one Me: ya i shouldn't have but she was a thief

Her: so you assume

She seemed a bit happy, all humming and smiling.. Me: what got you happy?

She looked at me.. Her: nothing much



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: come on you can tell me

She stopped what she was doing..

Her: do you know that Bonolo and Zaine got engaged today?

Me: how would you know that? Her: i keep in contact with them

Me: Really? Are you defying me now? Her: its not like that Leighton

Me: it's like what?

Her: never mind i don't wanna fight with you She kept on dishing up..

Me: never will you keep in contact with them, and never mention their names Not in my house do you understand what i am saying?

Her: Yes Sir!

Me: let me go wash my hands and wash my face before i loose it!



NOVELSGURU.COM

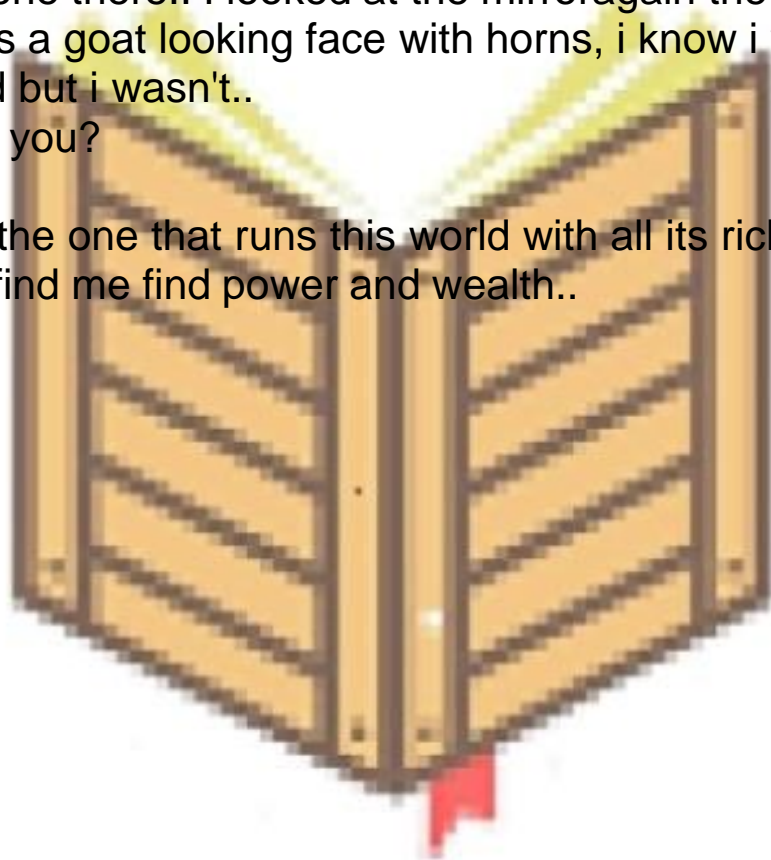
I left her there and went up to our bathroom to wash my hands..
Everytime when I think of Zaine my heart gets over clouded by hate, that's what i feel for my brother now.Nothing but hate..

I looked at my reflection in the mirror while washing my hands until after a few seconds i saw flames lingering in the mirror. It was weird, i looked around and then back to the mirror the flames were still lingering. Am i really seeing this or is my mind playing games on me???

A face showed up in that mirror. I turned and looked behind me but there was no one there.. I looked at the mirror again the face was still there.. It was a goat looking face with horns, i know i was supposed to be scared but i wasn't..

Me: who are you?

Voice: i am the one that runs this world with all its riches and power.
Those who find me find power and wealth..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: huh?

Voice: you already drinking the portion, blood of people who were sacrificed for riches

I felt sick to my stomach...

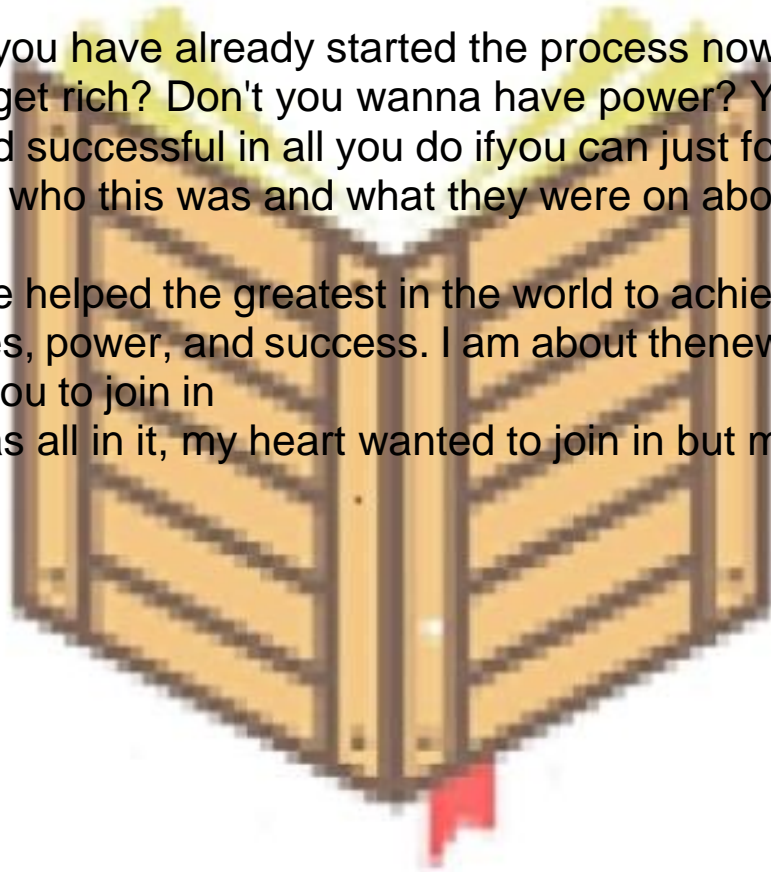
Voice: Since Abdul has lost his power and riches, you can take his place you have started the journey now complete

Me: i don't know what you talking about

Voice: Son you have already started the process now finish it. Don't you wanna get rich? Don't you wanna have power? You can be powerful and successful in all you do if you can just follow me I don't know who this was and what they were on about..

Voice: i have helped the greatest in the world to achieve never ending riches, power, and success. I am about the new world order and i need you to join in

My heart was all in it, my heart wanted to join in but my mind didn't...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Voice: don't you wanna be more successful than your brother Zaine who is taking the world by storm now?

Zaine, he mentions the word i hate more than anything...I looked at the mirror..

Voice: just stretch your hand out to the mirror and it will be Zaine's downfall, his downfall will be your success

I stretched out my hand to the mirror and closed my eyes..

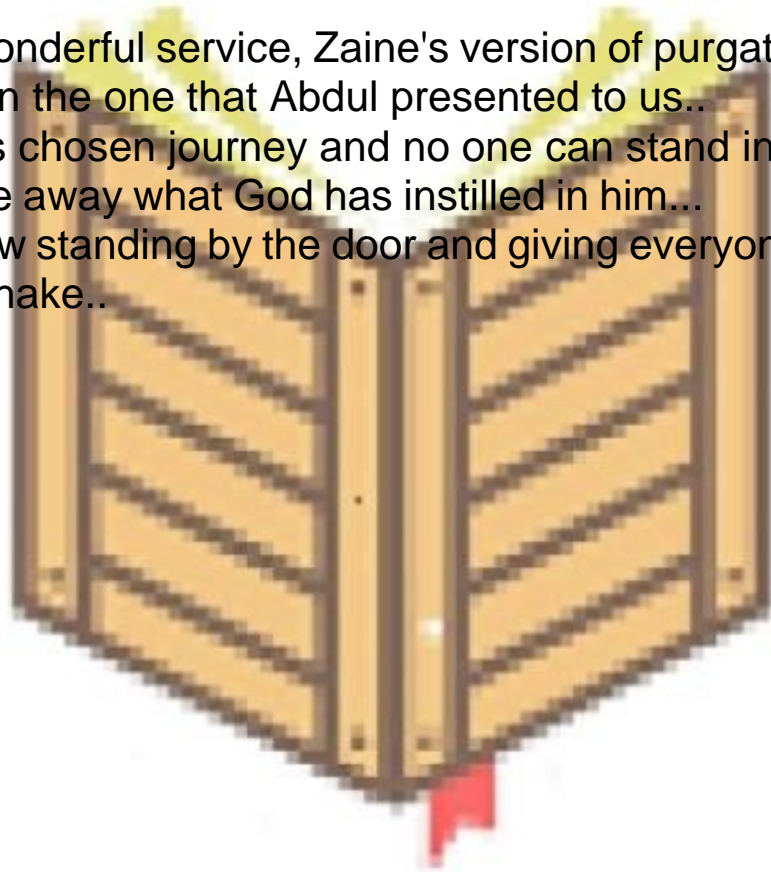
.

. #BONOLO

We had a wonderful service, Zaine's version of purgatory was different than the one that Abdul presented to us..

This was his chosen journey and no one can stand in his way, no one can take away what God has instilled in him...

We were now standing by the door and giving everyone who walked out a handshake..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: my feet are killing me

Him: should have brought flat shoes along, i knew you wasn't gonna survive with those heels Mrs Radebe

Me: i should listen to you more often Mr RadebeHim: you should

Me: today It was full

Him: very full, but i am happy that everyone is eager andhungry to be in the presence of the Lord

Me: true that

We started walking to my mother and Blessing while holding hands..

Him: Why not take off your shoes and walk barefootedMe: my feet

are too sensitive to touch the ground Him: this is a holy ground

We stopped while holding hands and he looked at me..Me: What?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: nothing, just that i am glad that God brought you tome
I smiled...

Me: same here

We were about to kiss when he started feeling uneasy as iflike he
was about to have a heart attack..

Me: Zaine what's wrong?

His eyes widened and he put his hand on his chest, he wasreally in
pain that he couldn't even speak and i was startingto get very
scared..

Me: Zaine what's wrong??I looked around...

Me: Somebody help please!!!

I looked at him as he was going down..Me: Zaine!!!

.

.



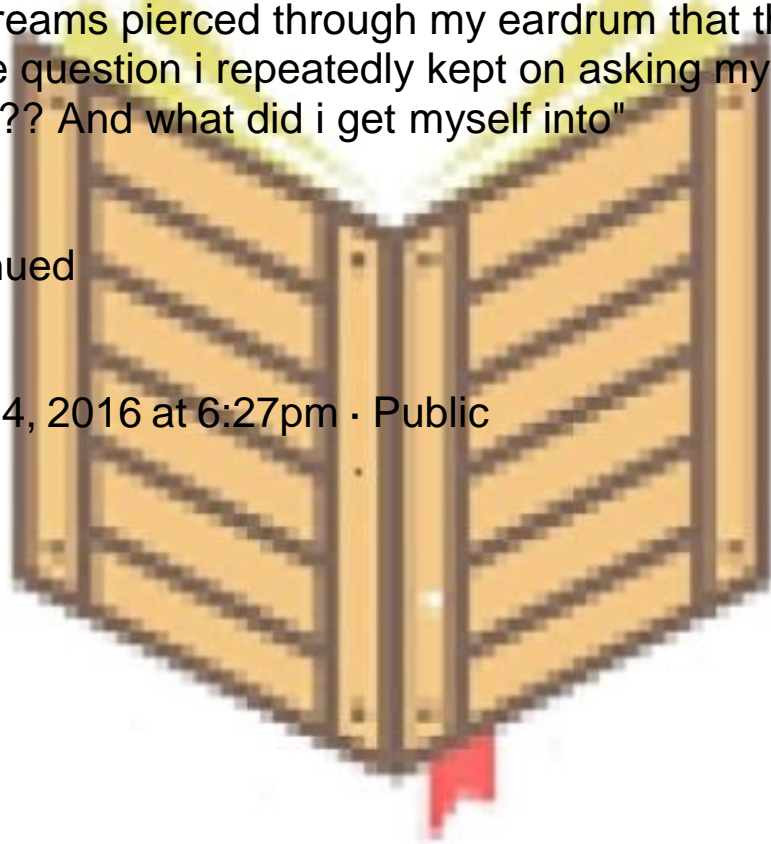
NOVELSGURU.COM

#LEIGHTON

After touching the mirror i found myself in another place. I don't know how I got there but i was wearing a black rope. I looked around and the place was dark and i heard peoplescreaming. I don't know how hell looked like but it felt like iwas there, it was cold at heart and full of darkness with creatures walking around. The creatures looked like examples of chromosomal or gene mutation. They would have human faces and crocodile bodies with tails of a snake, i just couldn't wrap my head around everything.. All those screams pierced through my eardrum that theymade me a bit dizzy, the question i repeatedly kept on asking myself was "where am I?? And what did i get myself into"

To be continued

December 24, 2016 at 6:27pm · Public



NOVELSGURU.COM

Like Page · Save · MorePURGATORY

.

.

.

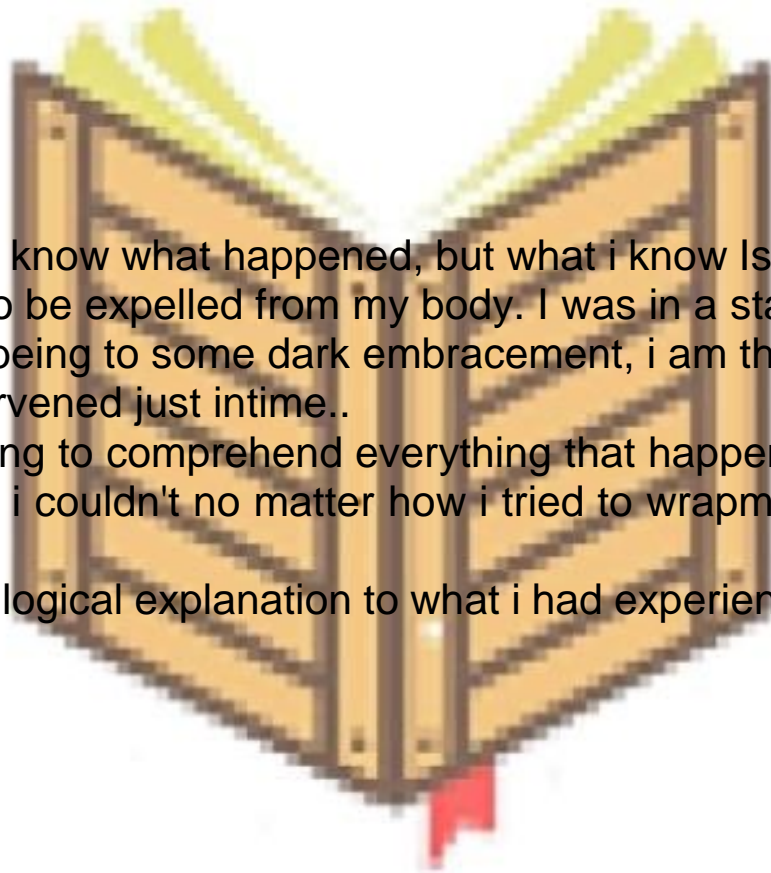
¥65

ZAINE

I don't really know what happened, but what i know is that i felt my soul trying to be expelled from my body. I was in a state of totally losing my being to some dark embracement, i am thankful that heaven intervened just in time..

I am still trying to comprehend everything that happened at that moment but i couldn't no matter how i tried to wrap my head around it..

There was no logical explanation to what i had experienced



NOVELSGURU.COM

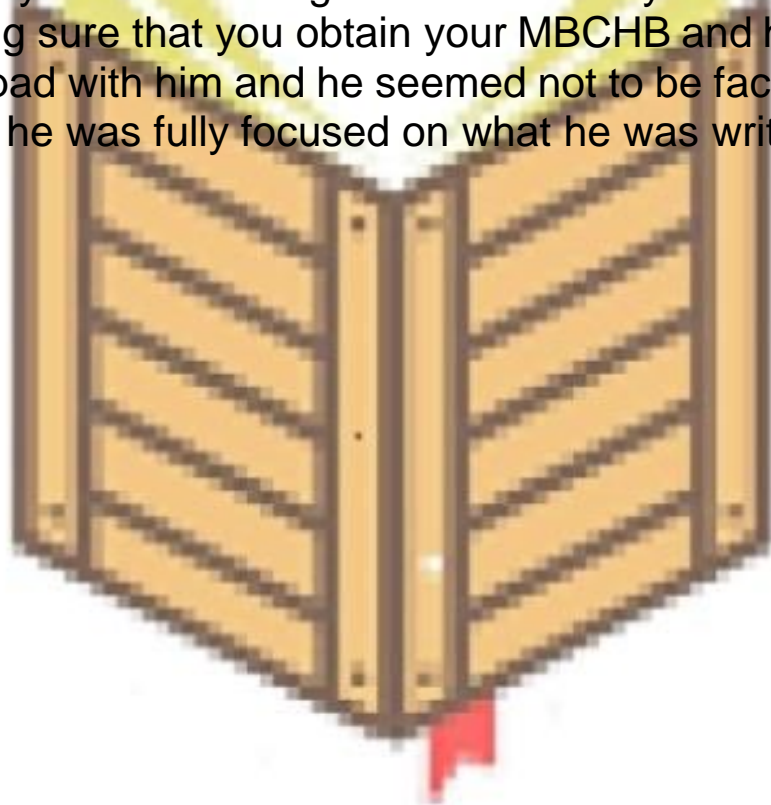
at that given time, all i know is that somehow the spirit of darkness tried to take over my soul, but my soul was too fiery for them to hold. The more they tried to expel it from my body the more they started burning because heaven had this amazing protection circulating me and my whole being...

I was sitting on the hospital bed, i had already told the Doctor that i feel fine but he wanted to make sure that i am actually fine...

Him: how is your breathing now?

Me: Doc i respect you and the profession you chose. I respect the commitment you are showing towards the 6/7 years of studying you put in making sure that you obtain your MBCHB and help people.. He had his pad with him and he seemed not to be fazed by what i was saying, he was fully focused on what he was writing until i paused...

Him: but?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: but i am fine

He lowerd the pad and looked at me..

Him: you just had a severe panic attack, you collapsed andnow you telling me that you fine? I am sorry Mr Radebe but...

Me: Prophet Radebe

Him: i stand corrected Prophet Radebe. I am putting youon xenax

Me: that would be unnecessary Him: do you prefer valium instead?

Me: Doc no pill can help this situation, this is more of a spiritual attack. It's something that goes beyond humanunderstanding

He sighed..

Him: Why is it that Christianity has to label everything as a "spiritual attack"

He literally mimicked the inverted commas in the air..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: can't science and religious co-exist without one having to trample down the other?

He kept quiet...

Him: after all Doc, just because you haven't seen it that don't mean it doesn't exist that is the greatest lesson that i have learnt in life
He looked at me for a while without saying a word, probably trying to come up with some scientific explanation that will do away with my statement..

Him: there's great things that science has done for this world

Me: i am not denying that Doc but there's also things that science fails to explain, things that are not of human nature

Him: but still...

Me: i take it you not religious? Him: No i am not



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: then i would rather go home than have us engaging ina debate that has never been won. Religious politics are one that everyone has failed to understand, but what i have learned from that is.. Never undermine, never insult another person's belief. We all have to believe in differentthings to balance the world, that's why it is so diverge

Him: for a Prophet you pretty smart

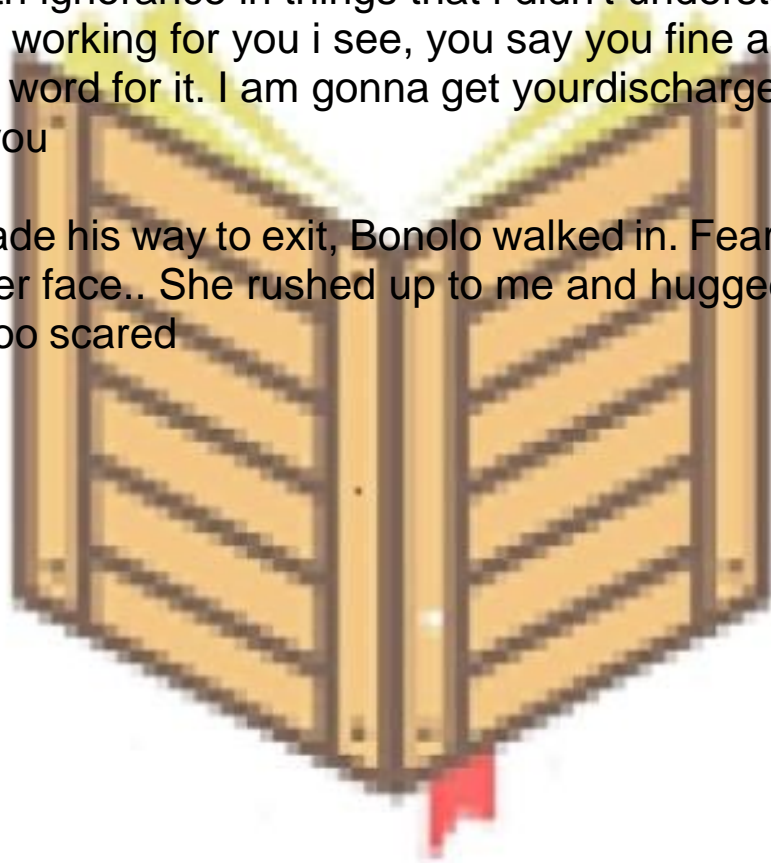
Me: i am just more focused and open minded in everythingnow. I did away with ignorance in things that i didn't understand

Him: well its working for you i see, you say you fine as aman of God I'll take your word for it. I am gonna get yourdischarge papers

Me: Thank you

When he made his way to exit, Bonolo walked in. Fear andworry was written on her face.. She rushed up to me and hugged me.

Her: i was soo scared



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm fine

She broke the hug.. Her: What happened?

I looked at her and i didn't wanna scare her more so i went with the Doctor's explanation...

Me: Panic attack

Her: Panic At.. What were you panicking about?

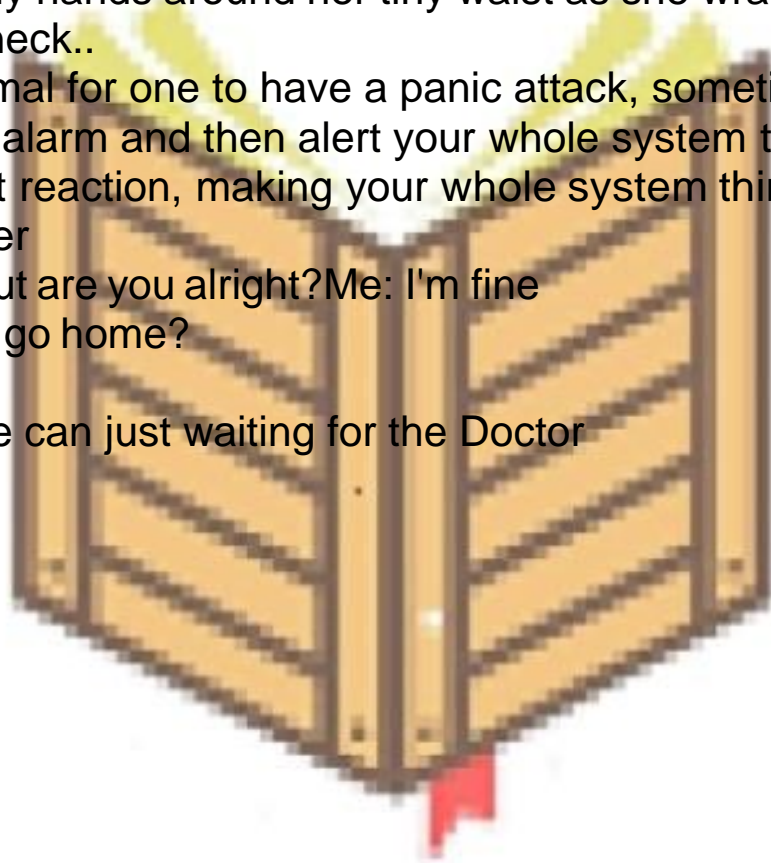
I wrapped my hands around her tiny waist as she wrapped hers around my neck..

Me: it's Normal for one to have a panic attack, sometimes your brain gets a false alarm and then alert your whole system to trigger the flight or fight reaction, making your whole system think that you are in danger

Her: Okay but are you alright? Me: I'm fine

Her: can we go home?

Me: yeah we can just waiting for the Doctor



NOVELSGURU.COM

The Doctor walked in with the forms and i signed everything..

Doc: don't hesitate to come back again when you get another attack

Me: i promise

I got down from the bed and we made our way out...

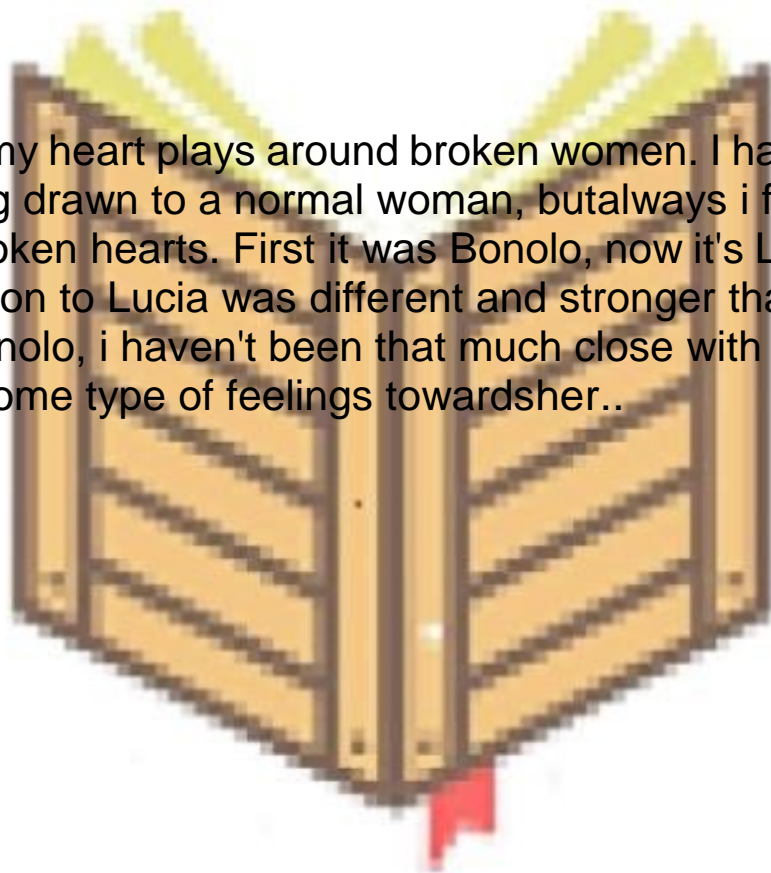
.

.

SIMON

I don't why my heart plays around broken women. I have never found myself being drawn to a normal woman, but always i find myself drawn to broken hearts. First it was Bonolo, now it's Lucia..

My connection to Lucia was different and stronger than the one i had with Bonolo, i haven't been that much close with her or to her but i have some type of feelings towards her..



NOVELSGURU.COM

After the whole Abdul Saga, her mother gave us Blessings and i had asked her to move in with me. I think being a bit far away from Purgatory would do her better..

We were in the flat, we had just finished eating a delicious meal that i have prepared earlier and now i was washing the dishes while Lucia rested a bit...

She is not strong as Bonolo, everything that has happened to her broke her to a point where i don't think she's ever gonna come back from..worse Abdul's trial is coming soon and she has to testify against him that's gonna be heavy on her...

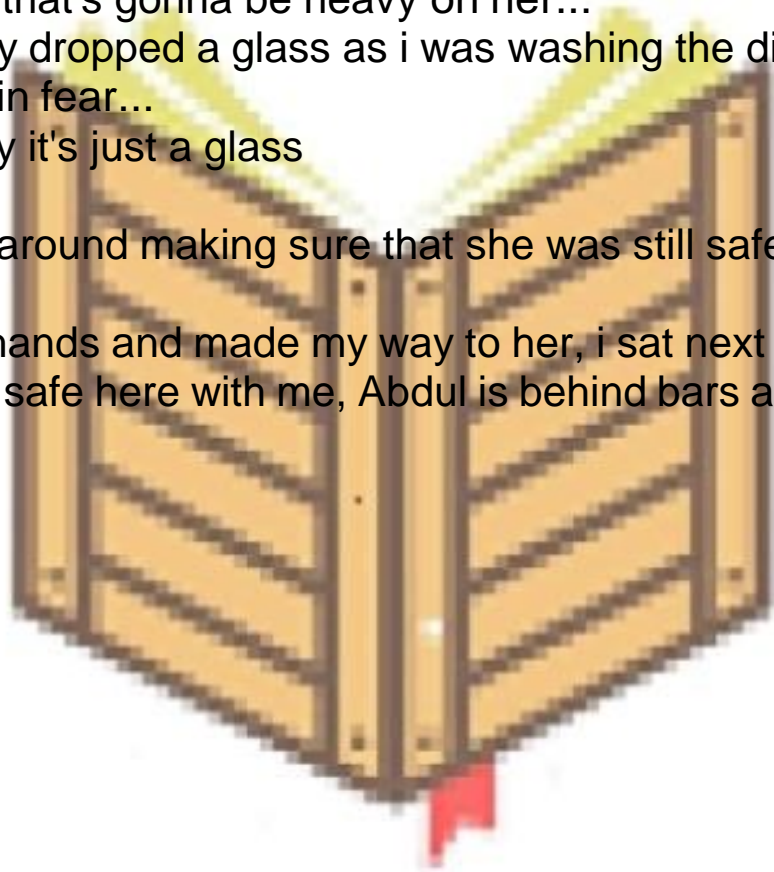
I accidentally dropped a glass as i was washing the dishes making Lucia jump in fear...

Me: I'm sorry it's just a glass

She looked around making sure that she was still safe..

I wiped my hands and made my way to her, i sat next to her...

Me: you are safe here with me, Abdul is behind bars and



NOVELSGURU.COM

he will never hurt you again

She tossed aside that mini blanket that was supposed to keep her warm as she was sleeping...

Me: why don't you get some rest? You haven't slept for a few days now

Her: how can I sleep when the only thing I see is him? Simon you don't even know how dirty I feel! Worse I'm pregnant with his child!

Me: I understand...

Her: you don't understand anything Simon! I kept quiet...

Her: I'm sorry I didn't mean too.. Me: it's okay...

I put my hand on her tiny soft foot..

Me: why don't you visit Bonolo tomorrow? Her: Bonolo seems busy these days

Me: she can never be busy for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: i just don't understand how she just picked up the broken pieces and lived her life again like nothing happened
She hugged her legs..

Her: i don't think there's ever a day where i am gonna wake up and totally forget about everything

Me: i am just happy that Abdul is gonna be behind bars for a long time, that should give you strength that he is paying for his sins

Her: that doesn't make a difference. I am still gonna wake up with the same pain everyday, even if he can be eaten by vicious animals were they reap his body apart that won't still take away the pain he put me through!

Lucia's pain lies so deep that i fail to understand it, and i don't think that I can help her....

.

.

BONOLO



NOVELSGURU.COM

A cab drove us back to Purgatory so we could get our car and drive back home. While Zaine was busy driving and fully focused on the road i kept on looking at him, i couldn't get the thought out of my mind that i almost Lost him today. I know he says that it was a panic attack, but it seemed more than that. I saw the pain that he was in as he squeezed my hand tight, i saw how hard he was trying to fight for his life. I am just relieved that he was rushed to the hospital in a nick of time, and now he is okay, or so he says..... We got home and he parked close to the garage. My mother and Blessing left immediately after church, they were driven home by Mercy and her husband.. After i got out of the car i took off my heels and walked barefooted.. Zaine: next time listen to me Me: i will We opened the door and heard people giggling in the lounge. That was very awkward, my mother doesn't know



NOVELSGURU.COM

anyone around here..

We made our way to the lounge and she was with my grandmother. They looked like they were going through some family photos. The moment that i laid my eyes on my grandmother, everything that she did to me came back...

Mom: look who is here, it's Grandma

I didn't say anything, i just looked at my grandmother with tears in my eyes...

Grandma: Bonolo i...

She didn't know what to say for herself.. Mom: What is going on here?

Zaine cleared his throat as words failed me and my grandmother..

Me: you have...

The more i tried to get the words out the more and more i got overwhelmed by tears..



NOVELSGURU.COM

My grandmother got up from her chair and made her way to me..
She literally knelt down at my feet and cried asking for forgiveness...
As much as how hurt I was, a part of me wanted to just throw her
out, but another part of me felt her cry and how sincere it was..
Me: i..

I went down to her...

Me: I forgive you, only because you were not proud to admit to your
mistakes.

I helped her get up from the floor, she was even trembling..Her: I
don't even deserve your forgiveness

Me: everyone deserves to be forgiven when they seek forgiveness
with a sincere heart

Her: I put you out when you had nowhere to go

Me: just like Joseph, if his brothers didn't sell him he



NOVELSGURU.COM

wasn't gonna realise his dream. If you didn't put me out i wasn't gonna realise mine too.. Sometimes God's Blessings comes in different forms that Is way far and deeper than human understanding

She wiped her tears... She then looked at Zaine..

Her: all along i thought that she was better off and belonged to someone else... But

She looked at me..

Her: you are full of life now, you are way different from that young vulnerable girl who showed up at my door step a few months ago She took my hand and Zaine's hand then joined them together..

Her: what God has joined together no human being can separate all I'm asking for Is to share in the blessings that God has kept for both of you

I nodded my head with tears in my eyes...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: ofcause

It was a very emotional moment for us...

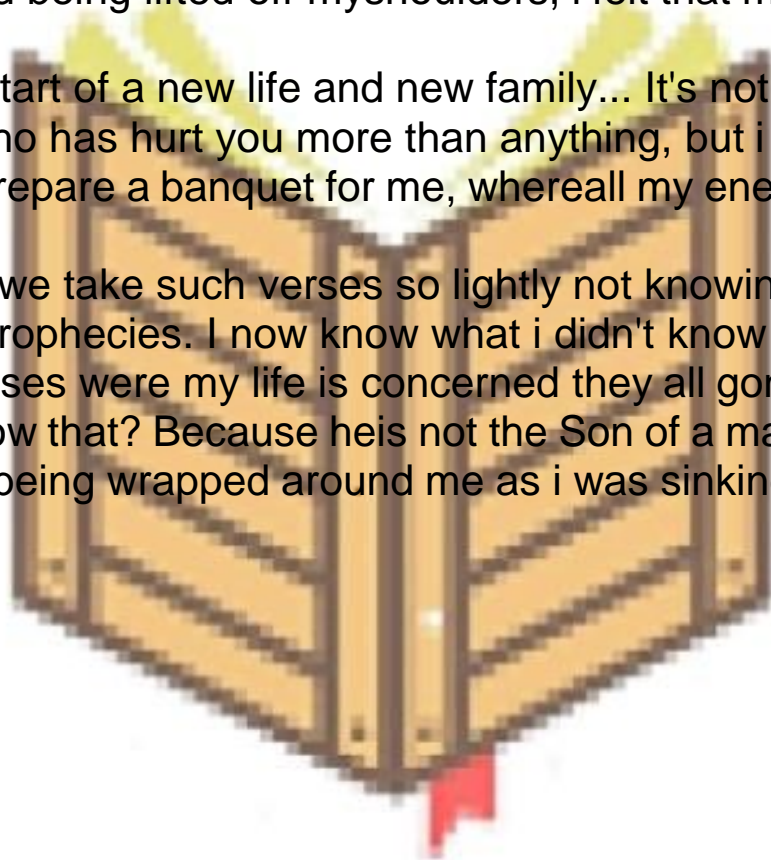
Mom: i probably should make us some tea all 3 of us wehave a lot to catch up on

Me: let me put on more comfortable shoes

I walked away to the bedroom. After forgiving my grandmother i felt a heavy load being lifted off myshoulders, i felt that my heart was at ease...

This is the start of a new life and new family... It's not easyto forgive someone who has hurt you more than anything, but i hinder his word "you prepare a banquet for me, whereall my enemies can see me"

Sometimes we take such verses so lightly not knowing that they hold great prophecies. I now know what i didn't know then that God's promises were my life is concerned they all gonna come true, how do i know that? Because heis not the Son of a man to lie.. I felt hands being wrapped around me as i was sinking



NOVELSGURU.COM

deeper into understanding God's purpose with my life..

Zaine: know that i am very proud of you, i know now that God has chosen a perfect wife for me

Me: i feel at peace

Him: when God intervenes you are bound to have everlasting peace
He squeezed me tight..

Him: how about we go away for a while just you and me
Me: go where?

Him: somewhere far away where we can make love next to the beach while its raining cats and dogs

He squeezed my butt while saying that...
Me: ain't you naughty Mr Prophet?

Him: that's a positive complaint I turned and looked at him..

Me: why not practice now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: now?

Me: since i moved in here i haven't been in the pool Him: you want us too???? Wow woman you are just...Me: i will be waiting for you I opened the sliding door from our bedroom that led to theback yard..

Him: what about your mom and Grandmother?Me: what about them?

The was a knock at the door..

Mom: Nolo Grandma and i we still waiting for you, Grandma wanna tell you more about our family history

I looked at Zaine..Mom: Nolo??

Him: open (whispering)

Me: what?? I can't hear you (whispering)

I took off my dress and made my way to the pool..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: if you not by the pool in 5min time i will be joining my mother and Grandmother talking about our family history

Mom: Bonolo?? Zaine?? What's going on there?

Zaine was now caught in between opening the door or joining me in the pool were we gonna have our first matrimonial love making...

.

To be continued PURGATORY

.

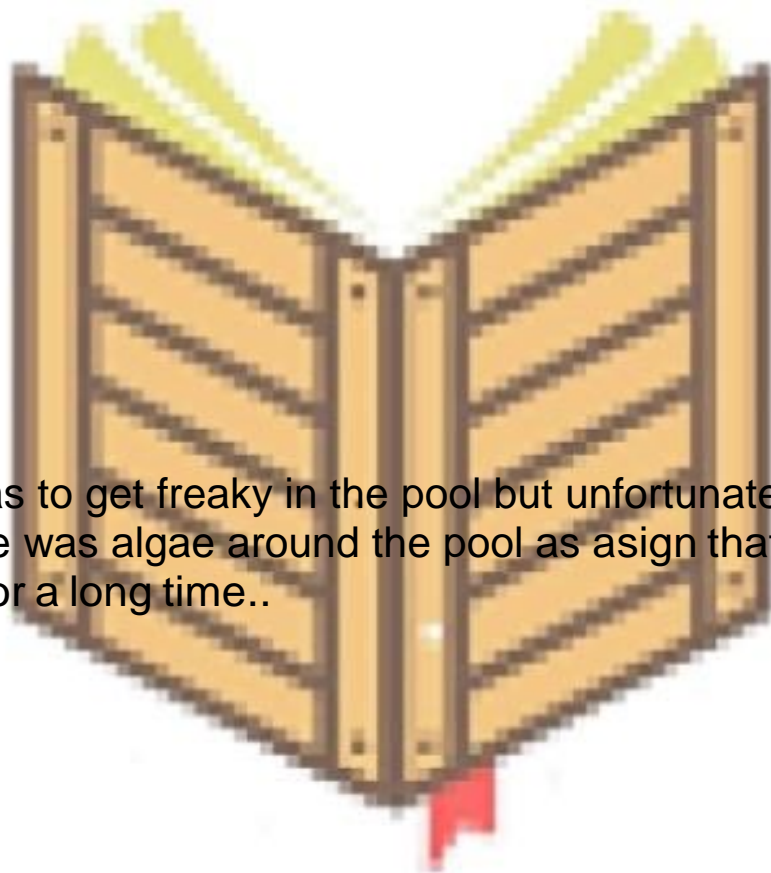
.

.

¥66

BONOLO

The plan was to get freaky in the pool but unfortunately the water was dirty, there was algae around the pool as a sign that it had been neglected for a long time..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Were the pool failed us, the shower came to our rescue. We could've used a more appropriate place like the bed, but we wanted to get that feeling of having water running down our bodies....

At first i was very uncomfortable with Zaine getting closer to me, let alone touching me. Somehow painful memories came rushing through and clouding my mind making it a bit impossible for our moment to be flawless and memorable. When he touched me somehow I dated back to the first time when Abdul placed his hands on me and it wasn't a great feeling at all. There was confusion, fear, pain and what seemed like slavery and a lifetime imprisonment of a dreadful experience..

When I started feeling scared and uncomfortable i had to convince myself that this is my husband, if he wanted to hurt me he could've done that long time ago where I was stuck in this house for several days alone with him..

The more i allowed Zaine's love and intentions with me to take over, the more my body started to relax and my heart



NOVELSGURU.COM

together with my mind allowed him to love me in that way. Where intimacy is concerned with love being the catalyst you are bound to have an explosive reaction...

The way his hands ran smoothly on my wet naked body, how our tongues danced around trying to find a rhythm that produces a harmony was just amazing. I didn't know that when you become intimate with someone it's actually an experience that goes both ways, i felt things that i couldn't explain or understand. The warmth and pleasure i felt when his fingers made their way into my womanhood, fiddling around with my pea-sized clitoris release tons of charges in my body that made me grab on to him tightly making me to loose my breath here and there..

When he went down to my already wet felt hole, it just made my sexual hunger for him to take over.. When his tongue played around my hard nipples, i could already feel cloud 9 at my finger tips that's how he made me feel, that's how he poisoned and paralysed my body into being at his Mercy sending shivers down my spine.. Ohhh Lord if such moments last forever then let this one last forever..



NOVELSGURU.COM

When his fingers picked up the pace in my vagina i couldn't stop the wildness that was being unleashed deep inside of me. I was moaning, i felt like sinking my nails deeper on his back so he can feel how much pleasure he is giving me. I could possibly do anything to him, i was in a total different state of mind the more i felt wet the more I wanted a piece of him inside of me already.. I was nearing to releasing something that felt explosive, words can partially describe the feeling because honestly i cannot come up with the perfect word to describe that moment and how i felt... As i was nearing to releasing whatever i am meant too, he picked up my leg then positioned himself in a more comfortable position to slide himself inside of my wet vagina.. I gasped as he made his way in, he looked at me to make sure that he is not making me uncomfortable, and my smile relaxed him.. I think he was more worried about me than i was about



NOVELSGURU.COM

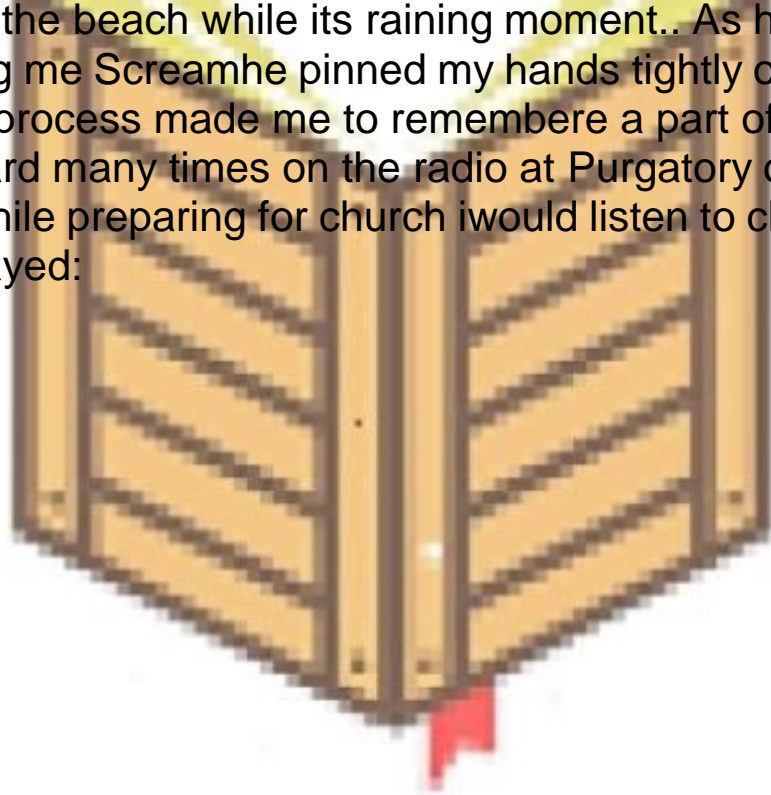
myself, he didn't wanna take me back there but this wasnot the same. This was a total different experience thanthe one i had those previous years...

We started at the slow pace, with our bodies fused together and water running on our bodies. His hand was running through my wet hair too, we would kiss in betweenor him kissing my neck and slightly squeezing my tiny waist all the way to my tiny butt..

My hands in the meantime were balancing with the tapsso i don't slip and fall from those slippery tiles...

We literally ended up on the shower floor, the water was no longer having Mercy on us anymore we were experiencing our making love next to the beach while its raining moment.. As he uped his pace making me Screamhe pinned my hands tightly on the floor..

That whole process made me to remembere a part of some song that I've heard many times on the radio at Purgatory on Sunday mornings while preparing for church iwould listen to classic songs that they played:



NOVELSGURU.COM

"now hold on to my hand, picture us on an island making love on the pouring rain"

The lyrics of the song hit perfectly in place with this experience.. We didn't care about anyone or anything, it was just me and him who only existed..

I woke up the following day, this time my waking up was different. I woke up with a smile on my face before even opening my eyes... Last night was amazing, when my mother and Grandmother had left with Blessing to my Grandmother's house Zaine and I had the whole night to enjoy ourselves, and we did I never knew that sex can actually be this enjoyable compared to how I was introduced to it.. I said my prayers first before making it out of the bed to brush my teeth..

I was wearing one of his t-shirts with no underwear. I was in pain but nevertheless I truly enjoyed myself.. I even sang



NOVELSGURU.COM

and danced as i brushed my teeth..

My being in the city has introduced me to different things, one being music. I found music that i enjoyed, i just didn't know which Genre to classify my songs with.. But i found myself singing and dancing to one of my current favourite songs...

Me: "baby i don't need dollar bills to have fun tonight..."

It was just a mix of songs that were playing in my head, one moment I'm singing that and the next I'm singing something else..

When i was done brushing my teeth and washing myself i made my way to the kitchen, walking barefooted when i heard Zaine talking to someone on the phone his phone was on loud speaker..

I stood by the door to listen to the conversation first before walking into the kitchen..

Zaine: it was more as if like we had limited time together at the bible school



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was a female that was talking to him...

Voice: i am telling you, i think we need to go and ask for them to extend the course or whatever it is

Him: Yaa i enjoyed your company

Voice: me too, i don't see why we cannot remain Friends i mean i like you a lot

Him: flirting aren't we? She laughed...

Voice: I'm sorry i forgot that you have a girlfriend Prophet Radebe

Him: i guess no one updated you that i got engaged
Voice: and i wasn't invited?

Him: i didn't want your jealousy to taint the best day of my life

She laughed again..

Her: i probably was gonna stop the whole things like ah ahah nigga you not getting married or engaged not on my



NOVELSGURU.COM

watch. Engaged for what? For who? Him: reason why i didn't want you there

Her: i will pray for your sin of not inviting meHim: i already prayed

Her: anyway guess what i am listening too?Him: kirk frankling?

Her: you are soo funny but no

Him: then what are you listening too?

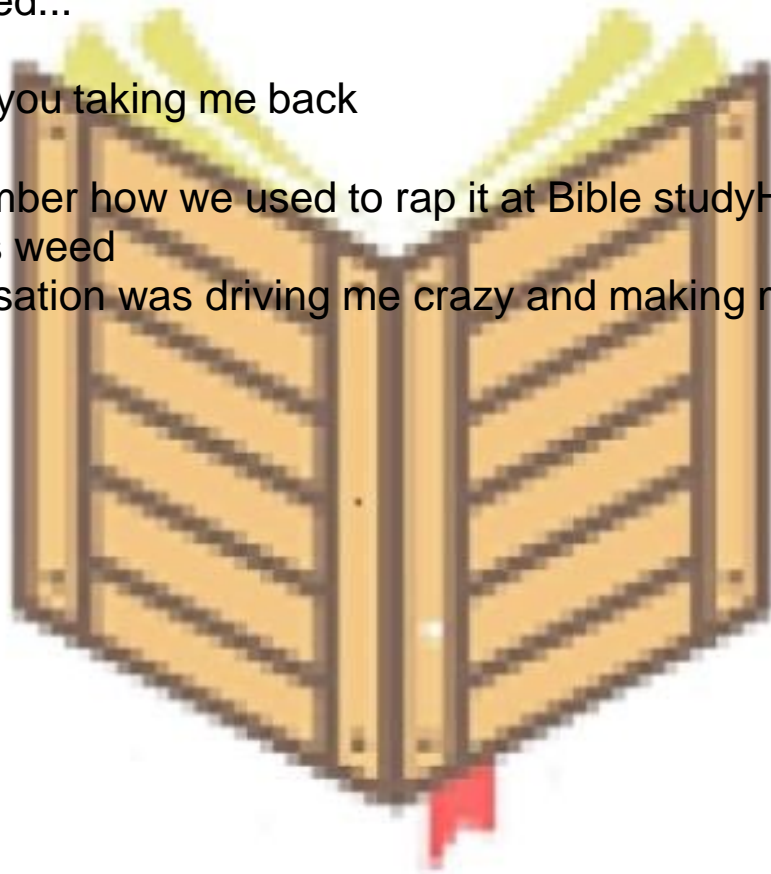
Her: women weed and weather.. Women weed andweather

Zaine laughed...

Zaine: man you taking me back

Her: i remember how we used to rap it at Bible studyHim: what was missing was weed

This conversation was driving me crazy and making memad...



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walked In and made my way to the fridge..Zaine: look Amaza I will call you later

Her: Ahhhh Him: bye Her: bye thenHe hung up..

Him: good morning

I banged the door fridge when I closed it..Me: Morning

Him: thought after Last night you would wake up in a more good mood

Me: why? You didn't do anything different from AbdulHim: excuse me?

That probably didn't come out right..Him: i didn't rape you!

Me: you still stuck your thingy in my vagina so what's the



NOVELSGURU.COM

difference? Ain't that what all men do?

Him: Okay where is all of this coming from all a sudden? Me: i am going to Bath

As i Walked away he grabbed my arm....

Him: we gonna talk about your sudden attitude problem Me: i don't have an attitude problem i just wanna bath Him: Bono..

His phone rang and he ignored it...

Me: you should answer it's probably Amaza, wouldn't wanna be a barrier in your morning glorified perfect cheating moment with her, who knows she can be your next Melissa and maybe we can find her lying dead in a ditch somewhere after...

He raise his hand at me and me i ducked, but he didn't hit me..

Him: stop it!!! (yelling)

He lowerd his hand again...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: i might be a Prophet but i am still your husband and you will respect me!!!! Where is my wife? It's like she just disappeared over night!!! I am no woman beater but you the first girl who has ever made me raise my hand twice!!

He got closer to me... Him: get yourself in order!

He then clicked his tongue and went to the door..

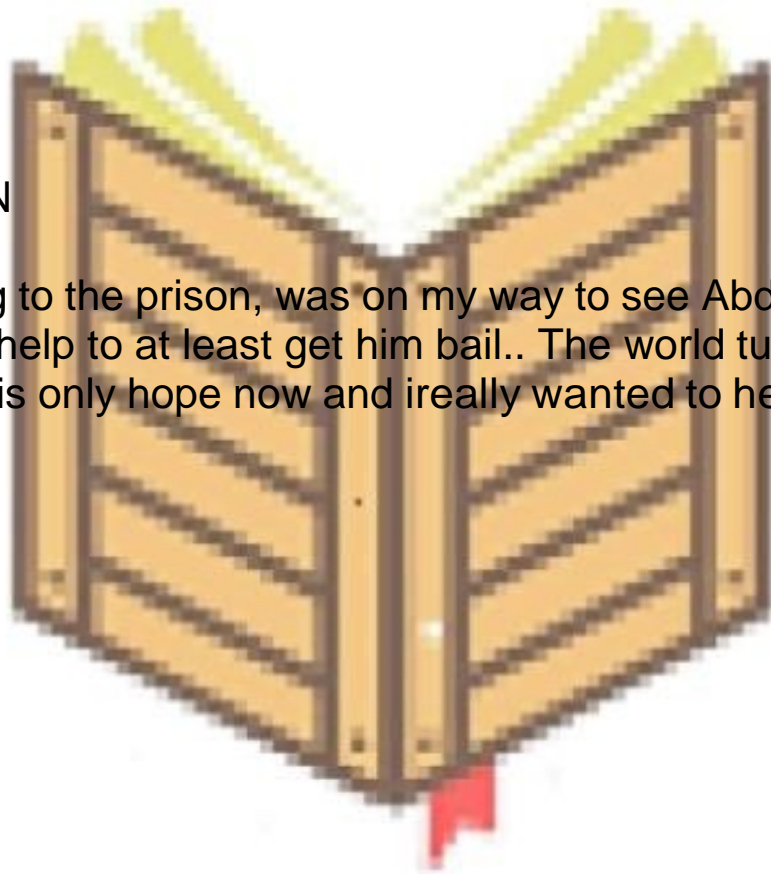
Tears streamed down my cheeks. I was even trembling, i can't believe that i just acted like that and said those things to him

.

.

LEIGHTON

I was driving to the prison, was on my way to see Abdul since he needed my help to at least get him bail.. The world turned against him, i was his only hope now and i really wanted to help get him out...



NOVELSGURU.COM

The drive felt long i was very exhausted, my whole body was aching and I couldn't stop yawning..

I don't know why but it seems as if like i didn't get a good night sleep, my wife even hinted that at around 2am my body started shaking uncontrollably and i was also cold, she said that feeling lasted for a full hour with my eyes rolling to the back of my head. She told me that she felt a heavy dark presence that made her scared that she prayed, after praying everything felt better..

I tried to date back to what happened last night but i couldn't remember anything other than waking up with a mark of teeth on the left side of my ribs like something had bit me or sank it's claws deep inside of me...

I arrived at the prison, i did what was required of me to do and then i was escorted to the visiting room where I waited for Abdul.. He was brought in after a few minutes, he had bruises on his face and was even finding it hard to walk. He was wearing pants that were a bit oversized, he was holding them so that they can't fall..



NOVELSGURU.COM

He moaned in pain as he sat down..Me: what happened?
Him: you need to get me out of here before i die

I then noticed some of the prisoners with their visitorsgossiping
and pointing at him..

Me: Abdul what's happening?

I noticed what seemed like tears and fear in his eyes..

Him: Sometimes the evil you do to other people comesback to you
7000 more painful

Me: what do you mean?Him: i...

He paused.. Me: you what?

He literally broke down and cried..

Him: it's happening again, it doesn't stop, i cannot stop itl saw the
prison guard coming to us...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: let's go to the showers

Abdul: you cannot take me back to that cell again, i am not gonna survive it's bad now

Guard: let's go

The guard helped him up and i noticed that he couldn't control his bowel movement anymore..

This was horrible, what was happening to this once greatly feared man of God?

.

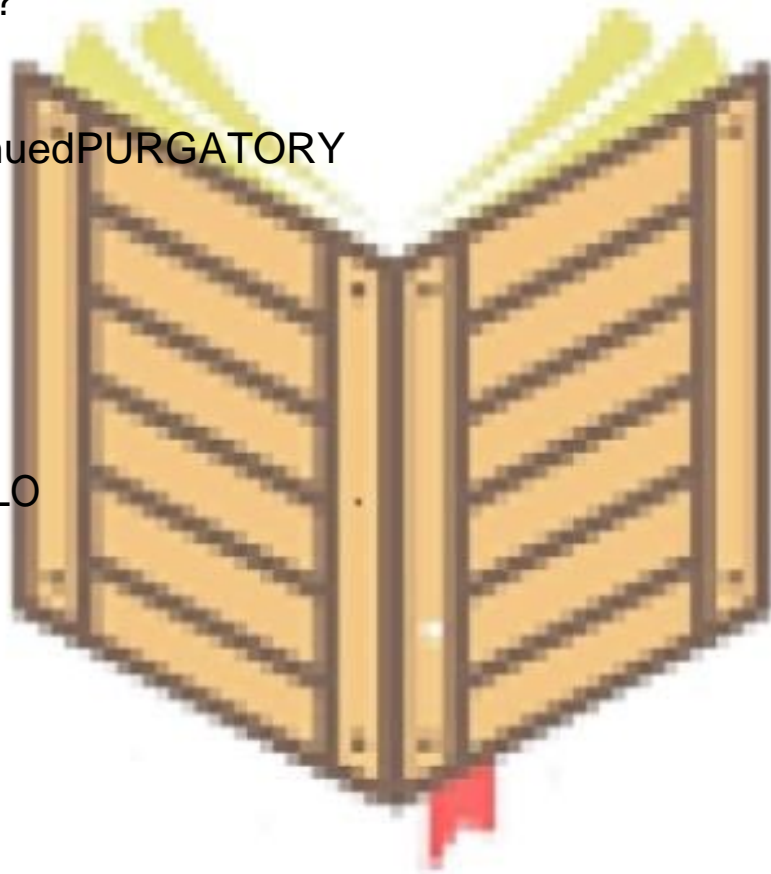
To be continued PURGATORY

.

.

.

¥67 #BONOLO



NOVELSGURU.COM

Simon had called me telling me about Lucia and how worried he was about her. He told me that she is not eating, she gets nightmares every night that make it impossible for her to have a good night sleep and that she was up half of the night just crying and confused. I know exactly how she feels because i felt the exact same way too at some point when i was gravely trapped in my own deadly and poisonous thoughts. You just get to a point were you feel your whole system shutting down and all you see is the darkness that your pain presents to you, you cannot find a way to escape those thoughts that are killing you bit by bit..

I took a cab to her place since i was only going to school at 16:00, i wanted to spend the morning with her....

She opened the door after a long time of me Knocking. The state that she was in was alarming. Her eyes were puffy, her mouth was dry, she tilted her head slightly against the door indicating that she is Emotionally and



NOVELSGURU.COM

mentally exhausted..Me: Hi
Her: hey

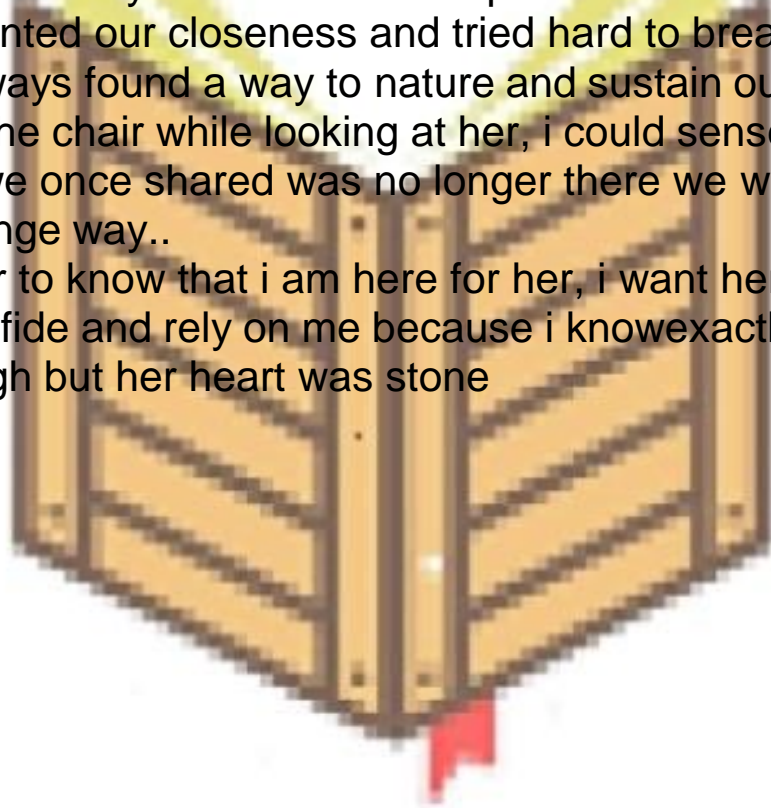
Me: can i please come in?

She moved away from the door and i made my way in...

The flat was spotless, everything was where it belonged. I went to sit on the chair while she went to lie on the bed...

Lucia and i we have always been close, she is the sister i never had. She was always there for me despite how much Abdul and her mother resented our closeness and tried hard to break us apart but we have always found a way to nature and sustain our closeness.. As i sat on the chair while looking at her, i could sense that the closeness we once shared was no longer there we were sisters yes but in a strange way..

I wanted her to know that i am here for her, i want her to know that she can confide and rely on me because i know exactly what she is going through but her heart was stone



NOVELSGURU.COM

cold hard to penetrate through, it also had a bob-wire and electric fence around making it impossible to get through to her..

Her: did Simon call you?

I thought about my answer before replying..Me: he did

Her: were you gonna come if he didn't call you?Me: i was gonna make time to call

Silence roamed around the room again..

Her: have you ever felt like death can be rid of the pain?Me: Yes

Her: have you ever felt like taking your own life would be better than having to wake up everyday and face the tragic incidents that you have been through?

Me: Yes

Her voice started breaking..

Her: i don't know why but i feel like this is the end for me



NOVELSGURU.COM

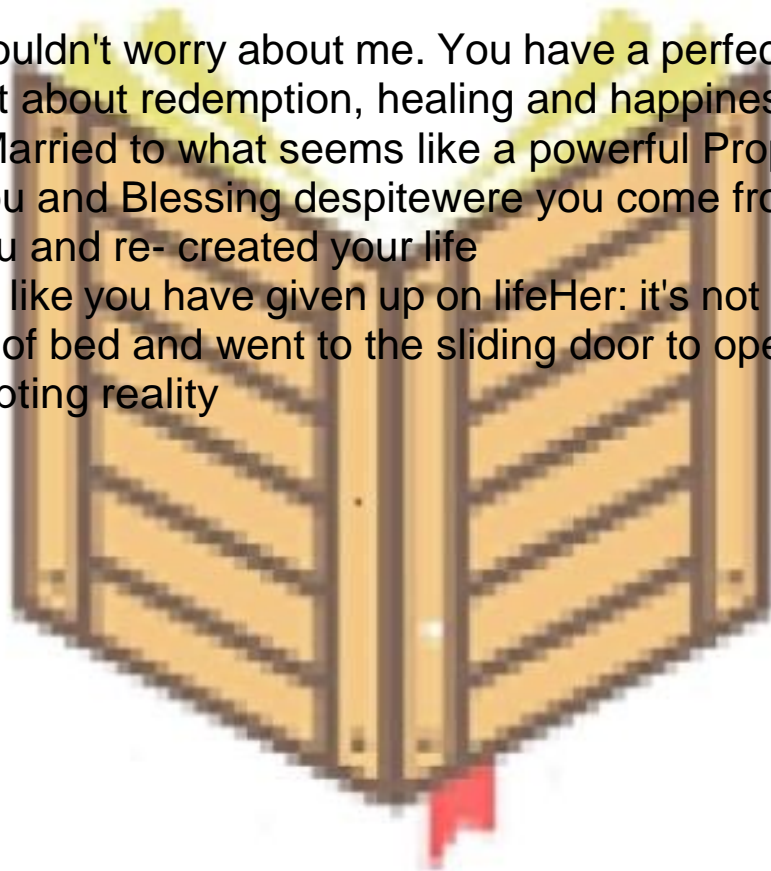
Me: don't talk like that

Her: i have nothing to look forward too anymore

Me: Simon and your mother should be the reason you wake up everyday and fight to get your life back. We love you Lucia for a moment think about the pain we will be leftwith if you ever take yourself away from us
She chuckled..

Her: you shouldn't worry about me. You have a perfect lifenow, your pain brought about redemption, healing and happiness. You practically Married to what seems like a powerful Prophet who accepted you and Blessing despitewere you come from. God has came for you and re- created your life

Me: you talk like you have given up on lifeHer: it's not giving up
She got out of bed and went to the sliding door to open it..Her: it's called accepting reality



NOVELSGURU.COM

She walked out to the balcony. There's nothing more painful like being overshadowed by deep scars that you cannot see a way out of your pain..

. #ZAINÉ

Before I went to my office, i went to St Claire to go and see how my mother was holding up. Looking at the environment of this place, it's not a place that someone can call a home or find prolonged shelter in. I am not saying that people who are in mental institutions are beneath us, but i am sure it was not God's plan for his children to come across such. Looking at the world today and what's happening, it is clear that as much as we seek refuge and shelter in God, the devil too roams around like a Lion trying to devour and make his mark. It is no secret that he has manipulated and captured a lot of souls through many things such as Pain, poverty, and sickness..

The more we try to preach God in the world, the more evil



NOVELSGURU.COM

risers too..

After filling the visitor's register i went to put my phone, keys and anything that wasn't authorised to accompany me to visit my mother, other than a human being in some container. I even had to take off my belt, that's how strict they are..

Security walked me down that corridor to where my mother was locked up, Cameras were installed all around i could see my reflection as i was passing by.. We got to her room, it was even written her name at the door... The guard looked at me..

Him: Press the big red button when you feel uncomfortable

Me: she is my mother, she carried me for 9 months she will never hurt me

He didn't say anything but opened for me..



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went inside as the door was closed behind me. I looked around and the room was small, just a bed and chair...

She was sitting on the chair that faced the wall, she was very silent while concentrating on the wall..

I stood there for a while staring at her, when did all of this happen?

Once upon a time she was this feared and respected woman and today she has to depend on pills to help her live her life everyday...

I went and sat on the bed while searching for the right words..

Me: Ma it's me

This is the first time i address her as "Ma" after a long time
Me: how are you doing? How are they treating you here?

She didn't say anything...

Me: things on the outside are not as fascinating too, trust me there's not much that's happening you didn't miss anything other than that me and Bonolo are engaged now



NOVELSGURU.COM

She didn't move, didn't flinch to suggest that she's still human instead she remained in that same position as a stationary car..
Me: i have a church now and it's growing, i am making a name for myself i just wish that you and Dad were to witness how good i have done you would be proud
She still didn't say anything..

Me: has Leighton ever come to visit you? Wasn't my plan to see you here

I never knew a human being can remain this still..I stood up..

Me: it was good seeing you again, i will come again tomorrow

I stood up.. Me: i love you

She still remained like that..

I walked up to the door, and the unexpected happened



NOVELSGURU.COM

when i was about to hit the button..Her: i wish i had treated you better I looked at her..
She turned and looked at me..

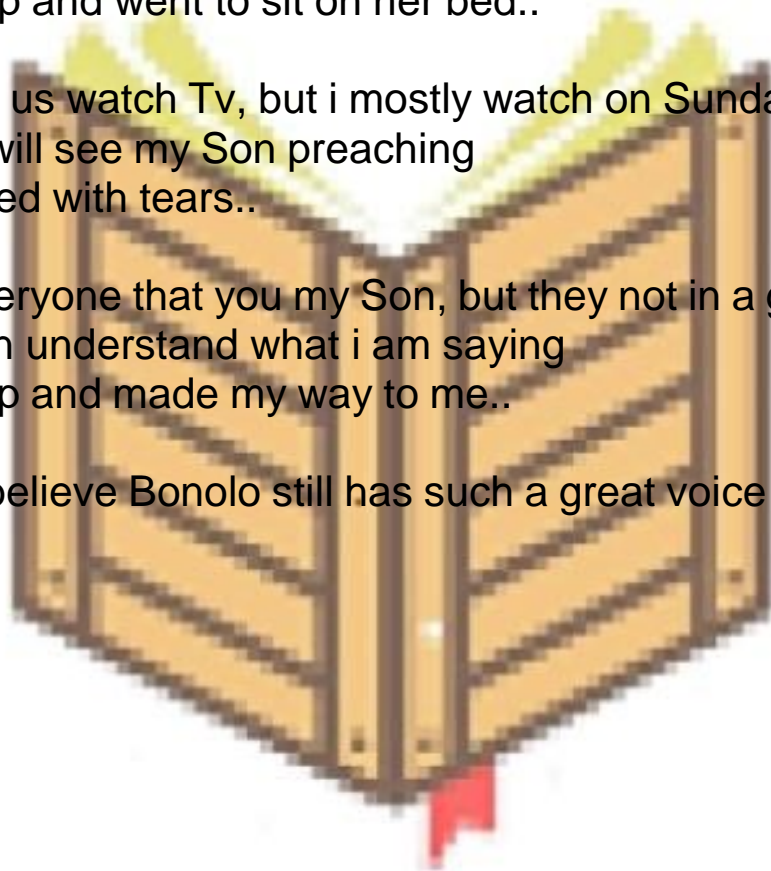
Her: it took me this long to realise your underlying love forme
She still had her beautiful smile intact..

Her: i am proud of you my Son, and now i know God didn'tmake a mistake you are deserving of the gift Zaine
She stood up and went to sit on her bed..

Her: they let us watch Tv, but i mostly watch on Sundaysbecause i know that i will see my Son preaching
Her eyes filled with tears..

Her: i tell everyone that you my Son, but they not in a goodstate of mind to even understand what i am saying
She stood up and made my way to me..

Her: i can't believe Bonolo still has such a great voice



NOVELSGURU.COM

She put her hand on my cheek..

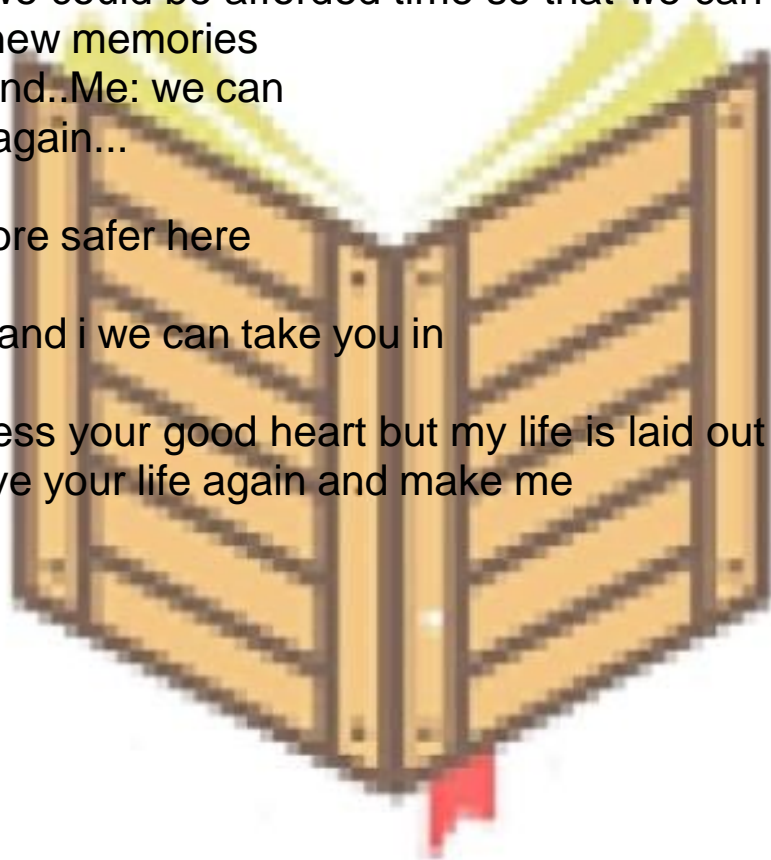
Her: when i was pregnant with you i knew that my pregnancy was different. I found delight and joy being in the Lord's presence. You would always be active when you heard your Father preaching or during worship, i knew that it wasn't a mere pregnancy but that you were destined for great things
I found myself having tears too..

Her: i wish we could be afforded time so that we can start afresh and create new memories
I held her hand..Me: we can
She smiled again...

Her: i am more safer here

Me: Bonolo and i we can take you in

Her: God bless your good heart but my life is laid out behind this walls.. Go live your life again and make me



NOVELSGURU.COM

proud, most of all make your Father proud

She walked to sit on her bed again, and then she vanished while smiling at me and the last words she said only echoed around the room "i love you Zaine"

I was a bit confused not knowing what was happening when i saw a Nurse coming in..

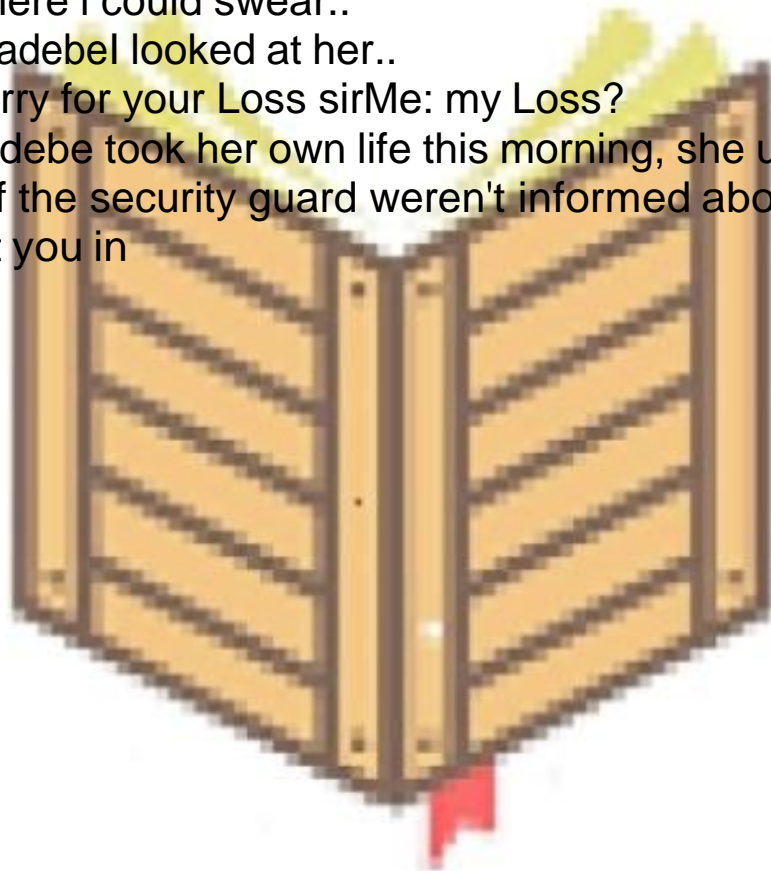
I looked at the chair and it was empty, the bed was also empty..

I couldn't comprehend what was happening because my mother was just sitting there i could swear..

Nurse: Mr Radebel looked at her..

Her: i am sorry for your Loss sir Me: my Loss?

Her: Mrs Radebe took her own life this morning, she used a sheet to hang herself the security guard weren't informed about this that's why they let you in



NOVELSGURU.COM

That fell on deaf ears, because i was just talking to mymother right now..

.

To be continuedPURGATORY

.

.

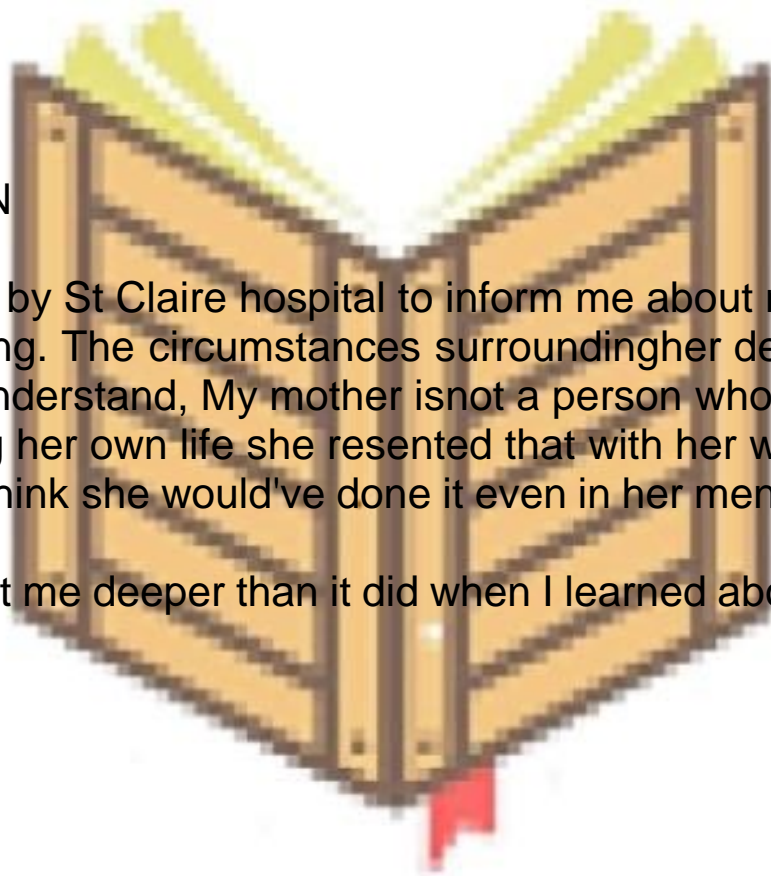
.

¥68

LEIGHTON

I was called by St Claire hospital to inform me about my mother's tragic passing. The circumstances surroundingher death were very difficult to understand, My mother isnot a person who ever thought about taking her own life she resented that with her whole heart and i don't think she would've done it even in her mental unstable state.

The news hit me deeper than it did when I learned about



NOVELSGURU.COM

my Father's passing it was no secret that my mother and iwe were very close.....

I went to St Claire i needed to know what really happened and they played me the tape of the last hours before her death. She actually woke up and sat on the bed for a longtime just sitting there and saying nothing. She wasn't moving, wasn't saying anything she looked more like shewas possessed in a way because after a while she stoodup and just started walking around the room in a fixed manner as if like she was instructed to walk like that..

Then the tape went blank for like 5min-10min, when it came on again she was hanging from the ceiling, she hadactually hung herself..

It was a difficult and painful thing to comprehend, tearscouldn't stop falling as the tape was ran over and over again..

Security: We have played the tape more than 10 times now

Me: i understand that, but did you see how the tape goes blank while she's walking around the room and then when



NOVELSGURU.COM

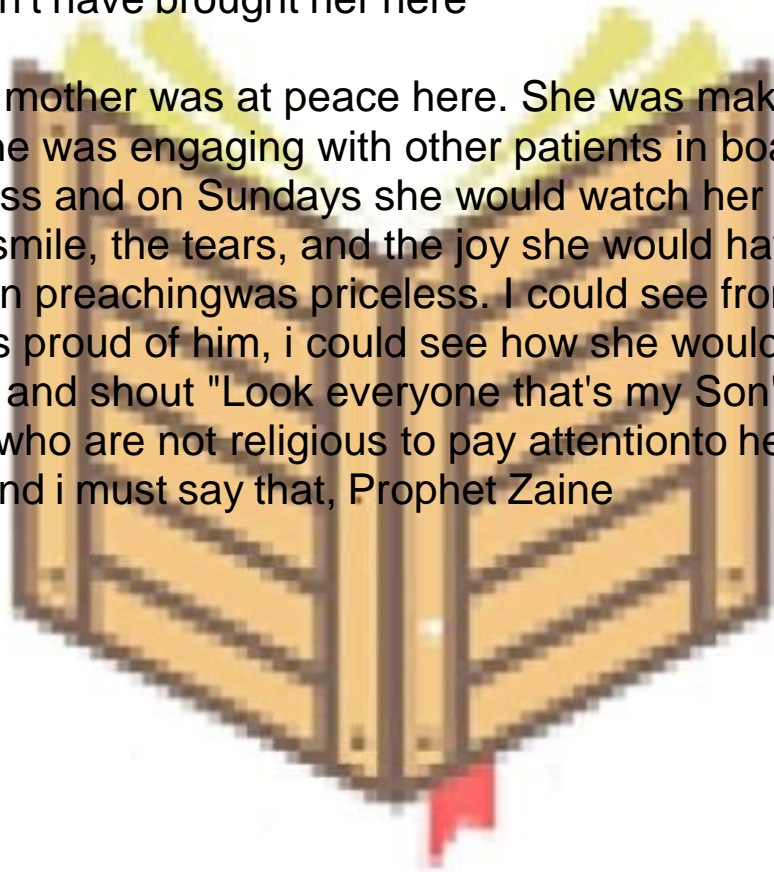
it goes on again we see her hanging? What really happened in that short space of time were we are not shown how she tied the rope and hung herself

Security: that's what makes the situation weird because our cameras never had a glitch before, we actually have a technician that comes to do a security check at least once a week on all our cameras and security system

I wiped my face with my hands..

Me: i shouldn't have brought her here

Nurse: your mother was at peace here. She was making good progress, she was engaging with other patients in board games such as chess and on Sundays she would watch her Son preaching on Tv. The smile, the tears, and the joy she would have when she sees her Son preaching was priceless. I could see from her face that she was proud of him, i could see how she would turn around to everyone and shout "Look everyone that's my Son" she even got some of us who are not religious to pay attention to her Son's Preaching and i must say that, Prophet Zaine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Radebe is very gifted and because of your mother we will forever watch Prophet Radebe preach on Sunday mornings and i know that her soul and spirit will be watching with us

Me: my mom talked about Zaine?

Nurse: ohh yes, she talked about him everyday. Talking about your Brother brought her soo much joy and peace sometimes she would even refuse to take her Medication, she would say "Nurse my Son prayed on Sunday did you here? I am not a slave to this pills" that's why her suicide issoo bizarre it took us by great surprise

Now i was having a lump on my throat hearing this nursetalk like that, talk about how my mother loves Zaine and her obsession with Zaine..

Nurse: you actually missed him, he was here earlier tocheck on Ms Jackson but..

Me: Zaine was here?

Nurse: Yes he was Sir, he did good by coming so i would



NOVELSGURU.COM

give him the journal that his mother asked me to give it to him
should something happen to her

Security played the tape where Zaine had been in my mother's room
and it was weird because he was talking while staring at the chair
was almost as if like he was seeing her. But what am I saying? He
was seeing her after all he has a Gift that not even money can buy
Nurse: I think that your mother's love for Zaine was too strong that
before her spirit crossed over she wanted him to feel her presence
one last time

I stood up while hitting the table. The bull in me was unleashed...

Me: stop it!!! Stop it just stop everything!!!.. My mother loved me, my
mother worshipped me!!!

The nurse and the guard looked at each other and then back at
me....

Nurse: all along I thought you were adopted because never even
once has she ever mentioned you, or spoke about



NOVELSGURU.COM

you like how she did with Zaine

How did this happen? How did it come about for my mother to love Zaine more than me? How did it come about for Zaine to be the one who feels my mother's presence and gets to see her for the Last time? I was filled with anger, hate, and many questions!! My Mother loved me more than anything, I was his precious son and i will not let Zaine take that away from me! If this is a fight that he wants then i will give him that!!!

Me: can i have a copy of both the tapes?

Security: uhm unfortunately we do not allow what happens in the institution to go out to the public eye, Patient confidentiality is our priority we can get into a lot of trouble releasing this tapes

Me: That's bullshit!!!! Security: that's the rules Sir!



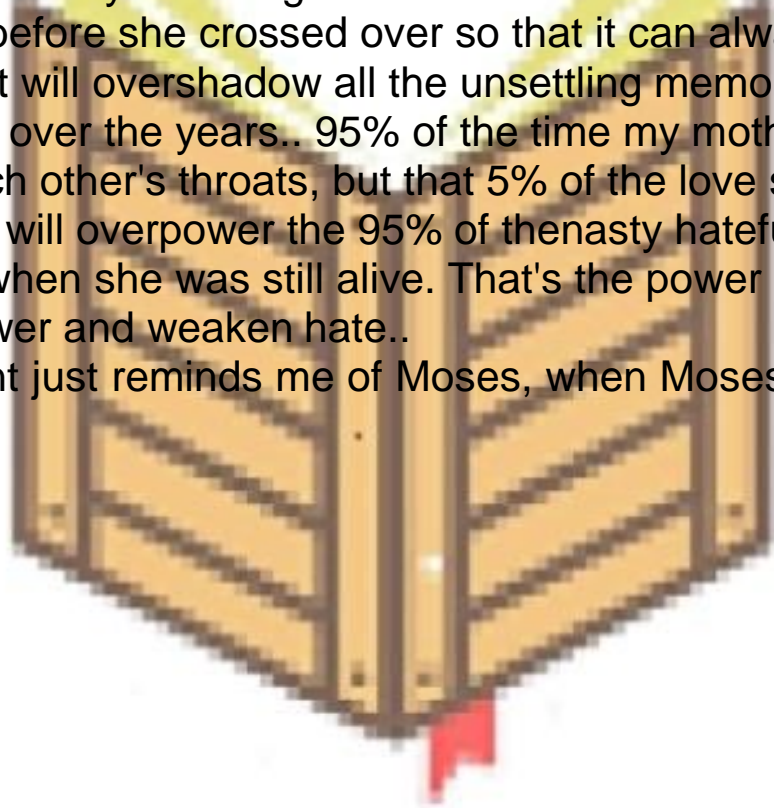
NOVELSGURU.COM

ZAINÉ

I had parked my car in the yard but i didn't go out of it as yet. I was reading my mother's journal and every word that was in there really hit where it belonged. Although my mother and i never saw eye to eye while she was still alive, but what happened back at St Claire's the Last moments i had with her will forever have a lasting effect on me..

That's the most amazing thing about our heavenly father, even though I didn't have this when my mother was still alive but he made sure that my mother gets to tell me about the love that she has for me before she crossed over so that it can always be the memory that will overshadow all the unsettling memories that we had created over the years.. 95% of the time my mother and i were on each other's throats, but that 5% of the love she confessed to me today will overpower the 95% of the nasty hateful things she said to me when she was still alive. That's the power of love, love can overpower and weaken hate..

This moment just reminds me of Moses, when Moses



NOVELSGURU.COM

couldn't enter the promised land but God made sure that he sees it before he goes down to the world of the dead..

I never knew how deep love can go, until today. Now I fully understand what I Corinthians 13 really meant when it talked about Love, that if you have no love then you are nothing when I paraphrase it.. My mother's journal was filled with pictures of me while I was still a baby, she left no detail when she wrote about my arrival, from the time when she was pregnant up until when I was a certain age... I found some other statements a bit funny, but overall it was a beautiful well written journal..

When I closed it I heard her voice softly whispering next to my ear: "These are the memories I want you to have every time when I cross your mind, I want you to always think about how much I love you and how proud of you I am. This is not goodbye but rather call it a see you right back because every time when you open that journal know I will be next to you



NOVELSGURU.COM

telling you about each and every moment we spent together. I love you and i will always be with you"

I felt her warmth, i felt her presence and her love as if likeshe wrapped her arms round me..

I turned and looked back, but i was alone in the car, shewasn't here...

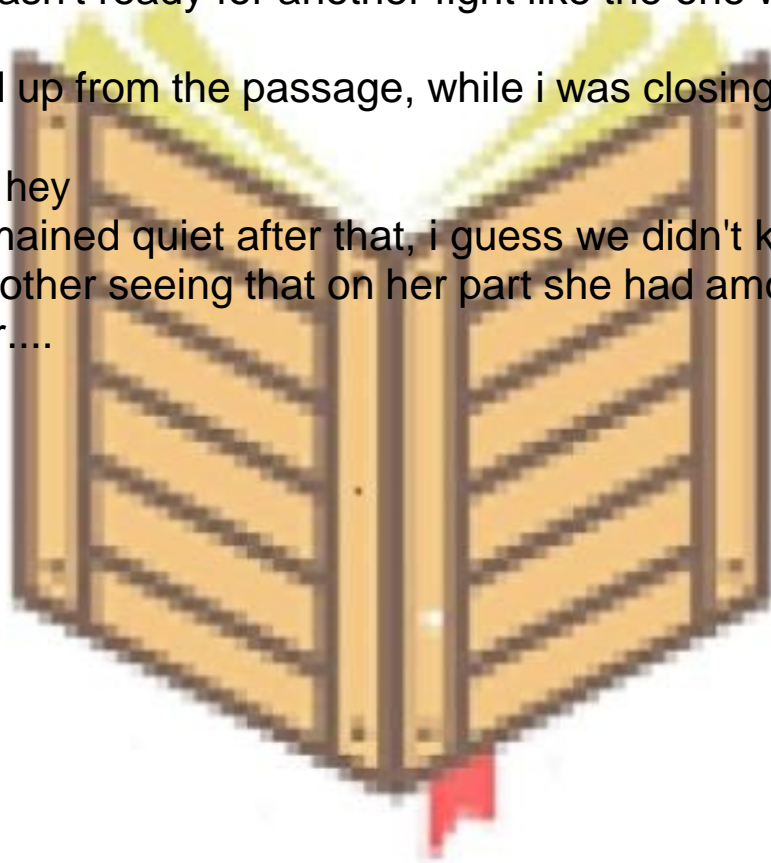
I opened the door and went out, with the journal still in myhands and i made my way into the house..

Bonolo's singing alerted me that she was around, my heartsank low because i wasn't ready for another fight like the one we had this morning..

She showed up from the passage, while i was closing thekitchen door..

Her: heyMe: hey

We both remained quiet after that, i guess we didn't know what to say to each other seeing that on her part she had amouthful to say to me earlier....



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm just gonna go and lie down for a while
Her: it's okay
I made my way to the bedroom while passing next to her....

I made sure to put the journal under my pillow, i wanted to nap on my mother's words for those few minutes. I wanted to embrace her love and warmth one last time through those written words... As i had my eyes closed just having a clear picture of what happened at St Claire's today, i felt hands wrapping themselves around me..

Bonolo: i heard about Ms Jackson, Nkhensani called me i didn't say anything...

Her: despite our differences she was a great woman. A part of me really hoped that she was gonna get better and we would start afresh and get to know each other differently than our first encounters with each other. I am so sorry about your Loss may her soul rest in peace

I turned around and looked at her, what i have noticed



NOVELSGURU.COM

about Bonolo Is that she has a forgiving heart. God has blessed her with a heart that not everyone has, despite how much she can be hurt but her bleeding wounded heart can still forgive, what makes it more special is that she doesn't force herself to forgive, but it comes off naturally sometimes it's not easy to forget and i am Still trying to figure out how she does it..

I cleared some of her hair from her face pushing it back behind her ear...

Me: i love you

Her: i love you too, and i am sorry about earlier today
Me: it's fine we will talk about that some other time She laid her head on my chest...

Her: are you gonna try to mend things between you and your brother seeing that you the only family that you both have now?

Me: only time will tell

I kissed her on her forehead after saying that...



NOVELSGURU.COM

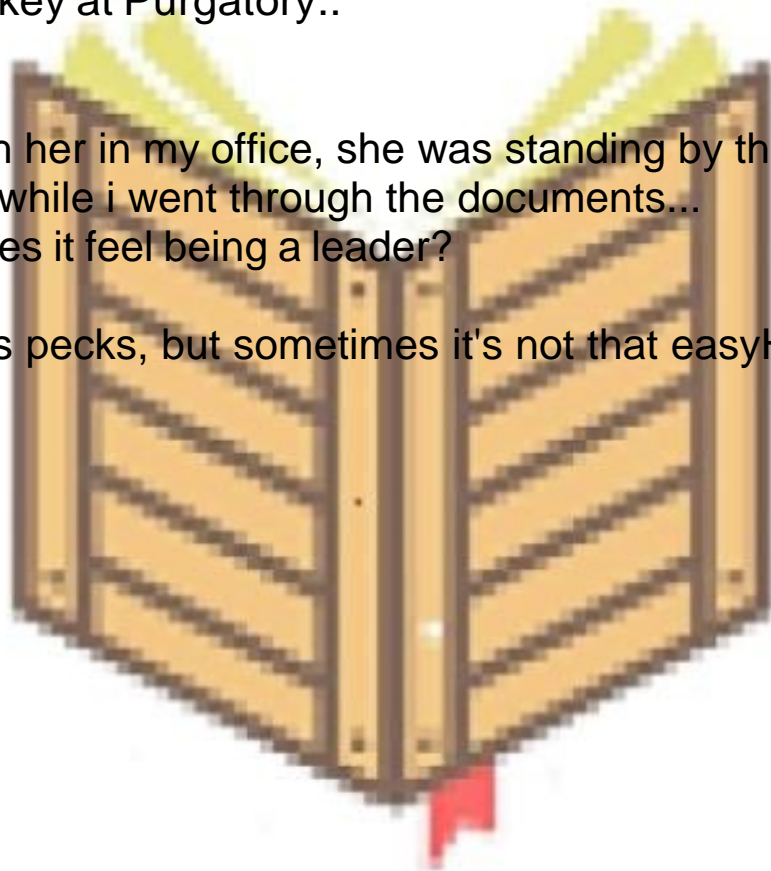
attend too? Those are the questions one should ask themselves and opt for a more beneficial solution to both parties which is making an appointment beforehand...

Since she hinted that the meeting will be us discussing my Father's book, i had no choice but to meet up with her because currently my father's book is a priority to me. I have decided that i will invest all the money that i am going to make from the book to building a school in Purgatory. After learning that girls were forbidden to go to school, i made it my number one goal to make sure that education becomes a key at Purgatory..

I met up with her in my office, she was standing by the window and starring out while i went through the documents...

Her: how does it feel being a leader?

Me: it has its pecks, but sometimes it's not that easy
Her: that's the sad part



NOVELSGURU.COM

She was folding her arms and had her back turned against me..
Her: i never imagined you owning such a big place
Me: i am running it rather than owning it
Her: same thing to me

Me: i have read and understood everything
Her: then you can sign
I took the pen and signed on the dotted line...

She turned around and looked at me with her arms still folded...
Her: i have a feeling that this book will do much better than the last one
Me: i hope so because i really need to build a school around here
She came and sat down opposite me..

Her: how does a young man like you get to be a leader of all this people?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: that would be a good question to ask God
Her: not my biggest fan right now

I laid back on the chair
Me: Why?

Her: my line of work turns me into a devil, sometimes i have to defend the guilty, knowing very well that they are guilty. I have to stand there and lie that they are innocent while they are not

Me: was it passion that drove you to do law?
She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: unfortunately sometimes we cannot fight the system of the world

Her: i know but sometimes my conscious gets a better of me

Me: that should be a reminder that you still a human being despite what your career has turned you into

She exhaled..



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: this other time i had to defend this man who raped aninnocent little girl. I had to stand there and say he didn't doit while he did i knew deep down he was guilty, he even confessed to me that he was guilty but because money can do wonders he got away with a twist on the wrist

Me: do you think that you can be better in another field?

Her: i have grown to love what i do but sometimes it getstoo much My phone rang, i checked who it was and it was Bonolo..I looked at Mantwa..

Her: we done you can go ahead and answerMe: thank you

I stood up and walked out to answer..Me: hello

Her: Zaine you have to come homeMe: Why what's wrong?

Her: i got a call from Simon it's Luu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: what about her?

Her: she leaped off the balconyMe: what?

Her: i knew leaving her alone was a bad idea, i need to get to the hospital right away

Me: just don't panic i am on my way

I hung up and went inside to get my keys..

.

. #LEIGHTON

Attaining those security tapes wasn't a hard task after all. People can do anything for money this days, i just had to cough up a couple of R100 notes and bribe the security guard to give me the tapes and he did without a hassle..

The first thing i did when i got home, was to keep on going through them over and over hoping to at least get something this time around, that will give me a hint on

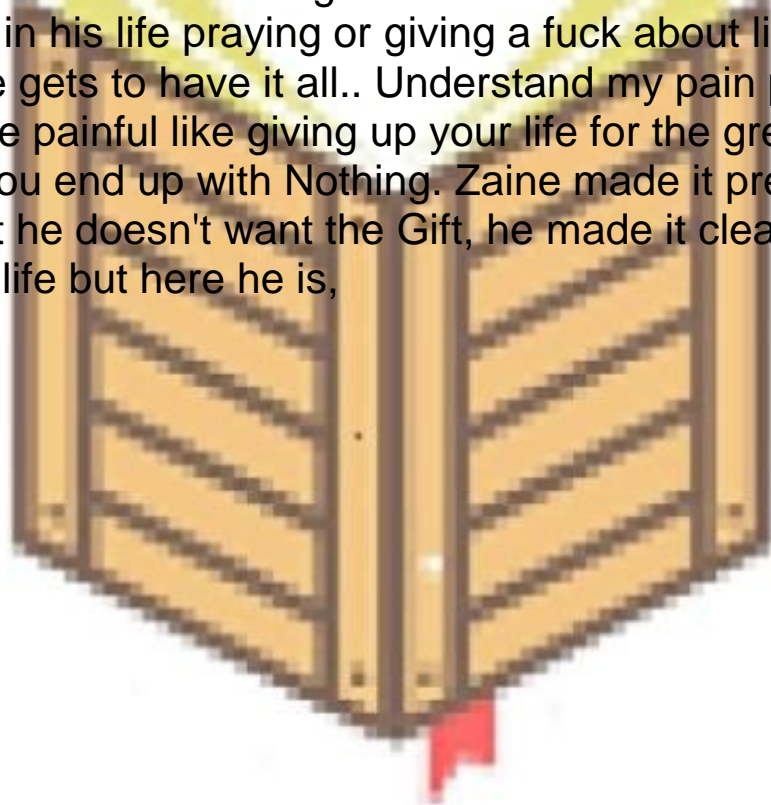


NOVELSGURU.COM

what happened to my mother or what led her to decide to take her own life, but nothing suspicious was showing other than the tape going totally blank for that short period of time were we didn't know how she tied the rope from the ceiling..

The more i kept on running the tape the more the nurse's words kept on playing in my mind about how my mother was talking about her love for Zaine and how much she was proud of him that truly made me sick to my stomach, leaving a bad taste on my tongue..

I spent my whole life trying to be the perfect Son, i have spent my whole life trying to prove to God that i am worthy and deserving of the Gift but at the end Zaine gets to have it all. Zaine who never spent a day in his life praying or giving a fuck about living the good Christian life gets to have it all.. Understand my pain please, there's nothing more painful like giving up your life for the greater good and at the end you end up with Nothing. Zaine made it pretty clear a lot of times that he doesn't want the Gift, he made it clear that he is not built for this life but here he is,



NOVELSGURU.COM

enjoying the fruits of my labour! Where is the fairness in that? What do I get rewarded with for all that i have done for God? What do i get for respecting my parents along the process? Nothing!. But Zaine whom my mother spent all her life yelling at him about not being respectful he is the one who gets the blessings while i get the curses...

I was disturbed by a hand tapping me on my shoulder, i moved my focus from the laptop to my wife who was standing behind me...

I held her hand and kissed it..Her: how are you feeling?

She sat on top of me..

Me: i still can't believe that she's gone

Her: i know, i find it very hard to accept it myself Me: it's gonna take a while to process everything She turned and looked at the laptop..

Her: what are you watching?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: just this tape i got from Saint Claire's, it's shows mymother's last moments alive

Her: is it even legal to get such?

Me: i had to get them, i need to know what happened
Her: don't do this to yourself

Me: Nkhensani Ms Jackson is not someone who would just wake up and decide to take her own life

Her: it's a bit far fetched what happened, suicide was not Ms Jackson at all

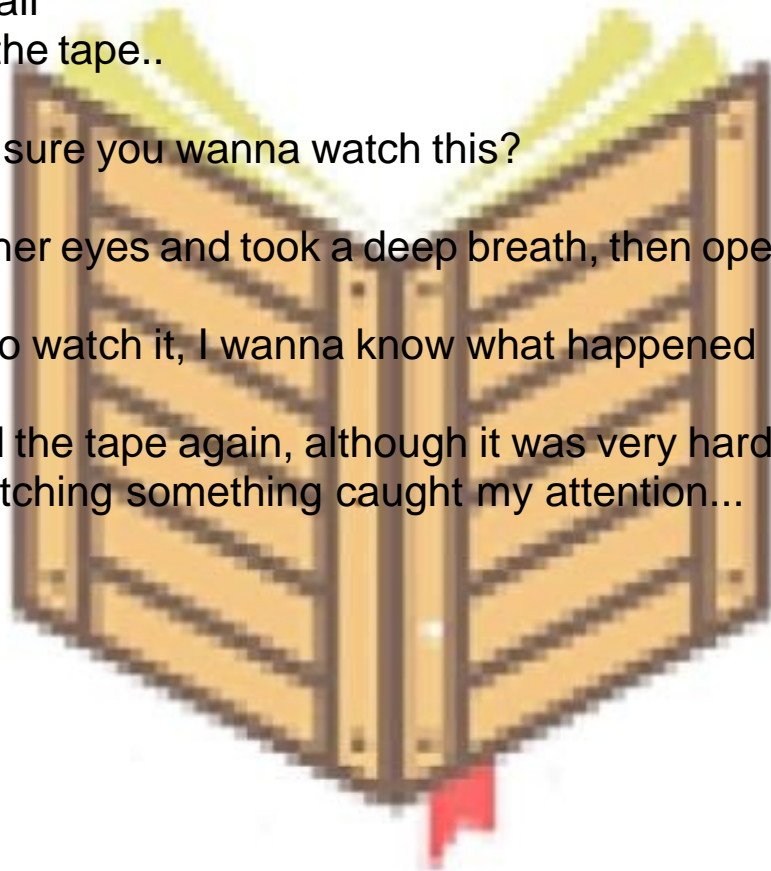
She played the tape..

Me: are you sure you wanna watch this?

She closed her eyes and took a deep breath, then opened them again..

Her: i have to watch it, I wanna know what happened

We watched the tape again, although it was very hard on her part..
As i was watching something caught my attention...



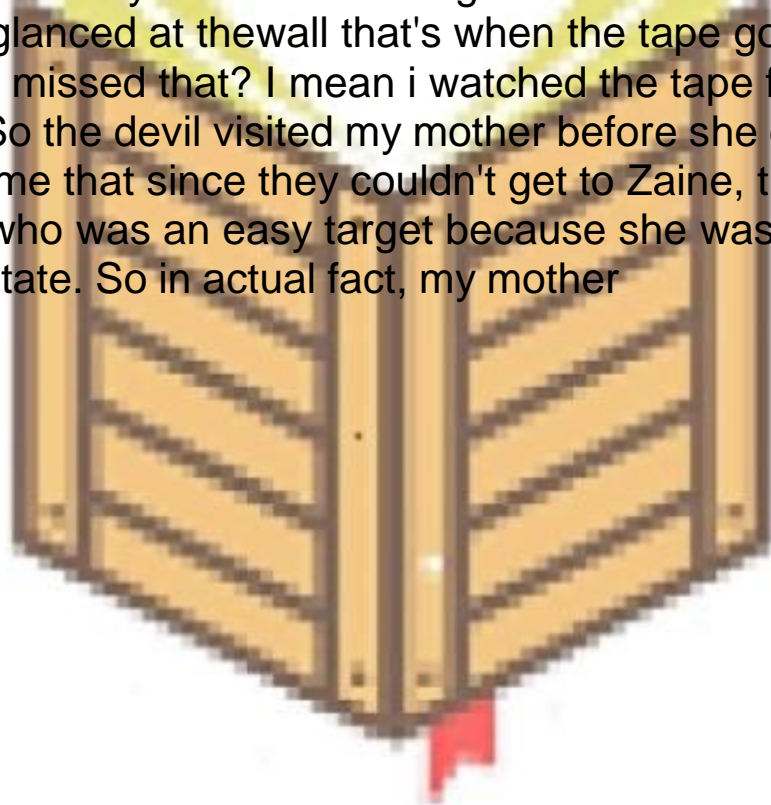
NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: pause it She paused it..
Her: what's wrong?

Me: can you give me a few seconds?Her: Why Leighton what happened?

Me: just a few seconds pleaseHer: fine
She got off me and walked out..

When my mother stood up from the bed and started walking around the room like a possessed person, i saw a shadow on the wall behind her of a very familiar face. A goat face with horns, when she turned and glanced at the wall that's when the tape goes blank. How could i have missed that? I mean i watched the tape for more than 50 times... So the devil visited my mother before she died... It dawned on me that since they couldn't get to Zaine, they went for my mother who was an easy target because she was at a vulnerable state. So in actual fact, my mother



NOVELSGURU.COM

was a blood sacrifice for my riches and power..

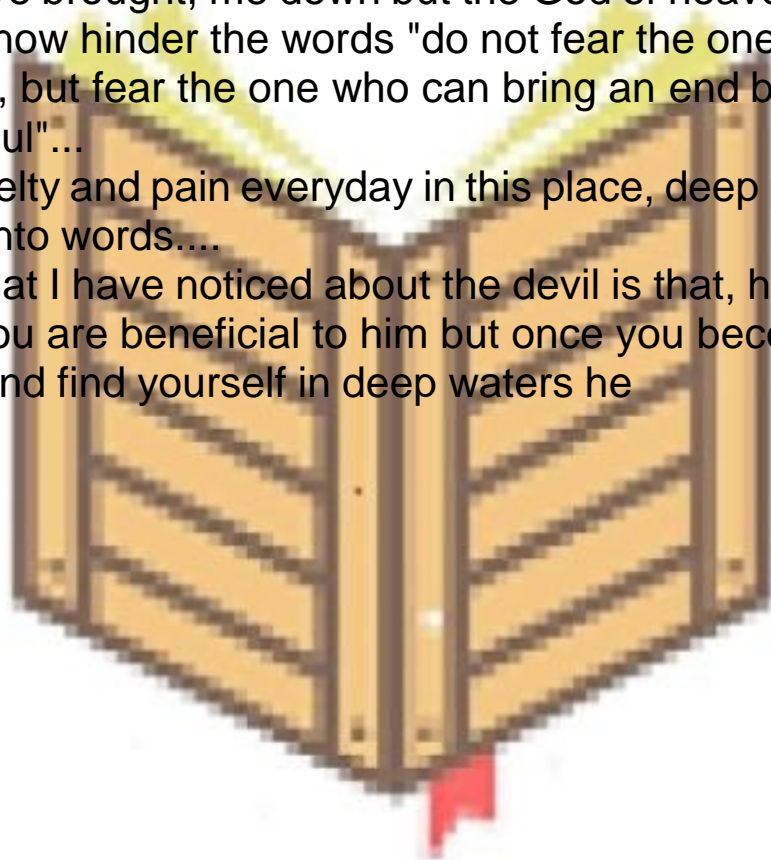
.

. #ABDUL

It was soo easy for me to hurt people because it seemed fit at that time. I had power and i had riches, with the power of hell altogether i seemed untouchable. Nothing could've brought me down at that time but i failed to acknowledge that yes Probably a human being wouldn't have brought, me down but the God of heaven could bring me down. I now hinder the words "do not fear the one whocan only kill the body, but fear the one who can bring an end both to the body and soul"...

I endure cruelty and pain everyday in this place, deep painthat i cannot put into words....

One thing that I have noticed about the devil is that, he willonly use you when you are beneficial to him but once you become powerless and find yourself in deep waters he



NOVELSGURU.COM

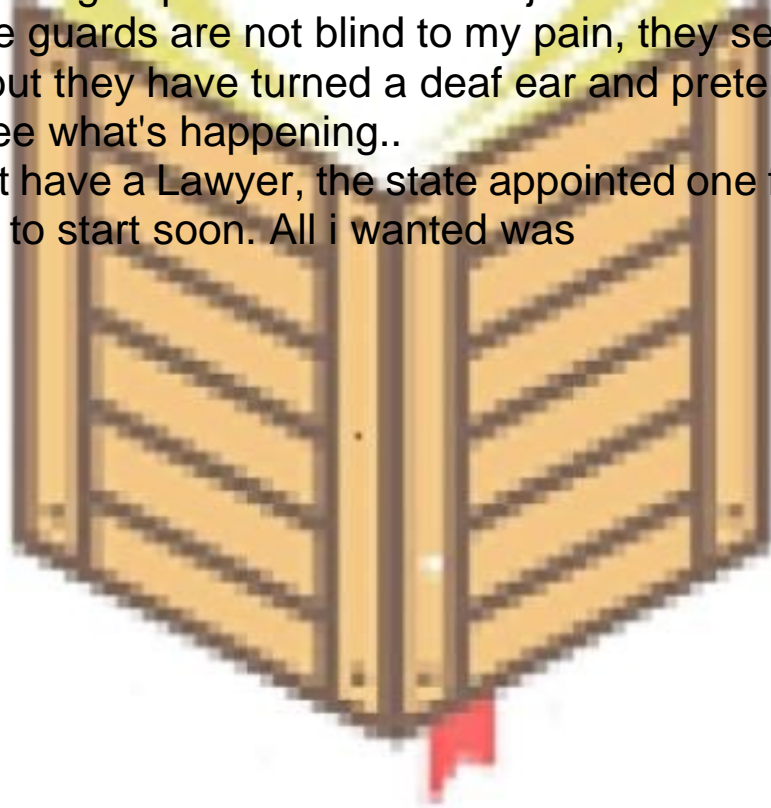
turns against you and find someone else who can carry on From you..

I wasn't alone when i committed my sins, i had brothers but now that i am in this situation i find myself alone none of them have even came once to visit me or tried to help me..

I wish i can turn back the time to go and make everything right, to wipe away the tears of every person that i have hurt just anything to do away with what i am going through right now...

Day and night my screams don't go higher than the ceiling, i have been made a door mat, a sex slave and a scumbag by my cellmates. It's a group of them and i am just alone with no one on my side. The guards are not blind to my pain, they see what's happening but they have turned a deaf ear and pretend as if like they don't see what's happening..

Since i didn't have a Lawyer, the state appointed one forme because my trial was to start soon. All i wanted was



NOVELSGURU.COM

bail, just to be outside with human beings than the Animals i live with here..

I looked at the lawyer as he closed his briefcase and put it aside..

He then put both hands on the table, and looked at me with eyes full of pity..

Him: How are you?

Me: am i gonna get bail? He shook his head no..

Him: you just have to be strong for another 2 weeks
Me: i don't have 2 weeks

Him: what's happening in there?

Me: i am dying that's what's happening in there
Him: you a man you have to be strong

Me: ain't that a cliché?

Him: i reviewed your case, i spoke to a few people and it's not looking good for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: i figured that out a long time ago

Him: the only way out of this is to plead guilty and the judge will be lenient on you

I shook my head no...

Me: i have made a decision Him: and that is?

Me: i want a death sentence He chuckled in disbelief

Him: we don't have the death sentence anymore In South Africa

Me: i want a death sentence, make it happen because i am never winning this case and i won't spend all my life behind bars

Him: Mr Abdul

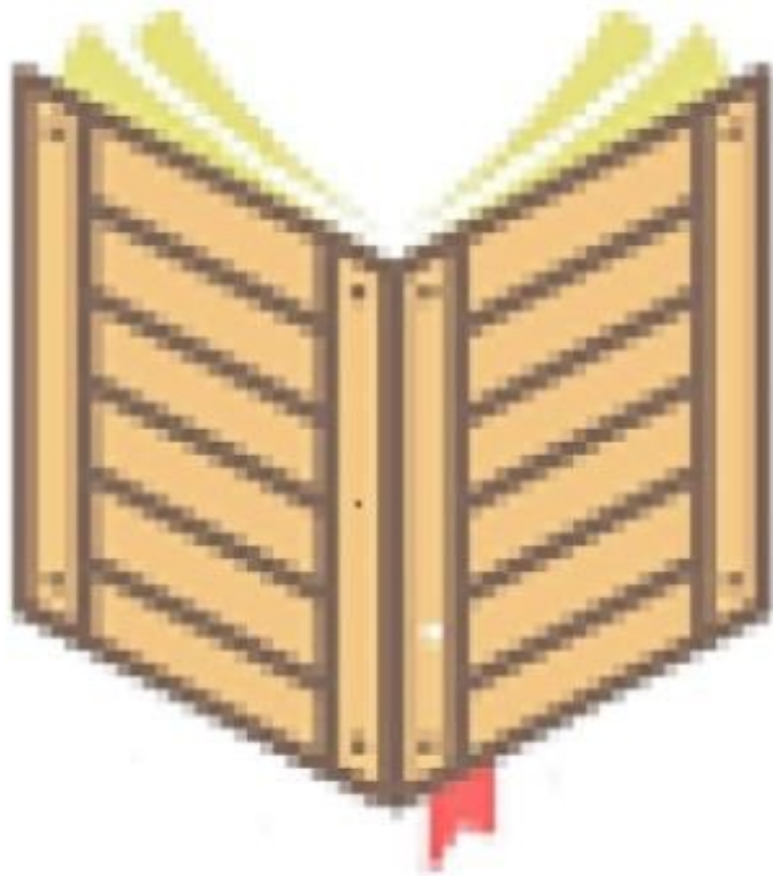
Me: Sir, Mr lawyer, whatever your title is. I do not believe in suicide my traditions go against that so if I can't end my own life let the authorities do that.. A death sentence will



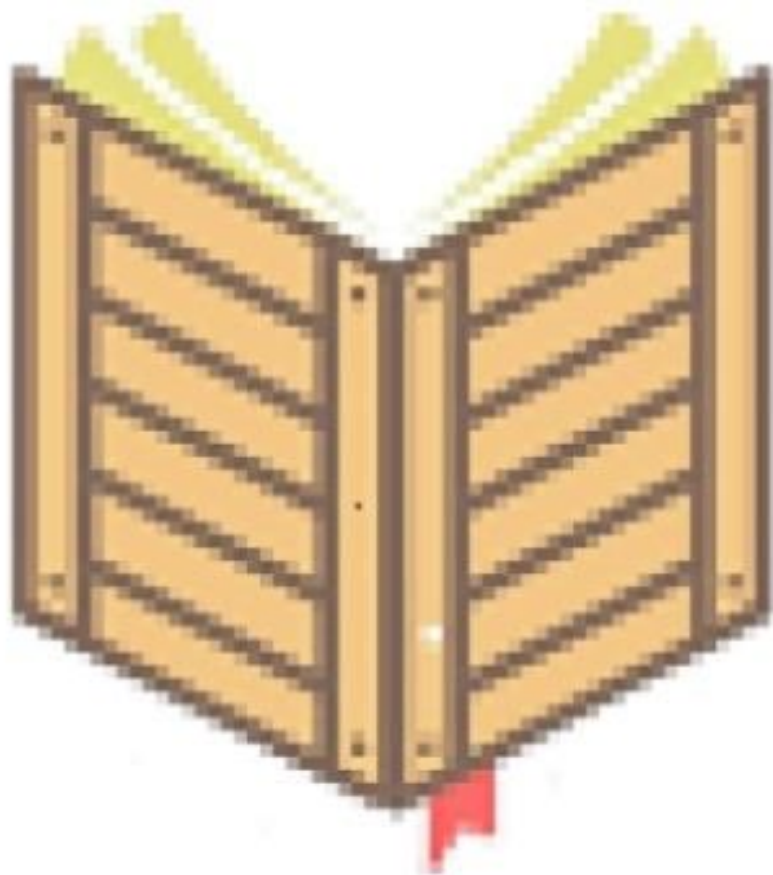
NOVELSGURU.COM

be the only way to escape this, the only way to escape myPurgatory

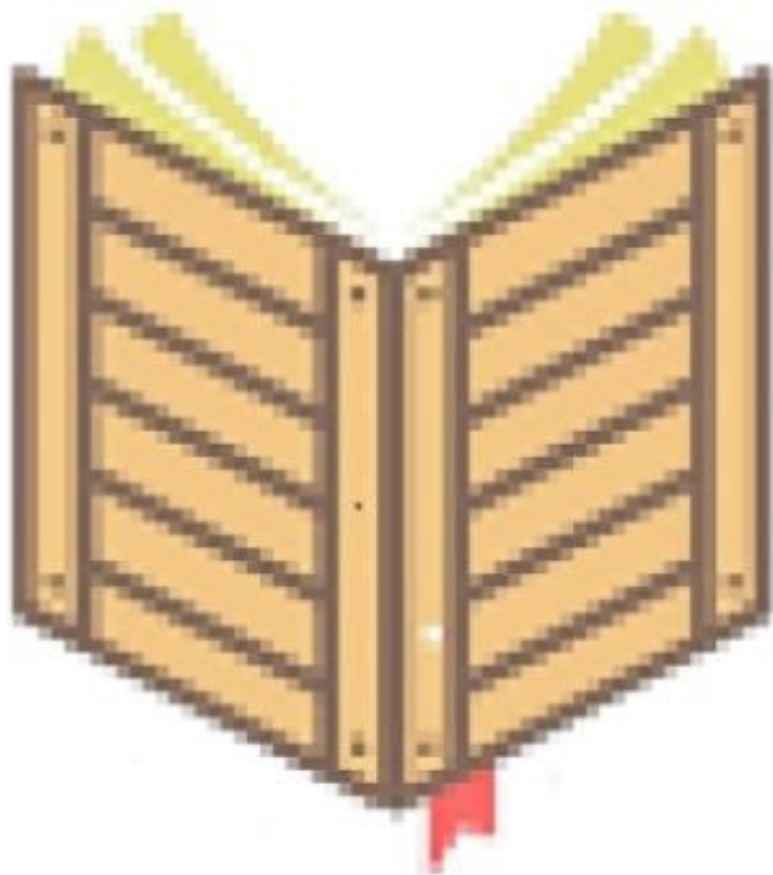
..... THE END.....



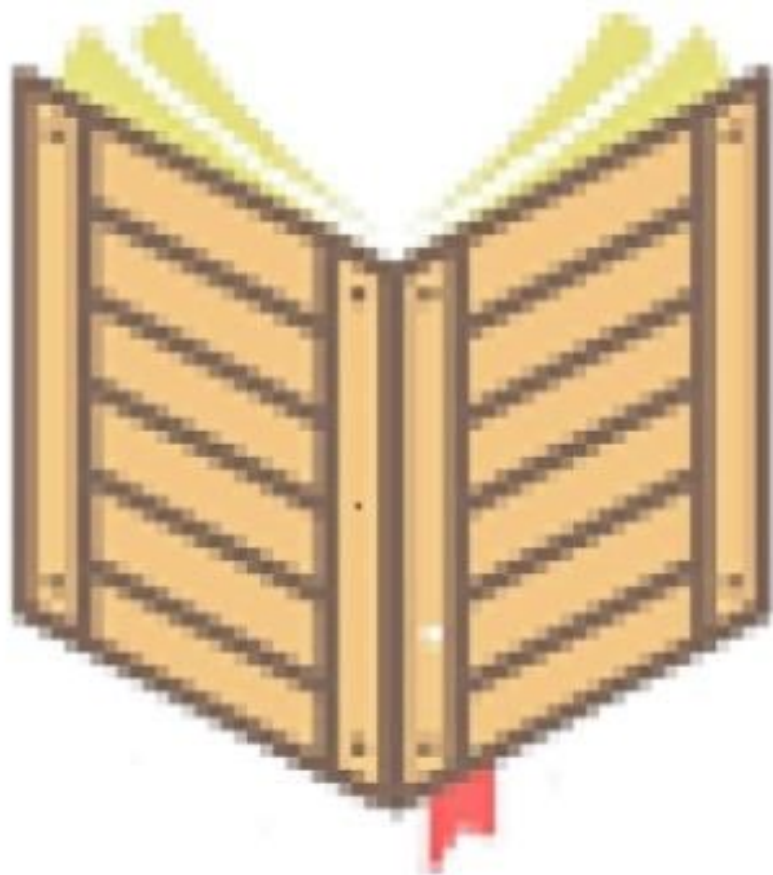
NOVELSGURU.COM



NOVELSGURU.COM



NOVELSGURU.COM



NOVELSGURU.COM

Thank you for being a part of this story



NOVELSGURU.COM



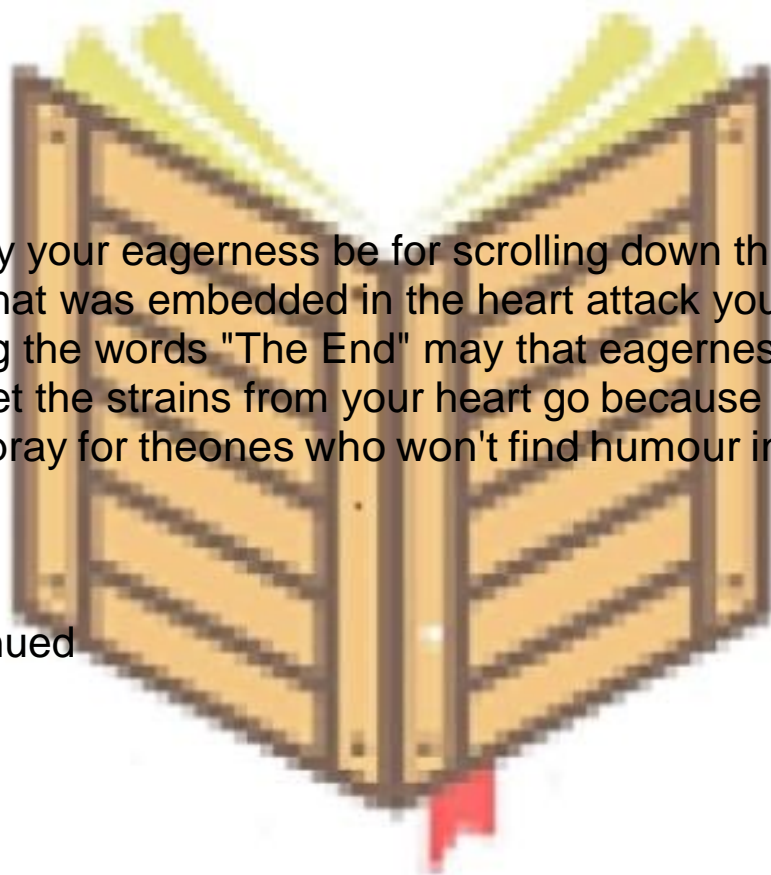
A long journey it was from Purgatory insert one till the end

NOVELSGURU.COM

Blessed May your eagerness be for scrolling down thus farto find the humor that was embedded in the heart attack you partially got after reading the words "The End" may that eagerness make you relax now, let the strains from your heart go because we not done yet, as i go pray for theones who won't find humour in being Punk'D

..

To be continued



NOVELSGURU.COM